

A
COMMENTARIE,

OR,

EXPOSITION VPON

the five first Chapters of the Epi-

stle to the Galatians: penned by the

godly, learned, and iudicious Diuine, Mr.

WILLIAM PERKINS.

NOW PUBLISHED FOR THE BE-

nefit of the Church, and continued with a Sup-

plement upon the first Chapter by Ralfe

Cudworth Bachelour of Diuinitie.



Printed at London by *John Legatt*, Printer.
to the *Printer* of Cambridge.

1617.

29
52

c



TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE, RIGHT VERTVOVS, AND MOST TRVLY RELIGIOVS LORD,

ROBERT, Lord RICH, Baron
of Leeze, &c. Grace and peace.



HE holy Scriptures (Right Honourable) gi-
uen by diuine inspiration, and penned by the
holy men of God, Prophets, Apostles, and A-
postolike writers, not by priuate motion, but
as they were guided by the holy Ghost; are 2. Tim. 3. 16.
not onely commended by God, and left vnto
the Church as a pretious *depositum* carefully to
be kept in their integritie (for which cause the 2. Pet. 1. 20.

Church is called *the ground and pillar of truth*. 1. Tim. 3. 15.) not to be
defended onely by the sword of the Magistrate, against Heretikes,
Schismatikes, and men of scandalous life, in which respect he is cal- 1. Tim. 6. 20.
led (and that truly,) *Custos utriusque tabulae*: but also to be the pillar
and foundation whereon to rest our faith; the touch-stone of
truth; the shoppe of remedies for all spirituall maladies; an anker
in the blasts of Temptation, and waues of affliction; a two edged Eph. 6. 17.
sword to foyle and put to flight our spirituall enemies; the onely Esa. 8. 20.
Oracle to which we must haue recourse, and whereat we are to en-
quire the will of God: In a word, the bread and water of life,
whereon our soules are to feede vnto eternall life. Therefore we are
commanded to search the Scriptures as for siluer, and to seeke in Ioh. 5. 19.
them as for treasures, to reade in them continually, to meditate of Psal. 1. 2.
them day and night, to vse them as bracelets vpon our armes, and Deut. 6. 8.
frontlets betweene our eyes; to teach them to our posteritie, and
to talke of them when we are in our houses, and when we walke by
the way, when we lie downe, and when we are vp. And great rea-
son there is of this commandement, seeing that (as an ancient wri- Hugo de S.
ter saith) *Quicquid in eis docetur veritas est: quicquid precipitur bonitas* Viét. de
est: quicquid promittitur felicitas est: that is, Whatsoeuer is taught in them, Script. &
is truth it selfe: whatsoeuer is commanded, is goodnesse it selfe: whatsoeuer Scriptor. sa-
cris. lib. 1. c. 1.

The Epistle Dedicatorie.

Deut. 4. 2.

Math. 5. 18.

Psal. 19. 10.

Psal. 119. 98.
&c.

2 Tim. 3. 15.

Act. 20. 32.

Iam. 1. 21.

Tere. 2. 13.

Ferdinand.
Vellofil. Epif.
Lucan praf.
in aduer.
Schol. Theol.
Nec Script.
nec Doctores
vel a lumine
salutaffe.

is promised, is happines it selfe. They being of such perfection, that nothing may bee added vnto them, nor any thing taken from them: of such infallible certainty, that heauen and earth shall sooner passe away, then one title fall to the ground: so pleasant and delightfull, that they exceed the hony and the hony combe: and so profitable, that no treasures may be compared vnto them: seeing they are able to make vs wiser then our enemies, then the aged, then our teachers: to make vs wise vnto saluation; to giue vs an inheritaunce among them that are sanctified: nay, able to saue our soules. Which being so; I cannot sufficiently wonder, that any calling, themselves Christians, should make lesse account of the booke of God, then the Romanes in old time did of their twelue Tables, and other Heathens of their Ritvall books: or then the Iewes at this day doe of their Talmud, the Turks of their Alcoran, the Ethiopians of their Abetelis: especially that those which professe themselves Diuines, should so distaste the holy scripture, that leauing it, the cleare fountaine of the water of life, they should betake themselves to the troubled streames of mens deuises, and digge vnto themselves pits which will hold no water. Wherein the Schoolemen (I meane the Sententiaries, the Summists, and Quodlibetaries) are chiefly (if not only) to be censured, who setting aside the scriptures, haue vanished away in vaine speculations in their Questions vpon *Lombard* the Master of the Sentences, & vpon *Thomas* their new Master. So that had it not bene for some few *Glosses* (which notwithstanding like the glosse of Orleans doe often corrupt the text) *Nicolaus de Lyra*, *Hugo de S. Charo*, and *Peter Comestor* (whom I should haue named first, being so good a text man, that (as his name importeth) hee did eate vp the text, as the poore mans horse drank vp the Moone) we should not haue had among such a multitude of writers, one poore Comment vpon the Bible for diuers hundred yeares. And no maruaile, seeing it is an ordinary thing for yong nouices in Popish Vniuersities (and I would it were but there only) not to lay the foundation of their studie in Diuinitie vpon the rocke, but vpon the waters: that is, not vpon the Scripture, but vpon *Aquinas*, or some such Summist: & to reade the Scriptures no further then they giue them light for the vnderstanding of their Schoole Doctours. Witness one of their own writers, who testifieth of him selfe, that he had studied Schoole diuinity and the Canon Law for the space of 16. yerres, and yet neuer so much as saluted either the Scriptures or the Fathers. Which course they take, either because they presume to vnderstand, aboue that which is written, contrary to the commandment of the Apostle, *Rom. 12. 3.* or for that they iudge the Scrip-

tures.

The Epistle Dedicatorie.

tures too simple and shallow for them to wade in, as not affording them sufficient matter for their wits to worke vpon. Not considering that whilst they contemne the simplicity of the Scriptures, & looke beyond the Moone, in the meane time with *Thales* they fall into the ditch: and that whilst they strue with the wings of their wit to soare aboue the cloudes of other mens conceyts, they sinke into a Sea of absurdities and errors. Nor yet remembering that the Scripture hath great maiesty ioyned with simplicity, and as great difficulty mixed with plainenesse and facility: and therefore not vnfitly resembled by *S. Gregorie*, to the maine Ocean in which the lambe may wade and the Elephant may swimme. For the spirit of God hath in wonderfull wisdom so tempered the Scriptures, that they are both obscure and perspicuous: in some places like a clasped or sealed booke, *Isay. 29. 11.* in other places like a booke that is opened, *Apoc. 5. 5.* being both easie and difficult. Easie, in that the entrance into the word, giveth light and understanding to the simple, *Psal. 119. 130.* Difficult, in that some things are hard to bee understood, *2. Peter. 3. 16.* and hard to bee interpreted, *Hebrewes 5. 11.* Easie, to invite vs to reade and learnethem: Difficult, to exercise vs lest we should contemne them. From the easie and plaine places are gathered principles of religion, both articles of faith and rules of good life, which wee call *Catechismes*. The difficult places require interpretation, and the *Commentaries* of the learned. Both which are necessarie in the Church of God. *Catechismes* haue a necessarie vse, both in regard of the simple, who are to bee fedde with milke, beeing but babes in Christ: and of the learned who are strong men in Christ, that they may haue some rule, whereby to trie the spirits, consonant to the Analogie of faith, and doctrine of the Orthodoxe Fathers of the Church: which *Paul* calleth *The forme of knowledge. Rom. 2. 20.* and *The forme of doctrine. Rom. 6. 17.* and *a paterne of wholesome words. 2. Tim. 1. 13.* which formes of doctrine were in vse in the primitive Church in the Apostles dayes, as it is manifest, *Heb. 6. 1.* where the Apostle sets downe the principall points of the Catechisme, calling them *the doctrine of the beginning of Christ*. And after the Apostles, we finde that they were vsed by the learned Fathers, both of the Greeke and Latine Church. *Clement Alex.* had his *Pedagogue*. *Cyril of Ierusalem* his *Catechisme* and *Myriagog. books*. *Origen* (that famous Catechist) his *bookes of principles*. *Theodoret* his *Epitome* *Ἐπεὶ δὲ ἡμεῖς τὸν Λατίνου*. *Isidore* his *Institutions*. *Augustine* his *Enchiridion*. *Hugo de S. Victore* his *bookes of the Sacraments*, or *mysteries of christian religion*. And it were greatly to bee wished, that as in other reformed Churches

Laert. de vit. Philof. lib. 1 in Thal.

Epist. ad Leander.

ἡμεῖς τὸν Λατίνου ἰσχυροῦς ἔσται ἡμεῖς τὸν Λατίνου ἰσχυροῦς ἔσται

ἡμεῖς τὸν Λατίνου ἰσχυροῦς ἔσται

The Epistle Dedicatorie.

beyond the Sea; they haue a set Catechisme which all men follow; and in the Church of Rome one approoued by the Councell of Trent: so there were an vniforme Catechisme inioyned by publike authority to be vsed in all Families, Schooles, and Churches in this land, that we might all with one mind and one mouth, iudge and speake the same thing.

Now as *Catechismes* gathered out of plaine and easie places are necessary for the simple: so *Commentaries* are as necessary for the vnderstanding of such places as are more abstruse and difficult Our Sauour Christ (the great Doctor of the Church) hath by his owne practise giuen vs a president hereof in expounding the law, *Math. 5.* in expounding all hard parables to his disciples apart: for the text saith, that he *unfolded or expounded them vnto them. Mark. 4. 33.* That he interpreted vnto them in all the scriptures the things which were written of him. *Luk. 24. 27.* That he opened vnto them the scriptures. *v. 32.* And they haue bin alwaies so accounted in the Church of God. For the Iewes (as we know) had their *Perushim*, the Greeke church their *Scholins*, the Latine Church their *Glosses*, with other Paraphrases, & Expositions. Neither was it euer called in question by any, saue by the fantastlicall Anabaptists, who rest onely vpon immediate revelations: And some preiudicate Papists, who hold the consent of all Catholikes to be the true Scripture, both the *glosse*, and the *text*; the written word, but inky Diuinity, and a dead letter. And certaine arrogant spirits who with *Nestorius* skorne to reade any Interpreters. But how Commentaries ought to be written, it is not so easie to define, there beeing such difference as well in regard of the manner of writing, as of the measure. For besides that the Popish writers make foure seuerall senses of the Scripture, commending *Ierome* to excell in the Litterall, *Origen* in the Allegoricall, *Ambrose* in the Anagogicall, *Chrysostome* in the Tropologicall; they haue aboue fifty seuerall wayes of expounding the Scripture, as their owne writers doe record. In the measure, we finde some too tedious, as the two *Alphonsi*, *Tostatus*, and *Salmeron*, who vpon every small occasion digresse from the text, or rather take occasion to enter into infinite triuolous questions, which breede strife rather then godly edifying which is by faith. For there is not so short a Chapter in the Bible, vpo which the former mooueth not aboue eight score questions: wherevpon his volumes grow to that bignesse, that one contracting his Commentary vpon *S. Mat.* and drawing it into an Epitome, yet could not scabridge it, but that it contained aboue a thousand pages in folio in the largest volume, & small character. The other is so short with his 12. volumes vpon the euangelists, that he might well haue

contra-

is. i. v. c.
2. i. p. l. v. c.
3. i. v. c.

Heidan. lib. 6.

Coster. Ench.
controuersie. 1.

Sacram. lib. 7.
cap. 22.

Sext. Senenf.
in prefat. in
Bib.

1. Tim. 1. 4.

Sext. Sen. Bibl.
lib. 4.

Petrus Xime-
nes Episc.
Cassanens.

The Epistle Dedicatorie.

contracted leaues into lines, and lines into letters. Which tedious discourses, and inopportune excursions from the text, serue for no other end but to cast a mist before the eyes of the reader, and draw (as it were) the veile of *Moses* ouer his face so that he cannot see the meaning of the holy Ghost. Others on the contrarie are too short, and compendious, offending as much in breuitie, as the former in prolixitie: by name, *Emmanuel Sa* the Iesuit, whose Commentaries vpon the Bible are shorter then the text it selfe, like to those of *Apollinaris*, of whom *Ierom* writeth, that a man which readeth them, would thinke he read *Contents of chapters*, rather then *Commentaries*. But as for the manner, the literall sense (which our author here followeth) is the onely sense intended by the Spirit of God: the Allegoricall, Tropologicall, Anagogicall, beeing but seuerall vses and application thereof: For the Scripture (consisting in the sense not in the letters) is profitable to teach, and improoue, as *Paul* saith: whereas from the Allegoricall sense no necessarie argument can be taken (as their own doctors confesse) either to confirme or confute any point of doctrine: and therefore much lesse from the Tropologicall, or Anagogicall. And as for the measure, in regard of breuitie or prolixity, the golden meane hath alway beene iudged by the learned to be the best, which is not onely to giue the bare meaning paraphrastically, but to make collection of doctrine & application of vses; yet briefly, rather pointing at the chiefe, then dwelling long vpon any point. Some are of opinion that a Commentor is onely to giue the literal sense of the place, without making further vse of application or instruction: To which I could easily subscribe, if all the Lords people could prophesie, or if all were able to handle the word of God, the sword of the spirit: For as to an expert Musitian who is acquainted with the concords or rules of discant, it is as good a direction to haue onely the ground as if he had euery point pricked out vnto him, being inured to the diuision vpon euery point, as it falleth out in the ground: So to him that is acquainted with the word of God, a short & concise handling of the Scripture, may be as good a direction as if euery point were discoursed at large. But because all readers are not strong men in Christ, some being but babes, who must haue euery thing minced, and cut final vnto them before they can receiue it Neither all teachers expert, and prompt Scribes, like to *Ezra*, nor mightie in the Scripture as *Apollos*, such as are able to diuide the word aright, and applie it fitly as they ought: (Some being deceitfull workemen peruerting it to their owne destruction, in pressing the two dugges of the Scripture, the Old and New Testament, that in steed of milke, they suck nothing

2. Cor. 3.

Non tam
Commenta-
rios quam in-
dicia capitule-
rum. Hieron.
proem. in 1.
Comment. in
Esa.
2. Tim. 2. 16.
Symbolica
Theologia
non est argu-
mentum.
Thom.

2. Cor. 11. 13.
Volusian. ad
Nicol. 1.

The Epistle Dedicatorie.

2. Pet. 2. 16.

but bloud: Others, *unskilfull*, casting wild Coloquintida into the net of the childre of the prophets, being too hally to learne, & too ignorant to know of themselves, what they should haue gathered.) Therefore to help the ignorance of the one, and hinder the malice of the other (and so to profit the most) beside the meaning, he hath briefly drawne out such doctrines as naturally arise from the text, shewing withall how they ought to be applied for confutation, correction, instruction, consolation. Which he hath done with such dexterity (artificially matching together two things, heretofore infociable, *Brevity*, and *Perspicuity*) that the like (I take it) hath not bin performed heretofore by any Expositor vpon this Epistle: which we may well call the key of the new Testament, in that it handleth the weightiest points of doctrine, whether we consider the necessary knowledgethereof, or the controversies of these times. Therefore *Luther* after he had once publickly expounded it, toke it in hand againe, and interpreted it the second time, beginning (as himselfe saith) where he ended, according to the saying of *Syracides*, *When a man hath done what he can, he must beginne againe.* Which Commentary, seeing it hath found such good intertainement amongst vs, beeing but a forrainer, and hauing lost much of his strength, and taken winde by changing from language to language, as wine from one vessell to another: I doubt not but this, beeing a free denizen, will find the like fauour and acceptance, the rather, if it will please your Honour to vouchsafe it your countenance: To whose protection and patronage I here commed it, as *S Luke* did his Histories to the most noble *Theophilus*: desiring hereby to testifie my humble duty vnto your Honour, and my thankfulness to God for the riches of his grace bestowed vpon you in the mystery of the Gospell, for your zeale of Gods glory, your loue of the truth, and of all those that vnfaignedly embrace the truth.

1. Sam. 2. 30.

And thus fearing to hinder the course of your more serious cogitations & actions, I humbly take my leaue: Desiring the Lord, who hath promised to honour those that honour him, that as hee hath made you Honourable in your noble progenitors, so he would make you thrise Honourable in your future successors, and long continue you a notable instrument vnder his Highnes, of the peace and welfare of your country, as hitherto he hath done, accomplishing all your desires for present prosperity and future felicity. From *Emmanuel* colledge in Cambridge: August. 10 1604.

Your Honours most humbly deuoted

Rafe Cudworth.

To



TO THE COVRTE- ous Reader.



Heere offer to thy view (gentle Reader) a Comment,
and a Supplement: the Comment begun by an ex-
cellent workman, and drawne in excellent proportion,
in all points suting to the analogie of faith, and the
doctrine of the Orthodoxe Fathers of the Church,
being the substance of his three yeares Lectures upon
the Lords day. If his former workes either of posi-
tive Divinitie in sundry of his Treatises, or Contro-
uersall Divinitie in his Reformed Catholique, or Case-Divinitie in his
Cases of Conscience, haue ministred any comfort vnto thee, or giuen thee
content: I doubt not but these Commentaries will abundantly satisfie thy
expectation. For (to omit the varietie of matter) as also the breuitie and
admirable perspicuitie, in regard of the manner, being the chiefe commen-
dation of Oecumenius, or any Interpreter) in them as in a mirror thou
mayest more clearely see his knowledge in the mysterie of Christ; and his ^{Ephes. 2. 14.}
dexteritie in exemplifying that by practise which hee had formerly taught
by * precept, then in any of his writings besides: as hauing a double eminency * In his Pro-
aboue the rest. First, in that they were penned the last of all his workes, being phetica.
come to ripenesse of iudgement: and that vpon mature deliberation after
his Sermons, (as his manner was.) Secondly, in that they were written with
his owne hand, whereas all his other writings (except some short Treatises)
were taken by some diligent auditors, and persued by himselfe. Herein re- Gal. 6. 11.
sembling the Epistle it selfe, which was written with Pauls owne hand: all
the rest (except that short one to Philemon) by his scribes. And as they doe Philem. v. 18.
exceed his other writings, so I might say (perhaps more truly then discreetly)
that they surpasse in this kind all the moderne writers that haue gone before
the: so that he which wil vouchsafe to reade them, shal not greatly need nor
desire any other interpreter vpon this Scripture: the which I speake not as
esteeming of Antiquitie no better worth then to be put vnder a bushell, that
Nouelise might be set vpon the candlestick: but for that I see not, but that
Iohn Baptist the last of all the prophets, was as goodly a burning & shining Iohn 5. 35.
candle, as any of the rest: & that he pointed forth Christ more distinctly then Iohn 1. 36.
the rest. But I hope I shall not need to vse many wordes in commendation
either

To the Reader.

either of the workes, or of the Authour, being so well knowne and sufficiently commended by others, for soundnes of doctrine, and integrity of life: which (whilest he was living) did parallel each other, his doctrine being a patterne of his life, and his life a counterpaine of his doctrine. And now being dead, his savory writings which he hath left behinde him, breathing forth (as it were) the sweet smell of a sanctified spirit (like a field which the Lord hath blessed) hath got him a name neuer to be forgotten: which giveth him after his death a second life.

I am further to aduertise thee (good Reader) that there were some places in the originall copy, to which the Authour would (no doubt) have given some review and correction, if God had drawne out the line of his life but a little longer: which I have siled and polished according to my poore skill, though very sparingly, in such places onely as were obscure, or had any phrase of doubtfull construction, or otherwise seemed to be mistaken: pointing and interlining the rest to fit it for the Presse. It may be my unskilfull handling of them hath deprived them of their due lustre, yet sure I am it hath given them no tincture.

Toucking the Supplement: it was my purpose at the first to have made a supply of that which was wanting, out of the Authors owne writings, as it hath bene done in Aquinas Summes & others: but afterwards perceiuing that his workes already extant, would not affoord mee sufficient matter to furnish out that Argument, I was inforced to take another course, and to make a supply with conuerser stuffe of mine owne, as I could. Which if it shall seeme not to suite the forme in all points, I shall desire thee to consider that it is not so easie a matter for Asclepiodorus accustomed to draw with a cole or chalke onely, to finish a picture begun by Apelles with so curious a pensill: and that it is an argument wherein (I confesse) I have not bene so much conuersant as perhaps in some other: neither chosen out of purpose to make ostentation of wit, reading, or invention: but left as a necessary task to bee performed by some for the perfecting of the work, & the good of the Church: (if this poore mee may confer any thing to the treasury of the Lords Temple.) And thus hoping that these respects may entreat for a friendly acceptance at thy hand, and that thou wilt affoord me thy good word for my good will, and a favourable construction for my paines: I commend it to the blessing of the Almighty, and thee to his gracious protection, vnfainedly wishing to thee as to my selfe, the mercy of God in Christ Iesus. Auguil. 10.

Thine in the Lord Iesus,

R. C.

THE EPISTLE
OF S. PAUL TO

5

THE GALATIANS.

THE ARGUMENT.

10 **T**wo things are generally to be considered, the occasion of this Epistle, and the scope. The occasion that moved Paul to write this Epistle was, because certaine false Apostles slandered him both in respect of his calling, as also in respect of his doctrine; teaching that hee was no Apostle, and that his doctrine was false. And by this meanes they seduced the Churches of Galatia perswading them that iustification and saluation was
 15 partly by Christ and partly by the Law. The scope of the Epistle is in three things. First the Apostle defends his calling in the first and second Chapters. Secondly, he defends the truth of his doctrine, teaching iustification by Christ alone. And upon this occasion he handles the greatest question in the world, Namely, what is that iustice whereby a sinner stands righteous before God,
 20 in the 3. and 4. and in the beginning of the fifth. Thirdly, he prescribes rules of good life in the fifth and sixth Chapters.

1 Paul an Apostle (not of men, nor by man, but by Iesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him from the dead.)

25



THE Epistle hath three parts, a Preface, an Inscription, and the Conclusion. The Preface is in the five first verses: and it hath two parts, an Inscription, and a Salutation.

30

The inscription lets downe the persons that write the Epistle, and the persons to whom it is sent. The persons that write are two; Paul and the Brethren.

Paul is mentioned in the first verse. In which, in comely and decent manner he commends himselfe to the Galatians by his office and function [an Apostle] that is, one called to be a planter & founder of the Church of the new Testament among the nations. And because the title of an Apostle in generall signification may agree to all teachers, therefore he goes further, and lets downe the cause of his Apostleship. And first he remoues the false causes in these
 40 word [not of men] that is, not called by men as by authors of my calling, or not called by the authoritie of men. And in this Paul opposeth

poseth himselfe to the false Apostles, who were called not by God, but by men. Againe he saith [*not by man*] that is, not called of God in and by the ministry of any meere man. And in this *Paul* opposeth himselfe to all ordinary ministers of the Gospel whatsoever, who are called of God by man. This done, he propounds the true cause and author of his Apostleship, of whom he was called immediately. Against this it may bee objected, that *Paul* was ordained to be an Apostle by the imposition of hands of the Church of Antioch. I answer, that this imposition was rather a confirmation then a calling. Secondly, they of Antioch had not imposed hands on *Paul*, but that they were commanded by the spirit of God. Further *Paul* addes that he was called by Christ [*and God the father*] for three causes. The first, was to signifie the consent of will in the Father & Christ. The second was to teach vs how wee are to conceiue of God, namely that he is the Father, and Iesus Christ, and the holy Ghost: for the Godhead may not be conceiued out of the Trinitie of persons. The third is, because the Father is the fountaine of all good things that come to vs by Christ. Lastly, he sets down the effect or action of the Father [*who raised him from the dead*] & that for two causes. One was to prooue Christ to be the natural Sonne of God, for he professed himselfe to be so: & that was one cause why he was crucified and put to death. Now when he was dead, if hee had not bin the Son of God indeed, he had neuer risen againe but perished in death. And in that the Father raised him againe to life, he gaue testimony that he was his owne naturall Son. And therefore *Paul* saith that *Christ was declared to be the Sonne of God by the resurrection from the dead*: and hee applies the wordes of the Psalme, (*thou art my sonne this day haue I begotten thee*) to the time of Christs resurrection. Againe, *Paul* mentions the resurrection of Christ, to note the time of his owne calling: for though the rest of the Apostles were called when Christ was in the estate of humiliation, yet *Paul* was called afterwards, when Christ was entred into his kingdome, and sate at the right hand of his Father.

Rom. I. 5.

Act. 13. 33.

Rom. 10. 14.

1. Cor. 16. 15
and so.

The vse. First, wheras *Paul* in the very forefront of his Epistle, begins with his owne calling, I gather, that euery minister of the Gospel ought to haue a good and lawful calling. A man cannot preach vnles he be sent. Christ took not vnto him the office of a Mediator til he was called and sent of the Father. Therefore the opinion of the Anabaptists is foolish and fantastlicall, who thinke that euery man may preach that wil without any special calling. They alledge that the house of *Stephanas* ordained themselves to the ministry of the Saints. Answer, the meaning of the place is not that they called themselves,

selues, but that they set themselves apart to the ministerie of the Saints, in the purpose and resolution of their owne hearts. Againe they alledge, that all Christians in the new Testament are Kings and Priests, and the office of the Priest is to teach. I answer, all are Priests in that they are to offer themselves in sacrifice to God: and to teach priuaty within their places and callings, as the master his seruants, the father his children, &c. and to make a confession of their faith, when they are called so to doe. Thirdly, they alledge, that the power of the keyes is giuen to the Church. I answer, it is indeed; yet so as the vse and administration thereof belongs to the Ministers alone, in the dispensation of the word.

Secondly, whereas *Paul* saith (*Not of men, but of Christ*) I gather that euery lawfull calling is of God, and not of men as authours thereof: and that the right to call belongs to God. The Father thrusts forth labourers into his vineyard: the Sonne giues Pastors and teachers: the holy Ghost makes ouerseers. It may be alledged that the Church hath authoritie to call and ordaine Ministers. I answer, that the Churches authoritie is no more but a ministerie or seruice, whereby it doeth testifie, declare, and approoue whom God hath called.

Thirdly, whereas *Paul* thus proclaimes his calling, (*Paul an Apostle of Iesus Christ*) I gather that the callings of the Ministers of the Gospel must be manifest to their owne consciences, & the consciences of their hearers, and that for diuers weighty causes. First, they are embassadors, instruments, and the mouth of God: and for this cause they are to speak in the name of God, & this they cannot do, vnlesse they know themselves to be called. Secondly, that the calling of the ministry may tend to edification, there is required the assistance of Gods spirit in the teacher, the protection of him & his ministry, the effectuall operation of the spirit in the hearts of the hearers. And hee that wants the assurance of his calling, cannot pray to God in faith for these things: neither can hee apply the promises of God to himselfe. Thirdly, the knowledge of our callings breeds conscience of our duties, diligence, and the feare of God. Lastly, knowledge of our callings in the consciences of the hearers, breeds a reuerence in their hearts, and obedience to the ministerie of the word. Vpon this, some may demaund, how they may knowe that they are called of God to the ministerie of the word. Answer: they may know it, if they finde three things in themselves: the first is the testimony of their consciences, that they entred not for praise, honour, lucre, but in the feare of God, with a desire to glorifie him, and to edifie the Church.

The

The second is a facultie to do that to which they haue a desire and will. In this facultie are two things, knowledge of God and his wayes, and aptnesse to deliuer that which they know. The third is the Ordination of the Church, which approoues and giues testimony of their wil and abilitie. He that hath these things, is certainly called of God. Now put the case, a man wants the first of these three, because he entred with euill conscience, being caried with ambitious and couetous desires: then I answer, that his calling still in respect of the Church, is good and lawfull, and when he repents of his bad conscience, it is also accepted of God.

The fourth point to be obserued is, that Paul makes three kinds of callings in the Church. One is when men are called by men, and not by God: and thus are all false teachers called. The second is, when men are called of God by the ministry of men: thus are all ordinary Ministers of the word called. The third is, when men are called not by men, but by Christ immediatly. And *Paul* heere signifieth, that he himselfe and the rest of the Apostles were called according to this third way. And in this respect hee puts a difference betweene the Apostles, and all the Ministers of the new Testament. For in that they were called immediatly, they were also brought by immediate inspiration, and also aided by the infallible assistance of Gods spirit. And of all this they had promises, *Matt. 10. 19, 20. Luke 10. 16.* Hence we may gather the certaintie of our religion. The essentiall note of the Church is faith: faith stands in relation to the word of God: and the word of God is no word unto vs, vnlesse we know it to be so: and we know it to be so, because it was written by the Apostles, who in preaching and writing could not erre. Secondly, hence I gather, that the doctrine of the Apostles is the immediate word of God, because it was giuen by inspiration both for matter and wordes: whereas the doctrine of the Church in Sermons, and the decrees of Councils is both the word of God and the word of man: The word of God, as it agrees with the writings of the Apostles and Prophets: the word of man, as it is defectiue, and as it is propounded in tearmes deuised by man. It may be objected, that *Paul* spake some things of himselfe, and not from the Lord, *1. Cor. 7. 12. Not the Lord, but I.* Answer: the meaning is, Not the Lord by any expresse commaundement, but I by collection and interpretation of Scripture, and that by the assistance of Gods spirit, *v. 40.* Seeing then the writings of the Apostles are the immediate and meere word of God, they must be obeyed as if they had bene written without man by the finger of God.

Lastly,

Lastly, seeing it is the propertie of an Apostle to be called immediately by Iesus Christ, hence it followes, that the authoritie, office, and function of Apostles ceased with them, and did not passe by succession to any other. Therefore it is a falshood that the Pope of Rome succeeds *Peter* in Apostolicall authoritie, and in the infallible assistance of the spirit, when he is in his Consistory.

And where *Paul* saith he was called by Iesus Christ, and not by man, that is, meere man, he gives a pregnant testimony that Christ is both God and man.

And whereas *Paul* was called by Christ raised from the dead, hence I gather the dignitie of the Apostle *Paul* aboue all other Apostles, in that he was called after the resurrection of Christ, when he was entred into his kingdome.

The Text.

2. And all the brethren that are with mee, to the Churches of Galatia.

The Exposition.

By brethren wee are to vnderstand such as separated themselves from the Pagans, and receiued the faith of Christ, 1. Cor. 5. 11. And heere more specially such as taught and professed the faith, that is, both Pastors and people, whether of Antioch (as some thinke) or of Rome, as others.

And *Paul* writes his Epistle as well in their names as in his owne, and with their consent, for two causes. One was, that hee might not bee thought to deliuer any priuate doctrine deuised of his owne head. And this care he had alwayes: and therefore taught nothing but that which was in the writings of *Moses* and the Prophets, *Actes* 26. 22. And this was the care of Christ: who saith, *My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me, Ioh. 7. 16.* And at this day, this must be the care of the Ministers of the Gospel, to deliuer nothing of their owne. First, therefore their doctrines must be founded in the writings of the Prophets and Apostles: and secondly, that they may be sure of this, they must haue the consent of the true Church, specially of such as haue beene the restorers of the Gospell in this last age. This rule *Paul* gives to *Timothie*, to continue in the things which he had learned of *Paul* and the rest of the Apostles, 2. Tim. 3. 14. Hence it appeares to be a fault in sundry private persons, when they reade the Scriptures, to gather private opinions, to broach them to the world. This practise hath beene the foundation of heresies and schismes in the Church.

Secondly, *Paul* writes with consent, that hee might the better moue

mooue and perswade the Galatians to receiue his doctrine which he is now to deliuer.

Hence it appeares, that the Consent of Pastors and people is of great excellency. For the better conceiuing of it, and the meaning of the text, I will handle three points. The first is, what is the force of consent? wherein stands it? and where it is now to be found? For the first: Consent is of force to prepare the heart, and to mooue it to beleue: as *Augustine* saith, *I had not beleueed the Gospell, except the authoritie of the Church had mooued me.* And this is all it can doe. For it is the word, that is the obiekt and the cause of our faith: the word it selfe workes in vs that faith whereby it is beleueed. And *Paul* in this place vseth consent, not to worke a faith in the Galatians, but onely to stirre vp a liking of his doctrine. Two errors of the Church of Rome must here be auoided. One, that Consent is a certaine marke of the Church. It is false: for Consent may be among the wicked, in the kingdome of Antichrist, *Reuel.* 13. 16. In the kingdome of darkenesse, all is in peace. Againe, dissention may be among the godly; as betweene *Paul* and *Barnabas*. *Paul* and *Peter*: in the church of Corinth there were schismes *1. Cor.* 11. Consent therefore simply, vlesse it be ioyned with true faith and true doctrine, is not of force to declare vnto vs the true Church. The second error is that the catholike consent of beleeuers in points of religion is the true and liuely scripture, and that the written word is but a dead letter to it, and to be iudged by it for his sense and meaning. But all is contrary. For the written word is the first, and perfect patterne of the minde and will of God: and the inward consent of the hearts of men, is but a rude and imperfect extract, and draught of it.

The second point is wherein stands this consent? It must haue his foundation in Christ, and thence flow to the members, as the oyle from *Aarons* head, to his garments, *Psal.* 133. and it stands in three things, consent in one faith and doctrine: consent in affection, whereby men be of one heart, *Act.* 2. 47. consent in speech, *1. Cor.* 1. 10.

The third point is where it is now to be found? The Papists say that they haue true and perfect consent among themselues, and that Fathers and Councells be on their side: and that we haue no consent among our selues. I answer first, that they haue not the consent which they pretend, for the proper points of Popery were not knowne to the Apostles nor to the Apostolicall Churches, but were taken vp in the ages following by little and little. Secondly, such doctrines as the Papists make articles of faith, are but opinions

ons and coniectures in the fathers & Councils. Thirdly, the things which the Papistes hold, are the same peradventure in name, but they are not the same indeed with that which the fathers hold, neither are they holden in the same maner: as for example, the purgatory which the fathers hold, is a thing far different from the purgatory of the Papists, and so all the rest. Of consent they may brag, but they cannot shew it. As for our selues, wee all consent in the foundation of religion. There is difference about the descent of Christ into hell. The thing we all hold, namely a descent: the difference is in the manner, whether it be virtually or locally. There is difference about the paines of Christ in his agony and passion: yet all acknowledge the infinite merite and efficacie of the death of Christ. There is difference about the gouernment of the visible Church on earth. For the substance of gouernement all agree, but for the maner of execution and administration, they doe not. That Christ is present in the Eucharist, & that his body and blood is there to bee eaten and drunken, all our churches agree: and the difference is onely touching the manner of his presence, namely, whether it be spirituall or locall. And this is the mercy of God, that in all our differences the foundation of religion is not rased. Let vs pray for the continuance, and increase of this consent.

Thus much of the persons that write: now follow the churches to which the Epistle is sent [*to the Churches of Galatia.*] At this time the Galatians had made a revolt, and were fallen from iustification by the obedience of Christ: so as Paul was afraid of them, *Chap. 4.* and yet he called them Churches still, vntill great meekenesse and moderation. His example must wee follow in giuing iudgement of churches of our time. And that we may the better doe this, and the better relieue our consciences, marke three rules. The first is, that we must rightly consider of the faults of the Churches. Some are faults in manners, some in doctrine. If the faults of the church bee in manners, and these faults appeare both in the liues of ministers & people, so long as true religion is taught, it is a church, and so to be esteemed: and the ministers must be heard, *Mat. 23. 1*. Yet may we separate from the priuate company of bad men in the church, *1. Cor. 5. 11* and, if it be in our libertie and choise, ioine to Churches better ordered. If the error be in doctrine, we must first consider whether the whole church erre, or some few therein. If the error be in some, and not in all, it remains a Church still, as Corinth did, where some denied the resurrection; because a Church is named of the better part. Secondly, wee must consider whether the church erre in the foundation or no: if the error or errors be beside

the foundation of religion, *Paul* hath given the sentence that they which build vpon the foundation hay and stubble of erroneous opinion may be saued, 1. *Cor.* 3. 15. Thirdly, inquiry must bee made whether the Church erre of humane frailtie, or of obllinacy. If it erre of frailty, though the error be in the foundation, yet it is still a Church, as appears by the example of the Galatians. Yet if a church shal erre in the foundation openly, and obllinatly, it separates from Christ, and ceaseth to be a Church, and wee may separate from it and may giue iudgement that it is no Church. When the Iewes resisted the preaching of *Paul*, and had nothing to say but to raile, *Paul* then separated the church of Ephesus, and Rome from them, *Act.* 19. 8. & 28. 28. It may here be demaunded, why *Paul* writes to the Galatians as brethren and calls them Churches, seeing they haue erred in the foundation, and are as he saith, vers 6. remooued to another Gospell. I answer, he could doe no otherwise. If a priuate man shall erre, he must first bee admonished, and then the Church must be told of it. If he heare not the Church, then iudgement may bee giuen that he is as a Publican & not before: much more then, if the Church shall erre, there must first be an examination of the error, and then sufficient conuiction: and after conuiction, followes the censure vpon the Church, and iudgement then may be giuen, and not before. And *Paul* had now only begun in this Epistle to admonish the Church of Galatia. Great therefore is the rashnes, and want of moderation in many, that haue bene of vs, that condemne our Church for no church, without sufficient conuiction going before. If they say that we haue bene admonished by bookes published: I say againe, there be grosser faults in some of those bookes, then any of the faults that they reprocue in the Church of England: and therefore the bookes are not fit to conuince, specially a Church.

And though *Paul* call the Galatians Churches of God, yet may we not hence gather, that the church of Rome is a church of God. The name it may haue; but it doeth in truth openly, and obllinately oppugne the manifest principles of Christian religion.

If any demaund what these Chuches of Galatia are? I answer, that they were a people of Asia the lesse: and though they were famous Churches in the dayes of the Apostle, yet now the Countrey is vnder the dominion of the Turke. This shewes, what God might haue done to vs in England long agoe for the contempt of the Gospell. This againe shewes, what desolation will befall vs vnlesse we repent, and bring foorth better fruites of the Gospell.

3 Grace bee with you and peace from God the Father, and from our Lord Iesus Christ.

4 Who gaue ———

5 Here is laid downe the second part of the Preface, which is the Salutation propounded in the forme of a prayer, *Grace and peace, &c.* Grace here mentioned is not any gift in man, but grace is Gods, and in God. And it signifies his gracious fauour and good will, whereby he is well pleased with his elect, in, and for Christ. Thus
10 Paul distinguisheth the grace of God from the gift that is by grace, *Rom. 5. v. 15.* and sets grace before the gift as the cause of it. Heere comes the error of the Papists to be confuted, which teacheth that the grace which makes vs gratefull to God, is the infused gift of holinesse and charity: wheras indeed we are not first sanctified, and
15 then please God: but first we please God by grace in Christ, and then vpon this we are sanctified, and indued with charitie.

Peace is a gift not in God, but in vs: and it hath three parts. The first is peace of conscience, which is a quietnesse and tranquility of minde, arising of a sense and apprehension of reconciliation with
20 God, *Rom. 5. v. 1.* The second is peace with the creatures: and it hath five branches. The first is peace with Angels, for man is redeemed by Christ, and by meanes of this redemption, sinfull man is reconciled to good Angels, *Coloss. 1. 20.* The second is, peace with the godly, who are all made of one heart and minde, *1 Ias. 11. 9.* The third
25 is, peace with our selues: and that is a conformitie of the will, affections, and inclinations of mans nature to the renewed minde. The fourth is, peace in respect of our enemies. For the decree of God is, *Touch not mine anointed, and doe my Prophets no harme.* Againe, *All things turne to the good of them, that loue God.* The fift is, peace
30 with the beasts of the field. God makes a couenant with them for his people, *Ose. 2. 18.* The creatures desire and wait for the deliuerance of Gods children, *Rom. 8.* They that trust in God, shall walke vpon the Lion and the Basiliske, *Psal. 91.*

*Psal. 105. 15.
Rom. 8. 28.*

The third part of peace, is prosperitie and good successe: what-
35 soeuer the righteous man doeth, it prospers. And all things prospered in the house of Potipher, when Ioseph was his steward, because he feared God, *Gene. 39. 1, 2.*

To proceed, Paul sets downe the causes of grace and peace, and they are two God the Father, and Iesus Christ. And heere it must
40 bee remembred, that the Father and Christ, as they are one God, they are but one cause: and yet in regard of the maner of working, they are two distinct causes. For the Father giues grace from none

but himselfe, by the Son; and Christ procures grace and peace, and he giues it vnto men from the Father. Furthermore Christ is described by his propriety, *Our Lord*, and by his effects in the next verse.

The vse. Whereas *Paul* begins his praier with grace, we learne that Grace in God is the first cause and beginning of all good things in vs. Election is of grace, *Rom. 11. v. 5.* Vocation to God is of grace, *2. Tim. 1. 9* Faith is of grace, *Phil. 1. 29.* Iustification is freely by grace, *Rom. 3. 24.* Loue is by grace, *1. Iohn 4. 9.* Every good inclination is of grace, *Phil. 2. 13.* Every good worke is of grace, *Ezech. 36. 27* *Ephe. 2. 10.* Life euermore is of grace, *Rom. 6. 23.* To auoide any euill is the least good, and every good is of God. It may be said, that will in man is the cause and beginning of some good things. Answer: In the creating or imprinting of the first grace in the heart, will is no cause at all, but a subiect to receiue the grace giuen. After the first grace is giuen, will is an agent in the receiuing of the second grace, and in the doing of any good worke. Yet this must be remembred, that when the will is an agent, it is no more but an instrument of grace, and grace in God is properly the first, middle, and last cause of grace in vs, & of every good acte. Hence it followes, that there bee not any meritorious works that serue to prepare men to their iustification: and that the cooperation of mans wil with grace in the act of conuersion, whereby we are conuerted of God, is but a fiction of the braine of man. Lastly, this doctrine is the foundation of humilitie: for it teacheth vs to ascribe all to grace and nothing to our selues.

Secondly we learne, that the chief good things to bee sought for, are the fauour of God in Christ, and the peace of a good conscience. Consider the example of *Dauid*, *Psal. 4. v. 7.* & *Psal. 73. v. 24, 25.* and of *Paul*, who accounted all things dung for grace and peace in Christ. And the peace of good conscience is as a guard to keepe our hearts and mindes in Christ. *Phil. 4. 7.* The fault of most men is, They spend their dayes and their strength in seeking riches, honors, pleasures: and they think not on grace & peace. After the maner of bealls, they vse the blessings of God, but they look not at the cause; namely, the grace of God. Our dutie. Aboue all things to seeke for grace & peace. The reason: true happines, which all men desire, consists in peace, and is founded in grace: they are said to be happie & blessed that mourne, & suffer persecution for iustices sake, *Matt. 5.* because in the midlt of their sorrowes & miseries they haue the fauour of God, & the peace of good conscience.

Thirdly, in that grace and peacc are ioyned, we learne, that peace without grace is no peace. *There is no peace to the wicked, saith my God, Isa. 57. last.* They which make a couenant with hell & death, are

are soonest destroyed, *Isai. 28. 18. Laughter (saith Salomon) is madness:* namely, when it is severed from grace and peace. *When men say, peace peace, then comes destruction, 1. Thess. 5.* The prosperitie of the men of this world, ends in perdition, *reade Psal. 73.*

5 *Paul* saith not simply that grace and peace comes from God, but from God the Father, and from Iesus Christ: that hee may teach vs rightly to acknowledge and worship God. For God is to be acknowledged and worshipped in the Father, in Christ, and in the holy Spirit. It was the fault of the Pagans, and it is the fault
10 of sundrie Christians to worship an absolute God, without the Father, and without Christ. This fault must be amended, for it turnes God to an Idol.

Again when *Paul* saith, that grace proceeds first from the Father, and secondly from Iesus Christ: he sets down the order which
15 God obserueth in the communication of grace and peace. The Father is the fountaine of grace, & giues it from none but from himselfe. Christ againe is (as it were) a conduit or pipe, to conuay grace from the Father to vs. *Of his fulnesse we receiue grace for grace, Iohn 1. In him we are complete, Col. 2.* Election, Iustification, Saluation, & all
20 is done in, and by Christ, *2. Tim. 1. 9.* The vs. I. Let them that trauel vnder the burden of a bad conscience, and a bad life, come to Christ by turning from their sinnes, & by beleeuing in him, and they shall obtaine grace, and find rest to their soules. II. In our miseries our hearts may not be troubled ouermuch, but we must alwaies moderate our sorrowes. For if we beleue in Christ, we shall alwaies haue
25 grace & peace. *Reade Iob. 14. 27.* III. We must moderate our cares for this life. For if we trusting in Christ, haue grace and peace, wee shall want nothing, *reade Psal. 4. v. 6, 7.*

Iesus Christ that giues grace and peace, is called, *our Lord* for two
30 causes. One is to teach vs to acknowledge Christ aright, and that is as well to acknowledge him to be our Lord, as well as our Saviour. He is a Priest to procure life, a prophet to teach the way of life, a Lord to command them to walke in the way of life. The fault of our times: All men professe Christ: yet many allow of no Christ,
35 but of their owne deuiling: namely, a Christ that must bee a Saviour to deliuer them from hell, but not a Lord to command them; that they cannot brooke. The second cause why Christ is called *our Lord*, is to signifie the persons to whom grace and peace belong, and they are such as acknowledge Christ for their Lord, and yeeld
40 subiection to him in heart & life. They find rest to their soules, that take vp the yoke of Christ in new obedience, and the patient bearing of the Crosse, *Matth. 11. v. 29.*

4. Who gaue himselfe for our sinnes, that he might deliuer us out of this present euill world, according to the will of God our Father.

5. To whom be glorie for euer and euer, Amen.

5

In these wordes the second argument is propounded, whereby Christ is described, namely the effect of Christ, which is, *that hee gaue himselfe*. And hee is said to giue himselfe for two causes. First, because he presented himselfe as a price and sacrifice for sinne to God the Father, *Matth. 20. 28. Ephes. 5. 2. 1. Tim. 2. 6.* The second, 10 because he did publikely propound and set foorth himselfe to the world, as a sacrifice and price of redemption. *Rom. 3. 25. Iohn 3. 14. and Actes 4. 12.*

In this giuing there are fise things to be considered. The first, the giuer, Christ: the second, the thing giuen, and that is Christ 15 himselfe. The third is, the end of his giuing, for sin, that is, that hee might make satisfaction for our sinnes. The fourth is, another end of his giuing, that hee might deliuer vs out of this present euill world. Here the present world signifies the corrupt estate of men, that liue according to the lusts of their owne hearts, *1. Iohn 2. 16.* 20 And men are here said to be deliuered and taken out of the world, when they are seuered from the condition of sinfull men by sanctification and newnes of life, and by diuine protection, whereby they are preserued from euill after they are sanctified, *Ti. 2. 14. and Iohn 17. 15.* And this deliuerance is not in this life in respect of 25 place, but in respect of *qualitie*. The fift thing, is the cause that moued Christ to giue himselfe, and that is the will of God.

In the fifth verse there is set downe a corollary or conclusion, which containes the praise of God.

The vse followes. Whereas Christ is the giuer of himselfe, 30 hence it followes that his death and sacrifice was voluntarie. And this he shewed in two things. When he was to bee attached, hee fled not, but went to a garden in the mount, as his custome was, which was knowne to *Iudas*, *Iohn 18. 2.* And in the very separation of body and soule, hee cried with a loude and strong voice, 35 which argued that he was Lord of death, and died because his will was to die. This must be remembred. For otherwise his death had not bene a satisfaction for sinne.

In that Christ gaue himselfe to be a sacrifice, wee learne many things. First, that the worke of redemption exceeds the worke 40 of creation. For in the creation, Christ gaue the creatures to man; in the redemption he gaue himselfe, and that as a sacrifice. Secondly,

ly, in that he gaue himselfe, it appeares that he gaue neither Angel,
 nor meere man, nor any thing out of himselfe; and that all merits
 of life, and satisfactions for sinne, are to be reduced to the person of
 Christ: and consequently that there be no humane satisfactions for
 5 sin, nor meritorious works done by vs: because they pertaine not
 to the person of Christ, but to our persons: and they were neuer
 offered of Christ vnto God as merits and satisfactions, because he
 gaue nothing but himselfe, and the things which appertained vnto
 10 his owne person. Thirdly, in that Christ giues himselfe, wee must
 take, and receiue him with lingring hearts. Nay he is to suffer vio-
 lence of vs, and the violent are to take him to themselves. Lastly,
 in that he giues himselfe to vs, we againe must giue our bodies and
 soules vnto him in way of thankfulness, and dedicate all that
 wee haue or can doe to the good of men. The creatures at our ta-
 15 bles present vs with their bodies: and so must we present our bodies
 and soules to God.

The first end of this giuing is, that Christ might be a sacrifice
 & ranfome for sin. The knowedge of this point is of great vse. First,
 it works loue in vs on this maner. We must in mind & meditation
 20 come to the crosse of Christ. Vpon the crosse wee are to behold
 Christ crucified, and in his death and passion, his sacrifice, in his sa-
 crifice for the sins of his enemies, his endlesse loue: and the conside-
 ration of this loue will moue vs to loue him againe, and the Father
 in him. Secondly, the consideration of his endlesse paines for our
 25 sinnes in the sacrifice of himselfe, must breed in vs a godly sorrow
 for them; for if he sorrow for them, much more we. Thirdly, this
 knowledge is the true beginning of amendement of life. For if
 Christ gaue himselfe to redeeme vs from iniquitie, wee must take
 vp a purpose of not sinning, and neuer wittingly sinne more. Last-
 30 ly, this knowledge is the foundation of comfort in them that true-
 ly turne to Christ. For the price is paid for their sinnes: and they
 which are eased of their sinnes are blessed, *Psalm 32. 1.* And in temp-
 tation, they may boldly oppose the satisfaction of Christ against
 hell, death, the law, and the iudgement of God: and if at any time
 35 they sinne, they must recover themselves and remember that they
 haue an Advocate with the Father, *Iesus Christ the iust, 1. Iohn 2. 1.*

And whereas *Paul* saith, that *Christ gaue himselfe for our sinnes*, he
 teacheth that euery man must apply this gift and sacrifice of Christ
 to himselfe. This applying is done by faith: and the right maner
 40 of application is this. Wee must turne to Christ, and in turning by
 faith apply: and when wee apply Christ by faith, wee must withall
 turne. Faith goeth before conuersion in order of nature, yet in

the order of teaching, and practise, they are both together. They which use to apply Christ and his benefites vnto themselves, and yet will not turne themselves to Christ, misapply, and presume: because the right apprehension of Christ, is in the exercises of inuocation, and repentance.

Rom. 12.2.

The second end, for which Christ gaue himselfe, is that he might take vs out of this euill world. And hence wee are taught three things. First, that we must be grieved and displeased at the wickednes of the world as *Lot* was, 2. *Pet.* 2.7. Secondly, that we must not fashion our selues to the wicked liues of the men of this world: but wee must in all things *prooue what is the good will of God*, and doe it. Thirdly, seeing we are taken out of this world, wee must not dwell in it, but our dwelling must be in heauen. *Reuel.* 13.6. the beast out of the sea persecutes them that dwell in heauen, that is, such as dwell on earth, and for affection haue their conuersation in heauen. And seeing this must be so, wee must not loue the world, but loue the comming of Christ, and euery day prepare our selues against the day of death, that we may enter into our owne home.

And whereas *Paul* calls this world *an euill world*, hee doeth it to signifie that there is nothing in men but sinne, till they be regenerate, yea that ciuill vertues, and ciuill life, that are excellent in the eyes of men, are no better then sinnes before God. It is the error of the Papists, that men may thinke and do some thing that is morally good without grace.

The cause that moued Christ to giue himselfe, is the will of God. Hence it appeares that God giues Christ to no man for his foreseen faith, or works. For there is no higher cause of the will of God. The foreknowledge of things that may come to passe, goes before will; but the foreknowledge of things that shal come to passe, and therefore the foreknowledge of faith and workes, followes the will of God. Because things that shal come to passe, are first decreed, and then foreseene.

The will here mentioned, is said to be the wil of God, that is, the first person the Father: for when Christ is opposed to God, then God signifies the Father. And hee is most commonly called God, because he is God without communication of the godhead from any: whereas the Sonne and holy Ghost are God, by communication of godhead from the Father.

And this God is called *our Father* by *Paul*. And hereby he signifies that the scope of the Gospel is; first, to propound God vnto vs not only as a creator, but as a Father: secondly, to inioyne vs to acknowledge him to be our Father in Christ: and consequently to carry

carry our selues as dutiful children to him in all subiection and obedience. They which doe not this, know not the intent of the Gospel: and if they know it, in deed they deny it.

The conclusion annexed to the salutation (*To whom bee glorie for ever*) teacheth vs so oft as we remember the worke of our redemption by Christ, so oft must we giue praise and thanks to God: yea all our liues must be nothing else but a testimony of thankfulness for our redemption. And all our praise and thanks to God, must proceed from the serious affection of the heart, signified by the
10 word, *Amen*: that is, so be it.

6. *I maruell that you are so soone remooued away to another Gospel, from him that hath called you in the grace of Christ.*

7 *Which is not another Gospel: but that some trouble you, and*
15 *intende to ouerthrow the Gospel of Christ.*

Here begins the second part of the Epistle, in which he giues instruction to the Galatians. And it hath two parts: one concernes doctrine, the other manners. The first part touching doctrine, begins in the sixt verse, and continues to the thirteenth verse of the
20 5. chapter. The summe of it is a reproofe of the Galatians for reuolting from the Gospel: and it is disposed in this syllogisme.

If I be immediatly called of God to teach, and my doctrine be true, ye ought not to haue reuelted from my doctrine.

25 *But I was called immediatly of God to teach, and my doctrine is true: Therefore ye should not haue reuelted from my doctrine.*

The proposition is not expresse: because it was neede lesse. The minor is handled, through the whole Epistle. The Conclusion is in the 6. and 7. verses, the meaning whereof I will briefly deliuer. So
30 *soone*] that is, presently after my departure. *remooued*] carried away by the perswasions of false teachers, *to another Gospel.*] to another doctrine of saluation, which in the speech and opinion of the false teachers, is another manner of Gospel, more sufficient and more excellent, then that which *Paul* hath delivered. *From him*] that is, from
35 me being an Apostle, who haue called you by preaching the Gospel of Christ, *In the grace*] that is, haue called you freely, without any desert of yours, to bee partakers of the fauour of God in Christ. *Which is not another*] which pretended Gospel of the false Apostles, is not indeed another gospel from that of *Paul*, because
40 there is but one; but it is an inuention of the braine of man. *But there bee some*] that is, but I plainly perceiue the cause of your reuolt, that some trouble you, and seeke to ouerthrow the Gospel of Christ.

In

In these words, two points are to be considered. The first is, the manner which *Paul* useth in reproofing the Galatians. He tenders their good, and saluation, and seekes by all means their recovery. And therefore in his reproofe he doth two things. First, he reprooves them with meekenesse, and tendernesse of heart, following his owne rule, *Gal 6. 1.* for he might iustly haue said, ye may be ashamed, that ye are remooued to another Gospell, but he saith on-ly, I maruell, that is, I was well perswaded of you, and I hoped for better things, but I am deceiued, and I wonder at it. Secondly, he frames his reproofe with great warinesse, and circumspection: for he saith not, ye of your selues doe remooue to another Gospell, but ye are remooued: and thus he blames them but in part, and laies the principal blame on others. Againe, he saith not ye were remooued, but in the time present, *ye are remooued*, that is, ye are in the act of Reuolting, and haue not as yet altogether reuolted. And hereby he puts them in mind, that although they be in a fault, yet there is nothing done, which may not easily be vndone. According to his example, we are in all Reproofes, to shew loue, and to keepe loue: to shew loue to the party reprooued, and to frame our reproofe, so as we may keepe his loue.

The second point is the fault reprooued, and that is, the Reuolt of the Galatians: which was a departure from the calling, whereby they were called to the grace of Christ. If it be demanded, what kind of Reuolt this was? I answer, there be two kinds of reuolt, *particular* and *generall*. *Particular*, when men professe the name of Christ, and yet depart from the faith, in some principall points thereof. Of this kinde was the Apostacy of the tenne tribes, and such is the Apostacy of the Romane Church. A *generall* reuolt is, when men wholly forsake the faith and name of Christ. Thus doe the Iewes, and Turkes at this day. Againe, a reuolt is sometime of weakenesse, and humane frailty, and sometime of obstinacie. Now the reuolt of the Galatians was onely particular in the point of iustification, and of weakenesse, and not of obstinacie: and this *Paul* signifies when he saith, they were carried by others. Of this Reuolt, foure things are to be considered. The time, *so soone*: from whom, or what? *from the doctrine of Paul*, and consequently the grace of Christ. To what? *to another Gospell*. By meanes of whom? *but some trouble you, &c.*

Touching the time, it was short, They were soone caried away. This shewes the lightnesse and inconstancy of mans nature, specially in matter of religion. While *Moses* taried in the mount, *Aaron* and the people set vp a golden calfe, and departed from God. *Osea* saith,

- faith, The righteousness of the Israelites, was like the morning dew, which the rising of the Sunne consumeth, cha. 6. 4. *Iohn* was a burning light, and the Jewes reioyced in this light: that is well; but marke what is added: *for an houre or moment. Iohn 5. 35.* They
- 5 which cried *Osanna to the Sonne of David*, shortly after cried, *Crucifie him, crucifie him.* The crosse and persecution, will make men call the Gospel in question, if not forsake it, *Luke 8. 13.* The multitude of people among vs are like waxe, and are fit to take the stampe, and impression of any religion: and it is the law of the land that makes
- 10 the most imbrace the Gospell, and not conscience. That wee may constantly perseuere in the profession of the true faith, both in life and death, first wee must receiue the Gospel simply for it selfe, because it is the Gospel of Christ, and not for any by-respect. Secondly, we must be mortified, and renued in the spirit of our minds, and
- 15 suffer no by-corners in our hearts, where secret vnbeleefe, secret hypocrisie, and spirituall pride may lurke, and lie hid from the eyes of men, *Heb. 3. 12.* Thirdly, wee must not onely be hearers of the word, but also doers of it in the principall duties to be practised, of faith, conuersion, and new obedience.
- 20 To come to the second point: when *Paul* saith, the Galatians were remooued from him that called them, that is, himselfe; hee shewes Christian modestie: because speaking things praise-worthy of himselfe, he speaks in the third person: *from him that hath called, &c.* The like he doeth, *2. Cor. 12.* *I know a man taken up into the*
- 25 *third heauen:* that is himselfe. And *Iohn* saith, the disciple that leaned on the breast of Christ, whom Christ loved, asked whom he meant, *Ioh. 13. 23.* After this practise, we are to give praise to God, and to his instruments, but neither to praise nor dispraise our selues. This is Christian ciuility to be ioyned with our faith.
- 30 Secondly, when he saith, *who hath called you in the grace of Christ,* we learne, that the scope of the Gospell is to bring men to the grace of Christ. To this very end God hath vouchsafed vs in England the Gospel more then fourtie yeares. And therefore our words, and deedes, and liues, should bee seasoned with grace, and fauour of it:
- 35 and shew forth the grace of God. Secondly, we owe vnto God great thankfulness, and wee can never be sufficiently thankfull for this benefit, that God calles vs to his grace. But it is otherwise, the sunne is a goodly creature; yet because wee see it daily, it is not regarded; and so it is with the grace of God.
- 40 Thirdly, the Galatians are remooued not onely from the doctrine of *Paul*, but also from the grace of God. And the reason is, because they ioyned the workes of the law with Christ & his grace
- in

in the cause of their iustification, and saluation. Here it must be observed, that they which make an vnion of grace, and workes, in the cause of iustification, are separated from the grace of God. Grace admits no partner, or fellow. Grace must be freely giuen euery way, or it is no way grace. Hence it followes, that the present Church of Rome is departed from the grace of God, because it makes a concurrence of grace, and workes, in the iustification of a sinner before God: and we may not make any reconciliation with that Church in religion: because it is become an enemy of the grace of God.

The third point is, to what thing the Galatians reuolt? to another Gospel, that is, to a better gospel, then that which *Paul* taught, compounded of Christ and the workes of the law. And this forged gospel the false Apostles taught, and the Galatians quickly receiued. Here we see the curious nicenesse and daintinesse of mans nature, that cannot be content with the good things of God, vnles they be framed to our minds: and if they please vs for a while, they do not please vs long, but we must haue new things. Our first parents not content with their first estate, must needs be as God. *Nadab* and *Abihu* offer sacrifice to God, but the fire must bee of their owne appointment. King *Achaz* will offer sacrifice to God, but the altar must be like the altar at *Damascus*. False teachers beside the doctrine of the Apostles, had profound learning of their owne. The Iewes beside the written law of *Moses*, must haue their *Cabala*, containing, as they supposed, more mysticall & excellent doctrine. The Papists beside the written word, set vp vnwritten Tradition which they make equall with the Scripture. We that professe the Gospel are not altogether free from this fault. We like, that Christ should be preached: but Sermons are not in common reputation learned, neither doe they greatly please the most, vnlesse they be garnished with skill of arts, tongues, and variety of reading: this curiousnesse and discontentment the Lord condemnes, when he forbids plowing with the ox, and the asse, and the wearing of garments of tinsell-wolfe. And it is the worst kind of discontentment, that is in things pertaining to saluation. It is called by *Paul*, the itching of the eare, and it is incident to them that follow their owne lusts. The remedy of this sinne, is to learne the first lesson that is to be learned of them that are to be good schollers in the schoole of Christ: and that is to feele our pouerty, and in what extreame neede we stand of the death and passion of Christ: and withall to hunger and thirst after Christ, as the bread and water of life. Reade *Isa.* 44. 3. *Iob.* 7. 37 *Psal.* 25. 11. the example of *Dauid*, *Psal.* 143. 6. When the heart and

Leu. 10. 1.

2 Reg. 16. 11.

Reu. 2. 24.

Deut. 22. 9.

2 Tim. 4. 5.

conscience hath experimentally learned this lesson, and not the
braine, and tongue alone : then shall men beginne to saue the
things of God, and discerne of things that differ, and put a diffe-
rence betweene grace, and workes, mans word, and Gods word,
5 and for the working of our saluation, esteeme of mans workes, and
mans word, as offalls that are cast to dogges.

Paul addes, which is not another Gospel, that is, though it be another
gospel in the reputation of false teachers, yet indeede it is not ano-
ther, but is a subuersion of the Gospell of Christ. Hence I gather,
10 that there is but one Gospell, one in number and no more. For there
is but one way of saluation by Christ, whereby all the Elect are
saued, from the beginning of the world to the end. *Act. 15. 11.*
1. Cor. 10. 3. It may be demanded, how they of the old Testament,
could be partakers of the body, and blood of Christ, which then
15 was not. *Answer.* The body, and blood of Christ, though then it was
not subsisting in the world, yet was it then present to all beleeuers,
two waies : first, by diuine acceptation : because God did accept
the incarnation and passion of Christ to come, as if it had beene
accomplished. Secondly, it was present to them by meanes of their
20 faith, which is a substance of things that are not seene ; and con-
sequently it makes them present to the beleeuing heart.

Againe, hence it appears, to be a fallhood, that euery man may
be saued in his owne religion : so be it, he hold there is a God, and
that he is a rewarder of them that come vnto him. For there is but
25 one Gospel : and if the former opinion were true, then so many o-
pinions, so many gospels. *Paul* saith, that the world by her wisdom
could not know God in his wisdom, and for this cause he ordai-
ned the preaching of the word to saue men, *1. Cor. 1. 21.* And though
he that comes to God must beleeue that he is, and that he is a re-
30 warder of them that come to him : yet not euery one that beleeues
generally that there is a God, and that he is a rewarder of them that
come to him, comes to God : for this the diuells beleeue.

The fourth point, is concerning the Authors of this Reuolt : and
Paul chargeth them with two crimes. The first is, that they trouble
35 the Galatians, not onely because they make diuisions, but because
they trouble their consciences settled in the gospell of Christ. It
may be alleadged, that there be sundry good things which trouble
the conscience, as the preaching of the law, the censure of excom-
munication, the authority of the Magistrate in compelling Recu-
40 sants to the congregation. I answer, these things indeede trouble the
consciencs of men, but they are euill consciencs : & the end of this
trouble is that they may be reformed, & made good. But the crime
wherewith

wherewith the false Apostles are charged, is, that they trouble the consciences of the godly, or the good consciences of men. Here then is set downe a note, whereby false, and erroneous doctrines, may be discerned: namely, that they serue onely to trouble, and disquiet the good conscience. And by this we see the Romane religion to bee corrupt and vnfound: for a great part of it tends this way. Iustification by workes is a yoke that none could euer beare, *Act. 15*. The vow of single life is as a snare, or as the noose in the halter to strangle the soule. *1. Cor. 7. 34*. So is the doctrine which teacheth that men after their conuersion, must still remaine in suspense of their saluation: and that pardon of sinne is necessarily annexed to confession in the eare, and to satisfaction for the temporall punishment of sinne in this life, or in purgatory.

On the contrary, the Gospell of Christ (as here it appears) troubles not the good conscience, but it brings peace and perfect ioy. *Ioh. 15. 11. Rom. 15 4*. And the reason is plaine: for it ministers a perfect remedy for euery sinne, and comfort sufficient for euery distresse. And this is a note whereby the Gospell is discerned from all other doctrines whatsoever.

The second crime wherewith the false Apostles are charged, is that they ouerthrow the Gospell of Christ: the reason of this charge must be considered. They did not teach a doctrine flat contrary to the Gospell of Christ: but they maintained it in word, and put an addition to it of their owne out of the law, namely iustification, and saluation, by the workes thereof. And by reason of this addition; *Paul* giues the sentence, that they peruert, and turne vpside downe the Gospell of Christ. Vpon this ground it appears that the Popish religion is a flat subuersion of the Gospell of Christ, because it ioynes iustification by workes, with free iustification by Christ. The excuse, that the workes that iustifie, are workes of grace, and not of nature, will not serue the turne. For if Christ by his grace make workes to iustifie, then is he not onely a Sauour, but also an instrument to make vs Sauours of our selues: he being the first, and principall Sauour, and we subordinate Sauours, vnto him. But if Christ haue a partner in the worke of iustification, and saluation, he is no perfect Christ.

8. But though we, or an Angell from heauen, preach vnto you otherwise, then that which we haue preached vnto you, let him be accursed.

9. As we said before, so say I now againe, if any man preach vnto you otherwise then ye haue receiued, let him be accursed.

An obiection might bee made against the former conclusion, thus: But the most excellent among the Apostles, *Iames, Peter, Iohn* (by your leaue) teach another Gospel then that which *Paul* had preached. To this obiection hee makes answere in this verse negatively, that whosoever teacheth another Gospel, is accursed, whatsoeuer he be. In this answere three things are to be considered: a sinne, the punishment thereof, and a supposition seruing to amplify the sinne.

The sinne is to preach in the cause of our iustification, any other thing besides that, or diuers to that which *Paul* taught the Galatians, though it bee not contrary. Thus much the very wordes import: and the same wordes are againe vsed in the next verse. And *Paul* bids *Timothie*, *Avoid them that teach otherwise*, that is, any diuers doctrine as necessarie to saluation, besides that which hee taught, *1 Tim. 6. 3.* And the reason of this sinne is: because God hath giuen this commaundement, Wee may not depart from his word, to the right hand, or to the left; neither may we adde thereto, or take therefrom, *Iosu. 1. v. 7, 8. Deut. 4. & 12.* Before I gather any doctrine hence, this ground is to be laid down, that *Paul* preached all the counsell of God, *Act. 20. 27.* And that which he preached, being necessarie to saluation, he wrote, or some other of the Apostles *Iohn 20. 31.* This being graunted (which is a certaine trueth) two maine conclusions follow. One, that the Scriptures alone by themselues, without any other word, are abundantly sufficient to saluation, whether we regard doctrines of faith, or maners. For he that deliuers any doctrine out of them, and beside them, as necessary to be beleued, is accursed.

The second conclusion, is, that vnwritten Traditions, if they be tendered to vs, as a part of Gods word, and as necessary to saluation, they are abominations, because they are doctrines beside the Gospell that *Paul* preached. And the Romane religion goes to the ground: because it is founded on Tradition, out of, and beside the written word. Learned Papistes, to helpe themselues, make a double answere. One is, that they are accursed which preach otherwise then *Paul* preached, and not they which preach otherwise then he writ. But it is false which they say, for that which he preached, he writ. *Augustine* having relation to the text in hand, saith, that hee is accursed which preacheth any thing* beside that which we haue receiued in the Legall and Enangelicall Scriptures. Againe he saith, that

* Præter quā.
contra Peul-
an. l. 3. c. 6.
De bono vi-
dicationis. c. 1.
he

* Non aliud
quid amplius?

he must * not teach any more, or any other thing, then that which is in the
Apostle, whose words he must expound.

The second answer is, that to preach otherwise, is to preach
contrary. Because (as they say) precepts and doctrines may bee de-
liuered if they be diuerse, and not contrary. As the Gospell of *Iohn*, 5
and the *Apocalyp*, were written after this Epistle to the Galatians,
which are diuers to it, though not contrary: the like they say of the
canons of councells: and that *Paul*, *Rom.* 16. 18 put [*παρ' ἑ*] beside,
for *contrarie*. I answer thus: The preposition (*παρ*) translated be-
side or otherwise, signifieth thus much properly: and wee are not 10
to depart from the proper signification of the words, vnlesse we be
forced by the text. And the place in the Romans in his proper and
full sense, must be turned thus: *Obserue the authors of offences, beside*
the doctrine which ye haue learned. And *Pauls* mind is, that they should
bee obserued, that teach any other diuers, or distinct doctrine, 15
though it bee not directly contrary. The Gospell of *Iohn* and the
Apocalyp, written after ward, propound not any diuers doctrine
pertaining to the saluation of the soule, but one and the same in
substance, with that which *Paul* wrote. The Canons of Councells,
are traditions touching order and comeliness, and they prescribe 20
not any thing, as necessary to iustification, and saluation. Againe,
the Embassadour that speakes any thing beside his commission, is
as wel in fault, as he that speakes the contrary: though not so much.

The second point is, the punishment [*Let him be accursed*]. Here
are three things to be considered. The first, what is it to be accur- 25
sed? *Ans.* God hath giuen to the Church, the power of binding,
and it hath foure degrees, *Amonition*, *Suspension* from the Sacra-
ments, *Excommunication*, *Anathema*. And this last is a censure or
iudgement of the Church, whereby it pronounceth a man seuered
from Christ, and adiudged to eternal perdition, *Rom.* 9. 5. *1 Cor.* 16. 30
22. And hee is here said to be accursed, that stands subiect to this
censure. The second part is, who are to be accursed? *Ans.* Hainous
offenders, and desperate persons, or whose amendment here is no
hope. And therefore this iudgement is seldome pronounced vpon
any. We finde but one example in the new Testament: *Paul* accur- 35
sed *Alexander* the Copper smith. *2 Tim.* 4. 14. And the Church af-
terward accursed *Iulian* the Emperour. Other examples we finde
not any.

The third point, how the Church should accurse any man, and
in what order? *Answer.* In this action, there be foure iudgements. 40
The first is Gods, which is giuen in heauen, whereby he doth ac-
curse obstinate and notorious offenders. The second iudgement,
per-

pertaines to the Church vpon earth, which pronounceth them accursed, whom God accurseth. It may bee said, how comes the Church to know the iudgement of God, whereby hee accurseth?

Answer. The word sets downe the condition of them, that are accursed; and experience, and obseruation findes out the persons, to whom these conditions are incident. The third iudgement is giuen in heauen, whereby God ratifies and approoues the iudgement of the Church, according to that, *Whatsoever yee binde in earth, shall bee bound in heauen.* The last iudgement pertaines to euery priuate

person, who holds him in execration, whom God hath accursed, and the Church hath pronounced so to be. If hee heare not the Church, the Church pronounceth him to bee as a Publican and heathen: and then (saith Christ) *let him bee as a Publican to thee.* Thus must the text be vnderstood.

Hence we are taught, to be carefull in preserving the puritie of the Gospel: because the corrupters thereof, are to be accursed as the damned spirits. Hence againe it appeareth, that the Church in accursing, doth but exercise a Ministry, which is, to publish and testifie, who are accursed of God. Lastly, hence we learne, that priuate persons must seldome vse cursing: because God must first accurse, and the Church publish the sentence of God; before we may with good conscience vtter the same. They therefore which in a rage accurse themselves and others, deale wickedly. We are called ordinarily to blessing, and not to cursing.

The third point is, the supposition of things impossible, on this manner. Put the case, that I *Paul*, or any other of the Apostles, should teach otherwise then I haue taught you: neither I nor they must bee beleued, but be accursed. Againe, put the case, that an Angel from heauen should come and preach, otherwise then *Paul* preached to the Galatians, who must bee beleued? *Paul*, or the Angel? the answer is, not the Angel, but *Paul*; and the Angel must be accursed. And the reason is, because *Paul* in preaching and writing, did represent the authoritie of God, and God puts his owne authoritie into the word which he vttered: and he was assisted by the extraordinary, immediate and infallible assistance of Gods spirit. From this supposition, sundry things may bee learned. The first, that the word preached and written by *Paul*, is as certaine, as if it had been written by God himselfe, immediatly. It may bee objected, that *Paul* saith, *1. Cor. 7. 12. To the remnant, I speake, not the Lord.* I answer, *Paul* saith, *I, not the Lord*, not because he was deceived in his aduise, for hee spake by the Spirit of God, *c. 7. v. 40.* but because hee gaue counsell in a case of marriage, whereof the Lord

had made no expresse law. The meaning then is this, I speake by collection from the law of God, and not the Lord, by any particular and expresse Law.

Secondly it appeares hence, that the articles of faith, or the doctrine of the Gospel, is in excellency & authority above al men and Angels. And hence it followes, that the Church and Councils cannot authorize the word of God, in the mind and conscience of any man. For the inferiour and dependent authoritie addes nothing to that which is the principall, and superiour authority. Therefore the opinion of the Papists is false, that we cannot know the scripture to be the word of God, but by the testimony of the church: as though the letter of a Prince could not be knowne to bee so, without the testimony of the subiects. The principall authority is sufficient in it selfe, to authorize it selfe, without externall testimony.

Thirdly, since the dayes of the Apostles, sundrie doctrines haue beene receiued and beleueed, touching intercession of Saints, prayer to the dead, and for the dead, Purgatorie, and such like: and these doctrines haue bene confirmed by sundrie reuelations. And heere we learne, what to iudge both of the doctrines, and of the reuelations; namely, that they are accursed: because the doctrines are beside the written word, and the reuelations tend to ratifie and confirme them.

Lastly, hence we learne, what to thinke of the writings of Papists, and Schoolemen, whereof some are called, *Seraphicall, Cherubicall, or Angelicall Doctours*. They broach and maintaine sundrie things, beside that which the Apostles preached, and wrote; as iustification by works, and a mixture of the law and the Gospel: they giue too little to grace, and too much to mans will. In this regard, *Paul* hath giuen the sentence, that they are accursed. For this cause students of diuinitie, are warily to reade them with prayer, that they be not led into temptation, and they are to vse them onely in the last place. And they are greatly to bee blamed, that preferre them almost above all writers: they shew that they haue little loue of the Gospel in their hearts.

9 As we said before, so say I now againe: if any man preach vnto you otherwise then ye haue receiued, let him be accursed.

In these wordes *Paul* repeates againe that which he said before: and the repetition is not in vaine, but for three weightie causes; the first is, to signifie that he had spoken not rashly, but aduisedly, what soeuer he had said before: the second is, that the point deliuered, is an infallible truth of God: the third is, to put the Galatians & vs in minde,

minde, that we are to obserue and remember that which hee hath said, as the foundation of our religion, namely, that the doctrine of the Apostles, is the only infallible trueth of God, against which we may not listen to Fathers, Councils, or to the very Angels of God.

5 If this had bin remembred and obserued, the Gospel had continued in his puritie after the daies of the Apostles.

In this verse one thing is to be obserued. Before, *Paul* said, they are accursed which teach otherwise then hee had taught: here he saith, they are accursed which teach otherwise then the Galatians
10 had receiued. Whereby it appeares, that as *Paul* preached the Gospel of Christ, so the Galatians receiued it. And they receiued it, first in that they had care to know it: secondly, in that they gaue the assent of faith vnto it, as to a trueth: against which the very Angels could take no exception. And for this also are the Thessalonians
15 commended, that the Gospel was to them *in power & much assurance*. The great fault of our times is, that where as the Gospel is preached, it is not accordingly receiued. Many haue no care to know it: and they which know it, giue not vnto it the assent of faith, but only hold it in opinion. And this is the cause that there is so small
20 fruit of the Gospel. This sinne will at length haue his punishment. The places that are not seasoned by the waters of the Sanctuarie, are turned to salt-pits, *Ezech. 47. v. 11.*

10 For now whether preach I men or God? or seeke I to
25 please men? for if I should yet please men, I were not the seruant of Christ.

The interrogations in this place, *doe I preach?* and, *doe I please?* are in stead of earnest negations: *I doe not preach, I doe not please*. And when he saith, *do I now preach men, or God?* his meaning is this: Heretofore I haue preached the Traditions of men, but now being an
30 Apostle, I preach not the doctrine of men, but of God. And when he saith, *doe I seeke to please men?* his meaning is this; I doe not make this the scope of my ministerie, to frame and temper my doctrine so, as it may be sutable and pleasing to the affections of men. For
35 otherwise wee are to please men in that which is good, and for their good, *1. Cor. 10. 33. Rom 15. 2.*

This verse containes a double reason of his former speech, and of the repetition thereof. The first is this. Though heretofore I taught the Traditions of men; yet now I teach the word not of
40 men, but of God: and therefore I accurse them that teach otherwise. The second is framed thus. If I should yet please men, I were not the seruant of God: but I am the seruant of God: therefore I

seeke not to please men, but, if need shall be, I will denounce curses against them.

Here first we see the proper nature of the Ministry, which is not the word or doctrine of man, but of God. By this the Ministers of the Gospel are taught to handle their doctrine with modestie, and 5 humilitie, without ostentation, with reuerence, and with a consideration of the maiestie of God whose the doctrine is which they utter, that God may be glorified, *1. Pet. 4. 11.*

Secondly, the hearers in hearing are to know that they haue to deale with God: and that they are to receiue the doctrine taught 10 *not as the word of man, but as the very word of God*, as the Thessalonians did, *1. Thess. 2. 13.* The want of this consideration, is the cause that some contemne the ministry of the word, as others are not touched and moued in hearing.

Againe, heere is set downe the right manner of dispensing the 15 word, which must not bee for the pleasing of men, but of God. Hence it appeares, that Ministers of the Gospel must not be men-pleasers, nor apply and fashion their doctrine to the affections, humors, and dispositions of men, but keep a good conscience, and do their office. The Lord tels *Jeremie*, hee must not turne to the people, 20 *but the people must turne to him, Iere. 15. 19.* Thus God shall bee with them, and they shall bring forth much fruite.

And the people must know it to bee a good thing for them, not to be pleased alwaies by their Ministers. The ministry of the word must be as a sacrificing knife, to kill & mortifie the old *Adam* in vs, 25 that we may liue vnto God. A sicke man must not alwaies haue his mind, but he must often be crossed, and restrained of his desire: and so must we that are sicke in our soules in respect of our sinnes. It is a fault therefore of men that desire to be pleased, and to haue matters smoothed ouer of their Teachers. This is *Dauids* balme, which 30 he wisheth may neuer be wanting to his head, *Psal. 141. 5.*

The end of this verse sets downe a memorable sentence, That if we seek to please men, we cannot be the seruants of God. Hence I gather, that our nature is full of rebellion, & enmitie against God; because they which please men, cannot please God. Againe, here is 35 set downe what is the hurt that comes by pride, and ambition. It keepes men that they cannot be the seruants of Christ, *Yee belceue nor (saith Christ) because ye seeke glory one of another, Ioh. 5. 44.* Ambition so fills the mind with vanitie, & the heart with worldly desires, that it cannot thinke, or desire to please God. Wherefore hee that 40 would be a faithfull Minister of the Gospel, must deny the pride of his heart, and bee emptied of ambition, and set himselfe wholly to seeke

seeke the glory of God in his calling. And generally, he that would be a faithfull seruant of Christ, must set God before him as a Iudge, and consider that he hath to deale with God: and he must turne his mind and senses from the world, and all things therein, to God: and seeke aboute all things to approoue his thoughts, desires, affections, and all his doings vnto him.

Lastly, the profession of the seruant of God, is here to be obserued in the example of *Paul*, who saith, *Doe I now preach men? and, doe I yet please men?* as if he had said, I haue done thus and thus, I haue preached the traditions of men heretofore, and I haue pleased men in persecuting the Church of God: but I doe not so still, neither wil I. And he that can say the like with good conscience, I haue sinned thus and thus heretofore, but now I doe not, neither will I sinne as I haue done, is indeed the seruant of God.

II Now I certifie you, brethren, that the Gospell which was preached by me, was not after man.

The meaning is this: that it may the better appeare that I haue iustly accursed them which teach any other Gospell, and iustly reprooued you for receiuing it: I giue you to vnderstand, that the Gospell which I preached was not after man, that is, not deuised by man, or preached of mee by mans authoritie, but it was from God, and preached by the authoritie of God. And this sense appeares by v. 10. and 12.

In these words is laid down the reason of the conclusion, or the assumption of the principall argument, which was on this maner: If I bee called to teach, and that immediatly of God, and my doctrine be true, then ye ought not to haue reuolted from the Gospell which I preached: but I was called to teach immediatly of God, and my doctrine is true. The first part of the assumption is here set downe, and handled to the end of the second chapter: and the conclusion (as we haue heard) was set downe in the premises.

Hence two maine points of doctrine that are of great consequence, may be gathered. The first is this: it is a thing most necessary, that men should be assured & certified that the doctrine of the Gospell, and the Scripture, is not of man, but of God. This is the first thing which *Paul* stands vpon in this Epistle. It may be demanded, how this assurance may be obtained. I answer, thus. For the setting of our consciences, that Scripture is the word of God, there be two testimonies. One is the euidence of Gods Spirit, imprinted and expresse in the Scriptures: and this is an excellencie of the word of God aboute all wordes and writings of men, and Angels;

and contains 13. points. The first, is the purity of the law of *Moses*, wheras the lawes of men haue their imperfections. The second is, that the Scripture setteth downe the true cause of all misery, namely sinne, and the perfect remedie, namely, the death of Christ. The third is, the antiquitie of Scripture, in that it sets downe an historie from the beginning of the world. The fourth is, prophecies of things in sundrie bookes of Scripture, which none could possibly foretell but God. The fift is, the confirmation of the doctrine of the Prophets and Apostles by miracles, that is, workes done aboue, and contrarie to the strength of nature, which none can doe but God. The sixt is, the consent of all the Scriptures with themselves, whereas the writings of men are often at iarre with themselves. The seuenth is, the confession of enemies, as namely of heretikes, who in oppugning of Scriptures, alledge Scriptures, and thereby contesse the trueth thereof. The eight is, an vnspokeable detestation, that Sathan and all wicked men beare to the doctrine of Scripture. The ninth is, the protection and preservation of it, from the beginning to this houre, by a speciall providence of God. The tenth is, the constant profession of Martyrs, that haue shed their blood for the Gospell of Christ. The eleuenth is, that fearefull punishments and iudgements haue befallen them, that haue oppugned the word of God. The twelfth is, holines of them that professe the Gospell. The last is, the effect and operation of the word: for it is an instrument of God, in the right vse whereof, wee receiue the testimony of the spirit of our adoption, and are conuerted vnto God. And yet neuerthelesse, the word which conuerteth, is contrary to the wicked nature of man.

The second testimony is from the Prophets and Apostles, who were Embassadors of God, extraordinarily to represent his authoritie vnto his Church, and the pen-men of the holy Ghost, to set downe the true and proper word of God. And the Apostles about the rest, were eye-witnesses, and eare-witnesses of the sayings and doings of Christ: and in that they were guided by the intallible assistance of the Spirit, both in preaching and writing: their testimony touching the things which they wrote, must needs bee Authentick. If it be said, that counterfeit writings may be published to the world vnder the name of the Apostles. I answer, if they were in the daies of the Apostles, they by their authoritie cut them off: and therefore *Paul* saith, *If any teach otherwise, let him bee accursed.* And they provided, that no counterfeits should be foisted vnder their names, after their departure. And heereupon *Iohn*, the last of the Apostles, concludes the New Testament with this clause,

clause, *If any man shall adde vnto these things, God shall adde vnto him the plagues that are written in this booke, Reuel. 22. 18.* If any demaund, of what value is the testimonie of the Church. I answer, consider the Church distinct from the Apostles, and then the testimonie thereof is farre inferiour to the Apostolicall testification, concerning the word of God. For the Church is to be ruled by the testimonie of the Apostles, in the written word: and the sentence of the Church is not alwaies, and altogether certain, nor ioyned with that euidence of the spirit, wherewith euery testimonie Apostolicall is accompanied.

Furthermore, that we may be capable of these two testimonies, and take the benefit thereof, we our selues for our parts, must yeeld subiection and obedience to the word of God. In this our obedience, shall wee be assured, that it is indeed of God, as our Sauour Christ saith, *Iohn 7. v. 17*

This doctrine touching the certaintie of the word, is of great vse. For when the minde and conscience, by meanes of the double testimony before mentioned, plainly apprehends it, there is a foundation laid of the feare of God, and of iustifying faith: and before we be assured that the Scripture is the word of God, it is not possible that wee should conceiue, and hold a faith in the promises of God. And the want of this certaintie in many, is an open gap to heresie, Apostacie, Atheisme, and all iniquitie. Secondly, by this it appeares, that the Church of Rome erreth grossely, in teaching that we cannot know the Scripture to be the word of God, without the testimony of the Church, in these latter times, and that without it, wee could haue no certaintie of religion; whereas the testimony of the spirit, or the euidence thereof in Scripture, with the testimonie of the Apostles, will doe the deed sufficiently, though the Church should be silent.

The second maine point is, That it is necessary, that men should be assured in their consciences, that the calling and authoritie of their teachers, is of God. It may bee demaunded, how we in these daies should be assured thereof. I answered thus: a diuers consideration must be had, of the first Ministers of the Gospel, & of their successors. Touching the first Ministers & planters of the Gospel, within these 80. yeares, wee must consider, that a calling is of two sort: Ordinarie, and Extraordinarie. Ordinarie is, when God calls by the voices, and consent of men, following the lawes of his word. Extraordinarie is, when God calles otherwise. And this he doeth three waies; first, by immediate voice. Thus God called *Abraham*, and *Moses*, and thus were the Apostles called. The second is, by

the message of a creature. Thus *Aaron* and the tribe of *Leui* was called by *Moses*: *Elizeus*. by *Elias*: *Philip* was called by the Angel to baptize the Eunuch, *Actes* 8. 26. The third is, by instinct. Thus *Philip* a Deacon preached in *Samaria*, *Act* 8. 14. Thus the men of *Cyprus* and *Cyrene* preached among the Gentiles, and the hand of God was with them, though otherwise they were but priuat persons, *Act* 11. 19. 20. Of this kind was the calling of the first preachers of the Gospel. It may bee objected, that they did not confirme their callings and doctrine by miracles, which they should haue done, if their callings had bene extraordinary. I answer: they preached no new doctrine, but the old & ancient doctrine of the Prophets and Apostles, which they had heretofore confirmed by miracles. Now old doctrine needs no new miracles, but new doctrine such as are the Popes decrees and decretals. Again, it may bee alledged, that men may falsly pretend extraordinary calling. I answer, if 3. rules be obserued, they cannot. The first is, that extraordinary neuer takes place, but when there is no roome for ordinary. The second, that they which plead a calling extraordinarily, must bee tried by the word, both for doctrine & life: for this is an infallible way to discouer false teachers, *Mat* 7. 22. *Den* 13. 1, 5. *Iohns* authority is said to be from heauen, because his baptism, that is, his doctrine was so, *Luk* 20. 2. The third is, that extraordinary teachers in these last daies, after they haue brought men to receiue the Gospel, are to be ordained as other ordinary ministers after the lawes of Gods word. For they are not extraordinary in respect of their doctrine, which is the doctrine of the word, nor in respect of their office or function, in which regard they are pastours and teachers, & not Apostles or Euangelists: but their callings are extraordinary, in respect of the common abuse of the office of teaching, & in respect of the common corruption of doctrine. These 3. rules as caueats obserued, we may easily perceiue who are called extraordinarily, who not: & they are all fully verified in the first preachers of the Gospel.

Thirdly, it is objected, that they which are lawfully called, are ordained by them, whose ancestors haue bene successiueley ordained by the Apostles. I answer: Succession is threefold. The first is, of persons and doctrine iointly together: and this was in the Primitiue Church. The second is, of persons alone, and this may be among infidels and heretikes. The third is, of doctrine alone. And thus our Ministers succeed the Apostles. And this is sufficient. For this rule must be remembred, that the power of the Keyes, that is, of order and iurisdiction, is tied by God, and annexed in the New Testament to doctrine. If in *Turkie*, or *America*, or els where, the Gospel

Gospell should be receiued of men, by the counsell and perswasion of priuate persons, they shall not neede to send into Europe for consecrated Ministers, but they haue power to choose their owne Ministers from within themselves: because where God giues the
 5 word, he giues the power also.

Touching the Successours of the first Preachers, their calling was altogether ordinary, and they were ordained of their predeceffours. It is objected, that their callings are corrupt. I answer thus. All actions Ecclesiasticall, that tende to binding or loosing, appertaine properly to the person of Christ, and men are but Ministers,
 10 and instruments thereof. And therefore to call men to the ministry and dispensation of the Gospell, belongs to Christ, who alone giueth the power, the will, the deede. And the Church can doe no more but testifie, publish, and declare whom God calleth, by Examination of parties for life and doctrine, by Election, and by ordi-
 15 nation. This is for substance all that the Church can doe: and all this is allowed, and prescribed by the lawes of this Church, and land. And therefore our callings for their substance are diuine, whatsoeuer defects there be otherwise.

20 This assurance that our callings are of God, is of great vse. It causeth the Minister to make a conscience of his duty: it is his comfort in trouble, *Isa. 49. 2. 2. Cor. 2. 15.* And to the hearers it is a meanes of great reuerence, and obedience.

25 12 For neither receiued I it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the reuelation of Iesus Christ.

The meaning is this. *Paul* here saith, he receiued not the Gospell of man: because he receiued not the office to teach and preach the Gospell from any meere man. For here he speakes of himselfe as he
 30 was an Apostle: and then an Apostle properly is said to receiue the Gospell, when he receiues not onely to know and beleue it, but also to preach it. And he addes further, that he was not taught it, that is, that he learned the Gospell not by the teaching of any man, as formerly he learned the law at the feete of *Gamaliel*. The last
 35 words [*but by the reuelation of Iesus Christ*] carry this sense; but I learned it and receiued it of Christ who taught me by reuelation. Further, Reuelation is twofold, one ordinary, the other extraordinary. Ordinary is, when Christ teacheth men by the word preached, and by his spirit. In this sense the holy Ghost is called the spirit of re-
 40 uelation, *Eph. 1. 17.* Extraordinary is, with the word preached, and that foure waies. First, by voice. Thus God taught *Adam* and the Patriarkes. The second, by dreames, when things reuealed
 were

were represented to the mind in sleepe. The third is vision, when things reuealed are represented to the outward senses of men being awake. The fourth is instinct, when God teacheth by inward motion and inspiration. Thus did God vsually teach the Prophets, *2. Pet. 1. 21.* Now the reuelation which *Paul* had, was not ordinary, 5 but extraordinary, and that partly by vision, partly by voice, and partly by instinct, *Act. 9. & 22.* It may heere be demanded, where Christ was, whether on earth, or in heauen, because *Paul* heard his voice, and saw him visibly. I answer, he was not on earth, but in heauen: and that *Paul* both saw him, and heard him, it was by miracle; 10 whereas *Stephen* in like maner saw Christ, hee saw him not on earth, but standing at the right hand of God in heauen: for otherwise the opening of the heauens had bene a needlesse thing.

These words then are a confirmation of the former verse, on this maner. The authoritie whereby I teach, and the doctrine which I 15 teach, I first receiued and learned it, not of man, but immediatly of Christ: therefore the Gospel which I preach is not humane, but diuine, and preached not by humane, but by diuine authoritie.

In the scope and sense of the words. many points of doctrine are contained. The first, that Christ is the great Prophet and Doctour 20 of the Church, *Matt. 17. 6.* Heare him, and *23. 8.* One is your Doctor, namely, Christ. And he is called the great Shepheard of the sheepe, *Heb. 13. 20.* His office is in three things. The first is, to manifest and reueale the will of the Father touching the redemption of mankind, *Ioh. 1. 18. & 8. 26.* This hee hath done from the beginning of the 25 world (the Father neuer speaking and appearing immediatly but in the Baptisme and Transfiguration of Christ:) and this he doeth to *Paul* in this place. The second is, to institute the ministerie of the word, and to call and send Ministers. *As my Father sent mee, so send I you, Iohn 20. 21.* He it is that giues some to bee Pastours, some to 30 bee Teachers, *Ephes. 4. 11.* And thus appoints *Paul* to be an Apostle. The third is, to teach the heart within, by illuminating the mind, and by working a faith of the doctrine which is taught. He openeth the vnderstanding of his Disciples, that they may vnderstand the Scriptures, *Luke 24. 45.* Thus heere he inlightneth and 35 teacheth *Paul*.

Furthermore, it must be obserued, that this office of teaching, is inseparably annexed to the person of Christ, and is by him accordingly executed euen after his ascension, as appeares in the conuersion of *Paul*. And therefore *Isai* saith, they shall be all taught of God, 40 *Isa. 54. 13.* As for the Ministers of the Gospel, they in teaching are no more but instruments of Christ, to vtter and pronounce the word

word to the eare: this is all they can doe. Therefore *Paul* saith, *hee that plants or waters is not any thing, but God that giueth the increase.* The teacher then properly in the ministry of the new Testament to the very end of the world, is Christ himselfe. This must teach vs reuerence in hearing Gods word, and care with diligence in keeping of it. *Hebr. 2. 1, 2, 3, &c.* Secondly this teacheth vs, that they which imbrace not the Gospell among vs, are contemners of Christ, and shall endure eternall condemeation. *Ioh. 3. 18. & Heb. 12. 25.* Thirdly, if we want vnderstanding, we must pray to Christ for it; and because we haue so excellent a teacher, we must pray vnto him that he would giue vnto vs hearing eares, that is, hearts tractable, and obedient to his word, that we may be fit disciples for so worthy a master.

The second is, that there be two waies whereby Christ teacheth those that are to be teachers. One is immediate reuelation; the other is ordinary instruction in schooles by the meanes and ministry of man. The like saith *Amos*, *I was neither Prophet, nor sonne of a Prophet, but the Lord sent me to prophesie to Israel.* *Amos. 7. 4.*

The third point is, that they which are to be teachers must first be taught; and they must teach that which they haue first learned themselves, *2. Tim. 3. 14. Abide in the things which thou hast learned.* Christ taught that which he heard of the Father; the Apostles that which they heard of Christ: ordinary ministers that which they haue learned of the Apostles. This is the right Tradition: and if it be obserued without addition or detraction, the Gospell shall remaine in his integrity. Here our Auncellours are greatly to be blamed, who haue not contented themselves with that which they haue learned of the Apostles, but haue deliuered things of their owne which they were neuer taught. Hence sprang vnwritten traditions, and the corruption of religion. Againe, such are here to be blamed, that take vpon them to be teachers of the Gospell, and were neuer taught by reuelation, or by any ordinary way. Thirdly, private persons are much more to be blamed, that broach and deliuer such doctrines, and opinions, as they themselves neuer learned by any ministry. For teachers themselves must first learne, and then teach.

The fourth point is, that they which are to be teachers are first to be taught, and that by men, where reuelation is wanting. This kind of teaching is the foundation of the schoole of the Prophets, and it hath beene from the beginning. The Patriarkes till *Moses* were Prophets in their families; and they taught not onely their families in generall, but also their first borne, that they might succede

succeed as Prophets after them. There were 48. cities of the Levites dispersed through all the tribes, where not onely the people were taught, but also schooles erected that they might be taught, which were to be Priests and Levites, *Num. 37.* One city among the rest is called *Cireathsephar*, *Iosu. 15. 15.* that is, the citie of bookes, or as we say, the *Uniuersitie*. *Samuel* a yong man was sent to the Tabernacle in Shilo, to be taught, and trained vp of *Eli* the Priest. *Samuel* when he was iudge of Israel erected Colledges of Prophets, and ruled them himselfe, *1 Sam. 10.* In the decaying estate of the ten tribes, *Elias* and *Elizeus* set vp schooles of the Prophets in Bethel, Carmel, &c. and the yong students were called the *sonnes of the Prophets*, *2 King. 2. 3.* Christ himselfe beside the sermons made to the people, trained vp and taught himselfe his twelue Apostles, and his seuentie Disciples. *Paul* commands *Timothie* to teach that which he had learned, to such as shall be fit to teach others, *2 Tim. 2. 2.* Furthermore, this teaching is of great vse. For it serues to maintaine the true interpretation of scripture, the purity of doctrine: and it is a meanes to continue the ministry to the end of the world. The meanest arte or trade that is, is not learned without great teaching: then much more teaching is required in diuinity, which is the arte of all arts. The true interpretation of scripture, and the right cutting of the word is a matter of great difficulty, and a matter (whatsoever men thinke) of the greatest learning in the world. Therefore it is necessary, that teachers should first be taught, and learne aright the Gospel of Christ. Eleuen hundred yeares after Christ, men began to lay aside *Moses*, and the Prophets, and the writings of the new Testament, and to expound the writings of men, as the Sentences of *Peter Lombard*. Hence ignorance, superstition, & idolatry come headlong into the world. Seeing then the teaching of them that are to be teachers, is of such antiquity, and vse, all men are to be exhorted to put to their helping hands, that this thing may goe forward. Princes are to maintaine it, by their bountifullnesse, and authority, as they haue done, and doe still: and that which they doe, they must doe it more. Parents must dedicate the fittest of their children to the seruice of God, in the ministry, and not to vse it in the last place for a shift, as they doe. For commonly, the eldest must be the heire, the next the lawyer, the yongest the diuine. Students must loue and affect this calling aboue all other, *1 Cor. 14. 1.* Lastly, all men must make prayer, that God would prosper and blesse all Schooles of learning, where this kind of teaching is in vse.

Here againe it appeares, that Christ is God, and more then a meere man, because he is opposed to man: and that *Paul* receiued authority

authoritie, and the keies of the kingdome of heauen, immediatly of Christ, as well as *Peter*.

13 For ye haue heard of my conuerſation, in times paſt, how
5 that I persecuted the Church of God extremely, and waſted it.

14 And profited in the Iewiſh religion, aboue many of my companions, of mine owne nation, and was much more zealous of the Traditions of my fathers.

10 In the former verſe, the Apoſtle ſet downe, that hee learned the Goſpell, not of man, but of Ieſus Chriſt, immediatly. This in the next place he goes about to prooue at large. His reaſon is framed thus. If I learned the Goſpell of any man, I learned it either before, or after my conuerſion: but I learned it neither before, nor
15 after my conuerſion of any man. The firſt part of his reaſon is here confirmed thus: before my calling and conuerſion, I professed Iudaisme, and I liued accordingly, persecuting the Church, and ſuppreſſing the Goſpell of Chriſt, and profiting in my religion aboue many others: therefore I was not then fit to heare and learne the
20 Goſpell of Chriſt of any man. This argument he further confirms by the testimony of the Galatians thus: That this was my conuerſation in Iudaisme, ye are witneſſes: for ye haue heretofore heard as much.

In the example of *Paul*, two points are generally to be conſidered.
25 The firſt, that the diſtinction of man and man, ariſeth not of the will, or naturall diſpoſition of man, but of the grace and mercy of God. For *Paul* an Elect veſſell for nature and diſpoſition, before his conuerſion, is as wicked as any other. And he ſaith, *Rom. 9. 11.* that the difference betweene man and man before God, is not in him that willeth, nor in him that runneth, but in God that ſheweth mercie. Therefore it is a Pelagian error, to thinke that men, doing that which they can, doe by nature occaſion God to giue them ſupernaturall grace. The ſecond point is, that *Paul* here makes an open, and ingenuous confeſſion of his wicked life paſt. And hence I gather that
30 this Apoſtle, and conſequently the reſt, writ the ſcriptures of the new Teſtament by the inſtinct of Gods ſpirit, and not by humane policie, which (no doubt) would haue mooued them to haue covered and concealed their owne faults, and not to haue blazed their owne ſhame to the world. And therefore the bookes of Scripture, are not bookes of policy (as Atheiſts ſuppoſe) to keepe
40 men in awe, but they are the very word of God. Againe, the end of this plaine confeſſion is, that *Paul* might thereby confirme,
and

and iustifie his owne calling, to the office of an Apostle. This serues to giue a checke to such persons as vse to sitte and rehearse their wicked liues past in boasting and reioycing manner.

In *Pauls* example there be two things to be considered, his profession before his calling, and his conuersation. His profession was Iudaisme: and this hindred him from imbracing the gospel. It may here be demanded, what Iudaisme, or the Iewish religion is? *Answ.* In the daies of Christ, and the Apostles, there were three speciall sects among the Iewes, *Elseis*, *Saduceis*, and *Pharises*. And the *Pharises* were the principall, and their doctrine was commonly imbraced of the Iewes. And therefore by Iudaisme (as I take it) *Phariseisme* is here meant. Now the principall doctrines of the *Pharises* were these, I. They held that there was one God, and that this God was the Father, without any distinction of persons: for when Christ mentioned the distinction of the Father, and the Son, they would not acknowledge it, *Iohn 8. 19. 11.* They acknowledged in the *Messias* but one nature: for when it was asked them how Christ being the sonne of *Dauid*, should neuerthelesse be his Lord; they could not answer, *Math. 22. 111.* They held that the kingdome of the *Messias*, was an earthly kingdome: and with this opinion, the Disciples of Christ were tainted. IV. They held, that the keeping of the morall law, stood in externall obedience, as appears by the speeches of Christ, reforming their errours, *Math. 5. 6. 7.* chap. V. They maintained a naturall freedome of the will, in the obseruing of the law, *Luk. 18. Lord I thanke thee* (saith the *Pharisee*) *I doe thus and thus.* VI. They held a iustification by the workes of the law, without the obedience of the *Messias*, *Rom. 9. 3.* VII. Beside the written word and law of *Moses*, they had many vnwritten traditions, which they obserued precisely: and the obseruation of them was accounted the worship of God, *Math. 15. 3. 9.* Other points they held, but these are the principall. It may further be demanded, how the Iewes could hold such hereticall, and damnable opinions, and yet be the people of God? *Answer.* They had for their parts forsaken God: but God had not forsaken them, because the Temple was yet standing, and the sacrifices with the outward worship, yet remained among them. In this regard, they were still a reputed people of God. Againe, they are called a people of God, not of the bigger, but of the better part: and the better part was a small remnant of them, that truly feared God, and beleued in the *Messias*. Of which sort, were *Ioseph*, *Marie*, *Zacharie*, *Elizabeth*, *Simeon*, *Anna*, *Ioseph* of *Arimathia*, *Nicodemus*. Againe, it may be demanded, how the Iewes beeing such a people

of God should fall away to so damnable a religion. *Answer.* They neither loved, nor obeyed the doctrine of *Moses*, and the Prophets: and therefore God in judgement left them to the blindness of their own minds, and hardness of their own hearts. *I. ai. 6.* The like may be our case. If we love and obey not the Gospel, more then we have done, our religion may end in ignorance, superstition, and prophaneness, as theirs hath done.

The second thing in *Pauls* example, is his conversation, whereby he lived and conversed according to his religion. The like should be in vs. For the profession of the faith, and godly conversation are to goe together, *Phil. 1. 27.* Faith in the heart is a light, and workes are the shining of this light, *Matth. 5. 16.* Christ hath redeemed them that beleue from their vaine conversation, *1. Pet. 1. 18.* Here many of vs doe amisse, disioyning faith, and good life. And this fault is the greater, because it is an occasion to our aduersaries to mislike, and reiect our religion.

Pauls conversation hath two parts, his persecution of the church, and his profiting in his religion.

Persecution properly is the afflicting of the people of God for their faith and religion. In this we are not to follow *Paul*, but to doe the contrarie, that is, by all meanes to seeke the good of the church. After Gods glory immediatly, we are to seek the comming and advancement of the kingdome of God. Now this kingdome is a certaine estate and condition of men, whereby they stand subiect to the word & spirit of God. And this subiection to God and Christ, is the propertie of them that bee members of the Church of God. All, both rich and poore conferred some thing (according to their abilitie) to the building of the Temple, which figured the Church of God. The fault of our times is, that we build our selues, and our worldly estates, and little respect the common good of the Church.

In the persecution of the Church by *Paul*, two points are to bee considered, the manner and measure, or accomplishment. The manner is, that hee persecuted the Church *extreamely*, or *above measure*. That which *Paul* did in his religion, wee must doe in ours. The good things that we are to doe, we must doe them *with all our might*, *Eccles. 9. 10.* Our duetie is to keepe our hearts in the feare of God, and we must doe it *with all diligence*, *Prov. 4. 24.* It is our duetie to seeke Gods kingdome, and we must *take it with violence*. To enter into life is our duetie, and wee must *strive to enter*. To pray is our duetie, and wee must *wrestle in prayer*, *Rom. 15. 30.* *Iosias* turned to God with all his heart. The law requires that we should love God with

with all the powers of body and soule, and with all the strength of all the powers. In earthly things we must moderate our thoughts and cares, but spirituall duties must bee performed with all our might.

The accomplishment of persecution, is, that *Paul* wasted the Church, and made hauocke of it. Here I consider two points, *what is wasted?* and *who is the waster?* For the first, it is the church. Here two questions may be demanded, the first is, how the church can be wasted? *Answer.* In respect of the inward estate thereof, which standes in election, faith, iustification, glorification, it cannot be wasted. In respect of his outward estate, it may be wasted, that is in respect of mens bodies, and in regard of the publike assemblies, and the exercises of religion. The second question is, why God suffers his enemies to waste his owne church? *Answer.* Iudgement begins in Gods house: and his iudgements sometime are very sharpe, whether they be inflicted for triall or correction of sins past, or for the preuenting of sinnes to come. As in the body, sometime there is no hope of life, except armes, and legges be cut off: euen so is it in the church. Hence it appeares that there shall be a last iudgement, and that there is a life euermore in heauen: because the wicked man flourisheth in this world, and the godly are often oppressed.

The waster of the church is *Paul*. By whom we learne that sinne where it takes place, giues a man no rest till it hath brought him to a height of wickednesse. Hatred hauing entred into *Cains* heart, leaues him not, till it haue caused him to imbrue his hands in his brothers blood. Couetousnesse makes *Indas* at length to betray his master, and hang himselfe. Blind zeale makes *Paul* not onely to persecute, but also to waste the church. Therefore it is good to auoide the first beginnings, yea the very occasion of sinne.

Math. 5. 48.

Iob. 13. 15.
v. 26.

The second part, and point in *Pauls* conuersion, is, that he profits in his religion. Thus should we profit in the Gospell of Christ. It is Gods commandement, *be yee perfect as your heavenly Father is perfect:* that is, indeauour to come to perfection. All the faith we haue or can obtaine is little enough in the time of temptation. *Iob* that said in his affliction, *though the Lord kill me I will still trust in him*, saith also that *God wrote buter things against him and made him to possesse the sinnes of his youth*. It is a token that a man is dead in his sinnes, when he doth not grow, or increase in good. *1. Pet. 2. 2.* In this regard great is the fault of our daies, for many are weary of the Gospell, many stand at a stay without profiting; many goe backward. The cause is this. Commonly men liue as it were without the law: and thinke it

ward. The cause is this. Commonly men liue, as it were without the law: and thinke it sufficient, if they doe not grossely offend: not considering that the law of God, is a law to our thoughts, and affections, and all the circumstances of our actions. That we may hereafter make good proceedings in our religion, we must remember three caueats. One, that wee must indeuour to see, and feele in our selues the smallnesse of our faith, repentance, feare of God, &c. and the great masse of corruption that is in vs. Thus with the beggar, we shal be alwaies peccing and mending our garment. The second, that as trauailers, we must forget things past, and goe on to doe more good, *Phil. 3. 14.* The third, that wee must set before vs the crown of eternall glory, and seeke to apprehend it, *1. Tim. 6. 11.* thus did *Moses, Heb. 11.*

In *Pauls* profiting, two things must be considered, the measure, and the thing in which he profited. The measure, in that he profited *aboue many others.* Hence wee learne, that in matters of religion there should be an holy emulation, and contention among vs: and our fault is that we contend, who shall haue the most riches, and honour, or goe in the finest apparell, and strive not to go one beyond another in good things. Againe, *Pauls* modestie must heere bee obserued. Hee doeth not say that hee profited more then all, but *more then many;* and hee saith not, more then his superiours, but *more then his equals* for time: and hee saith not, more then all the world, but *more then they of his owne nation.* This modesty of his must bee learned of vs, for it is the ornament of vs, for it is the ornament of our faith: and therefore must bee ioyned with our faith.

The matter or the thing in which *Paul* profited, is, that he was abundantly zealous for the Traditions of the fathers. Here I consider three points. I. What zeale is. *Answ.* It is a certaine feruency of spirit, arising of a mixture of loue and anger, causing men earnestly to maintaine the worship of God, and all things pertaining thereto, and moouing them to griefe and anger, when God is any way dishonoured. II. For what is *Paul* zealous? *Answ.* For the outward obseruation of the law, and withall, for Pharisaical vnwritten Traditions: which therefore he calles the Traditions of his fathers. III. What is the fault of his zeale? (for he condemnes it in himself) *Answer.* He had the zeale of God, but not according to knowledge. For his zeale was against the word, in that it tended to maintaine vnwritten Traditions, and iustification by the workes of the law, out of Christ, *Rom. 10. 2.*

Hence wee learne sundrie things. (For that which *Paul* did in
D his

his religion, are we to doe in the profession of the Gospell.) First, we are to addict and set our selues earnestly, to maintaine the trueth, and the trueth of the Gospell. Christ was euen consumed with the zeale of Gods house, *Iohn 2*. The Angel of the Church of Laodicea is blamed, because he is *neither hote, nor cold*, *Reuel. 3*. He is 5
 cursed of God, *that doeth the worke of God negligently*, *Ierem. 48*. Secondly, we are to be angrie in our selues, and grieved, when God is dishonoured, and his word disobeyed. When the Israelites worshipped the golden calfe, *Moses* in holy anger, burst the tables of stone. *Dauid* wept, and *Paul* was humbled for the sinnes of other 10
 men, *Psal. 119. 136. 2. Cor. 12. 21*. Thirdly, we are here taught, not to giue libertie to the best of our naturall affections, as to zeale; but to mortifie them, and to rule them by the word, *Numb. 15. 39*. Otherwise they will cause vs to runne out of order, like wilde beasts, as here we see in *Paul*. Lastly, let it be obserued, that *Paul* here con- 15
 demnes zeale, for the maintenance of vnwritten Traditions. And let the Papists consider this.

15 *But when it pleased God (which had separated mee from my mothers wombe, and called me by his grace.)*

16 *To reueale his Sonne in me (or to me) that I should preach him among the Gentiles, immediatly I communicated not with flesh and blood.*

17 *Neither came I to Hierusalem, to them which were Apostles before mee, but I went into Arabia, and turned againe 25
 to Damascus.*

Paul before prooued, that he learned not the Gospell of any man before his conuersion: here he further prooues, that he learned it of no man after his conuersion. And the substance of his reason is 30
 this, because immediatly vpon his conuersion, hee conferred with no man; but went and preached in Arabia and Damascus.

In the words I consider foure things. First, the causes of *Pauls* conuersion. And heere he sets downe three degrees of causes, depending one vpon another. The first is, the good pleasure of God, 35
 whereby he doth whatsoever he will, in heauen and earth, in these words [*when it pleased.*] The second is, his separation from the wombe: which is an act of Gods counsel, whereby he sets men apart to bee members of Christ, and to be his seruants, in this, or that office. This separation is said to be *from the wombe*; not because it be- 40
 gan then, for it was appointed by God before all times, euen from eternitie, as all his counsels are. But the holy Ghost hereby signifies,

fies, that all our goodnesse, and all our dexteritie, to this or that office, is meerely from God: because we are sanctified, dedicated, and set apart in the counsell of God, from all eternitie, & therefore from the wombe, or from our first conception & beginning. The third
 5 cause is, vocation by grace; the accomplishment of both the former in the time which God hath appointed. The second thing is, the manner or forme of *Pauls* vocation, in these words [*to reueale his Sonne to mee.*] The third is, the end of his vocation, to preach *Christ* among the *Gentiles*. The last is, his obedience to the calling of God,
 10 in the 16. and 17. verses.

To begin with the efficient causes of *Pauls* conuersion: heere we see the order and dependance of causes, in the conuersion and saluation of euery sinner. The beginning of our saluation, is in the good pleasure of God: then followes separation, or election to
 15 eternall life: then vocation by the word & Spirit: then obedience to the calling of God, and after obedience, euerlasting life. This order *Paul* here sets downe, and the consideration of it, is of great vse. Hence it appeares to be a doctrine erroneous, which begins our saluation in the preuision of mans faith and good workes. For in
 20 *Pauls* order, workes haue the last place. And it must be Gods pleasure, that man shall doe a good worke before he can doe it. And if separation to eternall life, should be according to faith, or workes, then we should make separation of our selues, as well as God. And vocation is not for workes, but that we might doe good workes, *Eph.*
 25 1. 4. Secondly, by this order it appeares, that the saluation of them that beleue, is more sure then the whole frame of heaven and earth: because it is founded in the vocation of God, which is without repentance, in the counsell of separation, and in the pleasure of God. Thirdly, by obseruing well this order, we may attaine to
 30 the assurance of our election. For if thou hast bin called, and hast in truth answered to the calling of God by obedience, thou maest assure thy selfe of thy separation from the womb to euerlasting life, because this order is (as it were) a golden chaine, in which, all the linkes are inseparably vnited. Lastly, the consideration of this
 35 order, serues to mortifie the pride and arrogancie of our hearts, in that it ascribes all to God, and nothing to man in the cause of saluation. Reade *Ezech.* 16. 63.

Againe, by the consideration of these 3. causes, wee gather that God hath determined what he will doe with euery man, and that
 40 he hath in his eternall counsell assigned euery man his office and condition of life. For there is in God a pleasure, whereby he may doe with euery man what hee will. And by his eternall counsell

he separates euery man from the very wombe to one calling, or other: and accordingly he calles them in time by giuing giftes, and will, to doe that, for which they were appointed. And this I vnderstand of all lawfull callings, in the familie, Church, or common wealth. Thus Christ was called from the wombe, and set apart to be a mediatour. *Isai. 47. 1.* and *Iohn. 6. 27.* *Jeremie* to bee a prophet. *Jeremie 1. 5.* Christ is said to giue Apostles, Prophets, Pastors, teachers. *Eph. 4. 11.* God sent *Ioseph* vnto Egypt to be the gouernour thereof, and a releuer of *Iacobs* familie. *Gen. 45.* In this regard the Medes and Persians are said to be the sanctified ones of God *Isai. 13. 3.* and the men of his counsell, *Isa. 46. 11.*

The vse. Hence wee are all taught, to walke in our callings with diligence, and good conscience: Because they are assigned vs of God. Hence wee are taught to yeeld obedience to our rulers and teachers: because they that are our rulers and teachers, were separated from the wombe to bee so, and that by God himselfe, without the will of man. Hence we may gather assurance of Gods protection, and assistance in our callings: for in that hee hath appointed vs our callings, he wil also defend vs in the. *2. Cor. 3. 6.* *Isay. 49. 2.* Hence we may learne patience, and contentation in all miseries, and troubles of our callings, for in what calling soeuer thou art, thou wast ordained to it by God from thy mothers wombe. Thinke on this. Hence we learne thankfulnes to God, because our callings, giftes, and the execution of our callings, is wholly of God: and this *Paul* signifies, when he saith that our separation to our offices, and callings, was from our first conception. Hence wee learne to depend on Gods prouidence for the time to come. For if hee provided our callings, when we were not, hee will much more aide, and blesse vs in them now while we haue a beeing. Reade *Psalme, 22. 8. 9.* Poore parents that cannot leaue landes, and liuings to their children after their decease, let them comfort themselves in this; that their children are from their mothers wombe, separated to some good office and condition of life, by the wisdom of God: and that a good office or calling, is better then land and liuing.

Thirdly, it appeares hence that the time of all euents is determined in the counsell of God. For God determines with himselfe the time in which he will call, and conuert *Paul*. By this wee are taught, in our praiers not to limit God to any time for the accomplishment of our requests: for the disposition of time is his, & that is to be left to his wisdom. Againe in our afflictions and temptations wee may not make haste, for helpe and deliuerance before the time, but waite the leasure of God, who hath decreede the time

time of deliuerance. He that beleeueth makes no haste, *Isai. 28. 16. Habacuk* must wait, because the vision is for a time appointed, *Hab. 2. 1.* *Dauids* eyes and strength failed in waiting on God, *Psal. 69. 3.* *Daniel* waites on God seuentie yeares, and then prayes for deliuerance out of captiuitie, the time beeing expired. This serues to discover the wickednesse of them, that being in any kinde of miserie, cannot stay the leasure of God till hee deliuer them by good meanes, but they will haue present remedie, though it be from the diuell: and if helpe cannot bee had when they desire, they presently make away themselves.

The second point is, the forme of the calling, or conuersion of *Paul* in these words [*to reueale his Sonne in me*] that is, to teach me the doctrine of the redemption of mankind by his Son *Iesus Christ*. Here I consider, to whom reuelation is made, and how?

For the first, reuelation of the Sonne is made to cruell and persecuting *Paul*, a desperate sinner. Hence every man can gather, that God hath mercie for great and notorious offences, as for *Paul*, and such like: and the collection is good. For God is much in sparing, *Isai. 55. 7.* And yet here it must be remembred, that all desperate offenders, shall not finde mercie, vnlesse they bee great in their repentance, as God is great in mercie. For Gods mercy hath a double effect in vs, one is, remission of sinne, by the imputation of the merit of *Christ*: the other, the mortification of originall sin, by his efficacy. And these two be inseparable, as we see in *Paul*, on whom God shewed great mercy, whose repentance also was notable. As the woman, *Luk. 7.* had many sinnes forgiven her, so she loved much. v. 47. By this wee see the great and common abuse of the mercy of God. Men euery where presume vpon the greatnesse of Gods mercy, and they make *Christ* a pack-horse, lading him with their burdens, and there is little or no amendment of life.

The maner that God vsed in reuealing the Sonne to *Paul*, stands in two things: Preparation, and Instruction.

Preparation is a worke of God, whereby he humbled *Paul*, subdued the pride and stubburnnesse of his heart, and made him tractable, and teachable. This humiliation is outward, or inward. The outward was partly by lightening from heaven, that cast him to the earth, and made him blind: and partly by a voice reproouing him: *Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?* The inward humiliation was in a sight, and horror for his sinnes. The sinnes that God reuealed to him, are these: the first was, an height of wickednesse, that in persecuting the Church, he made warre euen against God himselfe. Secondly, God made manifest vnto him the meaning of the tenth

commandement, and that secret lust without consent of will, was sinne *Rom. 7. 7.* And thus the law killed him that was alieue, in his owne opinion, when he was a Pharisee.

The instruction whereby God taught the same to *Paul*, hath two parts. The first is, the call of God, whereby he inuites *Paul* to become a member of the son of God. And this he did, first by propounding vnto him the commandement of the Gospel, which is to repent & beleue in Christ. Secondly, by offering to him the promise of remission of sins, and life euermlasting, when he beleueed. The second part of instruction, is a reall and liuely teaching, when God made *Paul* in his heart to answer the calling, according to that, *Psal. 27. 5.* *When thou saidst, seeke ye my face, mine heart answered, I will seeke thy face, O Lord.* And in *Zachary, 13. 9.* *He shall say, it is my people, and they shall say, the Lord is our God.* This is a spiritual Eccho, that is made in the heart. The sound of Gods word goes through the world, and the hearts of men which be as rocks & stones, make answer. And this worke of God, that makes man yeeld to the calling of God, is in scripture, a kind of diuine teaching: thus the Father is said to teach the Son, by drawing, *Ioh. 6. 44.* And God is said to teach vs his waies, when he guides vs by his spirit in the land of righteousness, *Psa. 143.* That this reall and heavenly kind of teaching may take place, God by his grace, puts a kind of softnes into the heart, whereby it is made subiect, and obedient to the word. And it hath two parts. One is an acknowledgmet by faith, that the Son is our redeemer. The second is, regeneration, which is the putting off the old man, & the putting on of the new: which to do, by the vertue of Christ, is to learn Christ *Eph. 4. 20 23.* Thus then God reueals the Son to *Paul*, by preparing him, & making him teachable, by propounding the doctrine of saluation to him, & by causing him inwardly to beleue it, & to obey it. And thus wee see the maner of the calling, & conuersion of *Paul*.

For the better clearing of this doctrine, due questions are to bee answered. The first is, what was the preuenting grace in the conuersion of *Paul*? Answer. Schoolemen, and Papists generally teach, that it was the inspiration of good motions and desires into the heart of *Paul*. But it is false which they teach: for the heart is vncapable of any good desire or purpose, till it be regenerate. The trueth is this: that the preuenting grace, in the first conuersion, is the grace of regeneration, & secondly, the inspiration of good desires & motions. When Christ preuents *Lazarus*, that he may reuiue againe, he first puts a soule into him, and then he calls vnto him, and saith, *Come forth, Lazarus*, because he was dead: in like manner, wee are dead in sinne, and therefore regeneration (which is the soule of our soules) must

must bee put into vs, before any inspiration of heavenly motions can take place. Yet after we are once borne anew, good motions and desires put into our hearts, may bee the preuenting grace, for the doing of sundrie good works.

- 5 The second question is, whether the will of *Paul* were an agent, or cause in the effecting of his first conuersion? *Answer.* No: Scripture makes two sorts of conuersion: one *Passive*, when man is conuerted by God. In this, man is but a subiect, to receiue the impression of grace, and no agent at all. For in the creating, setting, or im-
- 10 printing of righteousness and holiness in the heart, will can doe nothing. The second conuersion is *Active*, whereby man being conuerted by God, doth further turne & conuert himselfe to God, in all his thoughts, words, and deeds. This conuersion is not onely of grace, nor onely of will; but partly of grace, and partly of will:
- 15 yet so as grace is the principall agent, and will but the instrument of grace. For being first turned by grace, we then can moue, and and turne our selues. And thus there is a cooperation of mans will with Gods grace. And *Austen* said truly, *Hee that made thee without thee, doeth not saue thee without thee.*

Serm. 25. de
verbis Apostoli

- 20 The third question is, whether God did offer any violence to *Pauls* minde and will in his conuersion. *Answer.* There is a double violence, or coercion. One, which doeth abolish all consent of will; and this he vsed not. The other drawes out a consent from the wil, by causing it of an vnwilling will, to become willing. This coercion
- 25 on or violence, God offered to *Paul*, and in this sense, they which come to Christ, are said to be drawne, *Ioh. 6. 45.*

- The fourth question is, wherein stands the efficacie of the preuenting grace, whereby *Paul* was effectually conuerted? *Answer.* The Councell of Trent, and sundrie Papistes, incline to this opi-
- 30 nion, to thinke that it stands in the euent, in that the will of man applies it selfe to the grace which God offereth. But then the efficacie of grace must bee from mans will: and then man hath something whereof to boast, and hee is to thanke himselfe for the grace of God. Other Papists place the efficacy of grace in the congruities,
- 35 or aptnesse of motions, or heavenly perswasions, presented to the mind of the man that is to be conuerted. But this opinion also is deuoid of truth. For there is no efficacie in any motions or perswasions, til there be a change, & new creation of the wil. The true answer is this. Outward meanes are effectual, because they are ioyned
- 40 with the inward operation of the spirit. Inward grace is effectual, because God addes to the first grace, the second grace. For hauing giuen the power to beleue, & repent, he giues also the will and the

deed: and then faith and repentance must needs follow. And herein stands the efficacy of the first grace, that God addes vnto it, and *workes the will and the deed*, *Phil. 2. 13.*

The last question is, whether it was in the power of *Pauls* will, to resist the calling, or the grace of God? *Ans.* The will for his condition is apt to resist grace: neuerthelesse, if we consider the efficacy of Gods grace, and the will of God, hee could not resist the calling of God. Every one that hath heard and learned of the Father, comes to Christ, *Iohn 6. 45.* Gods will determines and limits the will of man: and mans will is an instrument to effect the will of God. It may be here demanded, how the efficacy of grace may stand with the libertie of mans will, if it haue not libertie, to accept or refuse the grace of God? *Ans.* Libertie and freedome of will in God, is perfect libertie: now God cannot will either good or euill, but only that which is good. And mans will, the neerer it comes to this will of God, the greater libertie hath it. Therefore to will that onely which is good, so it bee freely without compulsion, is true libertie: to be able to will that which is euill, and to resist the calling of God, is not liberty, but impotency. And he that can onely will that which is good, doeth more freely will good, and hath more libertie, then he that can will either good or euill.

The vse. Ministers of the Gospell must learne Christ as *Paul* learned him. They may not content themselues with that teaching which they finde in Schooles, but they must proceed further to a reall learning of Christ: and that is, to beleue in the Sonne of God, to die to their sinnes by the vertue of his death, and to liue to God by the vertue of his life. This is a reall and liuely learning of Christ. They that must conuert others, it is meete they should bee effectually conuerted. *Iohn* must first eate the Booke, and then prophesie, *Reuel. 10. 9.* And they that would bee first Ministers of the Gospell, must first themselves eate the booke of God. And this booke is indeed eaten, when they are not onely in their minds inlightned, but their hearts are mortified and brought in subiection to the word of Christ. Valesse Christ be thus learned spiritually and really, Diuines shall speake of the word of God, as men speake of riddles, and as Priestles in former time said their Mattens, when they hardly knew what they said. Again, students in euery facultie, are with *Paul* to learne Christ, and that as hee learned him. Such persons desire and loue good learning: now this is the best learning of all, to learne to know, and to acknowledge Christ. The knowledge of Christ crucified is *Pauls* learning. The knowledge of the remission of our sins, is the learning

ning of *David* that great Prophet. For this title he giues to the 32. Psalme, The vnderstanding of *David*. Lastly, all men are in this reall manner with *Paul* to learne the same. For he is an example to all that shall beleue in him to life euerlasting, 1. *Tim.* 1. 12. *Paul* 5 biddes vs doe the good things which we haue seene in him, *Philip.* 5. 9 *Hoc urge.*

The third point is the end of *Pauls* conuersion, in these words [that he might preach him among the gentiles.] Here I consider what he must preach, namely the Sonne Christ: and to whom? 10 namely among the nations. Againe of the preaching of Christ, I consider two things: the first is, why Christ must be preached rather then *Moses*? Answer, there be two causes. One is, because Christ is the substance or subiect matter of the whole Bible. For the summe of the Scriptures may be thus gathered together. The Son 15 of God made man, and working our redemption, is the Sauour of mankind: but *Iesus* the Sonne of *Marie* is the Sonne of God, made man, working our redemption: therefore *Iesus* the Sonne of *Marie* is the Sauour of mankind. The maior is the summe of the old Testament: the minor is the summe of the new: and the conclusion 20 is the scope of both. The second cause is. The law is the ministry of death: and the Gospell (which is the doctrine of saluation by the Sonne) is the instrument of God to beginne and to confirme all graces of God in vs that are necessary to our saluation. Therefore the doctrine principally to be preached is the Gospell, and 25 not the law.

Secondly it may be demaunded, what it is to preach Christ? Answer: it is a great worke, and it containes foure ministeriall actions. The first, generally to teach the doctrine of the incarnation of Christ, and of his three offices, his Kingly office, his Propheticall 30 office, and his Priesthood with the execution thereof. The second, to teach that faith is an instrument ordained of God to apprehend and to apply Christ with his benefits. The third is, to certifie and to reueale to euery hearer, that it is the will of God to saue him by Christ in particular, so be it he will receiue Christ. For when the 35 Gospell is preached, God thereby signifies vnto vs, that his will is to giue vs life euerlasting, 1. *Ioh.* 5. 11. The last is to certifie and to reueale to euery particular hearer, that he is to apply Christ with his benefits to himselfe in particular, and that effectually by his faith, that a change and conuersion may follow both in heart and 40 life, 1. *Ioh.* 3. 23. And thus when these things are rightly performed, Christ is preached. Hence it appeares that to learne Christ, is not onely to know him generally, but also effectually to apply him to our

our selues by our faith, that there may be a change and renouation of the whole man. They which learne Christ, must thus learne him, els can they not be saued.

The second point is, that *Paul* must preach to the gentiles, there be two causes of it: one, that the prophecies of the calling of the gentiles might be fulfilled, *Psal. 2.* and *110. Isai. 2.* The second, because at the death of Christ, the diuision which was betweene the Iewes and gentiles was quite abolished, *Eph. 2. 13.* Here I obserue the difference betweene Apostles and ordinary Ministers. Their charge is a set, and particular congregation; whereas the charge of an Apostle is the whole world.

The fourth and last point is the obedience of *Paul* to the calling of God, in that he went and preached the Gospell. Here a question may be demaunded: whether *Paul* performed his obedience, by vertue of the grace which he had formerly receiued without the helpe of new and speciall grace, no? *Answer.* No. His obedience proceedes from the first grace, helped or excited by speciall grace. In the regenerate, that haue power to doe good, God workes the will, and the deede, in euery good worke. *Phil. 2. 13.* And it is a certaine truth: we doe not that which we are able to doe, vnlesse God make vs doe it, as he made vs able to doe it. Therefore to the dooing of euery new act, there is new, and speciall grace required.

In *Pauls* obedience, I consider three points, 1. When he obeyed? Immediately. How? without deliberation or consultation. Where? In *Arabia* and *Damascus*.

For the first, in that he obeyed God in going to preach immediately, we learne how we are to answer and obey the calling of God, that calles to amendment, and newnesse of life: namely in all hast, without deferring of time. *Hebr. 3. 8.* To day if yee will heare his voyce, harden not your hearts: and *v. 13.* exhort one another while it is called to day. *Psal. 119. 60.* I made haste and did not delay to keepe thy commandments. And there be good reasons, why we should no longer deferre our conuersion to God. The end of our life is vncertaine: and looke as death leaues vs, so shall the last iudgement finde vs. Secondly, when we delay our repentance, we adde sinne to sinne, and so treasure up wrath against the day of wrath, *Rom. 2.* Thirdly, when we deferre to obey and turne to God, we grow to perfection in sinne: and sinne being perfected bringes forth death. *Iam. 1. 14.* Lastly, late repentance is feldome, or neuer, true repentance. For when men are dying, their sinnes forsake them, and they doe not commonly forsake their sinnes. God hath called vs in

England

England more then fourtie yeares together, and yet many of vs haue not listened to the call of God, but deferred to obey: let vs now presently amend, and turne to God: least if we still deferre the time of our repentance, Gods iudgements come forth in

5 haste vpon vs.

The manner of his obedience is, that *Paul did not communicate with men*: that is, conferre, and consult with them, touching his doctrine, and calling. And this he amplifies by a comparison, thus: *Hee did not consult with any man, no not the Apostles of Hieru-*

10 *salem*. And hee addes a reason of his doing: because they were but *flesh and blood* in respect of God: and indeede, it is vnmeeete to consult with men, touching the matters of God.

Hence I gather, that Gods word, whether preached or written, doth not depend on the authoritie of any man, no not on the

15 authoritie of the Apostles themselves; it is sufficient to authorize it selfe, *Christ receiues not the testimonie of man*, *Iohn. 5. 34*. And it is an error, to thinke that the Church doth authorize the word, and religion, in the consciences of men. For the Church it selfe is founded on the word. The Church cannot consist without faith,

20 nor faith without the word.

Secondly, hence I gather, that there is no consultation, or deliberation, to be vsed at any time, touching the holding, or net holding of our religion. Hee that will followe Christ, may not put his hand to the plough, and then looke backe againe to his

25 friends, to see what they will say, *Luk. 9. 61*. Hee that would bee wise, must denie his owne wisdom, and become a foole, *1. Cor. 3.*

18. The three children would not consult, touching the worshipping of the image, but said: *be it known to thee, O king, that we will not worship thy gods, Dan. 3*. When the Iudge gaue *Cyprian* the Martyr

30 leave to deliberate awhile, whether hee would denie his religion: he answered, that *in diuine matters deliberation is not to be vsed*. By this I gather, that the Scholmen haue done euill, which haue turned all diuinitie into questions, and haue made of the Articles of our faith, a questionnaire diuinitie. Secondly, by this we are taught, that

35 in the day of triall we may not consult of the change of religion: but wee must be resolute, and tread vnder foot the periuasions of flesh and blood.

Thirdly, our obedience to God must bee without consultation. Wee must first trie what is the will of God, and then absolutely

40 put it in execution, leauing the issue to God. *Abram* is called of God to forsake his countrey and kinred; *Genesis. 12*. hee directly then giues attendance to the commaundement, and goes as it

were

were blind-fold, hee knowes not whither. God promised him a child in his old age, he beleeueth God without any reasoning, or disputing the case with himselfe, to or fro: *Rom. 4. 20.* But the common maner is, (though we know the wil of God) to dispute the case, and to consult with our friends, and to practise according to carnall counsell. *Eue* listens to the counsell of Satan, and neglects Gods commandement. *Saul* being forbidden to offer sacrifice in Gilgal, till *Samuel* came to doe it; consults with himselfe, whether he may doe it or no: and followes his owne reason, against Gods commandement, and lost his Kingdome for it. And this kind of deliberation, whereby men consult what is to be done, is the cause of the manifold rebellions of men, in the world. 5 10

In that man is tearmed here, *flesh and blood*, we are taught, not to put confidence in man: we are taught to humble our selues before God: we are taught every day, to prepare our selues against the day of death, and the day of iudgement: yea to account every new day, as the day of death, because we are but flesh and blood. 15

The third point is, where *Paul* first preached? namely, in *Arabia and Damascus*. Arabia is a region of the world, where Mount Sinai standes, and where the children of Israel wandered 40. yeares. The inhabitants thereof, were of two sorts: some more ciuill, and some barbarous. Ciuill, as the *Ismaelites*, *Amalechites*, *Medianites* &c. (Yet were they professed enemies of the people of God,) barbarous, as the Easterne part of Arabia, toward Babylon. For the inhabitants dwelt in Tents, and liued like wilde and sauage men, by robbing and stealing, and consequently by killing, *Isai. 13. 20. Jerem. 3. 2.* 20 25

Here we see *Pauls* estate and condition, when he first begins the execution of his Apostolicall function. God then layes vpon him a sharpe and weighty triall. For he goes alone into Arabia, and hee must become a teacher to his professed enemies, yea to a sauage generation, of whose conuersion he had no hope, in mans reason. And this hath beene an vsuall dealing of God with his owne seruants. When *Moses* was called to deliuer the *Israelites*, and was in the way, the Lord, for a defect in his family, comes against him, to destroy him, *Exod. 4. 24.* *Dauid* is annointed King of *Israel*: and withall *Saul* is raised vp, to persecute him, and to hunt him, as men hunt Partridges in the mountaines. *Ionas* is called to preach to *Ninue*, and withall God forsakes him, and leaues him to himselfe, so as he is cast into the sea, and deuoured of a fish: and after this, being deliuered, he must goe preach at *Ninue*. When *Christ* was in his baptism (as it were inaugurated the Doctour of the Church) presently 35 40

presently after, before he began to preach, he is caried into the wilderness, to be with wild beastes, and to be tempted of the diuel, *Mar. 1. v. 12.* And the reasons of this dealing of God, are manifest: by this meanes sinful men are made fit for the office of teaching. For
 5 the saying is true, *Reading, prayer, & temptation, make a Diuine.* Again, by this meanes they are caused to depend on the providence and protection of God, and they are made fit for the assistance and presence of Gods spirit, who dwels onely with them that are of humble and contrite hearts. Now then let not them that in any notable
 10 change of their liues, find notable temptations, be discouraged; for this is a condition that befalls them, by a wise & special providence of God. For it was the Spirit of God that led Christ into the wilderness, to be tempted, after his baptisme.

Againe, heere wee are taught, to acknowledge three things in
 15 God. His power, in that he sets vp his kingdome, where it is most oppugned, and reignes in the midlt of his owne enemies; namely, the wicked and sauage Arabians, according to that in the *Psalme 110. v. 2.* His goodnesse, in that he sends *Paul* to preach repentance to the people that are in the snare of the diuell at his will, *2. Tim. 2.*
 20 26. His trueth, in that hee now fulfils things foretold by *Dauid, Psal. 72. 10. The Kings of Sheba and Saba shall bring gifts:* that is, Ethiopians and Arabians.

18 Then after three yeeres, I came againe to Ierusalem, to
 25 visite Peter, and abode with him fifteene dayes.

Paul hauing prooued before, that he learned not the Gospell of any man, no not of the Apostles at Hierusalem, goes about now to answer exceptions that might be made against his reason. And first of all, it might haue bene objected, that hee was seene at Hierusalem sundrie times: and therefore in all likelihood, went thither to be instructed. To this hee answers three things: that hee went thither three yeeres after his conuersion, and not before: that he went to visite Peter; that he abode there fifteene dayes. For the first, where he saith, he preached three yeeres in Arabia and Damascus,
 30 and then after went to Hierusalem, and abode there fifteene daies (for some speciall causes:) we see *Paul* is readie, and able to make a good account of the spending of his time, both for daies and yeeres. And good reason: for time is precious, and great care ought to be had of the expending of it. After *Pauls* example, we must so
 40 liue, that we may be able to giue a good account of the spending of our dayes. That this may bee done, wee must learne to number our dayes, and, to reade me the time. To number our dayes, is to consider the

the shortnesse of our liues, and that wee are every day subiect to death: and withall seriously to bethinke our selues, of the causes of this our condition; namely, our sinnes, both originall, and actual. When this twofold consideration takes place, wee then beginne to number our daies. The numbring of our time, and the parts thereof, brings vs to the redeeming of it. *To redeem our time*, is to take time, while time serues, specially for spirituall vses, and for the amendement of our liues. When time is thus numbred and redeemed, then shall the good account bee made before God and men. Wherefore miserable is the case of them, that spend their daies in idlenes, in riot, and sporting, in chambering, and wontonnesse. For they neither number time, nor redeeme it: and therefore they are farre from any good account.

The second point is, that *Paul* goes vp to Hierusalem to visit *Peter*, that is, to see him, to be acquainted with him, to talke, and conferre with him. Hence it appeares, that there is a lawfull kinde of peregrination, or pilgrimage: in that *Paul* iourneies from Arabia to Ierusalem, to see *Peter*. Thus the Queene of Saba, went vp to Ierusalem, to heare the wisdome of *Salomon*. The lawe of God, was, that all the males in Israel, should thrise in the yeare, goe vp to the place which God had appointed, *Deut. 16*. This law was practised by *Elkana* and *Hanna*, *1 Samuel 1*. by *Ioseph* and *Marie*, by the Steward of *Candaces* queene of Ethiopia. *Act. 8*. Neuerthelesse, Popish pilgrimage is vtterly to bee condemned, for two causes. One is, because it is made a part of Gods worship, whereas now in the new Testament, all religious distinction of places is abolished, *1 Tim. 2. 8*. Lift vp pure hands in euery place vnto God. Some alleadge, that vowes, which were not commanded, were neuerthelesse parts of Gods worship, among the Iewes. I answer: though men were not commanded to vowe, yet the matter and forme of vowes was commanded. And in that God commanded the manner of vowing, he allowed the acte of vowe-making: let the Papists shew the like allowance for their pilgrimage. The second reason is, because Popish pilgrimage is not to liuing men, but to the reliques and images of dead men: which kind of pregrination, was neuer vsed in the world, till after the Apostles daies. For pilgrimage to reliques came in, 300. yeares after Christ, and pilgrimage to images, after 600. yeares.

In that *Paul* goes about to visit *Peter*, the Papists gather the Primacie of *Peter*, ouer all the Apostles, but falsely. For this visitation argues reuerence & reuerence is giuen, not only to superiours, but also to equals. Again, primacie is twofold: Primacie of order, and

and *Primacie of power*. *Primacie of order*, was due vnto *Peter*, in that he was first called to be an Apostle, and hee was in the faith before *Paul*. And in this regard, he was reuerenced of him

5 The third point is, that *Paul* abides with *Peter* at Ierusalem, and that fiftene daies. His abode with *Peter*, was in token of mutuall consent, and fellowship. Like should be the consent of the Ministers of the Gospell. For their office is to publish and perswade peace betweene God and men, to which they are vnfit, that cannot maintaine peace among themselues. And all beleeuers should be
10 of one mind, speaking and thinking the same things: and this cannot be, vnlesse there be a consent of them that are guides. This consent therefore is to be maintained, and greatly to be praied for. And when there cannot be consent of iudgment, by reason of humane frailtie, yet so long as the foundation is maintained, there
15 must bee consent in affection. And iniuries offered may not dissolue this bond. Though the Church of Ierusalem suspected *Paul*, and would not at the first acknowledge him for a Disciple, *Actes* 9. 26. yet did hee for his part, accept of their loue and fellowship.

20 Wheras he addes, that his abode with *Peter* was but for 15 daies: hereby he signifies, that he learned not the Gospell of him: for it could not be learned in so short a space: neither could *Paul* by the teaching of any man become an Apostle in so small a time.

25 19 And none other of the Apostles saw I, saue *James* the Lords brother.

It might haply bee obiected against the former verse, that *Paul* might bee taught of some other Apostle beside *Peter*, and that at Ierusalem: to this he answers two things. One, that there was none
30 of the Apostles at Ierusalem, but *James*: (beside *Peter* before named) the second, that he did but see *James*.

Heere I gather, that if there bee any mother Church in the world, it is rather Ierusalem then Rome, because the Gospell was first preached there, and went thence into the whole world: and
35 Ierusalem was for a time guided by two of the cheefe Apostles, *James*, and *Peter*.

In that *James* is called our Lords brother, three things may bee demanded. One, which *James* this was? *Answer*. It was *James* the sonne of *Alpheus*: for he liued 14. yeares after this, *Galat* 2. 9. whereas *James* the sonne of *Zebedeus* liued not so long, because hee
40 was put to death by *Herod*. The second thing is, how *James* should bee the Lords brother? *Answer*. In Scripture, children of the

the same wombe, are brethren: men of the same blood, are brethren; *Abraham* and *Lot*. *Gen.* 13.8. Men of the same country are brethren, thus *Sauls* countrymen are called his brethren. *1.Chron.* 12.2. And *James* is called our Lords brother, not because he was of the same wombe, but because he was of the same blood or kindred: for *Elie* had two daughters, *Marie* espoused to *Ioseph*, and *Marie Cleophas*, who afterward was married to *Alpheus* of whom came *James* here mentioned. *James* therefore was the cousin-german of Christ. Therefore *Heluidius* failed when he went about to infringe the perpetuall virginity of the virgin *Marie* out of this place, as if shee had more sonnes beside Christ. The third thing is, what benefit *James* had by being the Lords brother? Answer. Hee is here called the Lords brother onely, for distinctions sake in respect of the other *James* the sonne of *Zedebeus*: and this brotherhood doth not make him the better Apostle, or the better man. Outward things doe not commend vs to God. And it is the spirituall kindred, by meanes of faith, and our new birth, that bringes vs into fauour with God, *Matthew* 12.49

20 *Nowe the things which I write, I speake before God, I lie not.*

Before, *Paul* hath auouched fundrie things of himselfe: that hee preached in Arabia, and Damascus: that hee went thence to Jerusalem: that hee did not learne the Gospell there of *Peter*, *James*, or any other Apostle. Nowe some man might happily say, that these sayings of his are but false and fabulous auouchments: therefore in this verse *Paul* defends himselfe, and iustifies his owne sayings, by a diuine testimony.

The words containe 2. partes. An answer to an obiection concealed, on this manner; I may bee thought to lie, but indeede I lie not. The second is, a confirmation by oath, *Before God I speake it*. Touching the first part, there bee two points to bee handled: what is a lie? And whether it be a sinne or no?

A lie is when wee speake the contrarie to that we thinke with an intention to deceive. More plainly, in a lie there bee foure things: the first is, to auouch and affirme that which is false. The second is, to speake with a double heart, *Psal.* 12.2. That is, to speake against knowledge, and conscience, as when a man saith that is true which he knowes to be false, or that is false, which he knowes to bee true. This makes a lie, to be a lie, and this distinguisheth an vntruth, from a lie. For here it must be obserued, that a man may speake that which is false, and not lie: namely if he speake that which is false, thinking

thinking it to be true. For then though he erre & is deceived, yet he speaks not against conscience, and consequently he speaks no lie. Againe, a man may speake that which is true, and yet lie: for if he speake that which is true indeed, and speake it as a trueth, and yet thinke it to be false, helies indeed: because hee speakes the trueth
 5 against his conscience. The third thing in a lie, is, *a mind or intention to deceiue or hurt*. For in the ninth commaundement that is a false testimony that is against our neighbor. The fourth point is, that *he which speakes that which is false vpon a vanity of mind without reasonable cause, is a liar*. Thus boasters and flatterers are liars. And these are
 10 the things which concur in the making of a lie.

For the better conceiuing of the nature of a lie, wee must put difference between it and sundrie other things incident to speech. First, we must put difference between a lie and a *parable*, or *figure*. In a parable indeed there is something supposed or fained; as for
 15 example, when the trees are brought in conferring, and consulting about their king, *Iudg. 9. 8.* neuerthelesse a parable is farre from falsehood, or lying: for by things fained, it signifies and declares an vnfained truth.

Againe, difference must be put between a lie and *the concealement of a thing*: for it is one thing to speake against our knowledge, and another to speake that which wee know. And concealements, if there be a reasonable cause, & if it be not necessary for vs to reueale the thing concealed, are not vnlawfull. Thus *Abram* speakes the truth in part, calling *Sara* his sister, & conceals it in part, not confessing her to be his wife, *Gen. 12. 10.* Thus *Samuel* by Gods appointment reueals that he came to Bethlem to offer sacrifice, & conceals the anointment of *Dauid*, that he might saue his life, *1. Sam. 16. 5.* *Jonas* preaches that Nineue shall be destroyed within fourtie daies, and he conceales the condition of repentance. The like did *Isaie*
 20 to *Ezechias*, *Isai. 38. 1.*
 25

Thirdly, a difference must be made between lying and *faining*: which some call *simulation*: not *dissembling*, but rather *sembling* (if I may so terme it.) And that is, when something is spoken, not contrary, but beside, or diuers to that which we think. And this kind of
 35 faining, if it bee not to the preiudice of trueth, against the glory of God, & the good of our neighbor, and haue some conuenient and reasonable cause, is not vnlawfull. It was not the will and counsell of God to destroy the Israelites for their idolatry. And he doth not
 40 speake vnto *Moses* any thing contrary to his will, but something that is beside, or diuers vnto it, when he saith, *Let me alone, that my wrath may waxe hote, and I may destroy them*: *Exod. 32. 10.* And this

he spake, that he might stirre vp *Moses* to feruency in praier for the Israelites, and the Israelites to vnfeined repentance. *Iosua* hauing besieged *Ai*, meant not to flie, yet doeth he faine a flight, that hee might draw his enemies out of the citie, and destroy them, *Ios. 8. 5.* There is a kind of deceit called *dolus bonus*, that is, a good deceit, and of this kind was the act of *Iosua*. Thus Physitians for their good, vse to deceiue the senses of their impotent patients. Thus parents insinuate vnto their children, terrible things of the Beare, and bull-beggar, that they may keepe them from places of hurt and danger. And this may be done without fault, for it is one thing to contrary the truth, and another to speake or doe something diuerse vnto it without contrarietie.

The second point is, *whether to lie, be a sinne or no?* the answer is, Yea. For euen in this place, *Paul* puts lying from himleife and that with an oath. The diuell is said to be the authour of all lies, *Iohn 8. 44.* And it is Gods commandement, that we should put away lying, *Eph. 4. 25.* It is objected, that the sporting, and officious lie, is not against charitie, to the hurt of any, but for the good of men. I answer, first, though it be not to the hurt of our neighbour, yet is it to the hurt and prejudice of truth. Secondly, they are deceived to whom these lies are told. Thirdly, he hurts himleife that tels a lie, though it be for the good of men: for when hee speakes the truth indeed, he is lesse beleued. Lastly, though these kind of lies seeme to be good in respect of their end, yet are they not good in respect of their nature and constitution. For in speaking, there should be a conformity and consent between the tongue and the mind; which is not when any lie is vttered. Secondly, it is objected, that the Egyptian Midwives saued the male children of the Israelites: and *Rahab* the spies by lying, *Exo. 1. 19. Ios. 2. 5.* and that they are commended for this. I answer, we must distinguish the worke done, from the execution of the worke. The worke in sauing the children, and the spies, was a fruit of faith, & the feare of God, and it is commended: but the manner of putting these workes in execution, by lying, is not approoued. If it bee said, that faith and the feare of God cannot stand with a manifest sinne: I say againe, that faith and the feare of God are imperfect in this life, and therefore they are ioined with many frailties; and actions of faith are mixed with sundrie defects and sinnes.

Now then we are to be exhorted, to make a conscience of lying, and to speake the truth from our hearts. And there be many reasons to induce vs to the practise of this dutie. First, it is Gods commandement, *1. am. 2. 14.* Secondly, lying is a conformitie to the diuell,

well, and by truth we are made conformable to God, who is truth it selfe. Thirdly, we are sanctified by the word of truth, *Ioh. 17. 17.* and guided by the spirit of truth: and therefore we are to detest lying, and deceit. Fourthly, truth is a fruit of Gods spirit, *Gal. 5.* & a mark of Gods child, *Psal. 32. v. 2.* he hath the pardon of his sinnes *in whose spirit there is no guile;* and *Psal. 15. 2.* he shall rest in the mountaine of God, who speaks the truth from his heart. Lastly, destruction is the liers reward, *Psal. 5. 6.* God will destroy them that speake lies: and they must haue their portion in the lake that burnes with fire and brimston,

10 *Reuelation 22. 15.*

Thus much of the answer to the obiection: now followes the confirmation by oath [*before God.*] Here it may be demanded, how these words can bee a forme of swearing? *Answer.* In an oath there be foure things. The first is, an *Asseration of the truth.* The second is, *Confession*, whereby the partie that is to sweare, acknowledgeth the power, presence, and wisdom of God, in searching the heart, and that he is both witnesse & Iudge of all our doings. The third is, *Inuocation of God*, that he would bee a witnesse with vs, and to vs, that we speake the truth. The last is, *Imprecation*, that God would be a Iudge, to take reuenge vpon vs if welie. Now then, the forme of an oath is a certain forme of words, in which not all, but some of the principall parts of an oath are expresse, and therest concealed, and yet to be vnderstood. *Ierem. 4. 2.* there is the forme of an oath, *The Lord liueth*, and here onely *confession* is expresse. The forme of swearing, *I call God to witnesse to my soule*, *2. Cor. 1. 23.* expresseth the third part, namely, *Inuocation*. The wordes, *Ruth. 2. 17.* *The Lord doe thus and thus vnto mee*, is an *Imprecation*. The common forme *The Lord thee helpe through Iesus Christ*, is partly praier, and partly imprecation. And the forme in this place is directly a confession, that God is present to witnesse and iudge the truth. Thus commonly in all formes of oathes one part is expresse, and the rest are infolded.

Here first we learne, that the forme of an oath, is to bee plaine, and direct in the Name of God, and not indirect, or oblique in the name of the creatures, Gods name concealed. And it is the flat commandement of God, *Mat. 5. 34.* It is alledged, that *Paul, 1. Cor. 15. 31.* sweares by his reioycing in Christ. I answer; the words of *Paul*, by my reioycing, are not an oath, but an obtestation: for the meaning of his words is this, that his sorrows and afflictions which he indured for Christ, would testifie (if they could speake) that he died daily. Thus *Moses* called heaven and earth to witnesse, without swearing: for in an oath the thing by which he sweares, is made not

onely witnesse, but also iudge. Neuerthelesse, it is not vnlawfull to name the creatures in the forme of an oath, if they be considered as pledges presented vnto God, that he should punish vs in them if we lie. Thus *Paul* sweareth, *I call God to witnesse to (or vpon) my soule*. Here they are to bee blamed, whose common swearing is by the creatures, as by their faith, by their troth, by the Masse, Marie, by this bread, by this drinke, &c.

Secondly, here we learne to vse an oath, onely in the case of extremitie; namely, when a necessary truth is to bee confirmed, and when this cannot be done by any reason, or proofoe to be found among men vpon earth, then may wee flie vnto heaven for proofoe, and make God our witnes. Thus *Paul* confirms his owne calling, when all other proofes failed. And it must further be obserued, that in extremities he vseth an oath but seldome. This seemes to condemne their wickednesse, that crie at euery word in their common talke, *before God, before God*.

Thirdly, before we sweare, we are to vse great meditation, consideration, and preparation: and therefore *Paul* in swearing vseth a word of attention, and faith, *Behold, I speake it before God*. This condemnes the rash & customeable swearing of men in their common talke: who also in that they commonly and rashly sweare, commonly forswear themselves.

In that *Paul* confirms his writings by oath, it appeares that they are of God. For if he had sworne falsly, God would haue taken reuenge vpon him, and his writings before this: which hee hath not done.

Whereas *Paul* saith, *Before God I speake it*: he teacheth vs after his owne example, to bring our selues into the presence of God, to walke before him as *Enoch* did, *Gene. 5. 22.* and as *Abraham* was commaunded, *Gene. 17. 1.* and to doe whatsoeuer we doe as in the sight and presence of God: and to be afraid to sinne, because of his presence. This is the true feare of God, and this is the right practise of religion.

21 *After that I went into the coasts of Syria and Cilicia: and I was unknowne by face to the Churches of Iudea, which were in Christ.* 35

22 *But they had heard onely some say, Hee which persecuted vs in times past, now preacheth the faith, which before hee had destroyed.* 40

23 *And they glorified God in mee.*

Here

Heere *Paul* answers an other obiection, which may be framed thus: Though *Paul* learned not the Gospell of the Apostles at Ierusalem, yet might he haply learne it of them in other Churches of Iudea. To this *Paul* answers three things. The first is, that hee
 5 *went from Ierusalem into Syria and Cilicia.* The second, that *hee was not known in person to the Churches of Iudea*, but onely by heare say: and he sets downe the report that went of him. The third is, that the Churches of Iudea did not disgrace and slander him, but they
 10 *glorified God for him.* Of these in order. For the first, that *Paul*
 10 *went from Ierusalem straight into Syria, and Cilicia, the regions of the Gentiles, there bee two causes.* One, because *Paul* was ordained specially to be the Apostle of the Gentiles, *Act. 9 15. Rom. 15. 16.* The second, because Cilicia was his owne countrey: for he was borne in Tarsus, a towne in Cilicia: and his loue to his countrey,
 15 *no doubt, was great.* For in the like case, hee could haue wished himselfe to be accursed for his countrey men the Iewes. From this first answer I gather two things. First, if any Apostle aboue the rest, be the Pastour and vniuersall Bishop of the Church ouer the whole world, it is *Paul*, and not *Peter*: because he specially was or-
 20 *dained to teach and conuert the nations.* The second is, that *Pauls* often and dangerous iourneys, must teach vs to attend on our callings with care and diligence, and not to bee dismayed with the troubles that shall befall vs.

The second answer, that *Paul* was known to the Christian Iewes
 25 *not by face, but by heare say:* this may seeme strange, considering *Paul* was at Ierusalem, & trauielled through Iurie, into Syria, and Cilicia: but it is the truth: and the reason of it is plaine. The office of an Apostle is not to build vpon the foundation of an other, or to succeed any man in his labors, but to plant & found the church of the
 30 *new Testament, where Christ had not bin preached or named, Rom. 15. 20.* In this the Apostles differ from all the Ministers of the new Testament whatsoeuer. And this is the cause why *Paul* was not known to the Churches of Iudea. And here we see, that succession (which the Papists magnifie) is not alwaies a note of the true Church, and
 35 *the true Ministerie.* For the true Ministerie of the Apostles, and the Apostolicall Churches wanted it. And this is for the greater commendation of them.

Againe, it is said, that *Paul* was not knowne to the Churches of Iudea, which were in Christ. Where let it be obserued, that 4 yeares
 40 *after the ascension of Christ, the Apostles had gathered, & planted sundrie Christian Churches in Iudea.* This greatly commends the efficacie and power of the Gospel. For hardnesse of heart had over-

spread the nation of the Iewes, and they had reiecte and crucified the Lord of life. And thus, that is verified whic Christ saith, that his Disciples beleeuing in him, should doe greater things, then hee had done, *Ioh. 14. 12.* for hee by preaching did not conuert multitudes of the Iewes, and range them into Churches, as the Apostles did. Here againe, we see that the Gospel, by meanes of the corruption of man, is an occasion of diuisions. For after the Gospel was preached by the Apostles, there arose a diuision of Churches among the Iewes. Some were Churches in Christ, and some out of Christ; namely, the Synagogues which refused Christ. We may not therefore nowe adaiestake offence, if schismes and dissensions followe, where the Gospel is preached: it is not the fault of the Gospel, it is the fault of men.

That *Paul* might the better shew, that hee was knowne to the Churches of the Iewes, onely by heare-say, he expresse the report that went of him. Hence I gather, it is not vnlawfull to tell and heare reports or newes, so be it, they bee not to the preiudice of the truth, of the glory of God, and the good name of men. Nay, it is commendable to report, and heare newes, that concernes the increase of Gods kingdome, and the conuersion of wicked men.

In the report two things are let downe, what *Paul* did? *He once persecuted vs, and destroyed the faith:* what hee now doth? *He preacheth the Gospel.* By this we see that verified, which *Iſai* foretold, that the lyon, the wolfe, the lambe, &c. should peaceably liue together. Againe, here we see, that all things vpon earth, are subiect to change and alteration: so as it may be said, heretofore it was thus, and thus, but now it is otherwise. Therefore in miseries, we may not bee ouer-much grieued, for they are changeable: and in earthly things, we may not reioyce ouer much, because they are mutable, and subiect to daily alterations. Our speciall care must be, to auoide eternall and vnchangeable euils; as death, and the cause of death, namely, sin; and to purchase to our selues, the good things which are euerlasting; namely, the fauour of God, & euerlasting life.

Furthermore, the thing, which *Paul* aimed at, in persecuting the Church, is to be considered, and that was, that hee might destroy the faith. By faith, we are to vnderstand the doctrine of the Gospel, and withall, the vertue, or gift of faith, whereby it is beleued: for the diuell and his instruments, seeke the ouerthrow of both. Christ saith, *Satan desired to sift his Disciples*, that is, to sift all their faith out of their hearts, and to leaue nothing in them, but chaffe, *Luk. 22. 32.* Here then, it may be demanded, whether faith may be lost, specially in the children of God, in the time of temptation, and persecution?

persecution? I answer thus. There bee three degrees of faith. The first consists in two things, *knowledge* of the Gospel, and *Assent* to the truth of it. This faith the devils haue, and it may be lost; and beleevers by this faith, may quite fall away. The second kinde of faith, contains knowledge, assent, a taste, or ioy in the goodnesse of God, a zeale to the word of God, and apparent fruits of holiness. This faith also (being better then the former) may be lost in the daies of persecution: and beleevers by this faith, may fall quite away. *Luk. 8. 13.* The third faith, (called the faith of the elect) contains three parts, knowledge of the Gospel, assent to the truth of it, and apprehension, whereby wee doe receive, and apply Christ with his benefits to our selues, or the promise of remission of sinnes, and life euerlasting. This faith may bee greatly wasted, for things appertaining to it, may be lost, as boldnesse to come vnto God, the sense or feeling of spiritual ioy, and such like. Againe, it may bee buried for a time in the heart, and not shew it selfe, either by fruits, or any profession: and in respect of the measure of it, it may be lessened and maimed: and if we respect the nature of it, it is as apt to be lost, as any other grace of God: for there is nothing by nature vnchangeable, but God. Neuerthelesse, where this faith is in truth, it is neuer by affliction and temptation put out or exstinguished: because God in mercie confirms it, by new grace. Christ saith to *Peter*, *I haue prayed for thee, that thy faith faile not, Luk. 22. 32.* And this priuiledge haue all the godly, for God promisseth that *they shal not be teypted aboue their strength, 1. Cor. 10. 13.* Indeed, persecutors are said to destroy the faith: because this is their intent, & they indeauour to doe what they can; but God preuents their desires, by establishing true faith, that it may not vtterly faile.

It may be objected to the contrarie, on this manner. The childe of God may fall into persecution, and denie Christ: by this fall, he is guiltie of a grieuous offence: being guiltie, hee hath not pardon of his offence, and being without pardon, hee is without faith. Touching guiltinesse, I answer thus. The child of God, when hee falls, is indeed guiltie: but how? Guiltie in respect of himselfe, or as much as in him lies: because he hath done that which is worthy of death, and he hath done all he can to make himselfe guiltie. But he is not guiltie to condemnation, because God on his part doth not breake off the purpose of adoption, and adiudge him to wrath.

Secondly, touching the pardon of his offence. I answer thus. In pardon there be foure degrees: the decree of pardon before all worlds: the promise of pardon in the beginning of the word, *The seede of the woman*, &c. The procurement of pardon vpon the

croſſe: and the donation, or the giuing of the pardon. This donation is an action of God, whereby he giues & communicates Chriſt vnto vs, and applies to our conſciences the remiſſion of our finnes. In this donation, there is required a hand to giue, and a hand to receiue. The hand of God, whereby he giues, is the word preached, and the Sacraments: the hand to receiue, is our faith. The giuing of pardon is neceſſary: for though finnes be pardoned in the decree of God, by his promiſe in the word, and by procurement vpon the croſſe: yet pardon is no pardon to vs, till it be giuen vnto vs by God. Furthermore, this giuing is not altogether at one inſtant, but it be-
 ginneth in the conuerſion of a ſinner, and is often iterated in the vſe of the word and Sacraments, to the death. *Paul* wills the Corinthians reconciled to God, ſtill to be reconciled, *2. Cor. 5. 21.* And we are taught euery day to pray to God, to giue vs the pardon of our finnes. This giuing is twofold, conditionall, and abſolute. Conditionall, when God giues the pardon of ſin vpon condition. Thus in Baptiſme, and in the firſt conuerſion of a ſinner, all finnes without exception, are pardoned; yea future finnes: yet not ſimply whether a man repent or no, but vpon condition of future repentance. The abſolute donation is, when a man repents, or renewes his repentance: for then the pardon of ſinne is ſimply and fully without condition, applied and reuealed to the conſcience. When *Dauid* confeſſed his ſinne, *Nathan*, in the name of the Lord ſaith, *Thy ſinne is forgiven thee. 2. Sam. 12.*

Now then to come to the point, the child of God hath pardon of his fal, in reſpect of the decree to pardon, in reſpect of the general promiſe of pardon, in reſpect of the procurement of pardon, in reſpect of the conditionall donation of pardon, which is made in baptiſme: and he may be ſaid to want pardon, in that the pardon of his offence is not fully and abſolutely giuen him till he recover himſelfe, and renew his repentance. If it be here demanded, what the child of God aſkes when he praies for pardon day by day? I anſwer, he praies for two things. Firſt, that God would continue to ſhew his fauour, & to impute the merits of Chriſt vnto him, whereas he for his part by his offence deſerues to be deſtroyed of all fauour. Secondly, he aſks the giuing of the pardon, that is, that God would certifie his conſcience hereof.

The vſe. Seeing the intent of the diuell and wicked men, is to deſtroy the faith (as it appeares in this place, and in the firſt temptation wherewith Satan aſſaulted Chriſt, *Matth. 4.*) we muſt haue a ſpeciall care of our faith. And firſt we muſt looke that our faith be a true faith, leſt we be deceiued, as the fooliſh virgins. Secondly, we muſt

must keepe and lock vp our faith in some safe and sure place, namely in the store-house or treasury of a good conscience, *1. Tim. 1. 19.* Thirdly, our care must be to increase in faith, that our hearts may be rooted and grounded in the loue of God. And for this cause we are to make continuall experiences, and obseruations of the loue of God toward vs, and to lay them all together, and to build a ioyfull conclusion thereupon.

The third answer of *Paul* is, *And they glorified God for me*: that is, the Churches of Iudea when they heard of my calling and conversion, they considered therein the power, the goodnesse, and the mercy of God, and with ioy they gaue him thanks for it. In this practise of the Church, we learne that our dutie is to sanctifie and glorifie the name of God in euery work of his. And this sanctification hath 2. parts. The first is, the consideration of the diuine vertues that shew themselves in euery work of God, as his wisdom, power, iustice, mercy, providence, presence, &c. The second is, praise and thanksgiving to God for the same. And this practise must be enlarged to all his works without exception, to his iudgments, as well as to his works of mercy. Therefore we are commanded in persecution to sanctifie God in our hearts, *1. Pet. 3. 17.* And *Moses*, because he failed in the doing of this dutie, was barred the land of Canaan, *Num. 20. 12.* In England God hath wrought his wondrous works among vs. He hath giuen vs peace and protection against our enemies, with the Gospel, for the space of fortie yeares and more. And our duty is to glorifie God in these works of his: but alas, we doe it not. For the Gospel of saluation is little regarded of the most, and little obedience is yeilded to it. This neglect of ours in glorifying and praising of God, is a gteat sinne: and it stands vs in hand to repent of it betime, lest God take away his word from vs, and leaue vs to strange illusions, to beleue lies.

Againe, here we see what is the right maner of honouring of the Saints, and that is, to glorifie God in them, and for them. As for religious worship of adoration and inuocation, it is proper to God, and the Saints desire it not, *Rauel. 22. 9.*

C H A P. II.

1 Then foureteene yeeres after I went vp againe to Ierusalem with Barnabas, and tooke with me Titus also.

2 And I went by reuelation, and communicated with them of the Gospel, which I preach among the Gentiles, but priuately with them that were the chiefe, least by any meanes I should runne, or had runne in vaine.

10



N this Chapter, *Paul* proceeds to iustifie and defend his immediate and extraordinarie calling. And this whole Chapter seemes to depend on the last words of the former chapter, against which the aduersaries of *Paul* might haply obiect on this manner: Though the Churches of Iudea glorifie God for thee, yet will not the Apostles doe it; because thou teachest otherwise then they teach. To this obiection, *Paul* makes a double answer in this Chapter. The effect and summe of the first, is this: I went vp to Ierusalem: I conferred with the Apostles there: I had their consent and approbation. And the answer contains three parts. The first, of *Pauls* iourney to Ierusalem, in the first verse: the second, of his conference with the Apostles, in the second verse: the third, of the approbation which they gaue him, from the third verse to the eleuenth.

In his iourney, I consider foure things. The first is, the manner of his iourneying in these wordes, *I went vp*, or *ascended to Ierusalem*. And this he speakes, because Ierusalem was placed, and seated vpon a mountaine, and compassed with mountaines, *Psal. 125*. or againe, in respect of the dignitie and excellencie of the place: as wee in England are said to go vp to London, from all the parts of the land, because it is the chiefe citie.

The second thing to be considered in the iourney is, the time when, in these wordes, *Then after foureteene yeeres*. Here two questions are to be demaunded. The first is, of which of his iourneys must this be vnderstood? (for hee made fise iourneys to Ierusalem) The first, from Arabia: the second, when he and *Barnabas* were sent by the Church of the Gentiles to carrie almes to Ierusalem: the third, when he went to the Councell at Ierusalem: the fourth, when he went vp for the keeping of his vow: the last, is mentioned *Actes 19. 21*. Answer. These wordes are not spoken of

of

of the first, for that was but three yeares after his conuersion: neither can they well be vnderstood of the second, because *Paul* then was sent by the Church, and therefore he went not by reuelation. And they cannot well be vnderstood of the third: for then *Paul* would here haue mentioned the Councell of Ierusalem, whereof he was a principall member, specially seeing he hath occasion so to doe, and it serued much for his purpose. The fourth and fifth journeyes were after a longer time then foureteene yeares. It is likely therefore, that this journey heere mentioned and described by *Paul*, is none of the five mentioned by *Luke*, but some other. The second question is, When these fourteene yeares must begin? *Answer.* It is vncertaine. Some thinke, they must begin at his conuersion; some three yeares after, when *Paul* went first to Ierusalem: and either may bee a trueth. None must heere take offence. For though circumstances of time and place, beeing things of lesse moment, cannot alwayes be certainly gathered, yet histories for their substance and doctrines pertaining to saluation, are plainly set downe. And here we are put in minde, to be content to be ignorant in some things, because the Spirit of God hath more darkly expressed them, or againe, because wee cannot, by reason of our blindnesse, gather them.

The third point is, concerning the companions of *Paul* in this journey, namely *Barnabas* and *Titus*. And *Paul* takes them with him, that they might be witnesses to the Iewes of the doctrine he taught among the Gentiles: and againe, to the Gentiles of the consent that was betweene him and the rest of the Apostles. For the Law of God is, that every matter shall be established by the testimonie of two or three witnesses. Hence we learne, that if a question arise of the doctrine which is deliuered in the publike ministerie, then the hearers that are able to iudge, must bee witnesses, and the triall is to be made by them. Thus saith Christ in the like case, *Why aske yee me? aske them that heard me, Iohn 18.21.* Therefore great care and circumspection is to be had of things publicly deliuered. Againe, whereas *Paul* makes *Barnabas* a Iew, and *Titus* a Gentile, his companions, we are taught to imbrace with a brotherly loue, not only the men of our owne countrey, but also such as be of other nations, specially if they beleue. For then they are all children of one Father, and pertaine all to one family: and there is no difference of nations now. It is a fault therefore, that men of one nation carrie in their hearts, a generall dislike and hatred oftentimes of them with whom they deale and conuerse, and that because they are of such or such countries.

The fourth point is, the cause of his iourney, in these words, *and I went by reuelation*. Here we are taught, that for the iournies we make, we are to haue some good and sufficient warrant: though not a reuelation, yet a commandement, or that which countersuailes a commandement: as when we trauaile by vertue of our callings. When Noe had made the Arke, hee enters into it at Gods commandement: he abides in it: and when the earth was in part dried, he presumes not to goe out, till the Lord bade him. Here, three sorts of men are to be blamed. Pilgrimes, that trauell to Ierusalem, or other countries in the way of merite, or religion. For they haue no warrant. Secondly, trauellers, that goe from countrey to countrey, and out of the precincts of the Church, vpon vaine curiositie, to see fashions. Such when they trauell from their owne countries, yet they trauell not from their vices, but rather goe deeper into them, and come home againe, with many bad and corrupt fashions. The last, are Beggars, and Rogues, that passe from place to place, that they may liue in idlenesse and vpon the sweate of other mens browes.

Thus much of the iourney: now followes the Conference, in these words; *and I communicated, &c.* Here generally I gather, that Conferences both priuate and publike, are laudable, and to be maintained; specially, when they tend to the maintenance of vnitie, and consent in doctrine. The Papists blame vs Protestants for condemning Conferences (as they say) and Councils. But they doe vs wrong. Indeepe the Councell of Trent we reiect, and condemne. For in it, against all equitie, the Pope was both partie, and iudge. In it there was no libertie to make triall of truth. For nothing was propounded but by the liking and consent of the Pope. Againe, the whole Councell consisted of such as were of the *Italian faction*, whose faith was pinned on the Popes sleeue. Neuerthelesse, we allow all Christian Councils, lawfully gathered: and we desire there might be a Generall Councell, for the triall of truth, and for the staying of vnsetled minds: these three caueats beeing remembred. One, that the Councell be gathered by Christian Princes, to whom the right of calling a Councell belongs. The other, that the Pope be no iudge, but a partie. The third, that Christ in his word be the iudge, and that the Delegates in the Councell be but as witnesses, determining all things by the written word.

In this conference, we are first to consider the manner of conferring, which was vsed. *Paul* saith, *he communicated with them*, that is, he laid downe vnto them, and expounded the Gospel which he

preached; and this he did priuately, that is, with the Apostles, one by one, in plaine and familiar maner, as one friend doeth with another. Therefore for the maintaining of this conference, there was no assembly made, neither was there any disputation held. Onely *Paul* declares his doctrine, and they giue assent. Hence it appeares, that
 5 *Paul* doth not submit the truth of his doctrine to triall. For he was resolu'd of it, and he accor'ded him that taught otherwise: but his intent was to seeke the approbation of the Apostles, that he might stop the mouth of his aduersaries.

10 The second point is, the matter of the conference, & that is the Gospel which *Paul* preached. Here the Papist gathereth, that the Church is the iudge in all questions pertaining to religion, and the word: because it is here the thing that is iudged. I answer, first, that they gather amisse. For *Paul* doeth not heere submit the Gospel
 15 which he preached, to the iudgement of the Church of Ierusalem. And it is false which they teach: for the soueraigne Iudge of all questions and controuersies in religion, is Christ alone. The power to determine and resolu'e in cases concerning faith and good life, is inseparably annexed to his person; and in it are we to rest. The
 20 principall voice of the iudge, & the definitiue sentence, is the written word. And the office of the Church, is no more but to gather, declare, testifie & pronounce this sentence. It is objected, that when a question is propounded, the Scripture cannot speake, nor Christ in the Scripture, but the Church onely: I answer againe, that God
 25 ascribes to the written word, a voice, or speech, *Rom. 3. 12*. And the scripture speakes sufficiently, to the resolu'ing of any mans conscience, in all matters pertayning to saluation. Againe, they alledge, that the Church is before the scripture; and therefore it being most auncient, must be the Iudge. I answer, that the Church was
 30 before the writing of the word, but not before the word which is written. For the Church presupposeth faith, and faith presupposeth a word of God. Vpon this our doctrine, they further vpbraide vs, that we will be tried by nothing, but by the Scriptures, euen as the malefactor, that will not bee tried by the Quest, but by the
 35 euidence. I answer, for the satisfi'ing of our aduersaries, we submit our selues to the triall of the Church and Councils, so bee it, the three cautions before remembred be duly obserued: specially, that all things be iudged, and tried by the written word, and by reasons gathered thence.

40 Againe, the Papists hence gather, that the Scriptures are to bee approoued by the Church. *Ans.* Thus much wee graunt: yet so as we hold, that the principall approbation of the word, (whereby
 wee

we are moued to beleue and obey,) is in the word, and from the word, and not from the Church. For the scripture hath his euidence within it selfe, which is sufficient to make vs to beleue the word to be the word, though the Church should say nothing.

The third point is, concerning the persons, with whome *Paul* 5 conferred: namely, *with them that were the chiefe*, that is, with them that were in price and account, as *Peter, Iames, &c.* Here we see, what is the honour and worshippe that is due vnto excellent men, namely, a pretious and reuerend estimation. Thus the name of *Dauid* was in price in *Israel* for his vertues. *1. Sam. 18. last.* And 10 thus with the *Papists*, are wee content to honour the Saints. Againe, here the *Papists* gather, that they are heretricks, that after *Pauls* example, will not goe vp to *Rome*, to *Peter*, and his succellour, to haue their doctrine and religion tried and examined. I answer, first, we are content to be tried by the writings of 15 *Peter, Iames, Iohn, Paul, &c.* And this is the commandement of God, in doubtfull cases: *To the Law and the testimonie. I. sai. 8.* Secondly, I answer, that we haue a commandement, not to goe vp to *Rome* at this day, to haue our religion tried. *Reuel. 18. Come out of Babylon my people.* Thirdly, I answer, that the Bishop of *Rome* is 20 *Peters* succellour, not in teaching, but in denying *Christ*. And the learned *Papists* confesse, that for this succession, they haue but a humane faith grounded vpon humane historie.

The fourth point is, the Ende of the conference, *Least I should runne*, that is, least I should preach, or had preached in vaine. These 25 words of *Paul*, are not simply to be taken. For the Ministerie of man, and every sermon, brings forth the fruite which God hath appointed. And whether it be vnto the hearers, the fauour of life, or the fauour of death, it is alwaies a sweete fauour vnto God. The words therefore carrie this meaning: Least my preaching 30 should be of lesse vse, and profit: or againe, least I should preach in vaine, in respect of that good which is looked for at the hands of an Apostle. And this *Paul* speakes, because a rumor went abroad, that his doctrine in many things, was contrarie to the other Apostles. And by this meanes, many were kept from receiuing 35 the Gospel, and the faith of weake beleeuers was quenched. Now then the ende of the conference was, to stay this false report, that the Ministerie of *Paul*, might haue passage, and that with greater profit.

Hence the *Papists* gather, that the doctrine of *Paul* was vncertain, and vnprofitable, till it was approoued by *Peter*. I answer, that 40 *Paul* sought the approbation of his doctrine, at the hands of *Peter*, and

and the rest: not because it was vncerten, and vnprofitable; but because it was slandered: and the slander was, that he taught otherwise then *Peter* did. Now to cut off this slander, he useth meanes to manifest his consent with *Peter*, & therefore seekes approbation at his hand.

5 Againe, when *Paul* saith, *Least I should runne in vaine*, he giues vs to vnderstand, that the Ministerie of the word, is not a worke of ease, or pleasure, but a labour: nay a continued labour, like to the running in a race. It were therefore to be wished, that ministers of
10 the Gospel, would so labour, and walke in this calling, that they might be able to say with *Paul*, *I haue fought a good fight, I haue finished my course*, &c. 2. *Tim.* 4.

Thirdly, hence it appeares, that all belecuers should haue a cer-
15 ten knowledge of their faith and religion. The procuring of this, was the thing that *Paul* aimed at, in this conference with the Apostles at Ierusalem. We must not be as *childe*, carried away with euery winde of doctrine, *Eph.* 4. 14. Gods word requires faith in vs: and faith presupposeth certain knowledge. The first, and second commandments require, that we know God, and his will, distinguish him
20 from false gods, and his worshippe, from false worshippe. Here comes the fault of our times to be considered: most men among vs, doe not know their religion, neither can they distinguish it from error, and false religion. A foule negligence. Wee take paines to learne trades, and occupations, that wee may haue wherewith to
25 preferue this temporall life: what a shame then is it, that we learne no better to know the doctrine of true religion, whereby our soules are to be saved.

Lastly, here we learne, that the office of the Minister is, not onely to teach and preach, but also to studie, and to take care, how by
30 preaching he may doe the most good.

3. But neither yet *Titus*, which was with me, though he were a Grecian, was compelled to be circumcised.

After the Conference, followes the Approbation, which was gi-
35 uen to *Paul*. It stands in foure things. The first, that the Apostles did not compell *Titus* to be circumcised. v. 3. The second, that they added nothing to his doctrine, v. 5. The third, that they gaue him the hands of fellowship. v. 7. The last, that at his departure, they required of him nothing, but the giuing of Almes, v. 16.

40 For the first; the words, *And Titus was not compelled to bee circumcised*, carrieth this sense: I, for my part was readie to circumcise *Titus*, if there had beene a meete occasion: false brethren would haue imposed

imposed a necessitie vpon vs: then I and *Titus* refused: and the Apostles did not vrge me to circumsise him.

Hereit may be demanded, how this text can well stand with *Act. 16. v. 3.* for there *Paul* circumsiseth *Timothie*, a Grecian: and here he refuseth to circumsise *Titus*, though he were a Grecian. I answer thus. Circumcision was at this time, a thing indifferent. From the first institution, to the coming, and specially to the death of Christ, it was a thing commanded, a Sacrament, and a part of Gods worship. Again, after the planting of the Church of the new Testament, it was vtterly abolished, and a thing in respect of vse, vtterly vnlawfull. In the middle time, that is, while the Gospel was in publishing to the world, and the Church of the new Testament was yet in founding, it was a ceremonie free, or indifferent. It may bee obiected, that the whole Ceremoniall law was abolished in the death of Christ: I answer, it was so: and circumcision was abolished, in respect of faith, and conscience: yet so as the vse thereof was left to the libertie of the people of God for a while, Circumcision at this time was as a *corps that is dead, yet vburied, and onely laid out*; and so it must remaine for a time, that it may bee buried with honour. It may againe be obiected, that baptisme was come in the roome of circumcision: and that therefore circumcision was but an idle and empty ceremonie. I answer, it was not vsed as a Sacrament at this time, or as a part of Gods worship, or as a matter of necessity, but onely as a free ceremonie, and that onely then, when it tended to the edification of men.

Being then a thing indifferent, it might as occasion serued bee vsed, or not vsed. Therefore *Paul* condescending to the weakenesse of the beleeuing Iewes, circumsised *Timothie*: and that hee might not offend the godly, and hinder Christian libertie, he refused to circumsise *Titus*.

Here a great question is answered, whether we may vse things indifferent, as oft as we wil, & how we wil? The answer is, No. Things are not called indifferent, because we may vse them indifferently, or not vse them when we will, and how wee will, but because in themselues, or in their own nature, they are neither good nor euill, and we may vse them well, or ill, and we may againe not vse them well, or euill. Furthermore, there bee two things which restraine the vse of things indifferent: the lawe of charitie, and the lawes of men. The lawe of charitie is this, *Things indifferent in the case of scandall, cease to bee indifferent, and are as things morall*, that is, either forbidden, or commanded. *Paul* saith, if to eate flesh, be to the offence of his brother, he wil eate no flesh while the world stâde, *1 Cor. 8. 13.*

And

And though he circumcised *Timothie*, yet would he not circumcise *Titus*, lest hee should offend the godly, and by his example hurt Christian libertie.

Likewise, the good lawes of men, whether ciuill or Ecclesiastical, tending to the common good, and seruing for edification, reſtraine the vſe of things indifferent, ſo that they which ſhall doe otherwiſe, then theſe lawes commaund, with a contemptuous, or diſloyall minde, are guiltie before God; yet heere two cautions muſt be remembred. One, that the lawes of men doe not change the nature of things indifferent: for it is the propertie of God, by willing this or that, to make it good, or euill. Neither doe they take away the vſe of things indifferent. For libertie granted by a ſoueraigne power cannot bee reuerſed by an inferiour power. Therefore humane lawes doe no more but temper and moderate the ouercommon vſe of things indifferent. The ſecond caution is, That when the end of a law ceaſeth, when there is no contempt of the authoritie that made the law, when no offence is given: a thing indifferent remaines in his free vſe without ſinne, or breach of conſcience.

Againe, heere wee learne, that a thing indifferent, when it is made neceſſarie to ſaluation, (as Circumciſion was) is not to bee vſed. This conſclusion ſerues to overthrow the Popiſh religion. For it ſtandeth in the obſeruation of things indifferent, as meates, drinks, apparell, times, &c. And the vſing, or the not vſing of them is made neceſſarie euen in regard of mans ſaluation. For the abſtinenſe from things that are by nature indifferent, is made a part of Gods worſhip, and meritorious of eternall life. For example: to marrie, or not to marrie, is for nature a thing indifferent: and therefore when abſtinenſe from marriage is made neceſſarie (as it is in diuers orders of men and women) the nature of the thing is changed, which God hath left free, and it is a doctrine of diuels, which is taught.

Here againe we learne to make a difference of perſons. Some are weake, ſome are obſtinate. Weake ones are ſuch, as hauing turned vnto God, and carrying in their hearts a purpoſe in all things to pleaſe God, neuertheleſſe do ſundry things amiſſe, vpon ſimple ignorance, or bad cuſtome, til they be better informed. Of theſe *Paul* ſaith, that hee became all to all, that hee might ſaue ſome, 1. Cor. 9. 22. and for their ſakes he condeſcended to circumciſe *Timothie*. And if we that haue ſcarce a drop of mercie in vs, muſt thus beare with them that are weake, much more will God doe it, who is mercie it ſelfe. The good ſhepherd brings home the ſtray ſheepe vpon his ſhoulders:

shoulders: hee carries his lambs in his bosome, *Isai. 40. 11.* Hee will not quench the smoking flaxe, *Isai. 42.* He spares them that feare him, as a father spares his childe, *Mal. ch. 3. 17.* This beeing alwayes remembréd, that weake ones truly turne to God, and carrie in their hearts an honest purpose not to sinne against his lawes at any time, wittingly, and willingly. Obstinate persons, are such as professe the faith, and yet hold and practise bad things, of willfull ignorance, and of malice. These persons are not to bee borne with, nor to bee respected: and in respect of them, *Paul* would not circumcise *Titus*. 10

Lastly, in that *Titus* was not compelled to bee circumcised, it may bee demaunded, whether Recusants may bee compelled to the exercises of religion? I answer, yea: for exercises of religion are not things indifferent, as Circumcision was. *Iosias* made a covenant with the Lord, and hee caused all his subiects to stand to it, *2. Chron. 34 32.* The King at the marriage feast of his sonne, saith of the guelles, *Compell them to enter in, Luke 14. 23.* It is objected, that men may not bee compelled to beleue. I answer: it is the commandement of God, *prooue the spirits, 1, Ioh. 4. 1.* and this commandement pertaines to all persons. Therefore though men may not be compelled to beleue: yet may they be compelled to come to the congregation, to heare our Sermons, and therein the reasons and grounds of our doctrine, that they may trie what is the truth, and cleaue vnto it. For this is their dutie. 20

4 For all the false brethren, that crept in: who came in privately to spie out our libertie which wee haue in Christ Iesus, that they might bring vs into bondage: 25

5 To whom we gaue not place by subiection for an houre, that the truth of the Gospel might continue with you. 30

Paul had said before, that *Titus* was not compelled to be circumcised: now hee addes: For all the false brethren, that is, though the false brethren did what they could to the contrary. Here then *Paul* sets downe, who were the cause that *Titus* was not circumcised, namely, certaine persons at Ierusalem, and them hee sets forth by two properties, they are false brethren, and they crept into the Church. Touching the first, by it wee learne, that the Church of God vpon earth, euen when it is at the best, hath wicked men, and hypocrites in it. In *Adams* family, there is *Cain*: in the Arke, there is *Cham*: in Christs familie or schoole, there is *Iudas*. In the Church of Ierusalem, planted and gouerned by the chiefe Apostles, there be 35 40

bee false brethren. The true sheepe be often without, and wolves within. Therefore we may not so much as dreame of a perfection of the Church of God vpon earth; so long as wicked men be mixed with true beleeuers.

5 Again, these aduersaries of *Paul*, are called *false brethren*, because they ioyned circumcision with Christ, as a necessarie cause of iustification, and saluation. Hence it followes, that the Church of Rome, is a *false Church*: because it ioynes works with Christ, in the cause of our iustification, and that as meritorious causes.

10 Their second propertie is, that *they crept into the Church*, which I conceiue on this manner. The Church of God is as a sheepfold, or house, *Ioh. 10. 1*. Christ is the onely doore. Now Pastors that teach Christ aright, are said to *enter in by this doore*: they which teach any other way of saluation, are said to *climbe in another way*: and they
15 which teach Christ, ioyning some other thing with him in the cause of saluation, are said to *creepe in*: because in appearance they maintaine Christ; and yet, because they adde something to Christ, they neither enter, nor continue in the true Church with any good warrant from God. In this they are like the serpent. Living crea-
20 tures were all placed in Eden: and Man was placed in the garden of Eden, called Paradise, and so were not beasts. How then comes the serpent in? why, in all likelihood it crept in. And so doe false brethren into the Church. Hence I gather, that false brethren are
25 not true and liuely members of the visible Church: though they be members in appearance. For if they were in their right place, they should not be said to creepe in. The true members of the Church
30 creep not into the mistical body, but are built & set vpon the foundation by God. It may be alledged, that they are baptized, & thereby made members of the Church. I answer: that faith makes vs
35 members of Christ, & consequently of the true Church: and baptism doth but seale our insition into Christ, and serues as a meanes of admission into the outward society of the congregation: and the outward washing doth not make any man a member of Christ. Again, it followes hence, that false brethren are not members of the
40 Catholike church. For the visible church is part of the Catholike: and therefore they which are not reall members of the true visible Church, are not members of the Catholike.

 Again, in that false brethren creepe into the Congregation, hence it appears, that no man can set downe the precise time,
45 when errors had their beginning. For the authours thereof enter in secretly, not obserued of men. *The enuious man sows his tares when men be asleepe, Matth. 13*. It sufficeth therefore, if we can shew them

to be errors by the word, though wee cannot designe the set time when they began. The time when a ship sinketh, we often obserue: but the time when it first drew water, we doe not. Let the Papists thinke vpon this.

Paul having thus declared who were the causes that *Titus* was not circumcised, goes on, and shewes how they were causes. The effect and summe of his declaration, is this: They vrged the obseruation of the Ceremoniall law, as necessary: and hereupon we refused to circumcise *Titus*. First therefore, *Paul* sets downe how they vrged circumcision, and that by three degrees. First, *they come in priuily*. Secondly, *they spie out their libertie*. Thirdly, *they labour to bring them into bondage*. Againe, *Paul* sets downe the manner of their refusall in three things. *We gaue not place for an houre*. Wee gaue not place by subiection. We gaue no place, *that the truth of the Gospel might continue with you*.

The first degree or step in their vrging of circumcision, was, that *they came in priuily*: that is, they ioyned themselues in fellowship with the Apostles, and in shew pretended the furtherance of the Gospel, & yet indeed meant nothing lesse: though their fraud and wickednes was not perceiued. Here then the foundation they lay of all their naughty dealing, is their dissembling, which *Paul* here notes and condemnes. On the contrary, our durie is, to be indeed that which we professe our selues to be: and to professe no more outwardly, then we are inwardly: and to approoue our hearts to God, for that which we professe before men.

The second step or degree is, that they *spie out the libertie which Paul and the rest had by Christ*: that is, they conferre with the Apostles, and inquire of them what libertie they haue by Christ, in respect of the Ceremoniall law of God: and this they doe, not of a minde desirous to learne, but for aduantage sake. There bee two kindes of spying: one lawfull, the other vnlawfull. Lawfull, as when in iust and lawfull warre, wee inquire into the counsells and doings of our enemies, *Numbers 13. 1*. Vnlawfull, when men prie into any thing or matter, to find a fault. Thus hypocrites spie faults in the persons and liues of men; that they may haue somewhat whereby to disgrace them, *Mat. 7. 4*. Thus Atheists prie into the Scriptures, that they may confute them. Thus sundrie hearers come to Sermons, that they may carpe. Thus our enemies inquire into our religion, that they may finde (as they suppose) exceptions, vntruths, and contradictions. And in the Church of Ierusalem, false brethren inquire how farre Christian libertie extends, that they may ouerthrow it. This kinde of spying is a common fault;

fault; we must take heed of it, and apply the eye of our minde to a better vse. First, we are to be spies, in respect of our owne sinnes and corruptions, to spie them out, *Lament. 3. 40. Let vs search our wayes, and inquire, and turne againe vnto the Lord.* Again, we are to play the spies, in respect of our spirituall enemies, that wee may finde out the temptations of the flesh, the world, and the deuill. Thirdly, wee must bee as spies, in searching out the Scriptures, *Iohn 5. 39.* that we may vnderstand the wordes of the Law of God, and finde comfort to our soules.

10 The third and last degree of vrging, is, that the false brethren seeke to bring the *Apostles in bondage*, that is, to binde them to a necessary obseruation of the ceremoniall law. Here let vs marke the practise and pollicie of the diuell. Libertie from sinne, death, and the ceremoniall law, is the treasure of the Church: and therefore
15 the diuell seekes to overthrow it, by holding men in bondage vnder abolished ceremonies. Thus at this day, they of the Popish Church, are in bondage vnder an heape of humane Traditions, beeing indeed a yoke farre heauier then that of the ceremoniall law. Again, when men professe the name of Christ, the diuell is
20 content with it: and hee indeauours with all his might, euery where to hold them vnder the bondage of sinne, and to hold them in his snare at his will. Thus vnder the name of Christianitie, there be swarmes of Atheists, Epicures, Libertines, worldlings, and prophane persons. At this time, according to auncient custome,
25 we celebrate the memoriall of the birth of Christ: and yet no time so full of disorder as this. For the most that professe Christ, take and challenge to themselues, a licentious libertie, to liue and doe as they list: and this kind of libertie, is flat bondage. But they that are seruants of Christ indeed, should take heede of this bondage: *For beeing free from sinne, they should be seruants of nothing but*
30 *righteousnesse, Romanes 6. 18.* They that be of a corporation, stand for their liberties: what a shame then is it, that men should loue bondage, and neglect the spirituall libertie, which they haue by Christ.

35 Thus we see, how the false brethren vrged circumcision: now let vs come to *Pauls* refusall. The first point is, that *they would not giue place for an houre.* It seemes they were requested to vse circumcision but once; but they would not yeeld so much as once, because their acte would haue tended to the preiudice of Christian
40 libertie in all places. Here we learne that we may not vse the least ceremonie that is in the case of confession, before our aduersaries, that is, when they seeke to oppresse the truth, by force, or by fraud,

Theodoret.
hist. lib.
4. c. 16.

and make ceremonies, signes and tokens, of the confession of any vntruth. *Julian* the Emperour sitting in a chaire of estate, gaue gold to his souldiers, one by one, withall commanding to cast frankincense, so much as a graine into the fire, that lay vpon an heathenish altar, before him. Nowe Christian souldiers refuse to do it: and they which had not refused, afterward recalled their acte, and willingly suffered death.

Againe, here we learne, that we are not to yeeld from the least part of the truth of the Gospell, that God hath reuealed to vs. This truth is more pretious, then the whole world beside: and heauen and earth shall rather passe, then the least tittle of it shall not be accomplished. The commission of the Apostles, was to teach them, to doe all things, which God had commanded. Therefore the vnion or mixture of our religiō with the Popish religion, is but a dreame of vnwise Politickes: for in this mixture, wee must yeeld, and they must yeeld something: but we may not yeeld, a iot of the truth reuealed to vs. *There is no fellowship of light with darkness.* 2. Cor. 6. Coloquing thus a naughty pot hearbe marred a whole pot of potrage. 2. King. 4. 40. Christ saith in the like case of the Pharisees; *Let them alone: they are the blinde leaders of the blind,* Mat. 23. 14. Wee may yeeld in things indifferent, but not in points of religion. In matters of this world, we may be indifferent, and of neither side: but in matters of God, we may not. There is no halting betweene two religions.

Luk. 10. 16.

The second point is, they gaue no place by way of subiection. The reason is, the Apostles were of highest authoritie, simply to be beleued in their doctrine. And they had extraordinary authority, to punish them that rebelliously withstood the. *Act.* 5. 5. & 10. & *Act.* 13. 20. 2. Cor. 10. 6. For this cause, they were not to stand subiect to the iudgement and censure of any man. They willingly suffered their doctrine to be tried; yet were they not bound to subiection, as other ministers of the new Testament are, 1. Cor. 14. 32. 1. Ioh. 4. 1. It may be said, if they would not giue place by subiection, how then gaue they place? *Answer.* There is two kinds of yeelding: one by tolleration without approbation, the other by subiection, which is the greatest approbation that can be. By the first, it may be, *Paul* was content to giue place, but not by the second. Here wee see, how we are to yeeld to the corruptions of the times in which we liue, whether they be in manners, or in doctrine. We are to giue place by meeke and patient bearing of that which wee cannot mende, but we are not to giue place by subiection.

The third point is, the end of *Pauls* refusall, *That the truth of the*

the Gospel might continue: that is, that the Gospel might bee preserved in puritie, and integritie in all things. And by this *Paul* gives vs to vnderstand, that if circumcision bee made a 'necessarie cause of iustification and saluation, the truth of the Gospel doeth not continue. Here let vs obserue, that when iustification, or saluation is ascribed to workes or Sacraments, the truth of the Gospel giues place, and fallhood comes in the roome. Wherefore the religion of the Church of Rome, is a meere dep rauation of the Gospel, for it makes workes to be the meritorious causes of iustification, and saluation. Nay, which is more, it teacheth men to worship a peece of bread, and to inuocate dead men, and to kneele downe to stockes, and stones.

6 And of them that seemed to be great * —: (what they * I learned
15 were in times past, it makes no matter to me: God accepteth no nothing, or I
mans person:) for they that are the chiefe, did not communicate was not
anything to me. taught.

Here *Paul* laies downe the second signe of his approbation, namely, that in conference, he learned nothing of the chiefe Apostles. And this he expresseth in the first words: in which, the con-
20 cealement which he vseth, is to be obserued. For hauing begun a sentence, he breakes it off in the middle, and conceales the latter part, and leaues it to bee supplied by the reader thus; Of them that
seemed to be great, I was not taught, or, I learned nothing. The like forme
25 of speaking, is vsed 1. Chron. 4. 10. Where *Iabez* saith, If the Lord
blesse me and be with me; concealing the end of his sentence, I will bee
thankesfull, thus, and thus,

In the roome of this con cealement, *Paul* puts an answer to an obiection. For some man might take exception against his former
30 speech, thus: Thou callest the Apostles Great, but thou speakest fainedly: for thou knowest, they were but poore fishermen. To this he makes answer thus: What they were once, it makes no matter to me. Then he renders a reason of his answer: God accepts no mans per-
son. This done, he proceeds, and renders a reason of his first speech:
35 he learned nothing of the chiefe Apostles: because, they did not com-
municate anything to him, either in doctrine or counsell.

The vse. This verse serues to expound other places in Saint *Iohn*: where Christ promiseth to giue his spirit to his Disciples, to teach them
all things, *Ioh. 14. 26.* and to leade them into all truth, *Ioh. 16. 13.* Now
40 these promises directly, and properly, concerne the Apostles: and they are here verified in *Paul*. Who was so farre forth taught by God, & led into al truth, that the chief Apostles could not teach, or
F 4 communicate,

communicate, any thing to him. For all this, though *Paul* and the rest, were led into all truth, that they could not erre, yet were they not led into all holinesse of life, that they could not sinne. *Paul* saith, *to will is present with me*, but he addes, *that he cannot doe the good he would*. *Christ* saith to all the Apostles, *He that is washed and is all cleane, must still haue his feet washed*, *Ioh. 13. 10*. Wherefore they are to be rebuked, that thinke there must bee no want at all in them that are Preachers of the Gospell: and hereupon take occasion to despise their Ministerie, if they can spie any thing amisse in their doings. Vpon the same ground, they might reiect the Ministerie, of the Apostles. For though they could not erre in preaching, and writing, and though they had no neede to be taught of any man, yet were they not free from sinne in their liues; and the chiefe of them sundrie times failed.

Againe, here we learne, that there is a good, and lawfull kind of boasting: and that is, when a man is disgraced, & his disgrace is the dishonour of God, and the disgrace of the Gospell. This makes *Paul* here to say, that *he learned nothing of the chiefe Apostles*. For if hee had said otherwise, he should haue bin reputed to bee no more but an ordinary disciple: & the doctrine, which he taught before this conference, should haue bin called in question. For this cause, he stands vpon it, that they did not communicate any thing vnto him. Vpon the like occasion he professeth that he will boast, *2. Cor. 11. 16*. Here the saying of *Salomō* may be obiected, *Let an other mans mouth praise thee, and not thine owne*, *Prou. 27. 2*. I answer, it sufficeth for the truth of sundry proverbs, if they be commonly, ordinarily, and vsually true, though they be not generally true. Thus ordinarily, men are not to praise themselves: yet in a spe ciall & extraordinarie case, it may be otherwise. And the maner which *Paul* vseth in commending himselfe, is to be obserued. First, he doth it in great modestie: because in speaking of himselfe, hee concealeth that part of the sentence, which should haue serued to expresse his praise. Secondly, in praising of himselfe, he is not carried with enuie, but his care is, to maintaine the good name of the rest of the Apostles; when he saith, *What they haue bin, it is no matter to me*. Here then we see, that the Atheists doe *Paul* wrong, who challenge him for pride, & presumption, as though he could not brooke an equall, and withall scorned to learne of any. Againe, by *Pauls* example we are to take notice of a common sinne. Mens hearts are so possessed with selfe-loue, and they are so addicted to their own praise, that it is grieve to them, to heare any praised beside themselves: whereas loue binds vs as well to take care for the good name of others, as of our owne.

When

- When Paul saith, *What they were in times past, it matters not to mee*: wee learne, that wee are to esteeme of men, not as they haue been, but as they are. *Peter, Iames, and Iohn*, though they had been fishermen, yet they are honoured of *Paul* as Apostles. Therefore when men haue repented, wee may not vpbraide them with their
- 5 liues past. Neither may we take occasion to contemne them that bee in authoritie; because wee haue knowne what they haue bene heretofore: but every man is to bee esteemed according to his calling, and according to the grace of God given him. Like is
- 10 Gods mercifull dealing toward vs. For he accepts men, not as they haue been, but as they are when they repent. Therefore if Satan shall at any time obiekt thy life past: say vnto him thus: *Tell me not what I haue been: but tell mee what I am, and what I will bee.* This sufficeth when we repent.
- 15 *God accepteth the person of no man*] By person is meant, not the substance of a man, or the man himselte, but the outward qualitie, or condition of man, as country, sexe, birth, condition of life, riches, pouertie, nobilitie, wisdom, learning, &c. And God is said, *not to accept the person*, because he doth call men, bestow his gifts, and giue
- 20 iudgement, according to his owne wise and iust pleasure, and not according to the outward appearance, and condition of the person. Reade *Iob 34. 19.* It may bee obiekted, that God deales not equally with them that are equall: because all men are equall in *Adam*, and of them hee chooseth some to eternall life, and refuseth
- 25 others. I answer: he is said to accept persons, that deales vnequally with men, being bound to deale equally: now God is not thus bound: because he is a Soueraigne, and absolute Lord over all his creatures, and may doe with his owne what hee will, *Matth. 20. 16.* Secondly, it may be obiekted, that *God had respect to Abel and his*
- 30 *sacrifice, Gen. 4. 4.* *Answ.* The condition of man is twofold, outward, inward. Outward, stands in worldly and ciuill respects. Inward, stands in a pure heart, good conscience, and faith vnfaigned. For this only was *Abel* respected, *Heb. 11. 4.* Though God accept not the outward person, yet *in euery nation hee that feareth God, is accepted of*
- 35 *him, Actes 10. 34.* Thirdly, it may be obiekted, that God iudgeth euery man according to his works. *Answ.* Though works appeare outwardly, yet the root and ground of them is in the heart. And the iudgement of God is according to them, as they are the fruits of the faith of the heart.
- 40 The vse. All men are in this to bee like vnto God their heavenly Father: not accepting persons in their dealings. As Magistrates in the execution of iustice, *Deuter. 1. 17.* Ministers in teaching,
- and

and in the reproofing of sinne, *Marke 12.14.* and all beleeuers, who are not to haue religion in acceptation of persons, *James 12.1.* This acceptation is the ruine of societies. And it is the common fault. For vsually elections are made, offices bestowed, and iustice executed with partialitie, and with blinde respects to countrey, kin- 5 red, friendship, money.

Secondly, wee are all taught to feare the iudgement of God, and to prepare our selues with all diligence, that wee may be found worthy to stand before God in that great day. For we must come naked before him, and hee will haue no respect to our birth, our 10 riches, our learning. Therefore it is good for vs now to put on Christ, that in him we may be accepted. For with him the Father is well pleased.

Thirdly, we may not set our hearts vpon the outward things of this world: because God doeth not respect vs for them. But wee 15 are earnestly to seeke after the things that make vs accepted with God, as true faith, righteousness, and good conscience, *Rom. 14.17.*

Againe, superiours must bee admonished to deale moderately with their inferiours, *Coloss. 2.11.* Againe, inferiours are to comfort themselves, if they be oppressed: in that God the Iudge of all 20 accepts no persons.

Lastly, heere wee learne, that when wee shall haue immediate fellowship with God in heaven, all outward respect of persons shall cease. God himselfe, and the Lambe Christ Iesus shall bee all 25 in all to the Elect.

In the ende of the verse *Paul* addes: *For they communicated nothing to mee:* but to the contrary, *Rom. 1.12.* may bee obiected. Where *Paul* desires to come to Rome, that he might bee comforted by their mutuall faith, both his and theirs. Answer. Though the Apostles did communicate nothing to *Paul*, in respect of doctrine, or iudg- 30 ment; yet might they, or the meanest beleeuers conferre something vnto him in respect of comfort, or the confirmation of his faith: and thus much hee signifieth to the Romanes. Heere is a good *Item* for them that come to no Sermons, because they can learne nothing. Put the case they were as learned as the Apo- 35 stles, yet might they profit in hearing, respect of comfort, of faith, and good affection.

7 But on the contrary, when they saw that the Gospell ouer the uncircumcision was committed vnto me, as the Gospel ouer the circumcision was to Peter: 40

8 (For he that was mightie by Peter in the Apostleship ouer the

the circumcision, was also mightie by me toward the Gentiles.)

9 And when James, and Cephas, and Iohn knew the grace of God that was giuen to mee, which are accounted pillars, they gaue to me, and to Barnabas, the right hand of fellowship, that we
5 should preach to the Gentiles, and they vnto the Circumcision.

The wordes of more difficultie are thus to be explained. [*Contrariwise*] that is, they did communicate nothing to mee in way of correction, but on the contrary they gaue me the hand of fellowship. Againe, the words [*Circumcision*, and *Vncircumcision*] signifie the nation of the Iewes, and the Gentiles, the one circumcised, the other vncircumcised. And when *Paul* saith, that the grace of God was giuen to him, hee meanes specially, the gift of an Apostle, *Rom. 1. 5.*
15 Lastly, to giue the right hand of fellowship to *Paul*, is to esteeme and acknowledge him for their colleague, or fellow Apostle, by giuing the right hand in token thereof.

The contents of the words are these. Here *Paul* sets downe the third signe of his approbation, namely, that the chiefe Apostles acknowledged him for their fellow Apostle, verse 9. Secondly, he
20 sets downe the maner how the cheefe Apostles acknowledged this fellowship: and that was, by making a couenant with *Paul*, that he should preach to the Gentiles, and *Peter* to the Iewes. Thirdly, he sets downe the impulsie cause that mooued the Apostles to receiue *Paul* to their fellowship: and that was the decree of God,
25 whereby he ordained, that *Paul* should bee the cheefe Apostle to the Gentiles, and *Peter* the cheefe Apostle among the Iewes, ver. 7. Lastly, he sets downe the signes, whereby the Apostles knew, that *Paul* was ordained the Apostle of the Gentiles: and they are two, the grace of God giuen him, and the power of his Ministry among
30 the Gentiles, v. 8, 9. Furthermore, the things here contained, are in a Syllogisme disposed thus:

35 When the Apostles saw that I was ordained the chiefe Apostle of the Gentiles, and *Peter* of the Iewes, they acknowledged me for their fellow Apostle, and made a couenant with me, that I should preach to the Gentiles, and *Peter* to the Iewes.

But when I was with them at Ierusalem, they saw that I was ordained the chiefe of the Apostles of the Gentiles, and *Peter* of the Iewes.

This *minor* is omitted, yet the prooffe thereof is set downe thus.
40 For they saw the efficacie of my ministry among the Gentiles, and the grace of God that was with me. Therefore they acknowledged me for their fellow Apostle, &c.

The

The vse. This text makes notably against the primacie of *Peter*. First therefore let vs obserue the Ordinance of God here plainly exprest, that *Paul* should be the chiefe Apostle of the Gentiles, and *Peter* the chiefe Apostle of the Iewes. And this may elsewhere be gathered. For the Commission of the twelue Apostles ranne thus, that they must first preach to Ierusalem and Iudea, then to Samaria: and in the last place, to the uttermost parts of the earth, *Actes* 1. 8. And *Pauls* Commission was, that he should first preach to the Gentiles, and in the second place to the people of Israel, *Act.* 9. 16. It may be objected, that the Commission of all the Apostles, was to goe into all the world, and to preach to all men without exception. *Mar.* 16 15. Answer. This power and liberty Christ gaue to all the Apostles, and he did not take it away afterward: neuerthelesse, he ordered it by a second decree, that *Paul* should specially haue care of the Gentiles, and *Peter* of the Iewes. And this the Lord did in great wisdom, that confusion and discord might be auoided, and a regard had of all prouinces through the world.

Hence it followes, that the primacy of *Peter* ouer Iewes & Gentiles is a supposed thing. For the ordinance of God is, that *Peter* shal be chiefe ouer the Iewes, and not ouer the Gentiles, which were almost all the world beside. And thus the supremacie of the Pope goes to the ground, for if hee hold of *Peter*, and succeed him in authoritie and office, (as he pretends) hee must challenge a superioritie ouer the Iewes, and he hath nothing to doe with vs. For *Paul* was chiefe ouer the Gentiles, and not *Peter*.

Secondly, this Ordinance of God giues vs to vnderstand, that the place, *Mat.* 16. 18. *Thou art Peter, and vpon this rocke will I build my Church, &c. and I will giue thee the keyes of the kingdome of heauen:* doeth not containe a promise made to *Peter*, of a Primacie ouer all the Apostles, and ouer the Catholique Church. If Christ had meant any such thing, in these words, he would not haue assigned the Iewes to *Peter*, and all the nations of the world beside to *Paul*. Thus we see how this text for many hundred yeares hath bene abused, and is still at this day.

Thirdly, it is false which the Papists teach, that the place in *Saint Iohn*, *Feed my lambs*, and, *feed my sheepe*. giues a primacie to *Peter*, ouer the whole world. For by the ordinance of God, this feeding of lambs and sheepe, is limited to the nation of the Iewes.

Lastly, whereas *Eusebius* saith in his Chronicle, that *Peter* was Bishop of Rome, & sate 25. yeares, it hath no likelihood of truth: for then *Peter* liued in the breach of an expresse commaundement of God for a long time: because the Iewes were his speciall charge.

Againe,

Againe, it is to be obserued in this text, that *James, Peter, John*, are made equall, all being pillars; and *James* is first named: and that not without cause. For not *Peter*, but *James* was the President of the Councell of Ierusalem: because hee spake the last, and concluded all, *Actes*, 15. 13. Therefore the first naming
5 of *Peter*, in other places of Scripture, is no sufficient prooffe of his supremacie.

Thirdly, *Peter* heere is said to make a couenant with *Paul*, that hee shall bee the *Apostle of the Gentiles*, and *Peter of the Iewes*. But if
10 *Peter* had been head of the Church for fourteene yeares together, and had but knowen the primacie which the Papists giue to him, hee would not haue consented to this order. It is alleadged, that *Paul* was the chiefe *Apostle* ouer the *Gentiles*, in respect of paines and labour, and not in respect of iurisdiction. I answer, this
15 distinction hath no ground in the word of God. Againe, *Paul* was an *Apostle*, and vsed his *Apostolicall* authoritie ouer the *Gentiles*: and there is no *Ecclesiasticall person* that is, or can bee aboue an *Apostle*. For hee was simply to be beleueed in preaching and writing, and had extraordinary power giuen him by God, to pu-
20 nish them that rebelled.

Againe, *Paul* here saith, that the *Gospel* was committed to him and *Peter*, that is, that they were put in trust with it. Hence we learne 3. things. The first that the *Gospel* is not ours, but Gods; & that men are but the keepers of it. For this we are to praise God. The second
25 is, that the ministers of the word are to keepe and maintaine the truth of it with all faithfulness and good conscience: and further, to apply it to the best vse, and to the greatest good of men. For this charge lies vpon them that are put in trust. The third is, that the *Gospel* is a special treasure. For this we in England are to giue vnto
30 God all thankfulness, specially, by bringing forth the fruits of the *Gospel*. In this dutie the most of vs come short: and therefore we may iustly feare, lest God take from vs the *Gospel* of life, and giue it to a nation that will bring forth the fruit of it.

Moreover, in that *Paul* saith, that God was mighty by him and *Peter*
35 to the *Iewes* and *Gentiles*, we are to consider the efficacy of the Ministry. Of it three cautions are to be obserued. The first, that grace or power to regenerate, is not included in the word preached, as vertue to heale in a medicine. *Paul* saith, He that planteth, and he that watereth, is not any thing, 1. Cor. 3. 7. To regenerate is the proper work
40 of God, not agreeing to Angels, no not to the flesh of *Christ*, exalted aboue men and Angels. For the vertue to renewe or regenerate, is not in it as in a subiect, but in the Godhead of the Sonne.

The

The second caution is, that grace is not inseparably annexed, and tyed, to the word preached; for to some it is the suour of death, to death. The third is, that the preaching of the word is an externall instrument of faith, and regeneration: and the proper effect of it, is to declare, or signifie. And it is an instrument: because when the Ministers of the word, doe by it signifie and declare, what is to be done, and what is the will of God, the spirit of God inwardly inlightens the minde, and inclines the heart to beleue, and obey. Hence we learne that it is a magicall fiction, to suppose that five words, *For this is my bodie*, should transubstantiate the bread, into the bodie of Christ. Secondly we learne, that the Sacraments doe not conferre grace, *ex opere operato*, by the worke done. For the word and Sacraments, are both of one nature (Sacraments beeing a visible word.) Now the word and the preaching of it, doth not conferre grace, but onely declare what God will conferre. Thirdly by this it appeares, that charmes or spels, haue not force in them to cure diseases, and to worke wonders, but by satanicall operation. For the best word of all, euen the word preached, hath it not. Lastly, we are here to bee put in mind, that wee loose no time in hearing of the word; for it is a meanes whereby we are cleansed and renewed. *Every branch that bringeth forth fruite, God purgeth it by his word and other meanes, that it may bring forth more fruite, Ioh. 15.*

It is a thing to be obserued, that the Apostles at Ierusalem acknowledged *Paul* to be an Apostle: because he had the gifts of an Apostle, and because his ministerie was powerfull among the Gentiles. Therefore, they which haue the gift of teaching, by whome also God is powerfull in the conversion of sinners, are Ministers certainly called of God. Let them thinke on this, that vtterly condemne the ministerie of the Church of England. For many teachers among vs, can shew both the gift of teaching, and the power, or efficacy of their ministry.

It is worth the marking also, that the Apostles are called *Pillars*. Here we see, what is the charge of the ministers of the word, namely, to sustaine and to vphold the Church, by doctrine, praier, counsel, good life. *Elizeus* is called of *Ioas*, *The charriots and horsemen of Israel*, 2. King. 13. 4. And the Church of God vpon earth, is called *the Pillar and ground of truth*, in respect of the Ministerie of the word. 1. Tim. 3. 15,

Againe, in that all Ministers in their places (according to the measure of gifts receiued) are *pillars*, they are admonished hereby to be constant in the truth, against all enemies whatsoeuer. It is the praise of *John* the Baptist, that he was *not as a reed shaken of the winde*, *Matth.*

Math. 11. 7. All beleeuers are to stand fast in temptation, against their spirituall enemies, *Eph. 6. 13.* and this they shal the better doe, if they bee directed by the good example of their teachers.

Thirdly, in that Ministers are *pillars*, we are taught to cleaue vn-
 5 to them, and their Ministerie, at all times, in life and death. For wee are *liuing stones in the temple of God*. Christ is our *foundation*, and they be *pillars* to hold vs vp: & therefore not to be forsaken, *Deut. 12. 16.*

Furthermore, *Paul* at this time was not accounted a pillar; for he saith thus: *James, Cephas, Iohn, are accounted pillars*; as who shold say,
 10 I am accounted none. Thus *Paul* goes through good report, and euill report, and is content to be contemned.

Lastly, the example of concord among the Apostles is to be obserued: in that they giue the right hands of fellowship one to another.

15 10 *Warning onely that we should remember the poore: which thing also I was diligent to doe.*

In these words, *Paul* sets downe the fourth and last signe of his approbation at Ierusalem, on this manner. At my departing the
 20 Apostles warned me to remember the poore, and of no other thing did they giue me warning: therefore there was a full and perfect consent betwene vs.

In the wordes, two things are set downe, the Apostolicall warning, and the practise of it by *Paul*. The warning in these words,
 25 [*Warning onely that we should remember the poore.*] In them three points are to be considered. The first, that the Church of Ierusalem was in extreame pouertie. And the causes of it may be two. The first, because the poorer sort receiued the Gospel: thus it was in Corinth, *1. Cor. 1. 26.* *Not many wise according to the flesh, not many noble.* The like
 30 haue we in experience at this day: the poorer sort among vs doe more heartily receiue it then they of the richer sort. By this we are taught, that wee may not fixe our love, and our confidence vpon riches: and they that buie, must be as though they bought not, and they that possesse, as though they possessed not. Because riches
 35 steale away the heart. The second cause of their pouertie was, that they were deprived of their riches for the profession of the name of Christ. *1. Thess. 2. 14. Heb. 10. 34.* Here we are taught to sit downe, and to reckon what the profession of Christ will cost vs to the vttermost: and we must put this in our account, that we must bee readie, and
 40 willing to part with the dearest things in the world, for the name of Christ. And this reckning and resolution must wee daily carrie about with vs.

The

The second point is, Why the Church of Ierusalem must bee releued by the Gentiles, considering by Gods law *Dent. 15. 11.* every place must releue his owne poore. *Ans.* We are first of all, debtors to our owne poore, and they must first be releued: this done (in the case of extreme necessitie) we are debtors to the poore a thousand miles off. And in this case, did the Apostles craue releefe of the Gentiles, for them of Ierusalem.

The third point is, that the Apostles themselves are carefull for the gathering of releefe. Hence wee learne, that it is the office of Pastours and teachers, not only to preach and dispence the word, but also to haue care of the poore: and this care is to be shewed in exhortation, counsell, oversight. As for the administration and execution of matters belonging to the poore, it belongs to others. If the Apostles at any time gathered, carried, and dispensed releefe, it was because the Church was not yet founded, and planted, and therefore there was no other to doe it.

Now I come to the practise of *Paul*, in these words; *Which thing also I was diligent to doe it.* Here first let vs marke, that *Paul* who had spoiled and made hauocke of the Church of Ierusalem, now gathers releefe, (and as we say) begges for it, and no doubt, the rather that hee may make some recompence for the wrong hee had done. By his example wee are taught to make Satisfaction for all iniuries and hurts done to others, and that to the vttermost. Hee that steales, according to the qualitie of his theft, must restore either twofold, or fourefold, *Exod. 22. 7.* he that maimes a man must pay for his healing, and for his resting, that is, for the losse of his labour, *Exod. 21. 19.* *Daniel* saith to *Nebuchadnezzar*, *O King, breake off thy sinnes with almes deedes*, *Dan. 4. 24.* that is, whereas thou hast bin giuen to crueltie, and oppression, cease to doe so any more, and make some recompence by giuing of almes. *Dauid* saith, it is the property of a wicked man, *to borrow, and not to repay*, *Psal. 37. 21.* Satisfaction, recompence, and restitution, is the way to life by the appointment of God. *Ezech. 18. 7.* and *33. 15.* *If thou restore the pledge, and repay that which thou hast robbed, thou shalt live, and not die.* The Lord saith, *Are the treasures of wickednes yet in the house of the wicked? & he addes, that he will not iustifie the false ballance.* *Mich. 6. 10, 11.* *Zachens* in his conuersion, for knowne wrongs restores fourefold: and for his vnknown wrongs he giues halfe his goods to the poore. *Luke. 19. 7.*

Let vsurers, ingrossers, and all that oppress, or deale deceitfully, remember this; and begin to make conscience of this duty of Satisfaction, or restitution. And that it may the better bee practised, I will further set downe five points.

The

The first is, who must satisfie and restore? *Answer.* He that is the cause of any wrong or losse to others: and all they that are necessary. Men may be necessary many wayes, by commaundement, by counsel, by consent, by partnership, by receiuing, by silence when a man ought to speake, by not hindring when he ought to hinder, by
 5 not manifesting that which he ought to manifest.

The second is, To whom must restitution be made? *Answer.* To him that is wronged, and beares the losse, (if the party be knowne and aliuē:) if he be dead, to his heires: if all be dead, to the poore.
 10 If the person wronged be not knowen to vs (as often it fallēs out) then restitution is to be made to the Church, or commonwealth, and restitution is to be turned into almes for the poore, *Dan. 4. 24.* Moreouer, if both the giuing and the receiuing of a thing bee vnlawfull, as in bribes, and Simoniacall gifts; restitution is not to be
 15 made to the giuer, but as before, it is to be applied to common vse, specially to reliefe.

The third point is, What must be restored? *Answer.* The things which are of vs vniustly receiued, or deteined, either knowen to vs or vnknowne. If they be knowne, they are in their owne kind to
 20 be restored, or in value, *Exod. 21. 19.* If the party, who is to restore, be in extreme pouerty, & haue not wherewith to make recompense, he must doe that which he can, that is, he must shew a ready and willing minde: and this is done by confession, and by crauing of pardon. If goods to be restored, be for their value and qualitie vn-
 25 knowne, then restitution must be made according to the iudgment and discretion of them that are wise.

The fourth point is, touching the time when? *Answer.* In respect of preparation of mind, we must presently satisfie: yet not in respect of execution. For the act of restitution may be deferred, if there
 30 be ignorance of the right, or ignorance of the fact, if the restorer be in extreme need: if vpon present restitution, life, goods, or good name be endangered.

The last point is, in what order and manner restitution is to be made? *Ans.* Things certain must first be restored, and things vncertain after. Among things certaine, that is, which certainly belongs
 35 vnto another, things bought & not deliuered, are to be restored, and *Deposita*, things committed to our trust. If things to be restored for their value and qualitie be vncertain, the order is this; Restitution must be made (according to the discretion of wise men) in some
 40 part: and for the rest, pardon to be craued. Againe, in restitution warinesse is to be vsed, lest by the supplying the losses of other men, we make to our selues the losse of a good name.

Againe, in *Pauls* practise wee see an earnest care and diligence to provide for the poore. And his diligence is further expressed, *Romanes* 15. 25, 28. where it is said, that *hee ministered to the Saints at Ierusalem*, and withall that he gaue himselfe no rest in this dutie, till he had sealed this fruite unto them, that is, till hee saw it done according to his desire. His example must bee followed of vs. 5
It is not enough for vs to giue good wordes, and to wish well, but wee must in our places and callings doe our endeauour, that reliefe may euen bee sealed to our poore. And there bee many reasons to mooue vs. First, let vs consider that the charge was very great, to maintaine the Altar of the Lord in the old Testament 10
with sheepe, and oxen, and offrings of all kindes: and now in the new Testament the poore come in the roome of the Altar. Secondly, the poore represent the person of Christ; and in them he comes vnto vs, and saith, *I am hungrie, I am sicke, I am naked, I am* 15
harbourlesse: therefore looke what wee would doe to Christ, the same must we doe to them. Thirdly, the poore haue title and interest to part of our goods: for God is the Lord of them, and wee are but stewards to dispose and vse them, according to his appointment. And his will is, that part of our goods bee giuen for 20
the reliefe of the poore. If this bee not done, wee are theeues in respect of the goods we possesse. Lastly, mercie, or the bowels of compassion in vs, is a pledge or an impression of the mercie that is in God towards vs: and by it we may know, or feelee in our selues, that mercie belongs vnto vs. Thus we see what is our du- 25
tie: now let vs consider what is our fault. Not to blame any person or persons, it is our common fault, that we are backward and slacke in this dutie. And the cause is, that we doe not heartily giue our selues to Christ: and this makes vs to be so slack in giuing our goods to the poore, *2. Cor. 9. 5*. Againe, we commonly liue (as it were) without a law. Wee doe not with *Dauid*, set the lawes of 30
God before vs, *Psal. 119. v. 168*. Neither doe we apply our hearts to his statutes, *v. 112*. For then would we with *Dauid*, make haste to keepe the commandements of God, *verf. 60*. specially this great commandement of reliefe: and the rather, because the obseruing of it 35
is the enriching of vs all.

Lastly, let vs marke, that *Paul* being warned of the Apostles, was diligent to doe that wherof he was warned. The like must we doe. It is not sufficient to heare, but besides this, there must be in vs a care and diligence to do and practise that which we heare. For 40
this is to build vpon the rocke. And it is a common fault, to heare much, and doe little, *Ezech. 33. 24*.

11 And when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to his face: for he was to be blamed.

In these words *Paul* propounds the second answer, which hee makes to the obiection mentioned in the beginning of the chapter, to this effect. Though the Church glorifie God for thee: yet will not the Apostles doe it: because thou art contrary to them. Here *Paul* answers, that there was indeed a dissention between him and *Peter*, when he withstood *Peter* to his face at Antioch: but the
 10 fault was not his, but *Peters*, who was wholly to be blamed.

For the better vnderstanding of these words, three points are to be handled. The first is, who was resisted? The answer is, *Peter* the Apostle. For the intent of this chapter is to shew what agreement there was betweene *Paul* and the rest of the Apostles. And there
 85 was no Apostle of this name but one. Therefore they among the Ancient are greatly deceiued, who thinke that the Apostle *Peter* was not reproofed, but some other of that name. The second point is, who resisted? Answer. *Paul*: and that not for shew and fashion, but in truth and good earnest. And this appeares, because in
 20 the words following, he sets downe a weightie and vrgent cause of his reproofe. Therefore *Ierom* and others are deceiued, who thinke that *Paul* reproofed *Peter* * in shew and appearance, and not in good earnest. The third point is, what was *Pauls* mind and meaning in resisting of *Peter*? Answer. To doe his office. The kingdom
 25 of God, and all things pertaining thereto, must haue free passage without resistance. The second petition is, *Thy kingdome come*. Iohn the Baptist preached thus, *Prepare the way of the Lord, and make his paths straight*, Mar. 1. Saint *Paul* saith, *Pray that the word of God may haue free passage, & be glorified*, 2. Thess. 3. 1. Contrariwise, such things
 30 as hinder the kingdome of God must bee withstood. Therefore *Peter* saith, *Resist your aduersarie the diuell, strong in faith*, 1. Peter 5. 9. And thus men that are instruments of euill, are to bee withstood. And here *Paul*, by an holy reproofe, withstands *Peter* for his bad example.

35 In *Paul* here first we may behold an example of true vertue, in that he resists euill to the vttermost of his power, following his own rule, *Abhorreth that which is euill, and cleaue vnto that which is good*, Rom. 12. 9. *Haue no fellowship with the vnfruitfull workes of darknesse, but rather reprove them*, Ephes. 5. 11. In like manner must euery one of
 40 vs resist euill; first, in himselfe, and then in them that appertaine to him. Therefore *Paul* saith to all, *Put on the armour of God, that ye may resist*, Ephes. 6. 13. Here two things may be demanded: first, what

must wee resist? Paul answers againe, *Principalities, and powers, and spirituall wickednesses*: that is, the diuell and all his angels. It may be said, we haue no dealing with them, for they vse not to appeare vnto vs. *Answ.* That the diuell comes not to vs visibly, but in the persons of euill men, and in the bad examples of all men. This made 5
Christ say to Peter, *Mat. 16. 23. Come behind me, Satan, for thou art an offence vnto me*, when Peter would haue dissuaded him from going to Ierusalem. Again it may be said, *In what things must we resist them?* Paul answereth, *In heavenly things, v. 12.* that is, in things which pertaine to Gods kingdome, and concerne either the saluation of our 10
soules, or the worship of God. For the diuel seeketh by all maner of euils, to hinder these good things. Moreouer, this dutie of resisting euill, is so necessary, that we must resist sinne, if need be, to the very shedding of our blood, *Heb. 12. 4.*

Again, we haue in Paul an example of boldnesse and libertie in 15
reproouing of sin. This was a thing commanded to the Prophets and Apostles, *Isai. 58. 1. Crie and spare not, lift vp thy voice like a trumpet, shew my people their transgression. Ierem. 1. 17. Trusse vp thy loynes, arise and speake vnto them all that I command thee: be not afraid of their faces, lest I destroy thee before them.* Like libertie may the Ministers 20
of the word vse, obseruing Pauls rule. *2. Tim. 1. 7. God hath not giuen vs the spirit of feare, but of power and of loue, and of a sound minde.* Where he sets downe three caueats. First, that this libertie in reproouing, is not the fruit of a bold and rash disposition, but it is a fruit of Gods spirit, and so to be acknowledged. Reade *Mich. 3. 8.* The second, 25
that the vse of this liberty is to be ordered by a sound mind, whereby wee are able to giue a good account of our reproofes, both for the matter, and manner of them. The third is, that all our admonitions must bee seasoned and tempered with loue: that they tend to the good and saluation of them that are reprooued. These ca- 30
ueats obserued, libertie in reproouing, shall neuer want his blessing, *I. Iu. 50. 7.*

Thirdly, here is an example in Paul, of an ingenuous and honest mind. When he sees Peter do amisse, he reprooues him to his face. Contrary to this, is the common practise in backbiting, whispering 35
and tale-bearing, whereby it comes to passe, that when a man is in fault, euery man knowes it, saue he which is in fault. This vice the law of God expressly forbids, *Leu. 19. 16.* And it is the property of a good man, not to take vp a false report, *Psal. 15.* And Dauid reprooues Saul, because he did but lend the eare to tale-bearers, saying *Where- 40*
fore givest thou an eare to mens words that say, behold, Dauid seeketh euill against thee? *1. Sam. 24. 10.*

In *Peter*, who when hee was reprovued, made no reply, wee see an example of patience and humilitie, whereby he humbled himselfe before the reproover, when he was convicted of an offence. The like was in *David*, when hee said, *Let the righteous smite mee,*
 5 *Psalm. 141. v. 5.*

Whereas *Paul* saith, that *Peter* was to be blamed, or condemned, not in respect of his person, but of his example: we see that excellent men, even the chiefe Apostles are subiect to erre, and be deceived. It may be said, how then may we trust them in their writings?
 10 I answer, while they were in deliivering any thing to the Church, whether it were by Sermon, or writing, they were guided by the infallible assistance of the spirit, and could not erre. Otherwise they might erre, when they were out of this worke, in mind, will, affection, or action. Thus *Ionas*, when he saw that *Ninne* was not destroyed, was impotent in his anger. *Nathan* was deceived in giuing
 15 aduice to *David*, touching the building of the temple. *2 Sam. 7.* The Apostles at the ascension of Christ, still dreamed of an earthly kingdome, saying, *When wilt thou restore the kingdome of Israel? Act. 1.* And *Peter* beeing bidden to arise, and eate of things forbidden
 20 by the ceremonial law, said, *Not so Lord, Act. 10. 14.*

Thus then, if *Peter* was subiect to error, the pretended successors of *Peter*, namely, the Bishops of Rome, cannot bee free from error. It is alleadged, that *Peter* erred in life; and not in doctrine. I answer, it was so indeed: yet did his bad example tend to the ruine
 25 of doctrine, if it had not bin prevented. Therefore the error that was in acte, if we respect the event, was in doctrine. Againe, I answer, that an error in action, presupposeth an error in minde, or at the least, some ignorance: because the mind is the beginning of the thing done. Thus all sinners are called *ignorant persons, Hebr.*
 30 *5. 2.* And it seemes that the error of *Peter* was, that of two evils, it was the best to choose the lesse: that is to choose rather to offend the Gentiles, then the Iewes, to whom he was an Apostle specially appointed.

Here againe wee miserable wretches are taught to watch and
 35 pray, that God would not leade vs into temptation: considering most excellent men are subiect to falling. And men must bee warned not to abuse *Peters* example in bouldtering themselves in their naughtie waies: by saying, wee are all sinners, that the best man a-live is a sinner, that the iust man falles seven times a day. For the
 40 place in the *Proverbs 24. 16.* is spoken of affliction, not of sinne: the iust man falles seven times a day, that is, he falles into manifold perills. And further, we should not onely consider the faults of iust

men, but also their conuersion and repentance. And againe, to sinne, and to commit sinne, are two diuers things. Though the godly sinne, yet doe they not keepe a course in sinning, and goe on from sinne to sinne.

12 For before certaine came from Iames, hee ate with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrew himselfe, fearing them that were of the circumcision. 5

13 And other Iewes dissembled likewise with him: in so much that Barnabas was brought into their dissimulation also. 10

The Apostle hath propounded his second answer in the former verse: now he proceeds to make a declaration of it. And first he sets downe the cause why *Peter* was reprobued, and the maner of reproofe. The cause is in the 12. & 13. verses, namely *Peters* sin. And this sinne is set forth by foure things. By the name of the sin, the matter of the sinne, the cause of the sinne, the effects of the sinne. 15

The name of the sinne is noted, when *Paul* saith, *And other Iewes dissembled likewise with him*, verse 13. where I gather, that *Peters* sin was *Simulation*. *Simulation* of it selfe is a thing indifferent, and according to circumstances is either good or euill. Lawfull simulation is, when men conceit that which they may lawfully conceit, and signifie something either by word or deed, that is onely beside the truth, and not contrarie to it. This was the *Simulation* of *Ioseph*, who carried himselfe as a stranger to his brethren in Egypt, after he had examined them, and knew who they were, *Genesis* 42. 20
This was the *Simulation* of *Christ*, who when hee was come to *Emaus*, made as though hee would haue gone further, *Luke* 24. 28. Thus *Paul* among the Iewes, plaid the Iew, *1. Cor.* 9. 20. Vnlawfull *Simulation* is that, when something is signified, or fained against the truth, or to the preiudice of any. Of this kinde was the simulation of *Peter*, which tended to the preiudice of the Gospel, and to the offence of the Gentiles. 25
30

The second point is, the matter of the sinne, or the sinne it selfe, which was on this maner. First, among the Gentiles at Antioch, he vseth Christian libertie, in eating things forbidden by the ceremoniall law: yet after the coming of certaine Iewes from Ierusalem, he separates himself from the Gentiles, & plaies the Iew among the Iewes. Like to this was the halting of the Israelites betweene God and Baal, *1. King.* 18. 21. and the practise of sundry men who are Protestants with vs; & yet in other countries go to Masse: and the practise of our people, who change their religion with the times. 35
40

Here

Heere wee see the great weaknesse of *Peter*, in that vpon a very little occasion, and that presently, falles away from his profession to his old course. In him we may behold our owne weaknesse, and consider what we are like to doe in like case. We now professe the Gospel of Christ: yet if any occasion were offered, it is to be feared, that many of vs would be easily mooued to returne to our old
 5 prophanenesse, and to the superstition of Poperie. But for the staying and the better establishing of our minds, let vs alwaies remember, that they shal perish who withdraw themselves from their faith, profession, and obedience, which they owe vnto God, *Hebr.*

10 10. 38. *Psal.* 73. 27.

Againe, here it must bee obserued, that *Paul* In describing the sinne, expresseth two actions, *his eating with the Gentiles*, and *his separation from them*, the first good, and the latter euil. The beginning of
 15 his action was good, but the end of it was naught. The reason is this: the man regenerate is partly flesh, and partly spirit: and here vpon it is, that when we wil that which is good, we cannot accomplish it, and euill is present with vs. The child of God is like a lame man that goes the right way, but yet halts at euery step. *Abraham* and *Sara* desire issue, that is from the spirit: but they desire issue by
 20 *Agar* their handmaid, that is from the flesh. *Rebecca* seeks the blessing for *Iacob*, that is a worke of the spirit: but she seekes it by lying, that is from the flesh: *Peter* eates with the Gentiles, that is from Christian libertie: hee afterwards separates himselfe, that is from
 25 corruption. Thus we see that the best works are imperfect, & mixed with corruption: and that for the best works we must humble our selues, and seeke pardon, not in respect of the goodnesse of the worke, but in respect of the defect thereof.

It may be demanded, how the act of *Peter* should be a sin, considering he did onely abstaine from certaine meats, that he might auoid the offence of certain Iewes? *Answer.* The fact of *Peter*, considered by it selfe, is not a sinne: for *Paul* did the like in playing the Iew: but the circumstance makes it a sin. For first of all *Peter* doth not only abstaine from meats forbidden by the ceremoniall law,
 30 but also he withdraws himselfe from the company of the Gentiles, and keepes company apart with the Iewes. Secondly, he abstaines not among the Iewes at Ierusalem, but at Antioch among the Gentiles, where a little before he had openly done the contrary, in vsing his Christian liberty. Thirdly, he vsed this abstinence when certain
 40 Iewes came from Ierusalem, to search out the libertie of the Gentiles. Fourthly, while *Peter* seeks to auoid the small offence of some Iewes, he incurreth a greater offence of all the Gentiles. Lastly, this

act of *Peter* did tend to the overthrowing of *Pauls* ministerie, and the suppressing of the truth of the Gospel. Thus then the acte of *Peter* becomes vnlawfull, that was otherwise lawfull, being simply considered by it selfe. Here it may be demanded, what *Peter* should haue done? *Answer.* He should haue openly withstood the Iewes that came from Ierusalem: as *Paul* withstood them that vrged the circumcision of *Titus*: Or againe, before he had plaid the Iew, he should haue aduertised the Gentiles, that for a time he was to yeeld to the infirmities of some Iewes.

In *Peters* example we are taught, that we must not offend God, though all the world be offended. I esse offences must giue place, when the great offence is at hand: that is, when God is dishonoured, and the very least part of his truth is suppressed.

The third point to be considered, is, the cause of the sinne of *Peter*: and that was the feare of the offence of the Iewes. Heere two questions are to be handled. The first, how *Peters* feare should bee a sinne? *Answer.* There is a naturall feare created by God, and placed in the heart of man. This feare of it selfe is good. Neuerthelesse by the corruption of nature it becomes euill. And it is made euill two waies. One is, when men feare without cause, as when the disciples feare Christ walking vpon the sea, & feare drowning when Christ was in the ship with them. The other is, when there is no measure in feare. As when men so feare the creature, that they neglect their dutie to God. This was *Peters* feare, and it was a sinne in him. For God is to be feared, simply because he is Lord of body and soule, and can destroy both: and he is to be feared for himselfe, whereas euery creature is to be feared in part only, and for God, *Rom. 13. 3, 4.* By this wee are taught, daily to inure our selues in our hearts to feare God aboue all things.

The second question is, how *Peter* could haue the feare of God, considering he feared men more then God, at the least in this one action? *Answer.* There are three kinds of feare. One is, without all sin: this was in *Adam*, and in Christ. The second is altogether sinfull in the wicked and vngodly, because it is seuered from faith and obedience: as when there is a feare of men, without the feare of God. The third is a mixed feare in them that are regenerate, in whom the feare of God is ioyned with the corrupt feare of man. And in this mixture otherwhiles the one preuailes, otherwhiles the other. And this feare was in *Peter*: in whom at this time the carnall feare of man preuailed against the true feare of God.

Paul notes feare to bee the cause of *Peters* sinne, that hee may thereby signifie vnto vs, what kinde of sinne it was, namely, a
sinne

sinne, not of malice, but of infirmitie. A sinne of infirmitie is, when there is a purpose in the heart not to sinne: and yet for all this, the sinne is committed, by reason the will is ouercarried by temptati-
 5 on, or by violence of affection, as by feare, anger, lust. Thus *Peter* sinned. And let it bee remembred, that to sinne of infirmitie is properly incident to such as bee regenerate, as *Peter* was. Every wicked man makes his sinne his infirmitie: fornication is the infirmitie of the fornicator, drunkenness the infirmitie of the drunkard, &c. but it is false which they say. For they sinne with all their
 10 hearts when they sinne.

The fourth and last point is, the Effect of *Peters* sinne, in drawing the *Jewes*, and *Barnabas*, to the like dissimulation. Here we see the contagion of an euill example. And hence we learne, that Ministers of the word must of necessity ioyne with good doctrine,
 15 the example of good life. For first of all, it is the expresse commandement of God, *1. Pet. 5. 3. Be patternes of the flocke, 1 Tim. 4. 12. Be an example in word, conuersation, lone, spirit, faith, puritie, Phil. 4. 8. What yee haue scene in me, that doe, Math. 5. 16. Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good workes.* Secondly, practise in the Minister is a part of his teaching. For the multitude doe not marke
 20 so much what men say, as what men doe. *Herod* did many things, not because *Iohn the Baptist* was a good Minister, but because hee was a good man, *Marke 6. 20.* Thirdly, Ministers haue not the presence and protection of God, vnlesse their liues bee vertuous and godly. *If thou returne, thou shalt stand before me, Ierem. 15. 19. God reueales his secrets to the Prophets his seruants, Amos 3. 7.* Lastly, fearefull iudgements of God belong to Ministers of wicked liues. Destruction befallles the sonnes of *El*, and their families, because they by leud example made the people of God
 25 to sinne, *1. Sam. 2. 24.* The like befell the sonnes of *Aaron* for their presumption.

Againe, all superiours are warned to goe before their inferiours by good example. When *Moses* went into *Egypt* to be the guide of the *Israelites*, the Lord would haue destroyed him, by reason of
 35 the bad example in his owne family. namely, the vncircumcision of his child. *Dauid*, for his euill example, whereby he caused the enemies of God to blaspheme, is punished, and that after his repentance, that men might see in him an example of Gods iudgement against sinne, *2. Sam. 12. 14.*

40 Heere againe we see, that the consent of many together, is not a note of truth. *Peter*, *Barnabas*, and the *Jewes*, all together are deceived, and *Paul* alone hath the truth. *Ponormitane* sayeth, that

that a laie-man bringing Scripture, is to be preferred before a whole Councell. Paphnutius alone had the truth, and the whole Councell of Nice, inclined to errour.

14 But when I saw that they went not with a right foote to the truth of the Gospel, I said to Peter before all men : If thou beeing a Iew liuest as the Gentiles, and not like the Iewes, why constrainest thou the Gentiles to doe like the Iewes? 5

In these words, Paul sets downe the reproofe of Peter, and the whole manner of it. In it, many points are to be considered. The first is, the time of this reproofe: and that was so soone as Paul saw the offence of Peter. Here we learne, that we must resist, and cut off the first beginnings of temptation, of sinne, and of superstition, because we are prone to euill : and therefore if it once set footing in vs, it will take place. 15

The second point is, the foundation of the reproofe in these wordes [*when I saw,*] and that is a certen knowledge of Peters offence. Here we are to take notice of the common fault, and that is, that we vse to censure, and condemne men, specially publike persons, vpon suspitions, and coniectures, and heresay. Whereas we should not open our mouthes to reprove, till wee haue certen knowledge of the fault. Moreouer, publike persons, as Magistrates and Ministers, haue their priuiledge, that an accusation is not to be receiued against them, without there bee a prooffe by two or three witnesses. 1. Tim. 5. 20, 25

The third point is, the fault reprooued, which is here expressed by an other name, *not to walke with a right foote to the truth of the Gospel*: that is, not to conuerse with men, and to carrie himselfe so as he may bee futable to the sinceritie of the Gospel, both in word, and deede. 30

Here is a notable dutie set downe for all men, *To walke with an euen foote according to the truth of the Gospell*: and this is done, when in word and deede, and euery way, we ascribe all the good we haue, or can doe, to grace, to mercie, and to Christ: when again, in word, and deede, and euery way, we giue all thanks to God for grace and mercie by Christ. Here two sorts of men are to be condemned, as haulters in respect of the truth of the Gospel. The first, are Papists, who ioyne Christ and workes in the cause of our iustification, and saluation. The second, are carnall Protestants, and all other sorts of men, that professe the name of Christ, & withal challenge to themselves a libertie to liue as they list. For they walke contrarie to the Gospel, disioyning Iustification and Sanctification, Faith and good 35 40

good life, remission of sinne, and mortification. This is the rise and common sinne of our daies. We are light in the Lord, but wee walke not as children of light. We are content to come to the marriage of the Kings sonne, but we come not with the marriage garment. It is to be feared, this very sinne will banish the Gospel, and bring all the iudgements of God vpon vs. Let vs therefore, repent of our vneuen and hauing liues: and preuent the Lords anger, by walking worthie the Gospel of Christ.

It will be said, how must we performe this dutie? *Ans.* Two rules must be remembered. The first is, that we must haue and carrie in vs a right heart. For the want of this was *Simon Magus* condemned, *Act. 8. 21*. A right heart is an humble & an honest heart. The humble heart is, when in the estimation of our owne hearts, wee abase our selues vnder all creatures vpon earth, and that for our offences: when againe, in the affection of our hearts, we exalt the death, and blood of Christ, aboue all riches, aboue all honours, aboue all pleasures, aboue all ioyes, & aboue all that heart can thinke, or tongue can speake. The honest heart is, when we carrie, and cherish in our hearts the settled purpose of not sinning: so as if we sin at any time, we may in the testimonie of a good conscience say, that we sinned against our purpose. The second rule is, that we must make straight stepes to our feete, *Heb. 12. 13*. And that is done, when wee endeavour to obey God, according to all his commandements, *Psal. 119. 6*. and also, according to all the powers of the inward man, that is, not onely in action, but also in will, affection, and thought. Let vs also applie our hearts to the doing of this, least if we come to the marriage of the kings son without the garment of a right heart and life, we heare the sentence, *Bind them hand and foote, and cast them into utter darknes, there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.*

The fourth point is, the place of reproofe [*before all men:*] for they that sinne openly to the offence of many, are openly to be reproofed, *1. Tim. 5. 20*.

The fifth point is, concerning the reasons which *Paul* vseth for the restraining of the sinne of *Peter*. The first is set down in the 16. verse, *If thou beeing a Jew, &c.* Here the meaning of some words are to be opened. To *Iudaize*, or to *live as a Jew*, is to obserue (and that necessarily,) a difference of meates, and times, according to the ceremonial law of *Moses*. To *Gentilize*, or to *live as a Gentile*, is to vse meates, and drinckes, and times, freely without difference. *Peter* is said, to *compell the Gentiles to Iudaize*, not by teaching of any doctrine, (for the Apostles neuer erred, in teaching and deliuering any thing to the Church of God: this is a principle.) therefore hee

con-

constrained them by the authoritie of his example: wherby he caused them to thinke that the obseruation of the Ceremonial law was necessary.

The first reason then is framed thus: If thou beeing a Iew, vñest to liue as the Gentiles, thou maist not by thy example compel the Gentiles to Iudaize in the necessarie obseruation of ceremonies: but thou beeing a Iew, vñest to liue as the Gentiles: therefore thou maist not compell the Gentiles to liue as Iewes.

Here first, let vs obserue the force of euill example: it compells men to be euill. Therefore let all superiours, Magistrates, Ministers and all gouernours of families looke to their examples. For if they be euill, they constrain others also to be euill.

Here againe, we see what wonderfull subiection the ancient beleeuers yelded to the ministry of the word. For if the actions of the Apostles compelled men to do this or that, what then did their doctrines, and heauenly exhortations doe? When *Iohn the Baptist* preached, *the king some of heauen suffered violence, and the violent took it to themselves.* When the disciples preached in Iewrie, *they saw Satan falling down from heauen like lightning.* The weapons of Paul were spirituall, to cast downe holdes, and to bring enery thought in subiection into God. Here, the fault of our time is to be considered. We haue the forme of godlines, in hearing and outward profession, but wee want the power of it. For we doe not in heart yeld subiection by suffering our selues to be vrged, and compelled to obedience by the authoritie of the Ministrie.

Thirdly, here we see wherein stood *Peters sinne*: namely in that he constrained men to a necessarie obseruation of the Ceremonial law: by his example binding the Gentiles to the doing of that which the Gospel hath made free. Therefore great is the wickednes of the Romane religion: in that it placeth a necessitie in many things, in the vse whereof, Christ hath procured vs an holy, and Christian libertie. In this respect the vowes of perpetuall continencie, of pouerty, and regular obedience, are falsly tearmed *states of perfection*: and are indeede *states of abomination*.

15 We which are Iewes by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles:

16 Know that a man is not iustified by the workes of the law, but by the faith of Iesus Christ: which (I say) haue beleeued in Iesus Christ, that we might be iustified by the faith of Iesus Christ, and not by the workes of the law: because by the workes of the law, no flesh shall be iustified.

Here

Here Paul layes downe the second reason of his reproofe: it is framed thus. That which we defend, both in iudgement and practise, that must we vrge, and not the contrary: but iustification by faith without works wee defend both in iudgement and practise: therefore we must vrge it, and not the contrary, namely, the necessary obseruation of the law.

The *maior* is wanting: the *minor* is expresse in the 16. verse, and it is amplified by an argument of things diuers, thus: Though we be Iewes to whom the law was giuen; yet we forsake the law, and
 10 looke to be iustified by the faith of Christ. Secondly, the *minor* is confirmed by a testimony of the *Psalme* v. 16. *By the works of the law no flesh shall be iustified.*

Here two points are to be handled. One, of the distinction of
 15 the Iewes and Gentiles: the other, of iustification.

Touching the distinction of Iewes and Gentiles, sundry points are to be handled. The first, what is the cause of this distinction? *Answer.* The good will and pleasure of God. *Moses* saith, *God chose the Israelites above all nations, Deut. 7. 5. hee loved them, Deut. 10. 15. when he diuided the nations, Iacob was his portion, Deut. 1. 32. 8. Hee knew*
 20 *them above all nations, saith Amos 3. 1. And he chose them, because hee loved their fathers, Deut. 4. 37. Hence we gather, the free election of God: and that they are deceived, who thinke, that there was no difference of Iewes and Gentiles in respect of God, but in respect of themselues: because the one imbraced Christ, the other*
 25 *refused Christ. But there cannot be a refusall where the Messias was not knowne: and among the Gentiles he was not so much as named, Rom. 15. 20.*

The second point is, wherein stands the difference of Iewes and Gentiles. *Answer.* Here the Iewes are opposed to sinners of the Gen-
 30 tiles: and therefore by the Iewes are meant an holy & peculiar people. The distinction therefore lies in this, that the one was holy, the other prophane: the one in the couenant, the other out of the couenant, *Rom. 9. 4. 5. Psal. 147. 20.* Here two errors must be auoyded. One, that the difference lay in earthly things: which is not true.
 35 For the law was giuen to the Israelites: and it was a *schoolmaster to Christ, Gal. 3. and an introduction to a better hope, Heb. 7. 19.* The second error is, that they differed only in this, that Christ was more plentifully and fully revealed to the Iewes: more darkly and sparingly to the Gentiles. But it was otherwise. For the Gentiles were *without*
 40 *God and Christ, Ephe. 2. 12. and they were left to themselues, to walke in their owne wayes, Act. 14. 16.*

The third point is, how long this difference endured? *Answer,*
 Till

Till the death of Christ. For the Disciples were forbidden to goe into the way of the Gentiles, *Math. 10. 5.* And Christ saith, that hee *was not sent, but to the lost sheepe of the house of Israel, Mat. 15. 22.* It may be obiected, that here we see the difference of Iewes and Gentiles, is standing, long after the ascension of Christ. *Ans.* Christ in his death did fully merit the abolishment of this difference. *Eph. 2.* Neuerthelesse the execution of this abolishment was by degrees: and it was at this time begun by the ministry of the Apostles, yet not accomplished.

The last point is, that the Iewes are an holy people by nature: not because holines is conueied to them by generation, but because euen from their beginning, and birth, by vertue of the couenant, they are holy. *If the roote be holy, the branches are holy, Rom. 11. 16.* If either of their parents beleuee, *the children are holy, 1. Cor. 7. 14.* In a ciuill contract, the father and his heire make but one person, and the father couenants for himselfe, and his posterity: euen so, in the couenant of grace, he beleuees for himselfe, and withall makes his posterity partaker of the said couenant: and thus the posterity becomes holy. It may be obiected, that whatsoeuer is borne of flesh is flesh. *Answer* The parent sustaines a double person. First, he is to be considered as a childe of *Adam*, and thus he brings forth a childe, hauing with *Adams* nature, *Adams* corruption. Againe, he is to be considered as a beleueer: and thus albeit he doth not propagate his faith and holinesse to his child, yet by meanes of his faith, his childe is in the couenant, and consequently is to be accounted holy in the iudgement of charitie, till God manifest the contrary. Againe, it may be obiected, that if the children of beleeuing parents be borne holy, they want originall sinne. *Ans.* The children also sustaine two persons. First, they are considered as children of the first *Adam*: and thus they are conceived and borne in sinne, and are children of wrath. Againe, they are to be considered as children of beleeuing parents: and thus by meanes of the couenant, they are children of God; and originall sin which is in them is couered from their first beginning, and not imputed to them.

The vse. There was no absolute necessity of circumcision. For they which dyed before the eighth day, were borne holy, and consequently, in the couenant: and therefore might be sau'd. And thus Baptisme was not of absolute necessity: for the children of beleueers are borne holy and Christian: and therefore dying in the want of Baptisme, may for all that be sau'd. The seale of the couenant is not of like necessity, with the couenant it selfe.

Secondly

Secondly, here we learne, that it is not the act of Baptisme to conferre the first grace: but onely to confirme, and seale it vnto vs. Adoption, and life begins not in Baptisme, but before. *If the roote be holy, the branches springing thence are holy.* We are borne Christians, if our parents beleue, and not made so in Baptisme.

Lastly, if we be borne holy: it is our shame that we haue made no more proceeding in holinesse, then we haue done: the most remaine ignorant, and vnreformed; and they of the better sort, either stand at a stay, or goe backward.

The second point is, concerning Iustification in the 16.v. of which sundry things are there propounded. And first, I will begin with the name. The word, *Iustifie*, is borrowed from courts of iudgement, and signifies a iudiciall act. Otherwhiles it is put for the action of the iudge, and then it signifies to absolue, or to pronounce innocent. Thus *Paul* saith, *Act. 13. 39.* *That we are iustified from all things, from which we could not be iustified by the law of Moses,* that is, absolued, or cleered. Againe, he opposeth iustification to accusation, and condemnation, *Rom. 8. 33.* Now the contrary to condemnation, is absolution. Sometimes againe, the word *Iustifie*, signifies the act of the party iudged, or of the witnesses: and then it imports as much, as to giue testimony, or to declare and approoue. Thus *Iames* saith, *Abraham was iustified by workes,* chap. 2.v. 22. that is, declared, and approoued to be a iust man by workes. In the former signification is the word vsed, where the holy Ghost deliuereth the doctrine of iustification, as in this place.

The vse. Here we see how to distinguish betweene Iustification, regeneration, and renouation. Regeneration is vsually in scripture, the change of the inward man, whereby we are borne anew. Renouation is, the change both of the inward and outward man, that is, both of heart and life. Iustification, is neither, but a certaine action in God applied vnto vs, or a certaine respect or relation, whereby we are acquit of our sinnes, and accepted to life euerlasting. Secondly, we must here note, that the Teachers of the Church of Rome, mistake the word, *Iustification*. For by it, they vnderstand nothing else, but a physcally transmutation of the quality, and disposition of our hearts from euill, to good. And by this mistaking, they haue made a mixture or rather confusion, of the law and Gospel. Thirdly, here we see, what is to be the disposition of the party iustified: (for by the consequent we may learne the antecedent.) A man therefore that would be iustified, must come before the iudgement seate of God, and there must he plead guilty: and be his owne aduersary, condemning himselfe: and being pressed with the

terrors

terroures of the law, he must flie and make his appeal to the throne of grace, for pardon in Christ: and then he shall be acquit, or iustified from all sinnes. Thus much doth the word, *iustifie*, import. Thus came the Publican before God, *Luk. 18.* when he said, *Lord, be mercifull to me a sinner*; and departed iustified. Thus in the first petition, we are taught to come euery day into the presence of God, and to acknowledge our debts, and to vse the plea of mercie, saying, *Forgiue vs our debts.*

The second thing to be considered, is the subiect of iustification, or the person to be iustified, and that is man generally, signifying that *a man is iustified*. The holy Ghost speaketh thus generally, for two causes. The first is; because all men without exception haue need of iustification, euen they which are regenerate, *Rom. 3. 23.* And in this place *Paul* saith, that he, and *Peter*, and the rest, haue beleened in Christ, that they might be iustified by faith. Here we are to take notice of the miserable condition of prophane, and secure Epicures, who neuer so much as dreame of any iustification. The second reason is; because God communicates the benefit of iustification, generally to all sorts of men: and this he doth in the Ministry of the word, in which he *beseecheth men to be reconciled to God.* *2. Corin. 5. v. 21.* This must be an inducement vnto vs, to come vnto Christ, humbling, and iudging our selues, that wee may bee iustified. God himselfe from heauen vscth reasons vnto vs daily, to mooue vs to the practise of this duetie. What meanethese gracious and continuall preseruations of Prince and people, Church and land? By them wee see, it is the good pleasure of God, to giue vs a time to seeke his kingdome and righteousness: wherefore let vs not neglect the day of visitation, but take the time while it serues, that wee may turne vnto God, and bee accepted of him, and escape the woe pronounced vpon *Corazin* and *Bethsaida.*

The third thing to bee considered, concernes things excluded from iustification, as false causes: namely the workes of the law. Here it may be demanded, what workes are meant. I answer, first, not onely workes of the ceremoniall, but also of the morall law. For all men know, that ceremoniall actions are of no vse, vnlesse they be ioyned with moral duties of loue and mercy. And if *Paul* meant onely ceremoniall workes, hee needed not to haue made so long a discourse against iustification by workes: for he might haue ended the whole matter in a word or twaine, by shewing that the ceremoniall law, was abrogated by Christ. Secondly, I answer, that not onely workes done before faith, are excluded, but also workes that

that follow faith, and are done in the estate of grace. For Paul here reasons thus: If no flesh be iustified by workes, then not we beleeuers: but no flesh at all is iustified by workes: therefore not we beleeuers. David, *Psal. 143.* reasoneth of the same manner: *No flesh shall be iustified in thy sight: therefore I cannot, though otherwise I be thy servant, in keeping thy commandements.* When Abraham was the father of all the faithfull, and was come to the highest degree of faith, and abounded in good workes, yet was he not then iustified by workes, *Rom. 4. 1, 2.* Paul kept a good conscience before God and men, *Act. 23.* and yet was he not iustified thereby, *1. Cor. 4. 4.* And he saith, that we are not saved by the workes which God hath ordained that we should walke in, *Eph. 2. 9, 10.* And the workes that God hath ordained for vs to walke in, are the best workes of all, euen workes of grace. Again, he saith, that we are not saved by workes of mercy, *Titus 2. 5.* It may be obiected, that there is a Cooperation of workes and faith, *1. Tim. 2. 2.* I answer, that this Cooperation is not in the act of iustification, nor in the worke of our saluation, but in the manifestation of the truth, and linceritie of our faith, without hypocrisie. And for the declaration and approbation of this, faith and workes ioynly concur. Here then we see it is a pestilent and damnable doctrine of the Papists, when they teach iustification by the workes of the law. Let vs here be warned to take heede of it.

The fourth point is, the Meritorious cause of our iustification: and that is Christ. Here it may be demanded, what is that thing in Christ, by and for which, we are iustified. I answer, the Obedience of Christ, *Rom. 5. 19.* And it stands in two things, His Passion in life and death, and his Fulfilling of the law ioyned therewith. For by faith the law is established, *Rom. 3. 31.* Christ was sent in the similitude of sinfull flesh, that the rigour of the law might bee fulfilled in vs, *Rom. 8. 4.* and Christ is the perfection of the law for righteousness to all that beleene, *Rom. 10. 4.* He that doth not fulfill all things contained in the Law, is accursed, *Gal. 3. 10.* Seeing therefore we cannot performe the things contained therein, by our selues; we must performe them in the person of our Mediatour: who hath satisfied for the threatnings of the law by his passion, and hath fulfilled the precepts of the law by his obedience, in all duties of loue to God, and man. Wee owe to God a double debt. One is, that we are to fulfill the law euery moment, from our first beginnings, both in regard of puritie of nature, and puritie of action. And this debt was laid vpon vs in the creation, and is exacted of vs in the law of God. The second debt is, a satisfaction for the breach of the law. For this double debt, Christ is become our Suretie, and God accepts his obedience for

vs, it being a full satisfaction, according to the tenour of the law.

For the better conceiuing of this obedience, foure questions may be demanded. The first is, when this obedience begins and ends?

Ans. Satisfactorie obedience performed by Christ, begins in his incarnation, & ends in his death. Christ saith, *Ioh. 4. 34. It is my meate to do my Fathers will, and to finish his worke.* But when was it indeede finished? A little before his passion he said, *Ioh. 17. 4. I haue finished the worke which thou gauest me to doe.* Againe, in the surrendring of his soule, he saith, *It is finished, Ioh. 19. 30.* S. Paul saith, *Christ was obedient to the death of the crosse. Phil. 2. 8.* The triumph of Christ began vpon the crosse, *Col. 2. 15.* and he could not triumph before he had made a full, and perfect satisfaction for vs. When Christ had procured deliuerance from hell, and Right to life euerlasting, hee there made a perfect satisfaction for vs, to the iustice of God. And this he did in his death vpon the crosse. For by the death of the Mediatour, *We receiue the promise of euerlasting inheritance, Hebr. 9. 15.* and with one oblation vpon the crosse he perfected them that are sanctified, *Heb. 10. 14.* and they cannot be perfected, without the perfect obedience of Christ. Christ arose from death, and ascended into heaven in our roome and stead: and this he could neuer haue done, vnlesse he had made a perfect satisfaction in death. Here it may be asked, If satisfactorie obedience end in the death of Christ, to what vse serue the resurrection, and ascension of Christ, and his sitting at the right hand of the Father? *Ans.* They serue also for our iustification, but after an other sort. For they serue to apply and communicate to vs, and to put vs in possession of the benefits, which Christ hath procured for vs, and purchased by his death. Saint Paul saith, *Hee ascended to giue gifts to men, and to fill all things. Eph. 4. 8 10.* And Christ saith, *When I am exalted, I will draw all men to me. Iohn 12. 32.* And he liues for euer to make intercession for vs. *Heb. 5. 27.*

The second question is, how Christ could obey beeing God, and satisfie for vs, being man? *Ans.* Christ must be considered; not meere as God, or as man, but as God-man, or Man-god. For the Godhead doth not redeeme vs without the manhood, nor the manhood without the Godhead. Neuerthelesse, Christ as God and man, may both obey, and satisfie. For, as there are in Christ, two natures, so there are two distinct operations of the said natures. And as the said natures vnited make one Christ, so the operations of the natures concurring and beeing vnited in one, make the compound worke of a Mediatour. Therefore the Obedience of Christ, being the worke of a Mediatour, hath in it the operations of both natures. The practise, exercise, or execution of obedience,

obedience, is from the manhood: therefore it is said, that *Christ bare our sinnes in his bodie upon the crosse. 1. Pet. 2. 24. that he suffered in the flesh. 1. Pet. 4. 1. that he made a living way by the veile of his flesh. Heb. 10. 20. that we are reconciled in the bodie of his flesh. Coloss. 1. 22.* Obedience, is, properly a subiection of the will in reasonable creatures to the will of God: now the will of the Godhead of Christ, admits no subiection to the will of God: because the will of the Godhead (or of God,) is one and the same in all the persons. Christ therefore yeelds subiection onely in respect of the will of the manhood: in which he performes obedience. Moreover, the operation of the Godhead is to make the said Obedience meritorious and satisfactorie for all that shall beleue. In this respect *Paul saith, God was in Christ reconciling the world unto himselfe, 2. Cor. 5. 18. and that God shed his blood, Act. 20. 28. namely, in that nature which the Sonne of God assumed.* Hence ariseth the value, price, and dignitie of the obedience of Christ.

The third question is, how the Obedience of Christ should bee made ours? *Ans.* By the free donation of God. For Christ is really giuen vnto vs in the word, and sacraments; and consequently the obedience of Christ is made ours: euen as when a peece of ground is made ours, the commoditie thereof is ours also.

The fourth question is, how the obedience of Christ should be our iustice? *Ans.* It is not our iustice in naturall manner: for then it should be in vs: but by a diuine and supernaturall manner, namely, by Gods Acceptation, in that he accounts it ours euen as truly as if it were in vs. And because God accepts it for ours, it is ours indeede: for his willing and approouing of any thing, is the doing of it: and he calls the things that are not, as if they were.

Thus we see what the Obedience of Christ is. And here two errors must be auoided. The one is of some Protestants, lesse dangerous, yet an vntruth; namely, that we are iustified, onely by the passion of Christ. But if this were so, wee should be iustified without fulfilling the law: for (as I haue said) we owe to God a double debt: one by creation, namely, the fulfilling of the law in all things, from our first beginning: the second, since the Fall of *Adam*, namely, a satisfaction for the breach of the law. Now the Passion of Christ, is a payment of the second debt, but not of the first; whereas both must be answered. For *Cursed is he that doth not continue in all things written in the law, to doe them.* The passion of Christ procureth deliverance from hell, but alone by it selfe considered, it doth not purchase a Right to eternall life.

Obiection 1. Christ fulfilled the law for himselfe: therefore his

passion alone serues for our iustification. *Ans.* Christ as man, fulfilled the law for himselfe: that he might be in both natures an holy high Priest, and so continue. Neuerthelesse as Mediatour, God and man, he became subiect to the law: in this regard he did not fulfill the law for himselfe, neither was he bound so to doe.

Obiect. II. That which Christ did, we are not bound to doe: but Christ (say some) fulfilled the law for vs: therefore we are not bound to fulfill the law. *Ans.* That which Christ did, we are not bound to doe, for the same end, and in the same manner. Now he fulfilled the law in way of redemption, and satisfaction for vs: and so doe not we fulfill the law, but onely in way of thankfulness, for our redemption.

Obiect. III. The law doth exact both obedience, and the penaltie also. *Ans.* In the estate of innocencie the law threatned the penalty, and it onely exacted obedience. Since the fall, it exacteth both obedience, and the punishment. The threatning of the law, exacts the punishment; the precepts exact obedience.

Obiect. IV. *Heb. 10. 19.* By the blood of Christ wee haue entrance into the Holy place. *Ans.* By the blood of Christ, we are to vnderstand the Passion: and the passion may not be seuered from actiue, and voluntarie obedience. For Christ in suffering obeyed, and in obeying, suffered. And (as *Chrysostome* saith) the Passion is a kinde of action, Christ in the oblation of himselfe did not onely offer to God his passion, but also praiers, which are no passions, *Heb. 5. 7.*

The second errour is of the Papists: who teach, that the thing by which, and for which, a sinner is formally iustified, is remission of sinnes, with inherent iustice infused by the holy Ghost. But this cannot be. For inherent iustice, and iustification, are made distinct gifts of God. *Paul* saith, Christ is made vnto vs of God, wisdom, iustice, sanctification, *1. Cor. 1. 30.* Again, But ye are washed, ye are iustified, and sanctified. *1. Cor. 6. 11.* Secondly, the iustice whereby a sinner is iustified, is reuealed without the law. *Rom. 3. 21.* Now inherent iustice, or the habite of charitie, is reuealed by the law: and the obedience of Christ, is the onely iustice reuealed without the law. For it is a iustice imputed that the law neuer knew: and in this obedience, Christ performed the law, and more too. For he died for his enemies; and so loued his neighbour more then himselfe. Thirdly, God is not onely a iustifier, but also iust in iustifying. *Rom. 3. 26.* because he iustificieth none but such as bring vnto him a true and perfect iustice, either in themselues, or in their Mediatour. *Pro. 17. 15.* Now this inward, and inherent iustice is not such. For it is imperfect: because it is increased (as they teach) by a second iustifica-

Humil. 2. in Act.

iustification: and it is in this life mixed with the corruption of the flesh. Fourthly, the righteousness of a good conscience is an excellent grace, and gift God: but by it *we are not iustified*, 1. Cor. 4. 4. Lastly, a close error is to be noted in this Popish doctrine of iustification. For in Popish learning, Remission of sinnes is not onely an abolishing of the guilt, and the punishment, but also of the corruption of sinne: so as the partie pardoned, and iustified, hath nothing in him, that (as they say) God may iustly hate. And yet Paul iustified, and regenerate saith otherwise of himselfe: that *sinne dwelleth in him*; and that *the law of sinne rebells in him against the law of his mind*, and *leades him captiue to sinne*. Rom. 7.

The vse of the doctrine. First, in that we are iustified, by an obedience out of our selues, we are taught, vtterly to deny our selues, and to goe out of our selues, as hauing nothing in vs whereby we may be saued. Here is the foundation of the abnegation of our selues. Secondly, the obedience of Christ must be vnto vs the foundation of our obedience: for he performed all righteousness for vs, that we might be seruants not of sinne, but seruants of righteousness in all duties of obedience. And in his obedience we must not onely respect the merit thereof, but also his holy example in loue, mercy, meeknes, patience, &c. and after it, are we to fashion our liues. Thirdly, the obedience of Christ must bee the foundation of our comfort. In all daungers, & temptations, we that beleeue are to oppose the obedience of Christ against the fierce wrath of God, against hel, death, and condemnation. Certen beasts, when they are pursued, flie the next way to their dennes, where they hold themselves euen to death. Christ in respect of his obedience, is our hiding place: Rom. 3. 26. he is set forth vnto the world as a Propitiatory. For as the Propitiatory couered the Arke, and the decalogue, so he couereth our sinnes, and he hides our bodies, and soules, from the furious indignation, and vengeance of God. Let vs therefore by our faith, flie to this our hiding place in the storme & tempest of Gods wrath: and let vs there liue and die. Fourthly, this Obedience is the foundation of our happines. For true happines is, to be eased of our sinnes, Psal. 32. 1. and this ease we haue from Christ, Math. 11. 18. Lastly, the consideration of this obedience, is the foundation of our thankfulness to God. For if we beleeue that Christ suffered, and fulfilled the law for vs, we are worse then beasts, if we doe not every way shew our selues thankfull for this mercy.

The fifth point to be considered, is the meanes of iustification, namely, *the Faith of Christ*. Of which I consider three things. The first, what faith is. The Papists define iustifying faith to be a

gift of God, whereby we beleue the articles of faith to be true, and the whole word of God. But this faith, the devills haue. Here they alleadge, that *Abraham* was the father of all the faithfull, and that his faith was nothing els but a perswasion, that he was able to giue him a child in his old age. *Ans.* First, the obiekt of *Abrahams* faith was double: one lesse principall, that he should haue issue in his old age: the second, more principall, that the *Messias* his Redeemer should descend of his loines. And this was the thing which his faith in the promise of God specially aimed at. I answer againe, that *Abraham* beleueed not onely the power of God, *Rom. 4. 21.* but also his will, which he had reuealed in the promise, *In thy seede all the nations of the earth shall be blessed.* Secondly, it is alleadged, that *Christ* in the curing of certaine blind men, required no more, but that they should beleue his power, *Math. 9. 28.* I answer, that the ende of the miracles of *Christ*, was to confirme the certentie of doctrine, specially touching his natures, and offices. And therefore a generall faith touching the diuine power or Godhead of *Christ* was sufficient, for the obtaining of a miraculous cure. Thirdly, they obiekt, that saluation is promised to generall faith. *Rom. 10. 9.* *If thou shalt confesse with thy mouth the Lord Iesus, and beleue that God raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.* That *Peters* faith was generall, *Math. 16. 10.* *Thou art Iesus Christ, the sonne of the liuing God.* That the *Eunuchs* faith was of the same kind, *Act. 8. 37.* *I beleue that Iesus Christ is the sonne of God.* *Ans.* It is a common rule in scripture, that words signifying knowledge, signifie also the motions and good affections of the heart. *Psal. 1.* *The Lord knowes the way of the righteous,* that is, knowes, and approoues it. *2. Timothie 2. 29.* *The Lord knowes who are his,* that is, hee knoweth and chooseth them. *Iohn 17. 2.* *This is eternall life to know thee the onely God,* that is, to know and acknowledge thee for our God. If this be true in wordes of knowledge, then much more wordes of beleeuing signifie the good motions, and the affiance of the heart. Thus to beleue *Christ* to be the Sonne of God, in the places before named, is to beleue that he is God, and withall to fixe our affiance on him: otherwise the devills beleue thus much. When *Thomas* had put his finger in the side of *Christ*, he said, *My Lord, and my God,* *Iohn. 20. 28.* And to this speech of his *Christ* faith, *Thou hast seene, and beleued.* This then is true faith not onely to beleue that *Christ* is God, but also that he is our God.

Iustifying faith in true manner is defined thus: *It is a gift, whereby wee apprehend Christ, and his benefits.* *Iohn 1. 12.* To beleue in *Christ*, and to receiue *Christ*, are put both for one. *Ioh. 6.* Faith is the mouth

mouth of the soule, whereby we eate the flesh of Christ, and drinke his blood. *Iohn 17.8.* To receiue the word of Christ, to acknowledge it, and to beleue it, are put all for one. *Paul* saith, that the Gentiles did apprehend the iustice which is by faith, *Rom. 9. 30.* Againe, that we receiue the promise of the spirit by faith, *Gal. 3. 14.*

This apprehension stands in two things. The first is, to know Christ, as he propounds himselfe in the word, and sacraments. The second is, To applie him and his benefits vnto our selues. This application is made by a supernaturall act of the vnderstanding, when we beleue that Christ with his benefits is really ours. It may be objected, that faith is a certen confidence whereby wee beleue in Christ: & so it is described euen in this text. *Answ. 1.* Faith, and confidence, properly are distinct gifts of God: and confidence is the effect, or fruit of faith. For *Paul* saith, that wee haue entrance to God with confidence by faith, *Ephesians 3. 11.* And reason declares as much; for a man can not put his confidence in Christ, till hee be assured that Christ with his benefits are his. We do not rest on his goodnesse, of whose loue we doubt. Secondly, I answer that confidence, beeing a most notable effect of faith, is often in scripture, put for faith, and faith is described by it (as it is in this place) and yet for nature they are not one, but must bee distinguished.

Furthermore, the grounds of apprehension must bee considered. For speciall faith, must haue a speciall, and infallible ground. The grounds are three. The first is this. In the Gospel God hath propounded generall promises of remission of sinnes, and life euermore by Christ: and withall hee hath given a commandement to apply the sayd promises to our selues, 1. *Iohn 3. 23.* This is the commandement of God, that we beleue in the name of his Sonne Iesus Christ: And wee cannot beleue in Christ, till wee beleue Christ to bee our Christ. Now then, a generall promise, with a commandement to applie the same to our selues, is in effect as much as a speciall promise. The second ground is this, *Rom. 8. 16.* The spirit of God testifieth together with our spirit that we are the sonnes of God. In this testimony, foure things must be obserued. The first, that it is sufficiēt to certifie & assure vs of our salvation. For if the testimony of two or three witnesses establish a truth among men, then much more the testimony of God. The second is, that this testimony be certainly known; els it is no testimony vnto vs. The third is, that this testimonie is found and perceived in the vse of the word, praier, sacraments. The last is, that it is especially giuen and felt in the time of great danger and affliction. For when by reason of misery and trouble, we know not to pray as we ought,

then the spirit makes request for vs with groanes that cannot be uttered. Rom. 8. 26. And in afflictions, Paul saith, The loue of God is shed abroad in our hearts. Now then, if God giue to them that turne vnto him a testimonie that they are the children of God, they for their parts, are by speciall faith to beleue it. The third ground is this. A speciall faith may be gathered, partly vpon things generally reuealed in the word of God, and partly vpon sense, obseruation, and experience: the same things being reuealed generally in the word, and particularly by experience. Vpon this ground may we truly conclude the forgiveness of our sinnes, and the saluation of our soules, on this manner: He which beleueth, hath the forgiveness of his sinnes: but I beleue in Christ (saith he which beleueth:) therefore my sinnes are forgiven me. The maior or first part, is expressed in the Word; the minor or second part is found true by experience, and by the testimony of the conscience, which is a certain Testimonie. For Paul saith, This is my reioycing, the testimonie of my conscience. 2. Cor. 1. 12. And the conclusion, is the conclusion of speciall faith. If this be not a good and sufficient ground, there is almost no speciall faith in the world.

Lastly, wee are to consider the degrees of Apprehension, and they are two: there is a weak apprehension, and there is a strong apprehension, as there is a weak and a strong faith. The weak faith, and apprehension is, when we endeauour to apprehend. This endeauour is, when we bewaile our vnbeleefe, strue against our manifold doubtings, will to beleue with an honest heart, desire to be reconciled to God, and constantly vse the good meanes to beleue. For God accepts the will to beleue for faith it selfe, and the will to repent for repentance. The reason hereof is plaine. Every supernaturall act presupposeth a supernaturall power, or gift: and therefore the will to beleue and repent, presupposeth the power and gift of faith, and repentance in the heart. It may be objected, that in the mindes of them that beleue in this manner, doubtings of Gods mercies abound. *Ans.* Though doubtings abound neuer so, yet are they not of the nature of faith, but are contrarie to it. Secondly, we must put difference betwene true apprehension, and strong apprehension. If we truly apprehend, though not strongly, it sufficeth. The pallee hand is able to receiue a gift, though not so strongly as an other. The man in the Gospel said, Lord, I beleene, helpe mine vnbeleefe. Marke 9. 24. that is, helpe my faith which by reason of the smalnesse thereof may rather bee called vnbeleefe, then faith. This is the common faith of true beleeuers. For in this world, wee rather liue by hanging and thirsting, then by full apprehension.

apprehending of Christ: and our comfort stands rather in this, that we are knowne of God, then that we know God.

The highest degree of faith is, a full perswasion of Gods mercy. Thus saith the holy Ghost, that *Abraham was not weake through un-*
 5 *beleefe, but strong in faith, Rom. 4. 20.* But wherein was this strength? In that *he was fully perswaded, that God, which had promised would also performe it.* This measure of faith is not incident to all beleeuers, but to the Prophets, Apostles, martyrs; and such as haue bin long exercised in the schoole of Christ. And this appeares by the order,
 10 whereby we attaine to this degree of faith. First, there must bee a knowledge of Christ: then followes a generall perswasion of the possibilitie of pardon, and mercie, whereby wee beleeuethat our sinnes are pardonable. An example whereof we haue in the prodigall childe, *Luke 15. 18.* After this the holy Ghost worketh a will
 15 and desire to beleeu, & stirs vp the heart to make humble and serious inuocation for pardon. After prayer instantly made, followes a setling and quieting of the conscience, according to the promise, *Matth. 7. 7.* *Knocke, it shall be opened, seeke, ye shall finde, aske, ye shall receiue.* After all this, followes an experience in manifold obseruations
 20 of the mercies of God, and loue in Christ: and after experience, followes a full perswasion. *Abraham* had not this full perswasion, till God had sundry times spoken to him. *Dauid*, vpon much triall of the mercie, and fauour of God, growes to resolution, and faith, *Psalme. 23. 6.* *Doubtlesse kindnesse and mercie shall follow me all the*
 25 *daies of my life.*

This distinction of the degrees of faith, must therather be obserued; because the Papists suppose that we teach, that euery faith is a full perswasion, and that euery one among vs hath this perswasion. Which is otherwise. For, certentie we ascribe to all faith,
 30 but not fulnesse of certenty. Neither doe we teach, that all men must haue a full perswasion, at the first.

The vse. If that be the right faith, which apprehends and applies Christ vnto vs, then is it a poore and miserable faith of the Papist, to be baptized, and, withall to beleeu, as the Church doth,
 35 when it is not knowne what the Church beleeueth.

Of the same kinde is the faith of the multitude among vs, whose faith is their good meaning, that is, their fidelitie, and truth in their dealings.

Laill, if that be faith which truly apprehends Christ, there is
 40 little true faith in these last daies. For though the merit of Christ be apprehended by faith, yet is not the efficacie of his death: and that appeares by the badde and vnreformed liues of them that professe

professe the Gospel. Indeepe many say they haue and euer had, a strong perswasion of Gods mercie : but in the most of them it is but a strong imagination : for their faith was conceiued without the word, prayer, sacraments: and it is seuered from good life. We are then all of vs carefully to seeke for this true and liuely faith. 5 And the rather, because faith and repentance are possible to all that by grace doe will it. Nay, they which will to beleue and repent, haue begun to beleue and repent : God accepting the will for the deede. *Luke 11. 13.* And hauing attained to a measure of true faith, we must goe on and seeke to iustifie our selues : but yet 10 (as *S. James* teacheth, c. 2.) iustifie our faith by good workes : and then shall our faith be a meanes to iustifie vs, in life and death.

The second point to bee considered concerning faith, is the manner how it iustifieth. The Papists teach, that it iustifieth, because it stirreth vp good motions and good affections in the heart, 15 whereby it prepareth and disposeth man, that he may be fit to receiue his iustification : againe, because it being an excellent vertue meriteth that God should iustifie. But this is false which they say. For if faith iustifieth by disposing the heart, then there must be a space of time betweene iustification and iustifying faith : but there 20 is no space of time betweene them. For so soone as a man beleeueth, he is presently iustified. For euery beleuer hath the promise of remission of sinnes and life euerlasting. Again, in the case of iustification, *Paul* opposeth beleeuing and doing : faith, and workes of the law : faith therefore doth not iustifie as a worke, or as an ex- 25 cellent vertue, bringing forth many diuine and gracious operations in vs. Nay the proper action of faith, which is *Apprehension*, doth not iustifie of it selfe : for it is imperfect, and is to be increased to the end of our daies.

Faith therefore iustifieth, because it is an instrument to apprehend, and apply that which iustifieth, namely, Christ and his obedience. As the Israelites slung of fierie serpents were cured, so are we saued : *Iob. 3. 16.* the Israelites did nothing at all, but onely looke vpon the brasen serpent ; so are we to doe nothing for our iustification and saluation, but to fixe the eye of our faith on Christ. 35 The bankrupt payes his debt by accepting the paiment made by his suretie. It is the propertie of true religion to depreesse nature, and to exalt grace : and this is done when we make God, the onely worker of our saluation, and make our selues to be no more but receiuers of the mercie and grace of God by faith, and receiuers 40 not by nature, but by grace, reaching out the beggars hand, namely our faith in Christ, to receiue the gift or almes of mercie.

The

The last point is, that faith alone iustificieth. For here *Paul* saith, that we are iustified by faith, without the workes of the law: and that is as much as if he had said, by faith alone. Some Papists to help themselves translate the words of *Paul* thus, *Knowing that a man is not iustified by the workes of the law, [ἐὰν μὴ] if not by faith*, that is, except faith goe withall: then if faith be ioyned with workes, (say they) workes iustifie. I answer, that this manner of translation corrupteth the text. For [ἐὰν μὴ] must here be translated, *but*: as appeares by the words following, *We haue beleeued in Christ, that we might be iustified by faith in Christ without the workes of the law*. We cannot doe more in the curing of our spirituall diseases, then in the curing of the diseases of our bodie: of which *Christ* saith, *Onely beleue, Mark. 5. 36*. When *Abraham* abounded both in faith and workes, *Rom. 4.* it is said, that he was iustified by faith without workes.

- 15 This doctrine is of great vse. First, we learne hence, that a man is iustified by the meere mercie of God: and that there is excluded from iustification, all Merit of congruitie, all meritorious workes of preparation, wrought by vs, all Cooperation of mans will with Gods grace, in the effecting of our iustification.
- 20 Secondly, we learne, that a man is iustified by the meere merit of *Christ*: that is, by the meritorious obedience, which he wrought in himselfe, and not by any thing wrought by him in vs. Here then our merits, and satisfactions, and all inward iustice, is excluded from the iustification of a sinner. To this end *Paul* saith, that we are iustified freely by the redemption that is in *Christ*, *Rom. 3. 24.* that we are made the iustice of God in him (and not in vs): *2. Cor. 5. 21.* that he gaue himselfe to deliuer vs, *Gal. 1. 4.* that he hath purged our sinnes by himselfe; *Heb. 1. 3.* and not by any thing in vs. Hence it appeares, that the Papists erre, and are deceiued, when they teach that *Christ* did merit, that we might merit, and satisfie for our selues: for then wee should not be iustified by our faith alone.

Thirdly, hence we learne, that a sinner is iustified by meere faith: that is, that nothing within vs concurres as a cause of our iustification, but faith; and that nothing apprehends *Christ*s obedience for our iustification, but faith. This will more easily appeare, if we compare faith, hope, and loue. Faith is like an hand, that opens it selfe to receiue a gift, and so is neither loue, nor hope. Loue is also an hand, but yet an hand that gives out, communicates, and distributes. For as faith receiues *Christ* into our hearts, so loue opens the heart, and powres out praise and thankes to God, and all maner of goodnesse to men. Hope is no hand, but an eye that wishly looketh and waiteth for the good things which faith beleueth. Therefore it is the

the onely propertie of faith to claspe and lay hold of Christ, and his benefits.

It is objected, that true faith is neuer alone. I answer thus. Faith is neuer alone in the person iustified, nor in godly conuersation: but is ioyned with all other vertues. Yet in the act, and office of iustification, it is alone. The eye in the bodie is not alone: beeing ioyned with all other parts, hand, foote, &c. neuerthelesse, the eye in seeing is alone. For no part of the body seeth, but the eye.

Secondly, it may be objected, that being iustified by faith alone, we are saued by faith alone: and so may liue as we list. I answer, faith must be considered as an Instrument, or as a way. If it be considered as an instrument to apprehend Christ to our saluation, we are onely saued by faith, on this manner. Yet if faith be considered as a way, wee are not onely saued by faith. For all other vertues and workes are the way to life as well as faith, though they bee not causes of saluation.

Thirdly, it is objected, that not onely faith, but also the sacraments serue to apply Christ: I answer, they are said to apply, in that they serue to confirme faith, whose office is to apply. And here let vs take notice of the error of the Papists, who teach that our satisfactions serue to apply the satisfaction of Christ, and the sacrifice of the Masse, to apply the sacrifice of Christ vpon the crosse: whereas nothing indeede applies but faith.

In the sixth place, wee are to consider the kinds of iustification. The Papists make two: one, when a man of an euill man is made a good man: the second, when a good man is made better: and this, they say, is by workes. But it is false which they teach. For the Iewes which were borne an holy and peculiar people to God, by meanes of the couenant, were iustified (as Paul here saith) by faith, without workes. Againe, he saith, that the very end of our beleeuing is, that we may bee iustified by faith without workes. Therefore there is one onely iustification, and no more: and that by faith without workes.

The seventh point is, the ground of this doctrine of iustification by faith without workes. And it is laid downe in the end of the 16. verse, *No flesh shall be iustified by the workes of the law.* And this ground is taken, as I suppose, from *Psal. 143. vers. 2.* It may be alledged, that *Dauid* saith thus, *No flesh shall be iustified in thy sight,* and that the other words, [*by the workes of the law,*] are not exprest. I answer, that the Apostles, and Christ, in citing places of the old Testament, applie them, and expound them, and hereupon sometime adde words without adding to the sense. *Moses* saith,

Him

Him shalt thou serue, *Deut. 6. 16.* Christ alleading the same words, saith, *Him onely shalt thou serue, Matth. 4. 10.* *Dauid saith, Sacrifice and burnt offering thou wouldst not, but mine eares hast thou pearced, Psal. 40. 7.* The author to the Hebrewes citing this text, saith, *Sacrifice and burnt offering thou wouldst not, but a bodie hast thou sisted me, Heb. 10. 5.* And thus the pearcing of the eare is explained. For indeede it signifies to be made obedient: and to this end was a bodie giuen to Christ, that he might obey his Fathers will.

The eight, and last point is, the practise of them that are iustified, and that is to belecue, or put their trust in Christ. *Trust in the Lord* (saith the Prophet) *and ye shall be assured, 2. Chron. 20. 20.* And *Sulamon saith, Roll your care on the Lord, Pron. 16. 2.* By meanes of this faith the heart of the righteous is fixed and stablished, *Psal. 112. 7, 8.* For the better practise of this dutie, two rules must bee remembered. The one is, that faith and the practise thereof, must reigne in the heart, and haue all at command. We must not goe by sense, feeling, reason, but we must shut our eyes, and let faith keepe our hearts close to the promise of God. Nay faith must ouerrule nature, and command nature, and the strongest affections thereof. Thus *Abraham* beleueed against hope, and by faith was content to offer his naturall and onely begotten sonne. *Hebrewes 11.* If faith ouerrule nature, then much more must it haue all the lusts and corruptions of nature at command. The second rule is, that when we know not what to doe, by reason of the greatnesse of our distress, we must then fixe our hearts on Christ without separation: as he that climes vp a ladder, or some sleepe place, the higher hee goes, the faster he holds. *2. Chron. 20. 12. Iob 13. 12.* Hence is true comfort. *Psal. 27. 13.*

17 And if while we seeke to be made righteous by Christ, we our selues are found sinners, is Christ the minister of sinne? God forbid.

For the better vnderstanding of the latter part of this chapter, it must be obserued, that *Paul* directs his speach not onely to *Peter*, but also to the Iewes that stood by, being maintainers of iustification by the law.

Some thinke, that in this verse *Paul* makes an obiection in the person of the false Apostles, on this manner: If wee be iustified by Christ alone, without the obseruation of the law, then there is no difference betweene vs Iewes and the Gentiles, but wee are as deepe sinners as they: and if this be so, then Christ is the minister of

of sinne. And then they say, to this *Paul* answers, *God forbid*. But I somewhat doubt, whether this be the sense of the words, because *Paul* doth not make a direct confutation of this obiection in the words following.

Therefore I rather suppose, that *Paul* continues his former speech, 5
even to the end of the chapter: and that in these words hee vseth
a third reason, to dissuade *Peter* from halting, betweene the Iewes
and Gentiles. And the reason will the better appeare, if we search
the meaning of the words. *If while we be iustified by Christ*, that is, by
faith in Christ, without the workes of the law. *We are found sinners*, 10
that is, found in our sinnes, not fully iustified, but are further to be
iustified by the workes of the law. *Is Christ the Minister of sinne?* that
is, doth it not hence follow, that Christ ministred vnto vs occasi-
on of sinne, in that he hath caused vs to renounce the iustice of the
law? *God forbid*, that is, ye doe all hold it with me as a blasphemie,
that Christ should be the minister of sinne. 15

The argument then is framed thus. If beeing iustified by Christ,
we remaine sinners, and are further to be iustified by the law, then
Christ is the Minister of sinne: but Christ is no Minister of sinne:
therefore they which are iustified, neede not further to be iustified 20
by the law.

The vse. First, we learne hence, that it is a blasphemie to make
Christ the Minister of sinne, who is the Minister of righteousnes,
yea iustice it selfe. *Isa. 53. 11. Dan. 9. 25. He brings everlasting righteous-*
nes. Ioh. 1. He is the lambe of God that takes away the sinnes of the world. 25
Of this all the Prophets giue testimonie. *Act. 10. 43.* Therefore A-
theists are no better then diuells, that reckon him among the false
Prophets of the world. And many of them that professe Christ are
greatly to be blamed, that make Christ the greatest sinner in the
world: because Christ died for them: therefore they presume of 30
mercie, and take libertie to liue as they list.

Again *Paul* here teacheth, that they which are iustified by Christ,
are perfectly to be iustified; and neede not further to be iustified by
any thing out of Christ; as by the workes of the law. It may be ob-
iected, that they which are iustified feele themselues to be sinners. 35
Rom. 7. 14. Ans. The corruption of original sin, is in them that are iu-
stified: yet it is not imputed to them by God, and withall, it hath re-
ceiued his deadly wound by the death of Christ. Therefore they
which are iustified, are not reputed sinners before God. Againe,
it may be obiected, that they which are iustified, must confesse
themselues to bee sinners to the very death. *Answer.* Confession 40
of sinne is not a cause, but a way for the obtaining of pardon.

Prou.

Prou. 28. 14. 1. Iob. 1. 9. The vncovering of our sinnes is the way to couer them, before God. The sinnes therefore of men iustified, vpon their humble and serious confession, are not sinnes imputed, but ceuered.

5 Vpon this doctrine it followes, that there is not a second iustification, by workes, as the Papists teach. For he that is iustified by Christ, is fully iustified, and needes not further be iustified by any thing out of Christ, as by the law. Againe the same persons teach, that our sinnes are done away by the death of Christ, and wee
10 iustified in our baptisme: and that if we fall, and sinne after baptisme, wee must doe workes of penance that we may satisfie Gods iustice, and be further iustified by our workes and sufferings. But then, by their leaues, after we are iustified by Christ, we are found sinners, and we are further to be iustified by our owne
15 workes. Now this is the point, which *Paul* here confuteth.

Againe, by this doctrine we learne, that Christ alone is by himselfe sufficient, for our iustification. *In him* (saith *Paul*) *are wee complete, Col. 2. 14.* He is a Well of grace and life neuer dried vp. *Iob. 4. 14.* Thirdly, we must content our selues with him alone, and with
20 his obedience for our iustification, despising (in respect of him) all merits, and satisfactions done by man.

Lastly, here we see what must be the care of men in this world, namely, to seeke to be iustified by the faith of Christ. It was *Pauls* principall desire to be found in Christ, hauing not his owne righteousness,
25 *but the righteousness which is by the faith of Christ. Phil. 3. 10.* The like desire should be in vs all.

18 *For if I build againe the things which I haue destroyed, I make my selfe a transgressour.*

30 By things destroyed, *Paul* meanes the workes, or the iustice of the law, as appeares by the next verse following, where rendring a reason of this, he saith, *by the law I am dead to the law.*

These words, depend on the former thus. *Paul* had said before,
35 that Christ was not a Minister of sinne vnto vs: and here he prooues it thus. He that builds the iustice of the law which he hath destroyed; is a Minister of sinne, or makes himselfe a sinner: but the Jewes, and *Peter* by his example, build the iustice of the law, which they haue destroyed, and so doth not Christ: therefore the
40 Jewes, and *Peter*, makethemselues sinners, and Christ doth not make vs sinners.

Here let vs obserue the modestie and meekenes of *Paul*. The things

things which he speakes, concerne *Peter*, and the *Iewes*: yet least he offend them, hee applies them to himselfe. This care, not to offend, was in *Christ*: who was rather willing to depart from his right, then to offend. *Math. 17. 27.* And *Paul* bids vs please all men in that which is good.

Here againe it is *Pauls* doctrine, that we make our selves offenders, when we build that which we haue lawfully destroyed. Thus Teachers are great offenders, when good doctrine is ioyned with bad conuersation. For good doctrine destroyes the kingdome of darknesse, and bad conuersation builds it vp againe. Thus rulers are great offenders when good counsell, and bad example goe together. For good counsell beats downe wickednesse, and bad example sets it vp againe. Thus beleeuers in *Christ* are great offenders, when reformed religion, and vnreformed life are ioyned together, as often they are. For then vnreformed life builds the kingdome of sinne, which *Christ* hath destroyed.

Further, wee are here taught to bee constant in that which is good. *Tit. 1. 9.* and to hold fast the Gospel which we professe. Wee haue put vnder foote the Popish religion for this many yeares: our duty is to bee constant herein, and no way to build either in word, or deede, that which wee haue to the vttermost of our power destroyed.

19 For I through the law, am dead to the law, that I may liue vnto God.

In these words, *Paul* sets downe a second reason, to proue *Christ* to be no minister of sinne, in abolishing the iustice of the law. And the reason is framed thus: We *Iewes*, iustified by *Christ*, are dead to the law, not to liue as we list, but to liue to the honour of God. Therefore *Christ* in taking away the iustice of the law, is not the minister of sinne.

Here three points are propounded: the first is, that the person iustified, is dead to the law: the second, that he is dead to the law by the law: the third, that he is dead that he may liue vnto God.

For the better vnderstanding of the first point, we must search what is meant by *dying to the law*. Here the law is compared to an hard and cruell master: and wee to slaues, or bondmen: who so long as they are aliue, they are vnder the dominion, and at the command of their masters: yet when they are dead, they are free from that bondage, and their masters haue no more to doe with them. Here then, to bee dead to the law, is to bee free from the dominion

dominion of the law. And we are free, *in foure respects*. First, in respect of the accusing, and damnatorie sentence of the law, *Rom. 8. 1.* Secondly, in respect of the power of the law, whereby as an occasion it prouoketh and stirreth v^p the corruption of the heart in the vnregenerate, *Rom. 7. 8.* Thirdly, in respect of the rigor of the law, whereby it exacteth most perfect obedience for our iustification. Thus *Paul* here saith, that *hee is dead to the law*. Lastly, in respect of the obligation of the conscience, to the obseruation of ceremonies, *Col. 2. 20.* Thus are all persons iustified by the faith of
 10 Christ, free from the law.

Hence wee learne, that the Papists erre and are deceiued, when they teach, that the Law and the Gospel are one for substance of doctrine. For then they which are iustified by Christ, should not only be dead to the law, but also to the Gospel. Now the Scripture
 15 saith not, that persons iustified are dead to the Gospel.

They erre againe, in that they teach, that persons iustified by the merit of the death of Christ, are further to bee iustified by the workes of the law. For he that is iustified by the law, is dead to the law: but if wee be iustified by works, then are we by Christ made
 20 aliue to the law.

Thirdly, heere wee see how long the dominion of the law continueth, and when it endeth. The law reignes ouer all men without exception, till they bee iustified. When they once beginne to beleue in Christ, and to amend their liues, then the
 25 dominion of the law ceaseth, and they then are no more vnder the law, but vnder grace. Here all such persons as liue in the securitie and hardnesse of their hearts, are to be admonished to repent of their sinnes, and to begin to turne vnto God. For they must know, that they liue vnder a most hard and cruell master, that
 30 will doe nothing but accuse, terrifie, and condemne them, and cause them to runne headlong to vtter desperation. And if they die being vnder the law, they must looke for nothing but death and destruction without mercie. For the law is mercilesse. This consideration serueth notably to awake them that are dead in
 35 their sinnes. Againe, all such as with true and honest hearts haue begun to repent and beleue, let them bee of good comfort. For they are not vnder the dominion of the law, but they are dead to the law, and vnder grace, hauing a Lord, who is also their mercifull Saviour, who will give them protection against the terrours of
 40 the law, and spare them as a father spares his child that serues him, and not breake them, though they bee but as weake and bruised reeds, and as smoaking flaxe.

The second point is, touching the meanes of our death to the law, and that is, the law. Here some by the law, vnderstand *the law of faith*, that is, the Gospel, *Rom. 3. 27.* And they make this to be the meaning of the words, *By the law of Christ*, that is, by the Gospel, *I am dead to the law of Moses.* But this sense, though it be a truth, yet wil it not stand in this place. For it is the question, whether by the Gospell wee be freed from the law? Now *Paul*, a learned disputer, would not bring the question to proue it selfe. Therefore I take the true meaning of the words to be this: *By the law of Moses, I am dead to the law of Moses.* It may be demanded how this can be, considering the law is the cause of no good thing in vs? For it is the ministry of death and condemnation, *2. Cor. 3. 7, 9.* Again, that which the law cannot reueale, it cannot worke: but the law neither can, nor doth reueale faith in Christ, the death to the law, nor repentance, &c. therefore the law is no cause to worke them. It may peradventure be said, that the law workes repentance, and sorrow for sinne. I answer, there is a double repentance. One *Legall*, the other *Euangelicall*. *Legall* is, when men haue a sight of their sinnes, and withal are grieued for the punishment thereof. This repentance is wrought by the ministry of the law: it was in *Indus*: and it is no grace of God; but of it selfe it is the way to hell. *Euangelicall* repentance is, when being turned by grace, wee turne our selues to God. This repentance is a gift of grace, and is not wrought by the law, but by the ministry of the Gospel. Again, there is a *Legall sorrow*, which is a sorrow for sinne, in respect of the punishment: this is no grace, and it is wrought by the law. *Euangelicall sorrow*, is sorrow for sinne, because it is sinne. This indeed is a grace of God; but it is not wrought by the law, but by the preaching of mercy and reconciliation: and it followes in vs vpon the apprehension of Gods mercy by faith. The law then being the cause of no good thing in vs, it may be demanded (I say) how we should bee dead to the law by the law? *Ans.* Though the law bee not a cause of this death to the law, and so to sinne: yet it is an occasion thereof. For it accuseth, and terrifieth, and condemneth vs: and therefore it occasioneth or vrgeth vs to flee vnto Christ, who is the cause that wee die vnto the law. As the needle goes before, and drawes in the thred, which sowes the cloth; so the law goes before, and makes a way that grace may follow after, and take place in the heart. Thus must this place bee vnderstood, and all other places that speake of the law in this manner: as *Rom. 7. 8, &c.*

The third point is, touching the end of our death to the law: and that is, that we *may liue to God.* It may bee demaunded, what life

life this is, whereby we liue to God? *Answer.* There is a naturall and a spirituall life. Naturall life is that which wee receiue from *Adam*, by generation: and it is the function of naturall faculties, in liuing, moouing, vse of senses and reason. Spirituall life is that
 5 which we receiue from *Christ* by regeneration: and it is the action, motion, or operation of the Spirit in vs. This life is called by *Paul*, the life of God, *Ephes. 4. 18.* And this is the life which he speakes of in this place. And it is described by many things. First, by the end and vse of it. For it serues to make vs to liue to God, that is, to the honour
 10 and glory of God. And we liue to God by liuing wisely, godly, iustly, *Tit. 3. 12.* Wisely, in respect of our selues: godly, in respect of God: iustly, in respect of men.

That we may liue wisely, we must obserue *three* rules. The first: we must labour with all diligence, and with all speed, that we may
 15 be worthy to stand before the Sonne of man at his comming. And therefore wee must labour to bee in *Christ*, hauing true faith and good conscience, *Eph. 5. 15. Luke 21. 36.* Consider also the example of *Paul*, *Act. 24. 16.* It is true wilddome to be wise for our soules, and for euerlasting happinesse: and it was the folly of the foolish vir-
 20 gins, that they did not furnish themselves with the oyle of grace in time conuenient. The second rule: we must in this world come as neere heauen and the happinesse of life euerlasting, as may be, *Psal. 3. 14.* And for this cause we must ioyn our selues to the assemblies where the word is preached, prayer is made, and Sacraments admi-
 25 nistred: for there is the gate of heauen. Consider the practise of *Moses*, *Heb. 11. 25, 26.* and of *Dauid*, *Psal. 84. 10.* Againe, being absent from heauen both in body and soule, yet wee must haue our conuersation there, by the cogitation of our minds, and by the affec-
 30 tions of our hearts, *Phil. 3. 21.*

That wee may liue godly, *seuen* rules must bee remembred. The first: wee must bring our selues into the presence of the inuisible God: yea, we must set our thoughts, willes, affections,
 35 and all we doe in his sight and presence: and wee must euermore remember whatsoeuer wee doe, that wee haue to deale with God himselte. In this regard *Enoch* is said to walke with God, *Gene. 5. 24.* *Abraham*, and *Isaac* before God, *Genes. 17. 1.* and *48. 15.* and *Dauid*, *Psal. 116. 9.* and *139. all,* and *Cornelius*, *Actes 10. 33.* and *Paul*, *2. Cor. 7. 17.*

The second: we must take knowledge of the will of God in all
 40 things, whether it be reuealed in the word, or by any euent. It is not enough to know Gods will, but when time and place serues, we must acknowledge it, *Rom. 12. 2. Col. 1. 10.*

The third: we must bring our selues in subiection to the known will of God, and captiuate all our senses vnto it: and suffer God to set vp his kingdome in vs, *Rom. 12. 1.*

The fourth: when wee haue offended God, wee must instantly humble our selues before his Maiesty, confessing our offences, and making instant deprecation for mercy. Thus did *Ezra*, chap. 9. and *Daniel*, chap. 9. and *Dauid*, *Psal. 32. 3.*

The fifth: in all our miseries and aduersities we must bee silent in our hearts, by quieting our willes in the good will of God. *Psal. 4. 4. Examine your selues, and bee still. Psal. 37. 7. Bee silent to Iehouah.* Consider the example of *Aaron*, *Leuit. 10. 3.* of *Dauid*, *Psal. 39. 9.* of the Iewes, *Actes 11. 18.*

The sixth: In all things wee doe or suffer, wee must depend on the goodnesse, prouidence, and mercie of God, for the successe of our labours, and for ease or deliuerance out of miserie. This is to liue by faith: and, as *Peter* saith, *1. Pet. 3. 17. to sanctifie God in our hearts.*

The last: In all things wee must giue praise and thanks to God: and that for our miseries and afflictions, *Iob 1. 22.* for in them God mingles his iustice with mercie, whereas hee might vtterly condemne vs.

That we may liue iustly in respect of men, two rules must be obserued. The first: we must make God in Christ, our treasure and our portion, and his fauour and blessing, our riches. Then shall not the vile sinnes of avarice and ambition beare sway in vs: and then shall we learne with *Paul* to be content in any estate, *Phil. 4. 11.* because howsoeuer the world goe, wee haue our portion and treasure. The second, we must loue God in louing of man, and serue him in doing seruice to men by the offices & duties of our callings. They which labour in their callings for this end, to get riches, honors, and to set vp themselves in this world, prophane their callings, and practise iniustice. For not selfe-loue, but loue to God, in duties of loue to men, must beare sway in all our actions.

Thus we see what it is to liue to God. Now we are all to be exhorted, to order our selues in this manner. For first of all, wee are Gods: and therefore we must glorifie God both in our bodies and soules, *2. Cor. 6. 20.* Secondly, the end of our iustification and redemption is, that we may liue to God. And it is great wickednesse to peruert the order of God, by liuing to our selues and the lustes of our hearts. Thirdly, there be 3. degrees of life: one is in this life, a spirituall and a renewed life: the second in death, when the body goes to the earth, & the soule to heauen: the third, in the last iudgment, when

when bodie and soule reunited, enter into the presence of God. Therefore that we may be saued, wee must liue vnto God in this life: for we can neuer come to the second degree of life, but by the first. And wee must not imagine, that we can step immediatly out
 5 of a lewd and wicked life, into euerlasting happinesse in heaven. Lastly, the grace of God in the ministry of the Gospel hath appeared and long taught vs, and called vpon vs to liue vnto God. Therefore vnlesse we be ashamed and confounded for our liues, and begin with all speed to liue vnto God, it will bee worse with vs, then
 10 with Sodom and Gomorrha; and many other nations.

20 *I am crucified with Christ: Thus I liue*, yet not *I any more, but Christ liues in mee. And in that I now liue in the flesh,*
 15 *I liue by the faith of the Sonne of God, who hath loued mee, and giuen himselfe for mee.*

Whereas *Paul* said before, *I am dead to the law*, heere he declares the reason of it, when hee saith, *I am crucified with Christ*. Againe, here *Paul* sets downe the true preparation to spirituall life. For God
 20 first kils, and then he makes a liue. And the measure of spirituall life, is according to the decay of originall sinne. This preparation stands in two things: the first is, fellowship with Christ in his crosse and passion, in these wordes, *I am crucified with Christ*. The second is Abnegation, or Annihilation (as some call it) in these
 25 wordes, *Not I any more.*

I am crucified with Christ.

For the better vnderstanding of these wordes, we must obserue, first, that *Paul* speakes not this of himselfe particularly, but he
 30 speakes in the person of the Christian Iewes, before whom he now reasoneth with *Peter*: nay in the person of all beleeuers. For all that beleeue are buried into his death. *Rom. 6. 4.* Secondly, it must be obserued, that *Paul* speaketh of himselfe not as he is a man consisting of body and soule, but as he is a sinner carrying about
 35 him the body of sinne. *Rom. 6. v. 6.* Further it may be demanded, vpon what ground he should say, *I am crucified with Christ?* *Ans.* There be two reasons of this speech. One is, that Christ vpon the crosse, stood not as a priuate person, but as a publicke person, in the roome, place, and stead of all the Blesst: and therefore
 40 when he was crucified, all beleeuers were crucified in him, as in the Parliament, when the Burgesse gives his voice, the whole corporation is said to consent by him, and in him. The 2. reason is this. In the

conuerſion of a ſinner, there is a reall donation of Chriſt, and all his benefits vnto vs: and there is a reall vnion, whereby euery beleeu-er is made one with Chriſt. And by vertue of this vnion, the croſſe and paſſion of Chriſt is as verily made ours, as if we had bin crucified in our owne perſons. Hereupon *Paul* ſaith in the time preſent, *I am crucified with Chriſt*. There are like phraſes in *Paul*, *wee are dead with Chriſt: we are riſen with him: we ſit with him in hea- uenly places*, *1. Ephes. 2. 6. Col. 3. 1.* and they are in the ſame manner to be expounded. Moreover the benefits that ariſe of this communi- on with Chriſt in his paſſion, are two. One is, *Iuſtification* from all our ſinnes, *Rom. 6. 7.* The ſecond is, *Mortification* of ſinne by the vertue of the death of Chriſt, after we are ingrafted into him. Thus much of the meaning.

The uſe. Superſtitious perſons take occaſion by the paſſion of Chriſt, to ſturre vp themſelues to ſorrow, compaſſion, and teares, by conſidering the pitifull handling of Chriſt, the ſor- row that pearced the heart of the Virgin *Marie*, and the crueltie of the Iewes. But this is a humane uſe, that may be made of euery hitorie.

The right uſe is this: wee are in minde and meditation to con- ſider Chriſt crucified: and firſt, we are to beleeu- that he was cru- cified for vs. This being done, wee muſt goe yet further, and as it were ſpread our ſelues on the croſſe of Chriſt, beleeu- and with- all beholding our ſelues crucified with him. Thou wilt ſay, this is a hard matter, I cannot doe it. I ſay againe, this is the right pra- tiſe of faith: ſtrive therefore to bee ſetled in this, that the body of thy ſin is crucified with Chriſt. Pray inſtantly by aſking, ſeeking, knocking, that thou maiſt thus beleue. This faith and perſwaſion is of endleſſe uſe. Firſt, it is the foundation of thy comfort. If thou beleue thy ſelfe to be crucified with Chriſt, thou ſhalt ſee thy ſelfe freed from the dominion of the law and ſinne, from hell, death, and condemnation; and to thy great comfort ſhalt ſee thy ſelfe to triumph over all thy ſpirituall enemies. For this Chriſt doeth, *Col. 2. 14.* and thou doſt the ſame, if thou be ſetled in this, that thou art crucified with him. Secondly, vpon this perſwaſion, thou ſhalt feele the vertue of the death of Chriſt to kill ſinne in thee, and to raiſe thy dead ſoule to ſpirituall life. When the *Shunamites* child was dead, *Eliſha* went and lay vpon him, applying face to face, hand to hand, foot to foot: and then his fleſh waxed warme, and reuiued, *1. King. 4. 34.* euen ſo apply thy ſelfe to Chriſt crucified, hand to hand, foot to foot, heart to heart; and thou ſhalt feele in thy ſelfe a death of ſinne, and the heat of ſpirituall life to warme and inflame thy

thy dead heart. Thirdly, if thou beleue thy self to be crucified with Christ, thou shalt see the length, the breadth, the height, the depth of the loue of God in Christ. For thy sinnes are thei words, & the speares that crucified Christ: and yet thou hast all the benefit of his passion. Lastly, if thou canst beleue that thou art crucified with Christ, thou shalt further bee assured, that he is partner with thee in all thy miseries and afflictions, to ease thee, and to make thee to beare them, *1. Pet. 4. 13. Col. 1. 24.*

The duties hence to be learned, are these. First, if thou be crucified with Christ, then must thou apply thy heart to crucifie the body of corruption in thee, by prayer, fasting, by auoiding the occasions, by abstaining from the practise of sinne, and by all good meanes. Behold, a man hanged vpon a gybber. Thou seest hee hath satisfied the law: and there is no further iudiciall proceeding against him: and withall thou seest how he ceaseth from his thefts, murders, blasphemies: euen so, if thou canst behold thy selfe spread vpon the crosse of Christ, and crucified with him, there will be in thee a new minde and disposition, and thou wilt cease from thine olde offences. Againe, beeing crucified with Christ, thou must bee conformable to Christ in thy sufferings. Hee suffered in loue; and the more his passion increased, the more he shewed his loue: euen so in thine afflictions and sufferings, thy loue to God and man must bee increased, though man bee the cause of thine afflictions. Secondly, Christ suffered in obedience: *Not my will, but thy will be done*: euen so in all thy sufferings thou must resigne thy selfe to God, and quiet thy selfe in his will. Thirdly, Christ suffered in all humilitie, humbling himselfe to the death of the crosse: euen so we, in, and vpon our afflictions, are to humble our selues vnder the mightie hand of God, confessing our sinnes, and intreating for pardon. Fourthly, he suffered in faith as man depending on his fathers goodnesse, euen in the midst of his passion: euen so are we to doe. Fifthly, he went on constantly in his sufferings to the very death: euen so are we to suffer in the resisting of sinne, euen vnto the shedding of our blood. Lastly, the principall care of Christ was, to see the fruit of his sufferings: so when we are distressed, our care must rather bee to see the fruit of our distresse, then to seeke deliuerance. This conformitie with Christ in his passion, is an infallible work and token of the child of God, and a signe that we are crucified with Christ.

Againe, heere wee are to take notice of the false faith of many men. They can bee content to beleue that Christ was crucified for them: but there they make a pause: for they doe not beleue

that they are crucified with Christ. Their faith therefore is but halfe a faith : and their profession is according. For they haue the forme of godlinesse without the power thereof. They thinke that they beleue the Articles of faith aright : but they are deceiued. For to beleue in Christ crucified, is not onely to beleue that he was crucified, but also to beleue that *I am crucified with him*. And this is to know Christ crucified.

Lastly, here we are to consider the abomination of the Church of Rome. For it most abuseth that which is the greatest treasure in the world, namely, *Christ crucified*. For they make a very Idol of him, in that they worship him in, at, and before painted and carued Crucifixes. For there is no such Christ in heauen or in earth, that will be present when wee pray, and heare vs at crucifixes. Againe, they giue *Laurels, diuine honor*, to deuised and framed crucifixes : and thus they rob Christ of his honour.

Thus much of our communion with Christ in his passion: now followes the second part of preparation, namely, *Abnegation, I liue, yet not I any more*: that is, I liue a spirituall life, yet not I as a naturall man. For in that regard, I carrie my selfe as a man crucified, or after the manner of a dead man, suffering nothing that is in me by nature to reigne in me, that Christ alone may liue & reigne in me. Here is a notable dutie to be learned : we beeing crucified with Christ, must carrie our selues as men crucified : and that in three respects. First, in respect of corruption of sinnefull nature. For in regard of our sinnes, wee are to esteeme our selues vnworthy of meat, drinke, sleepe, breathing : yea, we are to esteeme our selues to bee as vile as any of the creatures vpon earth : and we are to denie vngodlinesse, and worldly lusts, not suffering any of them to reigne ouer vs. Secondly, we must carry our selues as dead men, in respect of the good things that belong to nature, as honours, riches, pleasures, friends : all which in respect of preparation of minde, we must daily forsake for Christs sake, not suffering any of them to take place in our hearts. Lastly, we must bee as dead men in respect of our owne reason and will, and wee must tread them vnder foot, making Gods will our wisdom, and will, and giuing it lordship and dominion ouer vs, our owne willes in the meane season lying dead in vs. Thus are wee to carrie our selues as dead men : and we are to be carefull of it : that God may haue pleasure in vs, we must forget our owne people, and our fathers house, *Psal. 45. 10*. That we may buy the pearle, we must sell all wee haue, our willes our affections, and the dearest things in the world. He that would liue when hee is dead, must die while he is aliue : and wee must

must now lay out our selues as dead persons. Corruption of nature, reason, and will, must be dead in vs, that Christ alone may liue and reigne in vs.

The third point concerning spirituall life is, touching the originall and well-spring thereof, in these wordes, *That Christ may liue in mee.* For the better conceiuing whereof, three points are to be obserued. The first, that Christ is not onely the Author, with the Father and the holy Ghost, but also the root of life, hauing life in himselfe, that hee may conuay it to all that beleue in him. He
 5 *is the true vine, and wee are the branches, Iohn 15.1.* hee is an appointed head to his Church, *Ephes. 1.22.* he is the prince of life, *Actes 3.15.* hee is a quickening spirit, *1. Cor. 15.45.* And in this regard hee is said to liue in vs, namely, as a root in the branch, or as the head in the members. The second point is, that there must be an vnion with Christ,
 15 before we can receiue life from him, and he liue in vs. *If ye abide in me, and I in you, ye shall bring forth much fruit, Iohn 15.4.* We must be grafted with him, before we can be conformable to his death and resurrection, *Rom. 6.5.* And againe, wee must be taken out of the wilde oliue, and set in the true oliue, *Rom. 11.24.* Thus much Paul
 20 signifieth, when he saith, *Christ liues in mee.* Of this coniunction two things must be noted. The first, that it is a substantiall vnion: in that the person of him that beleueth, is vnited to the person of Christ. For we must *eate the flesh of Christ, and drinke his blood,* before wee can haue life abiding in vs, *Iohn 6.53.* and *our bodies are*
 25 *members of Christ, 1. Cor. 6.15.* Again, this vnion is spirituall, because it is made by the bond of one Spirit, *1. Cor. 12.13.* *By one spirit wee are baptized into one bodie.* And no man is to maruaile, that we on earth should bee ioyned to Christ in heauen. By ciuill contract man and wife are one flesh, though distant many miles
 30 asunder: why then may not wee be ioyned to Christ by vertue of the couenant of grace? considering no distance of place can hinder the being of the Spirit of Christ in vs. The third point is, that after this vnion with Christ, he must further communicate himselfe vnto vs, before we can liue by him, and he in vs. To this purpose S.
 35 *Iohn* saith, that *God hath giuen vs life: that this life is in the Sonne: that hee which hath the Sonne, hath life, 1. Iohn 5.12.* For the conceiuing of this truth, two questions may be demaunded. One, in what order Christ giues himselfe vnto vs? *Answer.* Christ first of all giues his flesh and blood, that is, himselfe: and then secondly his gifts,
 40 namely, the efficacie and merit of his death. The institution of the Lords Supper sheweth plainly, that we are not partakers of the benefits of Christ, vnlesse first of all Christ himselfe be giuen vnto vs.

The

The second question is, how Christ can be said to *live in vs*?
Answer He is not in vs in respect of locall presence, but by the supernaturall, and speciall operation of his spirit, *1. Corinth. 6. 17.* The operation of the spirit, is threefold. The first is, when God imputes the righteousness of Christ to them that beleue, and withall gives the Right of Eternall life, and the Earnest of this Right, namely, the first fruites of the spirit. Hereupon iustification is called *the Iustification of life. Rom. 5.* The second is, Viuification by the vertue of the resurrection of Christ, *Phil. 3. 10.* And this vertue is the power of the God-head of Christ, or the power of the spirit, raising vs to newnesse of life, as it raised Christ, from the death of sinne. And by this power, Christ is said to live in them that beleue. The third is, the Resurrection of the dead body to euerlasting glory, in the day of of iudgement, *Rom. 8. 11.*

Thus then the meaning of the words is euident: that Christ as a roote, or head, liues in them that are vnited to him, and that by the operation of his spirit, causing them to dye vnto their sinnes, and to liue vnto God. And againe, it must be remembred, that *Paul* speaks this not priuately of himselfe, but generally in the name of all beleeuers. For he saith, *2. Cor. 13. 5. Know ye not that Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates?*

The vse. Hence it followes, that they which are true beleeuers, cannot make a practise of sinne: and againe, that they sinne not with the full consent, or swinge of their wills. Because, Christ liues in them, and restraines the will in part. When they sinne therefore, they sinne not of malice, but of ignorance, or infirmity.

Secondly, the true beleuer, cannot wholly fall away from grace: because the life of Christ cannot be abolished. As Christ died but once, and for euer after liues to God: so they that are in Christ, dye once to sinne, and liue eternally to God, *Rom. 6. 10.* The vertue and power of God, that was shewed in raising Christ to life, is likewise shewed in quickning them that doe beleue, *Eph. 1. 19.* He therefore that is made aliue to God, dyes no more, but remains aliue as Christ doth.

Thirdly, they which are true beleeuers, are a free and voluntary people obeying God, as if there were no law to compell them. For they haue Christ to live in them, Reade *Psal 110. 2.* The spirit of life that is in Christ is also in them; and that is their law, *Rom. 8. 2.* It is the property of the child of God to obey God, as it is the nature, and quality of the fire to burne when matter is put to it.

It may be here demanded, how we may know that Christ liues in vs? *Ans.* By the Spirit of God, *1. Ioh. 3. 24.* And the Spirit is knowne

knowne by the motions, and operations thereof. The first where-
of, is a Purpose to obey God, according to all his commandements
that concerne vs, with an inclination of our hearts to the said
commandements. *Paul* saith, *he was sold under sinne*: and yet with-
all he addes, that *he delighted in the law of God according to the inward*
5 *man, Rom. 7. 23.* He that loues God, and keepes his commande-
ments, hath the Father and the Sonne dwelling in him, *Ioh. 14. 23.*
Let this be obserued. *Pharaoh*, when Gods hand was vpon him,
confessed he was a sinner and his people, and requested *Moses*, and
10 *Aaron*, to let the plague goe. But after God had withdrawne his
hand, he returned to his old course. The like doe sicke men: they
make promise to amend their liues, and they request their friends
to pray for them: but when they are recouered, they forget all their
faire promises. The reason is this. There is conscience in them; and
15 by it they know themselues to be miserable sinners: but they want
this purpose to obey God, and the inclination to his lawes: and
therefore indeede they hate not their sinnes, but rather the com-
mandements of God. The second operation, & signe of the Spirit,
is a mind and disposition, like to the mind and disposition of
20 Christ: which is, to doe the will of God, to seeke his glory, and to
apply himselfe to the good of men in all duties of loue. The third
and last (to omit many) is to loue Christ for himselfe, and to loue
them that loue Christ, and that because they loue Christ. This is a
true signe, that *we haue passed from death to life*, 1. *Ioh. 3. 14.* It may
25 here be said, how can Christ be said to liue in vs, considering we are
laden with afflictions and miseries? Where Christ liues, there is no
misery. *Ans.* In the midst of all miseries, the life of Christ doth most
appeare. Where naturall life decayes, there spirituall life takes place,
2. *Cor. 4. 10.* *I beare in my bodie the mortification of our Lord Iesus,*
30 *that the life of Iesus may bee made manifest in mee. Gods power is made*
manifest in weaknesse, 2. *Cor. 12.* Againe, it may be said, if Christ
liued in vs, wee should not feele so many corruptions as wee doe.
Answer. The life of Christ is conueyed vnto vs by little and little.
God hauing wounded and slaine vs, first bindes vs up, then hee reuiues
35 vs, and the third day he raiseth vs up. *Hose. 6. 1.* Againe, nature feeles
not nature, nor corruption feeles corruption, but grace: therefore
it is the life of Christ in vs that makes vs feele the masse and bodie
of corruption.

Furthermore, here we are to take notice of the common sinne
40 of our daies. Men will not suffer Christ to liue in them, and to rule
ouer them. It is reputed a small matter; but it is a grievous offence.
The Gentiles say, *Let vs break their bands, and cast their cords from vs,*
Psal.

Psal. 2. 2. And it was the sinne of the Iewes to say, *We will not haue this man to reigne ouer vs.* *Luke 19. 14.* And therefore Christ saith, *bring them hither, and slay them before me.*

Lastly, here we learne our duty : and that is, so to liue, that we may be able to say with good conscience, that *Christ liues in vs* : we must seeke his kingdome aboue all things, and take his yoke on vs. It will be said, what must we doe that Christ may liue in vs? *Ans.* We must vse the meanes appointed, meditation of the word, prayer, sacraments: and withall we must spirituallie *eate the flesh of Christ, and drinke his blood,* *Ioh. 6. 57.* And that we may eate him, we must haue a stomacke in our soules like the stomacke of our bodies, and we must hunger and thirst after Christ : and therefore we must feele our owne sinnes, and our spirituall pouerty, and haue an earnest lust and appetite after Christ, as after meate and drinke. When *Sisera* was pursued by the army of the Israelites, he cried to *Lael* and said, *Giue me drinke, I dye for thirst,* *Iudg. 4. 19.* even so we being pursued by the sentence of the law, by the terrours of hell, death, and condemnation ; must flye to the throne of grace, and cry out, saying, *Giue me of the tree of life, giue me of the water of life: I perish for thirst:* Then shall our wretched soules be quickned, and reuiued to euerlasting life, *Math. 5. 6. Reue. 2. 1. 6.*

In the fourth place, here is set downe the Meanes of Spirituall life, in these words, *And in that I now liue in the flesh, I liue by the faith of the Sonne of God, who hath loued me, and giuen himselfe for me.* And that the doctrine may the better appeare, I will stand a while to shew the meaning of them. By *flesh*, is meant the mortall body, or the fraile condition of this temporall life, *Heb. 5. 7. & 1. Pet. 4. 2.* And therefore *to liue in the flesh*, is to liue a naturall life by eating, drinking, sleeping. Further, *Paul* saith that liuing in the flesh, he liued *by faith* : and for the better conceiuing of this, two questions may be demanded. The first is, why a beleeuers said to liue by faith? *Ans.* There be two causes. First, faith is an Instrument to vnite vs to Christ : and by meanes of this vnion, we receiue life from Christ : for Christ dwells in our hearts by faith, *Eph. 3. 17.* Secondly, faith is a Guide, to order and gouerne temporall life, in all good manner according to the will of God. And this faith doth, by a diuine kind of reasoning framed in the mind, whereby it vrgeth, and perswadeth to good duties, *Rom. 6. 11.*

The second question is, How men liue by faith? *Answer.* The child of God liues a double life in this world : a *Spirituall*, and a *Temporall*. The *Spirituall* stands specially in three things ; Reconciliation with God ; renouation of life : and good workes. Now in

our reconciliation with God, we liue in this world onely by faith. For wee haue, and enioy pardon of our sinnes, imputation of iustice, and acception to life eternall, onely by meanes of our faith, *Rom. 4. 4. and 5. 1.*

5 Againe, in the renouation and change of our liues, wee liue by faith. For our faith in Christ *purifieth our hearts, Actes 15. 9.* partly, by deriuing holinesse and puritie from Christ vnto vs, who is our sanctification: and partly, by mouing and perswading of vs to holinesse and newnesse of life, *1. Iohn 3. 3.*

10 Lastly, in the doing of euery good worke, wee must liue by our faith. For first there must be a generall faith, that the worke in his kind pleaseth God, *Rom. 14. 25.* Secondly, iustifying faith must giue a beginning to the worke. *I beleened, therefore I spake, Psal. 116. 12.*

15 Thirdly, after the worke is done, faith must couer the defects thereof, that it may be acceptable to God, *Heb. 11. 5.*

Temporall life, stands in cares or miseries: and miseries are outward afflictions, or inward temptations. And in all our worldly cares, we are to liue by faith. For our care must be to doe our office, and the labour of our calling with all diligence. This being done,
20 we must there make a pause: and for the successe of all our praiers, and labours, we must cast our care on God, *1. Pet. 5. 7.*

Likewise, in our afflictions wee are to liue by faith. For our faith is to assure vs, that God according to his promise will giue a good issue, *1. Corinthians 10. v. 12.* And though all temporall
25 things faile vs, it makes vs retaine the hope of mercie, and of eternall life. Thirdly, it makes vs waite Gods leasure for our deliuerance, *Isai. 16. 28.*

Lastly, in our temptations wee are not to liue by feeling, but by faith: yea against feeling, to rest on the bare promise of God; when
30 we feele and apprehend nothing but the wrath of God. And thus we see how the beleeuers liues by his faith in this world.

It may be said, What is the faith wee liue by? Answer is heere made: *It is the faith of the Sonne of God.* And sauing faith is so called, because Christ is not onely the Authour of it, and the obiect or
35 matter of it, but also the reuealer of it. For there was a certaine faith in God, which was put into the heart of man in the creation, which also the morall law requireth: but this faith in the Messias, was not knowen till after the fall; and then it was reuealed to the world by the Sonne of God.

40 Againe, it may be said, What is this faith of the Sonne of God? Answer is here made: A faith whereby I beleue that *Christ hath loued and giuen himselfe for me.*

These

These words then thus explained, are an answer to an obiection, which may be framed thus: Why shouldest thou say, that thou liuest not, but that Christ liueth in thee; considering thou liuest in the flesh, as other men doe? Answer is made, Though I liue in the flesh, yet I liue by faith in the Sonne of God.

The vse. Here first of all they are to be blamed, that liue by sense, like beasts: beleeuing no more then they see, and trusting God no further then they see him. For if a man whom we see and know, make a promise to vs, we are comforted: yet if God, who is inuisible, make in his word farre better promises (as he doth,) we are not in like sort comforted. Againe, we put too much confidence in meanes. If we haue good callings, house, land, liuing, we can then trust in God: but when meanes of comfort faile, we are confounded in our selues, as if there were no God. We are like the Vsurer, who will not trust the man, but his pawne: euen so we trust not God vpon his bare word, without a pawne. If he come to vs with a full hand, and with the pawne of his good gifts, and blessings, we trust him; else not.

Againe, they are to be blamed, that liue onely by the guidance of reason. For many dispute thus: I deale truly and iustly with all men, and liue peaceably with my neighbours: therefore God will haue me excused. But there must be a better guide to euerlasting life namely, faith in Christ: else shall we misse our marke.

Thirdly, they deceiue themselues, that thinke they may liue as they list: and call vpon God when they are a dying, and so dye by faith. It is well if they can dye by faith: but that they may so die, they must liue by faith.

Lastly, they are to be blamed, that spend their dayes in worldly cares, so as no good thing can take place. This is the life of infidels. And where true faith reignes, it cuts off the multitude of cares, and makes vs cast them on God.

Moreouer, here we see what we are to doe in perilous times, as in the time of plague, famine, sword, when present death is before our eyes: we must then liue by faith. When *Noah* heard of the flood, he prepared such meanes as faith would afford for the sauing of himselfe, and his family. *Abraham, Isaac, Iacob*, by faith liued as pilgrimes in a strangeland, and were content. *Moses* left *Pharaoes* court, and feared not the wrath of the King: because by faith he saw him that was inuisible, *Hebrew. 11. 27.* *Dauid* in the feare of present death, comforted himselfe in the Lord his God, *1. Sam. 30. 6.* When *Iehosaphat* knew not what in the world to doe, hee lift vp the eyes of his faith to the Lord, *2. Chron. 20. 12.* Christ in his agony and passion

passion of the crosse, by faith commended his soule into the hands of his Father. Of the Saints of the new Nettament, some were racked, some were stoned to death, and that by faith, *Heb. 11. 36.* We must therefore all of vs, learne to liue by faith: and for this cause we must acquaint our selues with the word, and promises of God, and mingle them with our faith: else shall the life of a man in the world bee worse then the life of a beast.

Againe, in these words [*who hath loued me, and giuen himselfe for me*] the nature and property of iustifying faith is set downe, which is, to apply the loue of God, and the merit of the passion of Christ vnto our selues. And therefore the Papists are deceiued, who say, that hope applieth, and not faith. It may be alleadged, that *Paul* speakes these words priuately of himselfe. *Ans.* He speakes them in the name of all beleeuers, Jewes and Gentiles. For (as we may see in the former verses) that which concerned *Peter*, and the rest of Christian Jewes, he applies to himselfe, least his speech should seeme odious.

Againe, it may be objected, that all beleeuers cannot say thus, *Christ hath loued me, and giuen himselfe for me.* *Ans.* If the minde be fixed on Christ: and there be also a will and indeauour to beleue and apprehend Christ; there is faith indeede. For God accepts the true and earnest will to beleue, for faith. We are not saued for the perfection of our faith, but for the perfection of the obedience of Christ, which faith apprehendeth. The Israelites which looked vpon the brasen Serpent with one eye, or with a squint-eye, with halfe an eye, or dimme sight, were healed, not for the goodnesse of their sight, but for the promise of God. The poore in spirit are blessed. Now they are poore in spirit, who finde themselves empty of all goodnesse, empty of true faith, full of vnbeleefe, and vnfeinedly desire to beleue. So then if we grieue, because we cannot beleue as we should, and earnestly desire to beleue, God accepts vs for beleeuers.

Againe in these words [*who hath loued me, and giuen himselfe for me*] *S Paul* sets downe the reason or argument, which faith vseth in the minde regenerate, to moue men to liue to God. And the reason is framed thus: Christ loueth thee, and hath giuen himselfe for thee: therefore seethou liue to God, Readeth the like, *Rom. 12. 1.* and *2. 4.* and *Psal. 116. 12.*

By this we are to take occasion, to consider and to bewaile the hardnesse of our hearts, who doe not relent from our euill waies, and turne vnto God vpon the consideration of his loue in Christ. The waters of the Sanctuary haue long flowed vnto vs: but they haue

hauen not sweetned vs, and made vs fauourie: therefore it is to be feared least our habitations be at length turned to places of nettles and salt pits. *Eze. 47. 11.*

21 *I doe not abrogate the grace of God: for if righteousness be by the law, then Christ died without cause.*

The meaning. *Grace* in Scriptures signifieth two things: the free fauour of God; and the gifts of God in vs. And where the Holy Ghost intreates of iustification, grace in the first sense, signifies the good will, and fauour of God, pardoning sinnes, and accepting vs to life euerlasting, for the merit of Christ. *2. Tim. 1. 9. Eph. 2. 8.* And in this sense is the word vsed in this place. And when Paul saith, *I doe not abrogate the grace of God*; his meaning is, I doe not make void, or frustrate the grace of God in respect of my selfe, or in respect of other beleeuers, by teaching the iustification of a sinner by faith alone. Hee addes, *If righteousness be by the law*; that is, if a sinner be iustified by his owne obedience, in performing the law, then Christ died without cause. The word *without cause*, freely, translated *without cause*, hath a double signification. One is, when it signifies as much as *without price, or merit.* *Math. 10. 8. Ye haue receiued freely, giue freely.* The second is, when it signifies *rashly, without iust, or sufficient cause*: as *Psal. 69. 4. Mine enemies hate me freely*, (as the Seuentie translate) that is, wrongfully, or without iust cause. Thus heere is Christ said to die *freely*, that is, in vaine, or without cause: because if we be iustified by obedience to the law, then Christ died in vaine, to make any satisfaction to the law for vs.

These words are an answer to an obiection. The obiection is this: If thou teach that a sinner is iustified onely by his faith in Christ, then thou abolishest the grace of God. The answer is negative: I doe not by this doctrine abrogate the grace of God. And there is a reason also of this answer: If wee bee iustified by our owne fulfilling of the law, then Christ died in vaine to fulfill the law for vs.

The vse. First, let vs marke that Paul saith, *he doth not abrogate the grace of God*: and why? because hee will suffer nothing in the cause of our iustification to be ioyned with the obedience of the death of Christ. And hence we learne, what is the nature of grace. It must stand wholly, and intirely in it selfe. Gods grace cannot stand with mans merit. Grace is no grace, vnlesse it be freely giuen euery way *Rom. 4. 4. To him that worketh, the wages is giuen, not of grace, but of desert.* *Romaines 11. 6. If election bee of grace, then not of workes, else is grace no grace.* Grace, and workes of grace in the causing of iustification,

iustification, can no more stand together, then fire and water. By this we are admonished to be nothing in our selues, and to ascribe all that we are, or can doe, to the grace of God.

Againe, here wee see our duties, and that is to be carefull not to
5 abrogate the grace of God vnto our selues. But how is that done?

Answ. We must strip and emptie our selues of all righteousness, and goodnesse of our owne, euen to the death, and withall hunger and thirst after Christ and his righteousness. *Math. 5. 6. Luke 1. 35.*

Thirdly, *Paul* here sets downe a notable ground of true religi-
10 on; That the death of Christ is made voide, if any thing bee ioyned with it in the worke of our iustification, as a meanes to satisfie Gods iustice, and to merit the fauour of God. Therefore the doctrine of iustification by workes, is a manifest error. For if we be iustified by the workes of the law, then the iudgement of the ho-
15 ly Ghost is, that Christ died without cause. Againe, the doctrine of humane satisfactions is a device of mans braine. For if wee satisfie for our selues, then did Christ by death satisfie in vaine. Thirdly, it is a false and wicked (though a colourable inuention) to say, that Christ by his death merited, that wee should merit by our workes.
20 For if wee merit by workes, Christ died in vaine to merit by his owne death. This is the sentence of God, who cannot erre. Lastly, here we see the Church of Rome erreth in the foundation of true religion: because it ioyneth the merit of mans workes, and the merit of the death of Christ, in the iustification of a sinner. And there-
25 fore, we may not so much as dreame of any reconciliation to be made with that religion: for light and darkenesse cannot be reconciled, nor fire and water. Here the Papists answer, that *Paul* in this text speakes against them, that looked to be iustified by the naturall obseruation of the law, without the death of Christ. But it
30 is false which they say. For *Paul* here speakes against Christian Iewes, who ioyned the law and the Gospel: and looked to be iustified both by Christ, and by the workes of the law: and not by workes of the law, done by strength of nature, but by workes of grace.

C H A P. III.

1 O foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you, that ye should not obey the truth? to whom Iesus Christ before was described in your sight, and among you crucified.



Hat we may see how this chapter depends on the former, we must repeate the principall argument of the Epistle: If I was called of God, and my doctrine be true, then ye should not haue reuolted to an other Gospel: but I was called of God, and my doctrine is true: therefore ye should not haue reuolted to an other Gospel.

The first part of the *minor*, that *Paul* was called of God, was handled in the first and second chapters. The second part: that his doctrine is true, is handled in the third, fourth, and fifth: and is propounded in this verse. Moreover, the Conclusion of the argument set downe, Chap. 1. v. 6. is here againe repeated, namely, that the Galatians should not haue reuolted to an other Gospel. And withall *Paul* here notes the causes of their Reuolt: and they are two. One, is follie, *O foolish Galatians*. The other is, the deceit of false teachers, *who hath bewitched you?*

Whereas *Paul* saith, *O foolish Galatians*, that we mistake not his example; three questions may be demanded. The first is, In what respect he gives this hard iudgement against them? *Ans.* Three things are subiected to iudgement: the doctrines of men, the liues of men, and the persons of men. Doctrines are to be iudged by the word, and the liues of men: yet ordinarily, the persons of men are not to be iudged. For the saying is true, that *three things are not subiect to iudgement: the Counsels of God, the Scriptures, and the persons of men*. And in this place *Paul* gives iudgement, not against the Galatians themselues, or against their persons, but against their new conceiued doctrine, and against their practise in Reuolting.

The second question is, whether this iudgement be righteous and true iudgement? *Ans.* It is: because it is vpon good ground. For first of all, *Paul* gives this censure, by vertue of his calling: because his office was to reprove and correct vice. *Ti.* 1. 9. and 2. 15. Secondly, it was in truth. For indeede they ouerturned the passion of Christ: and therefore he could not call them lesse then *fooles*. Thirdly, this iudgement was giuen in loue. For *Paul* intended, and desired

desired nothing in this speech, but their good and amendment. Vpon like grounds *Isai* calles the Israelites, *People of Sodom and Gomorrah*, *Isa. 1*. Christ calsthe two disciples, *foolish, and slow of heart to beleene*, *Luk. 24. 25*. *Paul* calsthe *Crecians* *lyers and slow bellies*, *Tit.*

5 1. 12. But *Mat. 5. 22*. may be objected, where he is said to be in danger of a Councel, that saith, *Thou fool*. *Ans.* The place is to be vnderstood of them that charge men with folly, with a minde to reproch them, and in way of reuenge: which *Paul* in this place doth not.

The third question is, whether wee may vse like iudgement against men? *Ans.* Vpon like grounds we may, if we haue a warrant, and calling from God soto do. For all iudgement is Gods, *Rom. 14. 10*, if this iudgement be in truth: if it be in charitie, for the amendment of the parties, and for the good of others. Otherwise, if these grounds faile vs, we may not giue iudgement against any man, but 15 must follow the iudgement of charitie which thinks no euill, hopes the best, and construes all things in the best part. *1. Cor. 13.*

To come to the second cause, *Paul* saith, *Who hath bewitched you?* that is, who hath deceiued you, as if ye were bewitched by some inchantments. Here *Paul* takes it for a confessed truth, that there is 20 witchcraft, and witches. And that we may the better conceiue his meaning, two questions are to be propounded. The first is, what is the witchcraft here meant? *Ans.* It is a Satanicall operation, whereby the senses of men are deluded. For the diuell can by certaine meanes, delude and corrupt the phantasie, or the imagination 25 on; and cause men to thinke that of themselves, which is otherwise. There is a disease called *Lycanthropia*, in which, the braine being distempered, men thinke themselves to be wolues, and carrie themselves as wolues. And in this disease the diuell hath a great stroke. Againe, the diuell can delude the outward senses, as the 30 hearing, and the sight. Thus *Iannes* and *Iambres* turned their rods into serpents, before *Pharaoh*, and brought frogges, by deceiuing the eye, and not in truth, *Exodus 7. and 8.* Thus the witch of Endor made a counterfeite of *Samuel* to rise out of the earth, *1. Sam. 28.*

35 The second question is, if this witchcraft bee an operation of Satan, how men should be said to doe it? for *Paul* saith, who, or what man hath bewitched you? *Ans.* Men do it by league, and confederacie with the diuel. The inchanter charmes by *toyning societies*. *Psal. 58. 5.* The diuell seekes whom he may deuoure and therefore, 40 where he finds a fit person to worke vpon, he intinuates and offers himselfe. And after men be in league with him, he hath a word and sacraments for them, as God hath: and he requireth faith, as

God doth. And looke as theeues, some lie in the way, some in the wood: and they in the way (when a bootie comes) giue a watch word to the rest, and then all are at hand together: Euen so when men in league with the diuell vse charmes, imprecations, curses, praiers, superstitious inuocations, according to his appointment, and other Satanicall ceremonies, a watch word is likewise giuen vnto him, and he is straight at hand to doe the intended feate. Thus, and no otherwise, are men said to bewitch, or delude the eye.

That which *Paul* saith to the Galatians, if he were now living among vs, he would likewise say to vs, *O foolish nation, who hath bewitched you?* We are wise in matters of the world: but in matters concerning the kingdome of heauen, the most of vs are fooles, besotted, and bewitched with worldly cares, and pleasures, without sense in matters of religion, like a peece of waxe without all forme: fit to take the forme and print of any religion. And we must take heede, lest this our foolishnesse, and intoxication of our senses, leade vs headlong to perdition. And therefore we must learne the way of life in humility. *Psal.* 25. 9. We must obey it, and in obedience we shall learne it. *Iob.* 7. 17. We must as heartily loue the word of God, as in minde we conceiue it; lest by not louing of it, we be *giuen up to strong illusions to beleene lies.* 2. *Thess.* 2. 10. Lastly, we must pray to God to be taught and guided by his word and spirit, in things pertaining to everlasting life.

To proceed further, the delusion or bewitching of the Galatians, is set forth by two arguments. The first is, the end, in these words, *that ye should not obey the truth.* Before I come to the consideration of these words, adoubt must be resolued. For some man may say, that this Epistle is corrupted: because these words are wanting in sundrie translations, and editions of the Bible: and *Ierome* saith, that they were not found in the copies of the Bible in his daies. *Ans.* In the Editions & translations of the Bible, there are sundry differences, and diuersities of readings: and these differences are not the fault of the Scripture, but of the men which vsed to write out the Bible: for the Bible heretofore was spread abroad, not by printing, but by writing. Againe, though in the bookes of the Bible there bee sundry varieties of reading, yet the prouidence of God hath so watched ouer the Bible, that the sense thereof remaineth intire, sound, and incorrupt, specially in the grounds of religion. And not the words principally, but the sense is the Scripture. And that which I say appeareth in this text: for whether these words be left in, or put out, the sense of the verse, is one and the same.

These words, *that ye should not obey the truth*, are meant of the obedience

obedience of faith. *Rom.* 1. 5 and 16. 28. And the obedience of faith is propounded vnto vs without adding, detracting, or changing. And this the Galatians did not: for they added iustification by workes, to the doctrine of *Paul*, touching iustification by faith alone: by which addition they depraue the truth, and shewed that indeede they beleueed not the truth. Here let vs obserue the scope of all the malice of the deuill: and that is, to hinder, or ouerthrow our faith. The first thing the deuill aimed at in our first parents, was to ouerthrow their faith, and to cause them to doubt of the truth of Gods word. The first temptation wherewith our Sauour Christ was assaulted, was against his faith, as he was man: If thou bee the Sonne of God, thou canst cause these stones in thy hunger to bee made bread: but thou canst not cause these stones to bee made bread: therefore thou art not the child of God. The deuill desired to sift out all the faith of the Apostles, and to leaue in them nothing but the chaffe of vnbeleefe. *Luk.* 22. The deuill blindes the eyes of men, *that the light of the Gospell of Iesus Christ may not shine vnto them.* 2. *Cor.* 4. 4. This must teach vs, that we must not onely holde and know the true religion for the time, but also build our selues vpon our faith; *Ind.* v. 20. and bee rooted and stablished vpon our faith and religion, *Col.* 1. 23. and the rather, because it hath bin the manner of this nation, wickedly to change religion with the times. And that we may indeed be rooted vpon our religion, we must not boast of the greatnes and strength of our faith, but rather labour to see in our selues a sea of vnbeleefe: heartily to bewaile it, and to strue to beleuee, and so to goe on from faith, to faith.

The truth here mentioned, is the heavenly doctrine of the Gospel: so called for two causes. First, because it is an absolute truth without error. It is a principle not to be called in question, that the Apostles and Prophets, in writing and preaching, could not erre. It may be said, they were men, as we are: and therefore subiect to erre, and be deceived in iudgement. *Ans.* Iudgement is twofold. One, conceived by the discourse of naturall reason: the other, conceived by the apprehension of things reuealed by God. In the first, the Apostles and Prophets might erre, and be deceived; as *Nathan* and *Peter* were. In the second, they could not: because it was framed in them, by the inspiration, and instinct of the holy Ghost. And therefore, they neuer erred, either in preaching or writing. The second cause why the Gospel is called the truth, is, because it is a most worthy truth, namely, the truth which is according to godlinesse. *Titus* 1. It may be said, what is the truth? and how shall we know it, considering there be so many dissentions? *Ans.* First, make thy selfe fit to know, and

then shalt thou know the truth. And thou shalt bee fitted to know the truth, if thou first of all give thy selfe to obey it. Reade the golden text, *Ioh. 7. v. 17. Obey, and ye shall know.*

The second thing, whereby the delusion of the Galatians is expressed, is the signe thereof, in these words, *to whom Iesus Christ was described, &c.* that is, to whom I haue preached the doctrine of saluation by Christ, in liuely and euident manner, euen as if Christ had bin painted before your eyes, and had bin crucified, in, or among you. And this is a manifest token that the Galatians were deluded, because they could not acknowledge the truth, when it was set forth vnto them, (as it were) in orient colours. And where *Paul* saith, that *Christ was before described*, I referre it to the time before their reuolt.

Here first, we are to obserue, the properties of the Ministrie of the word. The first, that it must be plaine, perspicuous, and euident, as if the doctrine were pictured, and painted out before the eyes of men. Therefore the Church of Rome deales wickedly, in keeping the Scriptures in an vnknowne tongue. For this is to couer that from the people, which is to bee painted before the eyes of their minds. Againe, that kind of preaching is to be blamed, in which there is vsed, a mixed kind of variety of languages, before the vnlearned. For this is a signe to vnbeleeuers. *1. Cor. 14. 22.* And in this kind of preaching we do not paint Christ, but wee paint out our owne selues. It is a by-word among vs: *It was a very plaine sermon.* And I say againe, *the plainer, the better.*

The second propertie of the Ministry of the word, is, that it must be powerfull and liuely in operation, and as it were crucifying Christ within vs, and causing vs to feele the vertue of his passion. The word preached must pearce into the heart, like a two edged sword, *Heb. 4. 12.* True prophecie iudgeth men, discouereth the things of the heart, and causeth men to say, *The Lord is within you, 1. Cor. 14. 25.* The scepter of Christ whereby he smiteth the nations, is in his mouth, *Isa. 11. 4.* that is, in the Ministerie of the word. *Ier. 23. 19.* And it is the same Ministerie, which shaketh heauen and earth. *Agg. 2. 5.* By this it appeareth, that to take a text, and to make a discourse vpon something in the said text, shewing much inuention of wit, and much reading, and humane learning, is not to preach Christ in a liuely manner. It will bee said: what then? I answer with *Paul*, *Who is sufficient* either for the speaking or doing of these things? yet something may bee shewed. Know therefore that the effectuall and powerfull preaching of the word, stands in three things. The first is, true and proper interpretation of the Scripture,

Scripture, and that by it selfe: for Scripture, is both the glosse, and the text. The second is, sauorie and wholesome doctrine, gathered out of the Scriptures truely expounded. The third is, the Application of the said doctrine, either to the information of the iudgement, or to the reformation of the life. This is the preaching that is of power. Let all the Sonnes of the Prophets thinke vpon these things, and studie to be doers of them.

Furthermore, two questions are here resolved. The first is, whether Images bee necessarie in the congregations of the people of God? *Ans.* There are Christian Images, and Pictures, and they are very necessarie. And these Images, are Sermons of Christ, and the right administration of the sacraments. For in them Christ is described and painted out vnto vs. As for the painted and carued images of the Papists, we vtterly detest them, as Idols. They alleadge, that they are *lay-mens bookes*: but *Habakuk* saith, *they are doctours of lies*, *Hab. 2. 18.* And where the liuely preaching of the word is, there is no neede of them. And therefore Images were not established in Churches in these West parts, till after 700. yeares. As long as the Church had golden teachers, there were no wooden images: but when golden teachers did degenerate, and become wooden teachers, then came both golden and wooden Images. It is further saide, why may we not paint Christ in our Churches with colours, as with wordes in sermons? *Answer.* The one, the Lord alloweth, namely, the description of Christ in speech. But the caruing or painting of images in Churches, and that for religious vse, he condemneth. *Exod. 20. 6.*

The second question is, Whether there bee now in the Church of God, any sacrifice or oblation of Christ? *Answer.* There is after a sort. For there is a liuely representation of the passion of Christ, in the Preaching of the word, and in the administration of the Lords supper, as if Christ were yet in crucifying, and as though his blood were now distilling from his hands, and sides. As for the sacrifice of the Masse, it is an abomination, and a meere mockerie, For there the Priest, when hee saith, *Accept these gifts*, &c. is become a Mediatour, betweene Christ and God: and the bodie and blood of Christ is offered in an vnbloodie manner; that is, blood is offered without blood: and the Priest, when hee hath offered Christ, eates vp that all hee hath offered. Yet for this damnable oblation many stand: and the reason is; because they are bewitched, and enchanted with pretended shewes of Fathers, Councells, Antiquitie, Succession, &c.

Lastly, here we learne, what is the datie of all beleeuers; namely,

to behold Christ crucified. *Cant. 3. 11. O daughters of Sion, behold your king.* But where must we behold him? Not in Roodes, and Crucifixes, after the Popish manner; but we must looke on him, as hee propounds himselfe vnto vs in the word, and Sacraments. For thus is he the true object of our faith. And how must we behold him? 5 by the eye of faith, which makes vs both see him, and feelee him, (as it were) crucified in vs. Here note, that implicit faith, (which is to beleeeue as the Church beleeeues,) is a blind faith: for by it we cannot contemplate and behold Christ. And the common fault is here to be noted, whereby men neglect and passe by this contemplation of Christ. There is among vs the euill eye that deuoureth 10 all it seeth: there is the adulterous eye: but where is the eye of faith to behold Christ? where is the force of this eye to be seene, which maketh the thing which it beholdeth to be ours, and vs like vnto it? Wee loue to tricke and paint our bodies, and some to set 15 fine complexions on their faces (and therefore complexions at this day are made a kinde of merchandise) but away with such vanities. If ye loue to be painted, I will tell you what ye shall do. The office of the Ministers is to describe, and paint out Christ vnto vs: let them paint Christ crucified in the heart, and set vp his image there, 20 and then shalt thou haue a fauourable complexion in the eye both of God, and man.

That this contemplation of Christ by faith, may take more place, and be the better practised, consider the vse of it. First, by beholding Christ crucified, we see our miserie and wickednesse. For 25 our sinnes are the swords and speares which haue crucified him. *Zach. 12. 10.* Secondly, this sight brings vs true and liuely comfort: for beholding Christ crucified, wee see Paradise as it were in the midst of hell: we see the handwriting against vs, cancelled, *Coloss. 2. 14.* we see the remission of our sinnes, written with the heart blood of Christ, and sealed with the same. Thirdly, this sight of 30 Christ makes a vniuersall change of vs. The Cameliion takes to it the colours of the things which it seeth, and are neere vnto it: and the beleeuing heart takes to it the disposition, and minde that was in Christ crucified, by viewing, and beholding of Christ. This 35 sight makes vs mourne and bleede in our hearts for our offences, when wee consider, that Christ was crucified for them: and it makes vs loue Christ, when we consider the loue of God in Christ crucified.

Lastly, this thing must be a terrour to all the vngodly. For they 40 haue no care to behold Christ, but by their leud liues they crucifie him: and for this cause in the day of iudgement, they shall see with heauie

heauie hearts; Christ to be their iudge whom they haue pearced.
Renel. 1. 7. Better therefore it is, now in the day of grace to behold
 him with the eye of faith to our comfort, then now to despise him,
 and then to behold him to our euerlasting shame, with the eye of
 5 confusion.

2 *This onely would I learne of you, Receiued ye the Spirit by
 the workes of the law, or by the hearing of faith?*

3 *Are ye so foolish, that after ye haue begun in the Spirit, ye
 10 would now be made perfect by the flesh?*

The sence of the words. When *Paul* saith, *This would I learne of you*,
 he meetes with the conceit of the Galatians, who thought them-
 selues wise: and the effect of his speech is this: I haue called you
 15 fooles: but it may be, that you thinke your selues wise, and me
 foolish: well, let it be so: then with all your wisdom teach me, and
 let me learne but one thing: and that is, by what meanes ye recei-
 ued the Spirit. Touching the phrase, *Receiued ye the Spirit*, 3. things
 20 essentiall spirit of the Father and the Sonne, as *1. Cor. 12. 4.* *There is
 a diuersitie of gifts, but one spirit.* Sometimes againe, it signifies the
 effects, operations, or gifts of the spirit, as namely when *flesh* and *spi-
 rit* are opposed; as in this text. And further, when it signifies gifts,
 yet then the presence of the spirit is not excluded, but included.
 25 The second is, that here *the Spirit* signifies the spirit of adoption.
Eph. 1. 13. Rom. 8. 16. The third is, that to receiue the spirit, is not
 barely to receiue the gifts of the spirit, (as wee are said to haue the
 Sunne in the house, when we receiue the beames of the body of the
 sunne being in heauen:) but in this receiuing, there are two things.
 30 One is, that the spirit is present in vs; the other, that the same spi-
 rit testifieth his presence, by his speciall operation, and gifts of
 grace. *Paul* saith, *Eph. 4. 30. Grieve not the spirit.* Which is not meant
 of gifts, but of the very person of the spirit. And it must be remem-
 bred, that the effects and gifts of the spirit, presuppose the presence
 35 of the spirit. By *workes of the law*, we are to vnderstand, the doctrine
 of iustification by the workes of the law. By *the hearing of faith*, is
 meant the doctrine of the Gospel: *hearing* being put for the thing
 heard, namely, preaching: and *faith*, for the doctrine of iustification
 by faith in Christ crucified. For *faith* signifies not onely the gift
 40 whereby we beleue, but also that which is beleued.

In the third verse, *spirit* signifies the operation of the spirit,
 whereby the inward man is renewed, and made like to God; or
 againe,

again, the Exercises of the inward man: and *flesh* signifies outward things, or actions, that properly pertain to the outward man, as circumcision, and such like. Thus 2. Cor. 5. 17. *flesh*, and the *new creature* are opposed. And Paul saith, Rom. 2. 29. *He is a Jew, that is a Jew within, in the spirit, having the circumcision of the heart. To begin in the spirit*, is to begin in godlines and religion, inwardly in the exercises of the renewed heart. 5

The Resolution. In these words, is contained the first argument, whereby Paul prooves the truth of his doctrine. It is framed thus: If ye received the spirit by my doctrine, my doctrine is true, and ye foolish that adde vnto it, iustification by the workes of the law: but ye received the spirit by my doctrine: therefore it is true, and ye deale foolishly that haue added to it iustification by workes. 10

The *maior* or first proposition, is not expressed, but the prooffe thereof in the third verse, thus: it is a point of extreame follie when ye haue begun in the spirit, to end in the flesh: therefore it is folly in you hauing received the spirit by my doctrine, to adde any thing vnto it of your owne. 15

The v^{se}. When Paul saith, *Let me learne one thing of you*, he notes the fault of the Galatians, and of sundrie others, who when they haue attained to a certaine measure of knowledge in Gods word, are presently puffed vp with pride, and often thinke themselves wiser then their teachers. This was the fault of the Corinthians, 1. Cor. 8. 10. and of sundry in our daies, who separate wholly from all our congregations, presuming to know that which they neuer learned of their teachers. That this ouerweening pride may not take place, we must ioyne the knowledge of our selues, with the knowledge of Gods word, and mixe our knowledgewith loue. For *loue edifies, and bare knowledge swelles the heart*. 25

Again, here when it is said, *Received ye the spirit?* that is, ye did not receiue the spirit by the workes of the law, but by the hearing of faith. Here, I say, we see the difference betweene the law, and the Gospel. The law doth not minister the spirit vnto vs: for it onely shewes our disease, and giues vs no remedie. The Gospel ministrereth the spirit. For it shewes what we are to doe: and withall the spirit is giuen, to make vs doe that which we are inioyned in the Gospel. 30 35

Here also we learne, that the preaching of the Gospel, is necessarie for all men, because it is the Instrument of God to conferre the spirit. While Peter was yet speaking, the spirit of God fell upon the Gentiles, Act. 10. 44. Paul saith, *his ministerie is the ministerie of the spirit*, 2. Cor. 4. 5. sauing the Ministers and others. 1. Tim. 4. 16. And the most learned

learned haue neede of this ordinance of God. For suppose they haue knowledge sufficient, yet haue they neede of the spirit of God to guide, and gouernethem.

Further, let it be obserued, what is the scope of all our hearing, and teaching: namely, that wee may receiue the spirit of God: without which spirit, we can doe nothing.

Moreover, *Paul* here sets downe an infallible argument, whereby we may be assured that the Scripture is the word of God. For the scriptures in their right vse (which is in reading, hearing, meditation) haue the diuine and supernaturall operation of the spirit ioyned with them, to comfort in all distresses, and in the very pang of death, and to conuert the heart of man, making him in respect of righteousnesse and holinesse, like vnto God. This priuiledge haue the Scriptures, *Isa. 59. 21.* and no word else.

Lastly, let vs here obserue the certen marke of true religion: and that is, that the preaching thereof confers the spirit of adoption. This doth not the pretended Catholike Religion of the Papists: it doth not conferre vnto men the spirit to assure them that they are the children of God; because it teacheth that we are to be in suspence of our saluation. Againe, by teaching humane satisfactions, and merits, it ministreth the spirit of pride and presumption, as also the spirit of crueltie, and not of meekenesse: for they of that religion, commonly delight in blood: and there haue bin no warres, or seditions, or rebellions in Europe, for many ages, but they of the Romish religion, haue bin at one end of them.

When *Paul* saith, v. 3. *Began ye in the spirit, &c.* he teacheth a diuine instruction, that true godlinesse & Religion stands in the spirit, that is, the grace of the heart, or in the exercises of the inner man, whether we respect the beginning, the middle, or the accomplishment thereof. *The kings daughter is all glorious within. Psal. 45. 13. True worshippers worship God in the spirit. Ioh. 4. 25. Rom. 1. 12. He is a Jew, that is a Jew not without, but within in the spirit, in the circumcision of the heart. Rom. 2. 29. Gods seruice and kingdome, stands in iustice, peace of conscience, and ioy in the holy Ghost, Romanes 14. verse 17. Hee that is in Christ must not know him in any carnall respects, but bee a new creature. 2. Cor. 5. 17. Gal. 6. 17. Baptisme is not the washing of the spots of the flesh, but the promise that a good conscience makes to God. By this doctrine we see the fault of the world, which for the most part placeth religion in ceremoniall performance of some outward duties. The Iew vsed to come to God with sacrifices, and to draw neere to him with his lip, his heart beeing farre from God. The Papist hath turned the Apostolike, and Catholike religion,*

again, the Exercises of the inward man: and *flesh* signifies outward things, or actions, that properly pertain to the outward man, as circumcision, and such like. Thus 2. Cor. 5. 17. *flesh*, and the *new creature* are opposed. And Paul saith, Rom. 2. 29. *He is a Jew, that is a Jew within, in the spirit, having the circumcision of the heart. To begin in the spirit*, is to begin in godliness and religion, inwardly in the exercises of the renewed heart.

The Resolution. In these words, is contained the first argument, whereby Paul proves the truth of his doctrine. It is framed thus: If ye received the spirit by my doctrine, my doctrine is true, and ye foolish that adde vnto it, iustification by the workes of the law: but ye received the spirit by my doctrine: therefore it is true, and ye deale foolishly that haue added to it iustification by workes.

The *maior* or first proposition, is not expressed, but the prooffe thereof in the third verse, thus: it is a point of extreame follie when ye haue begun in the spirit, to end in the flesh: therefore it is folly in you having received the spirit by my doctrine, to adde any thing vnto it of your owne.

The use. When Paul saith, *Let me learne one thing of you*, he notes the fault of the Galatians, and of sundrie others, who when they haue attained to a certaine measure of knowledge in Gods word, are presently puffed vp with pride, and often thinke themselves wiser then their teachers. This was the fault of the Corinthians, 1. Cor. 8. 10. and of sundry in our daies, who separate wholly from all our congregations, presuming to know that which they neuer learned of their teachers. That this overweening pride may not take place, we must ioyne the knowledge of our selues, with the knowledge of Gods word, and mixe our knowledg with loue. For *loue edifies*, and *bare knowledge swelles the heart*.

Again, here when it is said, *Received ye the spirit?* that is, ye did not receiue the spirit by the workes of the law, but by the hearing of faith. Here, I say, we see the difference betweene the law, and the Gospel. The law doth not minister the spirit vnto vs: for it onely shewes our disease, and giues vs no remedie. The Gospel ministereth the spirit. For it shewes what we are to doe: and withall the spirit is giuen, to make vs doe that which we are inioyned in the Gospel.

Here also we learne, that the preaching of the Gospel, is necessarie for all men, because it is the Instrument of God to conferre the spirit. While Peter was yet speaking, the spirit of God fell upon the Gentiles, 40 Act. 10. 44. Paul saith, his ministerie is the ministerie of the spirit, 2. Cor. 4. 5. sauing the Ministers and others. 1. Tim. 4. 16. And the most learned

learned haue neede of this ordinance of God. For suppose they haue knowledge sufficient, yet haue they neede of the spirit of God to guide, and gouernethem.

Further, let it be obserued, what is the scope of all our hearing, and teaching: namely, that wee may receiue the spirit of God: without which spirit, we can doe nothing.

Moreouer, *Paul* here sets downe an infallible argument, whereby we may be assured that the Scripture is the word of God. For the scriptures in their right vse (which is in reading, hearing, meditation) haue the diuine and supernaturall operation of the spirit ioyned with them, to comfort in all distresses, and in the very pang of death, and to conuert the heart of man, making him in respect of righteousness and holinesse, like vnto God. This priuiledge haue the Scriptures, *Isa.* 59. 21. and no word else.

Lastly, let vs here obserue the certen marke of true religion: and that is, that the preaching thereof confers the spirit of adoption. This doth not the pretended Catholike Religion of the Papists: it doth not conferre vnto men the spirit to assure them that they are the children of God; because it teacheth that we are to be in suspence of our saluation. Againe, by teaching humane satisfactions, and merits, it ministreth the spirit of pride and presumption, as also the spirit of crueltie, and not of meekenesse: for they of that religion, commonly delight in blood: and there haue bin no warres, or seditions, or rebellions in Europe, for many ages, but they of the Romish religion, haue bin at one end of them.

When *Paul* saith, v. 3. *Began ye in the spirit, &c.* he teacheth a diuine instruction, that true godlinesse & Religion stands in the spirit, that is, the grace of the heart, or in the exercises of the inner man, whether we respect the beginning, the middle, or the accomplishment thereof. *The kings daughter is all glorious within. Psa.* 45. 13. *True worshippers worship God in the spirit. Ioh.* 4. 25. *Rom.* 1. 12. *He is a Jew, that is a Jew not without, but within in the spirit, in the circumcision of the heart. Rom.* 2. 29. *Gods seruice and kingdome, stands in iustice, peace of conscience, and ioy in the holy Ghost, Romanes* 14. verse 17. *Hee that is in Christ must not know him in any carnall respects, but bee a new creature. 2. Cor.* 5. 17. *Gal.* 6. 17. Baptisme is not the washing of the spots of the flesh, but the promise that a good conscience makes to God. By this doctrine we see the fault of the world, which for the most part placeth religion in ceremoniall performance of some outward duties. The Iew vsed to come to God with sacrifices, and to draw neere to him with his lip, his heart beeing farre from God. The Papist hath turned the Apostolike, and Catholike religion,

religion, into a masse of ceremonies, borrowd partly from the Iewes, and partly from the Gentiles. And the multitude among vs, place their religion, in comming to the Church, in outward hearing, in receiuing the sacrament, in some kinde of formall praying. These things may not be condemned, but the power and life of religion lies not in these things. Wherefore we must not stand vpon outward and painted shewes: but looke what thou art betweene God, and thy selfe; that onely art thou in religion. Thou praiest in the church: but thou maist deceiue the world in this. Tell me, dost thou pray at home? dost thou pray in thine owne heart vnto God, by the spirit of praier? then thou praiest indeede. If thou canst approoue thy heart vnto God for any act of religion, then is it done indeede, else not. Remember this.

Furthermore, *Paul* here teacheth that our after proceedings in religion, must be answerable to our first beginnings in the spirit. And hence we may be aduertised of many things. First, here wee must take notice of the follie of Popish religion. For it begins in Gods mercie, and the merit of Christ: and it ends in our merits and satisfactions. Secondly, we must take notice of the common sinne of our times. For in the practise of our religion we are deceiued. We are not now that which we haue bin twentie or thirtie yeares ago. For now we see the world abounds with Atheists, Epicures, Libertines, Worldlings, Newters, that are of no religion: and sundry that haue heretofore shewed some forwardnesse, begin to falter, and stagger, and to looke an other way. This is not to begin and end in the spirit: but to end in the flesh. We are betime to amend this fault, lest if our former zeale be turned to present lukewarmes, God in his anger spue vs out.

Yong men must here be aduertised as they grow in yeares and stature, so to grow vp in good things, that both the first beginning, and the after proceedings may be in the spirit. Thus did Christ increase in grace as he increased in stature.

Lastly, aged persons that haue begun in the spirit, must looke that they grow vp in the graces of the spirit more then others, that they may end in the spirit. It is said of the angel of *Thyatira*, that *his loue, seruise, and workes, were more at the last then at the first*, *Reu. 2. 19.* the same should be said of al aged persons. They which are planted in the house of God, bring forth fruite in their old age. *Psal. 91. 16.* It is the commendation of the old man, that by reason of his manifold experience, he knowes the Father more then others, *1. Ioh. 2. 14.* It is the praise of *Anna*, that shee continually serued God in fasting and praier beeing 80. yeares old. When the outward man

man decays, the inward man should be renewed. I speake all this the rather, because aged persons are much wanting in this duty. For none commonly are so ignorant in the things of God as they: they begin in the spirit, but the affections of their hearts vsually end in the loue of this present world. But they must bee warned, that as
 5 they goe before others in age, so must they also exceede in the graces of the spirit. We vse to say of children, *God make them good old men*: and it is well said. An old man is to be regarded: but specially, a Good old man, who is more to be respected then twentie of
 10 yonger yeares. Now aged persons when they grow in age, and not in the spirit, they lose their honour, for *age is a crowne of glory, when it is found in the way of righteousness. Prov. 16. 31.* Let them therefore pray with David, *For sake me not, O Lord, in mine old age. Psal. 71. 9.*

15 4. *Haue ye suffered so many things in vaine? if so be it be euen in vaine.*

The interrogation, *haue ye?* is as much as, *ye haue*. Because the question in this place counteruailes a speech affirmatiue. And the
 10 words carrieth this sense: Ye haue professed the Gospel, and ye haue suffered many afflictions for the same: but now haue ye reuolted from the Gospel, and therefore all your former sufferings are voide, or in vaine.

The words [*if they be in vaine*] are a limitation or qualification of
 25 that which was said before: and they carrie this sense: Whereas I haue said that your sufferings are in vaine, I speake it not simply, but with some hope of your repentance: which if it be, then that which would be in vaine, shall not be in vaine.

In this verse, *Paul* sets downe a second reason, to prooue the proposition of his first argument, on this manner: If ye receiued the
 30 spirit by my doctrine, then is my doctrine true, and ye fooles in reuolting from it. For by this meanes the things which you suffered well, ye now suffer in vaine.

The vse. When *Paul* saith, *Haue ye suffered, &c.* he signifies vnto
 35 vs the estate and condition of all beleuers in this life, that they muste be bearers and sufferers. The reason. To this are we called, *1. Pet. 2. 21.* for we are called to resigne all reuenge to God, & therefore of our selues to be bearers and sufferers. *Math. 5. 39. Resist not euill.* And we are called to imitate the passion of Christ, who suffered being innocent, and being reuiled, reuiled not againe. More-
 40 ouer, it is for our good that we should beare and suffer. *1. Pet. 1. 6.* and *Psal. 119. 71.* It may be demanded. What if my cause be good, must

must I then suffer? *Ans.* Yea. The better thy caule is, the better are
 thy sufferings: *They are blessed that suffer for righteousness.* Paul com-
 mends himselfe by the multitude of his sufferings: 2. Cor. 11. 13. A-
 gaine, it may be demanded, how long we must suffer? *Ans.* Euen to
 the shedding of our blood, if it bee for the redempting of sinne, Heb. 5
 12. 4. Lastly, it may be saide, how shall we be able to doe this? *Ans.*
God is faithful, and will not lay on vs more then we shall be able to beare. 1.
 Cor. 10. 3. By this we are admonished, not to make a reckoning in
 this world, of pleasures and delights, as though the Gospel were
 a Gospel of ease, and as we vsed to say, a Gospel made of velvet: but e- 10
 uery one of vs must take vp his owne crosse. Luk. 9. 23. *If thou wilt*
be my disciple, denie thy selfe, take vp thy crosse: that is, the particular
 affliction and miserie, which God laies on thee. Againe, if in this
 world we must be sufferers by condition, then in dissensions, and
 differences, we may neither giue nor take the challenge, but must 15
 be content to beare and put vp wrongs, and abuses. Lastly, in these
 daies of our peace, we must looke for daies of triall and affliction.
 For as yet we haue suffered little for the name of Christ. The har-
 uest of the Lord hath bin among vs, more then fourty yeares: ther-
 fore (no doubt) the time of threshing, fanning, and grinding comes
 on, that as the Martyr said, *we may be good bread to the Lord.* And that 20
 we may be able to suffer for the name of God, wee must pray for
 this gift at Gods hand. For power to suffer is the gift of God *Phil.* 1.
 29. and we must obserue the commandement of God, *not to feare*
the terror of men. *Reu.* 2. 10. 1. *Pet.* 3. 14. And for this cause, *we must* 25
(as Peter saith) sanctifie God in our hearts: beeing assured by our faith
 of the presence, protection, and providence of God.

When Paul saith, *Haue ye suffered so many things?* he shewes
 that wee must endure manifold miseries in this life. *Iacob saide*
to Pharao, His dayes were fewe and euill. Many are the afflictions 30
of the righteous, *Psalm* 34. 20. Christ saith, *Take vp thy crosse*
every day, *Luke* 9. 23. and thereby hee signifies, that euery new
 day that comes ouer our heades, wee must looke for a newe
 crosse. And for this cause, it is not enough to be patient for a fit,
 but we must shew all patience, and long suffering, and that with 35
 ioyfulness. *Col.* 1. 11.

When Paul saith, *Haue ye suffered so many things in vaine?* he sig-
 nifies, that our sufferings are of great vse, vnlesse our sinnes be the
 hinderance. It may then be demanded, what is the vse of our suffer-
 ings? The Papists answer, that in our baptisme or first conuersion
 Christ sufferings doe all: and abolish the whole fault and punish- 40
 ment: but if we linne after our conuersion, then, say they, Christs
 sufferings

sufferings abolish the fault, and the eternall punishment, and our owne sufferings, abolish the temporall punishment. But this doctrine lessens, and obscures the mercy of God: and it must be obserued, that *Paul* hold all their sufferings to be in vaine, that seeks remission of sinnes, or iustification, in any thing, out of Christ.

Now we for our parts, make five other vses of our sufferings, First, they serue for triall of men, that it may appeare what is hidden in their hearts. *Deut. 8. 2.* Secondly, they serue for the correction of things amisse in vs. *1. Corin. 11. 23.* Thirdly, they serue as documents, and warnings to others, specially in publike persons: thus *Dauid* suffers many things after repentance, for his murther and adultery. Fourthly, they are markes of adoption, if we be content to obey God in them. *Heb. 12. 7.* Lastly, they are the trodden and beaten way to the kingdome of heauen. *Act. 14. 23.*

When *Paul* saith; *If they be in vaine,* wee are to obserue his moderation. He reprocues and terrifies the Galatians, yet so as he is carefull to preferue the hope of mercy in them, and the hope of their amendment in himselfe. The like hath bin the practise of the Prophets. *Ionas* preacheth, *Yet fourtie daies and Ninine shall bee destroyed:* but withall hee addes, *It may be the Lord will repent, and turne from his fierce wrath.* *Ion. 3. 9.* *Peter* saith to *Simon Magus*, *Thou art in the gallo of buternes:* but withall he addes, *Pray God that the thought of thy heart may be forgiven thee.* *Act. 8. 21.* See the like, *Isa. 2. 14.* and *Amos 5. 15.* And thus are Ministers of the Gospel to delay and qualifie their reproofes, and censures.

He therefore that ministreth to you the spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doth he it by the workes of the law, or by the hearing of faith?

These wordes are a repetition of the second verse, whence the exposition must be fetched. The words [*and worketh miracles among you*] are added: and they carrie this meaning, That God gaue to the Galatians, not onely the spirit of adoption, but also other extraordinary gifts of the spirit, as to speake with strange tongues, to cure diseases, and such like.

Repetitions in Scripture are not idle, but of great vse, and signifie vnto vs the necessitie of the thing repeated, and the infallible certentie of it. The substance therefore of this verse must carefully be remembered, and that this. *Ye receiued the spirit by my doctrine:* therefore it is true, and of God. The argument is of great vse. For by it wee come to an infallible assurance of the Certentie of the Scriptures, and of true religion deriued thence.

The

The Galatians are now reuclted from *Pauls* doctrine, and they erre in the foundation: and yet *Paul* saith in the time present, *Hee that ministreth the spirit vnto you.* Hence it appeares, that falls of infirmitie in the child of God, doe not vtterly extinguishe the spirit, but onely grieue, or make sadde the spirit.

Againe *Paul* here teacheth, that God is the onely and proper author of miracles. For he that ministreth the spirit, worketh miracles, namely God. A miracle is, a work about the strength of nature: therefore it can be effected of none but the author of nature. It may be objected, the Apostles, Prophets, and others, had a gift to worke miracles. *Iosua* commanded the sunne to stand, *Iosua* 10. 12. & *Elias* commanded fire to come down from heauen, 2. *Kin.* 1. *Answer.* God neuer gaue to any man power to worke and effect a miracle, either mediately or immediately. The gift was the faith of miracles. The faith was grounded vpon reuelation: and the reuelation was, that God himselfe would worke such or such a miracle, when they praied, commanded, or imposed hands. Men, therefore, properly, are but the mouth of God, and messengers to signifie what he will doe. Againe, it may be objected, that the diuell can worke miracles. *Answer.* He can worke a wonder, or things extraordinarie, in respect of the ordinarie course of nature. Thus he caused fire to fall from heauen: and he caused vlcers to arise in the bodie of *Iob*, and that true vlcers. And this he did by the force of nature, better knowne to him, then all the world. But as for a true miracle that exceeds the strength of nature, he cannot possibly doe it: no not Christ himselfe, as man, though he be exalted aboue all men and angels. By this we see that they are deceived, who thinke that the diuell can make raine, thunder, and lightning. Indeede when the matter of raine and thunder is prepared by God, he can hasten it, and make it more terrible: but raine, and thunder he cannot make: for that is indeede as much as any miracle. Againe, it is a falschood to thinke, that Alchimists are able to turne baser metals into gold. For it is a worke of creation to turne a creature of one kind into a creature of an other kind. It is also as foolish to imagine that witches, by the power of the diuell, are able to turne themselves, into cats and other creatures. None can doe this, but God that made the creature.

Here againe we see the vse of miracles, that is, to confirme doctrine in the Apostolike Churches. That their vse is further to confirme doctrine euen at this day, it cannot be prooued.

Lastly, here in the Galatians we see what an easie thing it is to fall from God, from our faith, and allegiance to him. They were taught

taught by *Paul*: they had received the spirit of adoption: they were enabled to worke miracles: and yet for all this they fall away to an other Gospel. They must be a looking glasse to vs. In peace we are now constant: but if triall shall come, our frailtie shall appeare.
 5 That our frailty and weaknes may not be hurtful to vs, we must remember two rules. One is, not to haue a conceit of any thing in vs, but to hold our faith & religion in feare, as in the presence of God, *Rom. 11. 20.* The second, to take heed that there be not in vs an euill, corrupt, and dissembling heart. For if our heart be naught, our
 10 faith cannot be good, *Heb. 4. 12.*

6 *As Abraham beleeued God, and it was imputed to him for righteousness:*

15 7 *Know yee therefore, that they which are of faith, are the children of Abraham.*

The words, *Euen as Abraham, &c.* haue reference to that which went before, on this manner. Yee Galatians received the spirit by my doctrine: and my doctrine was the preaching of iustification by faith without workes: which doctrine is like and suitable to the example of *Abraham, who beleued God, and it was imputed for iustice.*

Heere *Paul* sets downe the second Argument, whereby hee prooues the truth of his doctrine. And it is framed thus: As
 25 *Abraham* was iustified, so are the children of *Abraham.* *Abraham* was iustified by iustice imputed, and apprehended by faith, verse 6. Therefore the children of *Abraham* are thus iustified. This conclusion is the principall question: it is not heere expressed, but in the roome thereof a declaration is made, who are
 30 the true children of God, namely, they that are of *Abraham*, in respect of faith.

That which is heere said of *Abraham*, is a maine ground concerning the iustification of a sinner, in the bookes of the old and new Testament: therefore I will more carefully search the true interpretation of it.

Some expound the words thus: *Abraham* beleued God, and the world reputed him for a good and vertuous man. But if this be the right sense, then *Paul* is deceiued, who brings this text to proue the iustification of *Abraham*, not only before men, but also before God.
 40 Now vertue and goodnesse, which is in estimation among men, is not sufficient to acquit and iustifie vs before God.

The second exposition is of the Papists, who by *faith* here vnderstand

derstand, a generall faith, wherby the articles of faith are beleueed, And by *imputation*, they vnderstand *reputation*, whereby a thing is esteemed as it is indeed. And they teach that faith is reputed for righteousness; because (say they) faith formed with charitie, is indeed the iustice wherby a sinner is iustified before God. But this exposition hath his defects and errors. For first of all, charitie is not the forme, or life of faith, but the fruite and effect of it. *1. Tim. 1. 5. The end of teaching is loue out of a pure heart, good conscience, and faith unfained.* It is objected, that as the body is dead without the soule, so is faith without workes, *James 2. 26.* and therefore that workes are the life of faith. *Answ. S. James* by faith vnderstands a pretended faith, or the profession of faith, as appeares by the words, *v. 14. though a man say he hath faith: and v. 18. shew me thy faith.* Now of this profession of faith, workes are the life.

Secondly, this exposition makes faith, or the act of beleueing, to be our whole and intire iustice before God: whereas indeed if it be iustice, it is but one part thereof. And in the act of beleueing, loue cannot be included.

Thirdly, faith ioyned with charitie, is not the iustice whereby a sinner is iustified. For our faith and loue are both imperfect: and faith is imputed for righteousness without workes, *Rom. 4. 5. & therefore without charitie.* For this is charitie, to keepe the commandments of God, *Iohn 15. 10. Paul* saith, that the righteousness wherby we are iustified, is by, or through faith, *Phil. 3. 9.* and therefore our iustice and our faith, are two distinct things.

The third exposition is also from the Papists, that faith is reputed for righteousness: because it is reputed to be a sufficient meanes to prepare men to their iustification: but this cannot be the sense of this place. For this was spoken of *Abraham* after he was iustified, and therefore needed no preparation to iustification.

Let vs now cometo the true sense of the wordes. In them I consider two things, *Abrahams* faith, in these wordes, *Abraham beleued God:* and the fruite of his faith, in these wordes, *and it was imputed to him for righteousness.* Touching his faith, I consider three things. The first is, the occasion, which was on this manner. After the conquest of the heathen Kings, *Abraham* was stil in some feare: In this regard the Lord comforts him, *Genes. 15. 1. I am thy buckler, and thy exceeding great reward.* But to this *Abraham* replies, *I want issue:* and the Lord answers, *I will make thy seede as the starres of heauen,* *Genes. 15. 5.* Now then, looke as God renewes and enlarges his promise to *Abraham*, so *Abraham* renewes his faith: and hereupon *Moses*, and *Paul*, say, *Abraham beleued God.* God doeth
not

not now enlarge his promises to vs as to *Abraham*: neuerthelesse, the promises recorded in the Bible, are renewed to vs partly by preaching, and partly by the vse of the Sacraments: and wee accordingly are to renew our faith, specially in the time of feare, and danger.

5 The second thing is the obiekt, or matter of his faith, and that is, the multiplication of his posteritie. It may be said, how could *Abraham* bee iustified by such a faith? *Answer*. The promise of the multiplication of his seed, was a dependant of a more principall promise, *I am thy God all-sufficient, Gene. 17. 1.* and, *I am thy exceeding great reward, Gen. 15. 11.* In this carnall seed, *Abraham* specially respected (by the eye of faith) the blessed seed of the woman. Hee therefore beleueed the promise of a seed, as it was a pledge vnto him of a thing more principall; namely, the fauour of God, and as it was a meanes to effect the incarnation of the Sonne of God. In his example wee are taught how wee are to respect, and vse earthly things: wee are to respect them as pledges of Gods fauour: and to vse them as meanes to further vs to Christ, and to the attainment of our saluation.

20 The third point is, the propertie of *Abrahams* faith, which was a faith against hope. For he beleueed the promise of a seed, when his body was halfe dead, and *Sarai* was barren. In like sort we keeping true religion and good conscience, must in all our temptations, crof-
ses, miseries, infirmities, against reason, sense, and feeling, beleuee
35 the promise of remission of sinnes, and life euerlasting.

In the effect and fruite of *Abrahams* faith, three things must bee considered. The first is, what is meant by *Imputation*. To *impute* properly, is a speech borrowed from merchants: and it signifies to reckon, or to keepe a reckoning of expences and receits. Thus *Paul*
30 faith, *Philem. 18. If he haue done thee any wrong, impute it to me*: that is, set it on my reckoning. And this word is here applied to the iudgment of God. Because hee is our soueraigne Lord, and wee are his debtors: and hee doeth adiudge vnto men for their sinnes, either pardon, or punishment.

35 *Imputation* in God is twofold: one Legall: the other Euangelicall. Legall is, when God willeth and adiudgeth the reward to him that fulfilleth the law. Thus *Paul* saith, *Rom. 4. 5. that the wages is imputed to him that worketh*, and that of debt. Euangelical imputation is, when God accepts the satisfaction of Christ our surety as a paimēt
40 for our sinnes. In this sense is the word, *Impute*, taken ten times in the 4. chapter to the *Romanes*, and in the same it is vsed in this place.

The second point is, what is imputed? *And it was imputed*, that

is, faith. *Faith* here must be considered two waies; first, as a qualitie in it selfe, and thus it is imperfect, and consequently cannot be imputed to vs for our iustification. A gaine, faith must be considered as an instrument, or hand holding and receiuing Christ: and in this regard beleeuing is put for the thing beleueed. And thus must this text bee vnderstood. *It was imputed to him*, that is, the thing which his faith beleueed, was imputed to him by God: for the act of beleeuing is not our iustice, as I haue shewed.

The third point is, what is meant by *righteousnesse*? *Ans.* That which is called in Scripture, the iustice of God, which is sufficient to acquit a sinner at the barre of Gods iudgement. Thus then the sense is manifest: *Abraham* beleueed the promise of God, specially touching the blessed seed: and that which hee beleueed, namely, the obedience of the Mediatour (the blessed seed) was accepted of God as his obedience for his iustification.

It is obiected, that the obedience of Christ is to be imputed to none, but to Christ, who was the doer of it. *Answer.* It is to be imputed, that is, ascribed to him as to the Author therof: and withall because he did performe it in our roome and stead, and that for vs, it is to be imputed to vs.

Secondly, it is obiected, that workes are also imputed, as well as faith, *Psal.* 106. 31. *Phinees executed iudgement, and it was imputed to him for righteousness.* *Ans.* There is iustice of the person, and iustice of the act. Iustice of the person is that, which makes the person of man iust. Iustice of the act is that, which makes the act of the person iust, and not the person it selfe. Now the *Psalme* speakes onely of the iustice of *Phinees* action: and the meaning of the words is this, that God reputed his action as a iust action, whereas men might haply condemne it. This place therefore proues not that workes are imputed for the iustification of any man.

Thirdly, it is obiected, that imputed iustice was neuer known in the Church, till 1500. yeares after Christ. *Ans.* It is false. *Bernard* faith expressly, *Death is put to flight by the death of Christ, and the iustice of Christ is imputed to vs*: and againe, *the satisfaction of Christ is imputed to vs*. Again, sundry of the Fathers, as *Augustine*, *Hierome*, *Chrysostome*, *Theodoret*, *Anselme*, entreating vpon the text of *Paul*, 2. *Cor* 5. 21. auouch, that the iustice whereby we are iustified, is not in vs, but in Christ. And it is a receiued doctrine with them, that a sinner is iustified by faith alone: now faith alone presupposeth an imputation of iustice.

The vse. Hence it followes, that there is no merit of mans workes, either in the beginning, or in the accomplishment of our iustifi-

Serm. ad mil.
Temp. c. 11.
Epist. 190.

iustification. For faith is imputed for iustice to him that beleeueth and worketh not, *Rom* 4 5.

Againe, by this we see there is but one iustification; and that the second, by workes, whereby a man, of a good man, is made better, is a meere fiction. For iust *Abraham* is not iustified by his good works wherewith he abounded, but after his first iustification, faith still is imputed to him for righteousnesse.

Thirdly, here we see what is that very thing, whereby wee are to appeare iust before God, and to bee saued, and that is the obedience of Christ, imputed to vs of God, and apprehended by our faith.

Lastly, heere wee see our dutie. God sits as a Iudge ouer vs: he takes a reckoning of vs, for all our doings: the law is an hand-writing against vs: to some hee imputes their sinnes, to some hee remits them. We therefore must come into the presence of God, pleade guiltie, and acknowledge our selues to be as bankrupts, and intreat him to graunt pardon to vs, and to accept the satisfaction of Christ for vs: then will God not impute our sinnes, but the obedience of Christ for our iustification: and accept him as our suretie in life and death.

The declaration of the conclusion followes in the 9. verse, and it shewes who are the children of *Abraham*. The meaning of the words must first be considered. To be of faith, is to be of *Abrahams* faith, *Rom* 4. 16. And to be of *Abrahams* faith, is to beleue, & applie the promise of righteousnes and life euerlasting by Christ, as *Abraham* did: and to rest in it for our iustification and saluation, *vers* 10. they are said to be of workes, who do the works of the law, and looke to be iustified thereby: therefore they are of faith, who beleue in Christ, and looke to be saued and iustified thereby.

And they which thus beleue with *Abraham*, are said to bee his children. It may be demanded, how? *Asw.* Children of *Abraham* are of two sorts: some by nature, some by grace. By nature are they, which are of *Abraham* by the flesh, or naturall generation, as *Ismael* was. By grace, all beleeuers are children of *Abraham*: and that three wayes. First, by Imitation, in that *Abraham* is set foorth vnto vs as a paterne, in the steppes of whose faith all true beleeuers walke, *Rom* 4. 12. Secondly, beleeuers are children of *Abraham*, by succession, in that they succeed in the inheritance of the same blessing. Thirdly, they are children to him by a kinde of spirituall generation. For *Abraham* by beleuing the promise of a seed did after a sort beget them. Indeed properly the promise and election of God makes them children: and *Abraham* by his faith

beleeuing the foresaid promise, receiues them of God as his children. In this regard beleeuers are called *children of the promise*, *Rom. 9. 8* and *the seede*, that is, of the faith of *Abraham*, *Rom. 4. 16*. Now then the meaning of the text is, that beleeuers, though vncircumcised, are the children of *Abraham*. It may be said, what priuiledge is this? *Ans.* Great: for the children of *Abraham* are children of the covenant, *Gal. 3. 25*. and children of God, *Rom. 9. 8*.

The vse. In this verse, *Paul* sets downe one thing, namely, the true marke of the child of *Abraham*, and that is, to be of the faith of *Abraham*. Here then marke, first of all the Iewes, though descending of *Isaac*, are no children of *Abraham*, because they follow not the faith of *Abraham*. Secondly, the Turks are no children, though they plead descent from *Agar* sometimes, and sometime from *Sara*, tearing themselves *Agarens*, and *Saracens*. For they tread vnder foote the faith of *Abraham*. Thirdly, the Papiſt will nothing helpe himselfe by the plea of Antiquity, Succession, and vniuersall consent, except he can shew some good euidence, that he is of the faith of *Abraham*, which he cannot. For this faith he hath corrupted, as I haue shewed. Lastly, our profession of *Abrahams* faith, partly in teaching, and partly in hearing, and in the vse of the Sacraments; is not sufficient to prooue vs the children of *Abraham*. For not euery one that saith Lord, Lord, shall enter into the Kingdome of heauen, *Math. 7. 22*.

Therefore we must labour to be indeed and in truth of the faith of *Abraham*, and to walke in the steppes of his faith. And to this end, we must doe three things. First, we must haue knowledge of the maine and principall promise, touching the blessing of God in *Christ*, and of all other promises depending on the principall: and we must know the scope and tenour of them, that we be not deceived. Secondly, we must with *Abraham* beleue the power, and truth of God, in the accomplishing of the said promises, or in the working of our vocation, iustification, sanctification, glorification. *Rom. 4. 21*. Thirdly, we must by faith obey God in all things, shutting our eyes, and suffering our selues (as it were) to be led blindfold, by the word of God. Thus did *Abraham* in all things, euen in actions against nature, *Heb. 11. 8*. But this practise is rare among vs. For there are three things, which preuaile much among vs, the loue of worldly honour, the loue of pleasures, and the loue of riches: and where these beare a sway, there faith takes no place. It will be said, that faith is much professed. *Ans.* Faith was neuer more professed, yet there was neuer lesse true faith. For the common faith of men, is a false faith. For in some, it is conceiued without the

the meanes of the word, prayer, sacraments : and in others, it is seuered from the purpose of not sinning. Now faith conceived without the true meanes, and faith ioyned with the purpose to liue as we list, is nothing but presumption. And surely, this is the faith, though not of all, yet of the most.

5 Moreouer, that which *Paul* hath said of the children of *Abraham*, he prooues by the testimony of the Galatians, in these words, *Know ye therefore, or ye know* : that is, vpon the saying of *Moses* in the former verse, ye your selues know this to be a truth, which I said.
10 Marke here, *Paul* requires such a measure of knowledge in beleeuers, that they must be able to iudge of the gathering of this or that doctrine, out of this or that place of Scripture. This shewes the contempt of knowledge in these our dayes to be great : for most men reiect the preaching of the Gospel, and content themselves with
15 the teaching, and schooling of nature.

8. *For the Scripture fore-seeing that God would iustifie the Gentiles through faith, preached before the Gospell vnto Abraham, saying, In thee shall all the Gentiles be blessed.*

10 9. *So then, they which are of faith, are blessed with faithfull Abraham.*

Against the argument in the two former verses, a doubt, or exception might be mooued, on this manner. We grant, that they
25 which are of the faith of *Abraham*, are iustified as he was, so they be Iewes, and not Gentiles. Now this doubt, exception, or obiection, *Paul* remooues in these verses, thus. When God said to *Abraham*, *In thee shall all the Gentiles be blessed* ; he signified the iustification euen of the Gentiles by faith : therefore all that are of faith, euen
30 the Gentiles, are blessed of God, as *Abraham* was.

In the 8. verse, I consider three things : the occasion of the speech of God to *Abraham*, namely, *Gods fore-knowledge* : the manner of his speech, *the preaching of the Gospell to Abraham* : and the testimony it selfe, *In thee, &c.*

35 Touching the occasion ; first it may be demanded, whether this fore-knowledge in God, be a bare fore-knowledge, seuered from the will of God, or no. *Answ.* No : Gods fore-knowledge is in all things ioyned with his decree, or will. If God should fore-see things to come, and in no sort will or nill them, there should
40 be an idle providence. *Christ* was deliuered by the will and fore-knowledge of God, *Act. 2. 23.* And the Iewes for their parts did nothing in the crucifying of *Christ*, but that which the hand, and counsell of

God had determined to be done, *Act 4 28* Neither is God by this doctrine made the author of sinne. For sinne comes to passe, not from the will of God, but according to his will: in that he foresees euill, and withall wills not to hinder the being of it: and euill not hindered, comes to passe.

Againe it may be demanded, in what order the fore knowledge of God stands to his will. *Ans.* The fore knowledge of things that may possibly come to passe, goes before his will: the foreknowledge of things that shall certainly come to passe, follows the will, and decree of God. For things come not to passe, because they are fore-
seene; but because they are to come to passe, according to the will
of God; therefore they are foreseene. Now then because foreknow-
ledge in God, is ioyned with his will, and is alwaies a consequent
of it, it is often put for the counsell, will, and decree of God as in
this place.

In this text, two things are to be considered of Gods foreknow-
ledge. The first is, who, or what foresees? Answer here is made, *The
Scripture foresees*: that is, God foresees, and the Scripture records
things foreseene by him. Hence it appeares, that the writings of
Moses are the word of God. For they fore-tell things to come 2000.
yeares after, as the calling and benediction of the Gentiles in the
seed of *Abraham*. In the same regard the writings of *Paul* are the
word of God. For there he reueales and sets down in writing, more
then 2000. yeares after, what was the intention of God, when hee
said to *Abraham*: *In thee shall all the Gentiles be blessed.*

The second point is, what is foreseene? Answer is made, *that
God iustificeth the Gentiles*, that is, God will as certainly iustifie them
in time to come, as if he had then done it, when hee spake these
words. Some teach that the Predellination of God, is his decree, in
which he purposeth to redeeme, and iustifie all men, of all ages, and
times, so be it, they will beleue. But I finde no such decree in the
word. Here we see Gods decree, is onely to iustifie all Gentiles in
the last age of the world. And thus the text of *Paul* must be vnder-
stood. *God would haue all men to be saved, 1. Tim. 2.* namely, all men, or
all the Gentiles in the last age of the world, and not all the Gentiles,
of all ages, and times.

In the next place, the manner of the speech and testimony of
God must be considered, in that he is said to *preach the Gospel to A-
braham*. Here marke the Antiquity of the Gospel: and the markes
of true religion, which for his substance was knowne not onely to
the Apostles, but also to the Prophets, and Patriarks. So ancient is
the true way of life, and the doctrine of justification by faith, with-

out workes. Papistes pleade antiquitie for their religion: but in vaine: for the proper points and heads of their religion were taken vp since the dayes of Christ, some, two hundred yeares after, some four hundred, some six hundred, some eight hundred, some a thousand, and some foureteene hundred yeares after.

5 The third poynt, is the speech, or testimony it selfe: *In thee shall all the Gentiles be blessed.* In thee, that is, in thy seed, *Christ, Gene. 22. 18.* who is in thy loines: into whom the Gentiles are ingrafted by faith, and consequently into thee. For they are the seed of Christ, 10 *Isai. 53. 10.* who is the seed of *Abraham*. Again, here it is said, *All the Gentiles:* but *Gen. 17. 4. Abraham* is called the father, not of all, but of many nations. *Answ.* He is the father of many, in respect of his flesh; and he is a father of all the Gentiles in regard of his faith. Again, it is vsuall in Scripture, to put the word *All*, for many, *Rom. 5. 15. 18.* And the benediction heere mentioned, comprehends all the spirituall graces of God, as vocation, iustification, glorification, 15 *Ephes. 1. 3.*

The vse: In that the Lord saith, *All the nations shall be blessed in Abraham*: Hence I gather, that the nation of the Iewes shall 20 be called, and conuerted to the participation of this blessing: when, and how, God knowes: but that it shall be done before the ende of the world, wee know. For if all nations shall be called, then the Iewes.

Again, that which was foretold to *Abraham*, is verified in our 25 eyes. For this our English nation, and many other nations are at this day blessed in this seed of *Abraham*. Vpon the consideration of this, we are admonished of many things. First, wee are to giue to God great thanks and praise, that wee are borne in these dayes. For many Prophets and great Kings desired to see that 30 which we see, and could not obtaine it. Secondly, we must euery one of vs in our hearts amend and turne to God, and vnfainedly beleue in Christ, that wee may now in the acceptable day be partakers of the promised blessing. The Lord saith, *Gene. 22. 18. In thy seed all the nations of the earth shall be blessed, or, blesse themselves:* because they shall vse all good meanes, that they may be 35 filled with the blessings of God. Thirdly, we must blesse all, doe good to all, and hurt to none: for, *wee are heires of blessing, 1. Pet. 3. 8.* Lastly, we must here marke our comfort: if we truly turne to God, and beleue in the holy seed of *Abraham*, all things shall go 40 well with vs: *God shall blesse them that blesse vs, and curse them that curse vs: Gen. 12. 3.*

The ninth verse, is the conclusion of *Pauls* answer: and it is in effect

effect and substance one and the same with verse 7. and it signifieth that all men that be of *Abraham's* faith, (though otherwise forrainers and Gentiles to *Abraham*) shall be partakers of the same blessing of God with him. It may be said: How shall we haue the same blessing, when we haue not the like faith? *Answ.* God respects not the greatnesse of our faith, so much as the truth of it. And if faith erre not in his object: that is, if we make Christ crucified our Redeemer, and ioynen nothing to him: if there be further a will to beleeue, and to apprehend Christ with care and constancie to increase in faith, and a purpose not to sinne, God will accept this true and honest will for deed.

IO For as many as bee of the workes of the law, are vnder the curse. For it is written, Cursed is euery one that continues not in all things written in the Law, to doe them.

In these wordes *Paul* sets downe a second reason, whereby hee prooues, that not only the Iewes, but also the Gentiles, are blessed as *Abraham* was, by faith. And the reason is drawne from the contraries, thus. *They that are of workes*, that is, that looke to be iustified by works, are vnder the curse. Therefore, they that are of faith, are blessed, or iustified with *Abraham*. Moreouer, *Paul* addes the prooffe of this second reason in the next words, and it is framed thus: They which fulfill not the law, are cursed: they which are of works, fulfill not the law: therefore they are accursed.

Whereas *Paul* saith, that they are vnder the curse, that will bee of workes, wee see the whole world almost, walkes in the way of perdition: it is a conclusion of nature, that we must be saued, and iustified by our workes. The young Prince in the Gospel, said, *Good master, what must I doe to be saued?* The Iewes would not bee subject to the iustice of God, but they established their owne righteousness of the lawe, *Rom. 10. 3.* Our common people, and they that should bee wise, say, they looke to bee saued by faith: but indeed they turne their faith to workes. For what is their faith? surely nothing else (as they say) but their good meaning, or their good dealing, or their good seruing of God.

Hence againe it followes, that the Papacy, or Popish religion is the way to perdition, in that it prescribeth and teacheth iustification by workes. On the contrary, our religion is the safest and surest from danger, because it teacheth the free iustification of a sinner by the blood of Christ. And this makes the Papistes in the day of death, to renounce iustification by their workes. *Steuens Gardiner* a bloody

bloody persecutor, being on his death-bed told of free iustification by the blood of Christ, said; *You may tell this to me, but doe not open this gap to the people.* One of late in a publike execution of iustice, said, he would die a Catholike, and withall he added, that he looked to be saved only by the passion of Christ.

5 In the prooffe of the reason, three things are to bee considered : What the curse is? who are cursed? and when?

The curse is eternall woe and misery: and it is either in this life, in the end of this life, or in the life to come.

10 The curse in this life, is either within man, or without him. The curse within man is manifold. In the minde there is ignorance of God, of our selues, of true happines, and of the meanes to attaine to it. Again, there is a great difficultie with much paine to learne, and retainethings to be learned & retained. And this is a curse of God
25 vpon our minds. In the conscience there are manifold accusations, terrors & feares, arising vpon euery occasion, and they are flashings (as it were) of the fire of hell, vnlesse they be quenched in this life by the blood of Christ. In the will there is an inclination to all manner of sinnes without exception. Againe, there is hardnes of heart, whereby the will of man is vnpliable to that which is good, vnlesse
20 it be renewed. In the body there are more diseases, then the Physicians bookes can expresse: and as many diseases as there be in vs, so many fruits of sinne there are, *Iohn 5. 4.*

The curse without vs is three-fold. The first is, a spirituall
25 bondage vnder the power of the diuell: who by reason of sinne, workes in the hearts of vnbeleeuers, *Ephe. 2. 2.* and hath the power of death, *Heb. 2. 14.*

The second, is an enmitie of all the creatures with man, since the fall. And this appeares, because when God receiues vs to bee
30 his people, he makes a covenant with all creatures, in our behalfe, *Hosea 2. 18.*

The third containes all losses, calamities, miseries, in goods, friends, good name, Reade *Deut. 28.*

The curse in the end of this life, is death, which is the separation
35 of body and soule, *Rom. 5. 13.* and death in his owne nature is a fearefull curse, and the very downfall to the pit of hell.

The curse after this life, is the second death: which is separation of body and soule from God, with a full apprehension of the wrath of God. And if the paine of one tooth or finger, be oftentimes so
40 great, that men rather desire to die, then liue: how great then shall the paine be, when all the parts of body and soule shall be tormented? And the eternitie of this death increaseth mans misery. If a
man

man might suffer so many yeares as there are drops in the sea, and then haue an end, it were some comfort: but when that time is expired, man is as farre from the end of his woe, as euer he was.

Thus in summe and substance is the curse here mentioned: and it were to be wished, that men would more thinke and speake of it then they doe: then would there be more conscience of sinne.

The next point is, who are cursed. *Ans. They which do not all things written in the law.* Here is an *Item* for them that wil keep some commandements, but not all. *Herod* would do some things at the motion of *John Baptist*, but hee would not leaue his incestuous marriage with his brothers wife, *Mar. 6. 20.* There be at this day that are very forward in good things: yet some of them will not leaue their swearing, some their lying, some their vncleannesse, some their vsury. But God will not part stakes with man: he will haue all or none. *He that breakes one commandement, is guiltie of all, Iam. 2.* And there is good reason, that he which obeyes should obey in all. For where God renewes, he sanctifies throughout, and fils them with the seed of all grace, that they may performe obedience, according to all the commandements of the law.

Againe, he is cursed that doth not all things which the law prescribeth; or if he do them, yet doth not continue in all. So then he is cursed that breaks the law but once, and that only in one thought: for such an one doth not continue in all things. Now then, O sinful man, what wilt thou do to auoid the curse? for thou hast in thought, word, and deed, broken the law. Doeſt thou thinke to appease the wrath of God with gold and siluer? the whole world and all things therein are the Lords. And thou maist not thinke to hide or withdraw thy selfe from the presence of God: for all must come and appeare before his tribunall seate, in their owne persons. Neither may we thinke to escape, because God is mercifull: for he is as iust, as mercifull. What wilt thou then doe to escape this horrible curse? when thou hast done all thou canst doe, thou canst no way helpe or relieue thy selfe.

The onely way of helpe is this. Thou must flie from this sentence of the law, to the throne of grace for mercy; instantly asking, seeking, knocking at the gate of mercy for pardon of thy sinnes. And that thou mayest be encouraged to this dutie, consider with me, that at thy first purpose to amend, and to turne vnto God, thy sinnes are pardoned in heauen. *David* saith, *I sal. 32. 5. I thought, I will confesse my sinnes against my selfe, and thou forganest me.* Marke the speech, *I thought.* The prodigall child, *Luke 15.* vpon his purpose to returne to his father, (before hee had indeed humbled himselfe in word)

word) was receiued to mercy. When *David* said, *I haue sinned, Nathan* in the name of God said, *Thy sin is forgiven thee*. It may be thou wilt say, the curse is absolute. *Answer*. The threatnings of the law must bee vnderstood with an exception which the Gospell makes, on this manner: The law saith, Cursed is the transgressor: and the
 5 Gospell saith, *Except he repent*. *Jonas* preached, yet fortie dayes, and Nineue shall be destroyed: yet withall hee addes an exception: *It may bee the Lord will repent of his fierce wrath, Jonas 5.9*. Againe, thou wilt say, my sins are very grieuous, therefore I feare I shal not escape
 10 the curse. *Ans*. Forgiuenesse is promised without any limitation to any number or kinds of sinne. (only the sin against the holy Ghost excepted.) Therefore appeale with boldnesse in thy heart to the throne of grace, intreate for forgiuenesse as for life and death, and thou shalt escape the curse.

15 The third poynt is, when is a sinner accursed? *Ans*. In present, in the time of this life. For the Lord saith not, *he shall bee accursed*: but, *he is accursed*. There bee among vs whom no Sermons or exhortations will amend: and such persons thinke themselues without the reach of any danger. For they thinke the time is very long
 20 to the last iudgement. But they are deceiued touching themselues. For God with his owne mouth hath giuen the sentence, that they are accursed, there remains nothing but the execution. The halter is already about their neckes, and there remains nothing but the turning of the ladder. Nay the execution is already in blindnesse of
 25 mind, and hardnesse of heart. He that beleeues not, is already condemned, *Iohn 3*.

Lastly, a memorable conclusion of *Paul* is heere to bee obserued. That it is impossible for any man within himselfe, for the time of this life, to fulfill the law of God. For *Paul* here takes it for
 30 a confessed and graunted conclusion: otherwise his argument wil not hold: which must be framed on this manner. He which fulfils not the law, is cursed: hee which is of workes, fulfils not the law: therefore he is accursed. I further prooue it thus. If wee could fulfill the law, wee might be iustified by the law: but no man can bee
 35 iustified by the law, or by workes: therefore no man can fulfill the law. Againe, *Paul* saith, *Rom. 7. 14*. that the law was spirituall, requiring inward and spirituall obedience, and that hee was carnall, and therefore not conformable to the law: that he was sold vnder sinne: that when he would doe good, euill was present: that he carried about him
 40 the body of death. And all this hee saith of himselfe, about twentie yeares after his owne conuersion. Such as our knowledge is, such is our loue to God and man. Now wee know God onely in part: there.

therefore we loue in part; and consequently we doe not fulfill the law. Againe, the Scripture puts all men, euen the regenerate, vnder the name of sinners to the very death: *Isa. 64. 4. All our righteousness is as a defiled cloth, Proverbs 20. 9. Who can say, my heart is cleane? Iob cannot answer God for one of a thousand, Iob 9.* The righteous man shall pray for the pardon of his sinnes in a time when hee may be heard, *Psalme. 32. 6. If we say wee haue no sinne, wee deceiue our selues, 1. Ioh. 1. 9.* The Papists say, that all these places are meant of veniall sins. *Ansiv.* There are no veniall sinnes, which in their owne nature, are not against the law of God, but onely beside it. *The stipend of euery sinne is death. Rom. 6. 23.* If we were perfectly sanctified, and consequently fulfillers of the law in this life, then Christ should not bee a Sauour, but an instrument of God, to make vs our owne Sauours. And to say this, is blasphemy. Lastly, that which man could doe by creation, so much the law requires at our hands: but man by creation could loue God with all the powers of his soule, and with all the strength of all the powers: which now (since the fall) no man can doe. It remaines then for an infallible conclusion, that it is impossible for any man in the time of this life, to fulfill the law.

The vse. This point serues notably to condemne the folly of the world. The Israelites say at Mount Sinai, *that they will doe all things which the Lord shall command them, Exod. 19. 8.* The yong Prince said, *that he had kept all the commandments from his youth, Mark. 10. 20.* Our common people say, *that they can loue God with all their hearts, and their neighbours as themselves.*

Secondly, this doctrine serues to confute sundry Errours of the Papists, who blasphemously teach, that a man after iustification, may fulfill the law in this life: that a man may for a time be without all sinne: that workes of the regenerate are perfect, and may be opposed to the iudgement of God: that men may supererogate, and doe more then the law requires. The ground of all these conclusions is this: They say, there is a double degree of fulfilling the law. The first is, in this life, and that is, to loue God truly, aboue all creatures, and to loue our neighbour as our selues, in truth. The second is, to loue God with al the powers of the soule, and with al the strength of all the powers: and this measure of fulfilling the law, is reserued to the life to come. I will briefly consider the reasons and the ground of this blasphemous doctrine.

Obiect. 1. God promiseth the Israelites, *that he will circumcise their hearts, that they may loue him with all their hearts, with all their soules, and with all their strength. Deuter. 30. 6.* And thus Iesias turned to God

God with all his heart, with all his soule, and with all his strength, according to all the law of Moses. 2. King. 23. 25. *Ans.* The phrase [with all thy heart] is taken in a double signification. Sometime it is opposed to a double heart, and then it signifies, a true vpright heart, without
 5 guile or dissimulation. Thus they of Zebulon are saide, *not to fight with a double heart*, 1. Chron. 12. 33. but *with a perfect heart*, v. 38. Where, marke the opposition, of an whole or perfect heart, to a double heart. In this sense are the places before named, to be understood. Neuertheleſſe, the whole heart, soule, and strength, in the
 10 summe of the morall law, signifies all powers of the soule, and all the strength of al the powers. Thus doth Paul, Rom. 7. expound the law, when he saith, *the law is spirituall*; and by the prohibition of lust, giues the meaning of the whole law. For concupiscence, or lust, comprehends the first thoughts, or motions.

15 *Obiect. II.* Noah is said to be *just and perfect*, Gen. 6. and God commands Abraham to walke before him, and to be perfect, Gen. 17. 1. Paul saith, *Let as many as be perfect, be thus minded*, Phil. 3. 15. *Ans.* There is a double perfection; perfection of parts, and perfection of degrees. Perfection of parts is, when a man hath in him, after he is regenerate, the
 20 beginnings of all vertues, and the seedes of all graces: by which he endeauours, to obey God in all his lawes and commandements. Perfection of degrees, is when the law is fulfilled both in matter, and manner, according to the rigour of the law. Now the former places speake onely of the perfection of parts: and that is, such a perfe-
 25 ction in which wee are to acknowledge our imperfection, and it is no more but a true and generall indeauour to obey God. Isa. 38 1.

Obiect. III. Sundry holy men are saide to fulfill the law: David turned from nothing that God commanded him all the dayes of his
 30 life, saue in the matter of Vriah, 1. King. 15. 5. Zachary and Elizabeth walked in all the commandements of God, and that without reproofe before God. Luk. 1. 6. *Ans.* There are two kinds of fulfilling the law: one Legall, the other Euangelicall. Legall is, when men doe all things required in the law, and that by themselves and in them-
 35 selves. Thus none euer fulfilled the law, but Christ, and Adam before his fall. The Euangelicall manner of fulfilling the law, is to beleeue in Christ, who fulfilled the law for vs: and withall to indeauour in the whole man, to obey God in all his precepts. And this indeauour ioined with the purpose of not sinning, is called the righ-
 40 teousnesse of good conscience; and though it be not really a fulfilling of the law, yet it is accepted of God as a fulfilling of the law in al them that are in Christ. For God accepts the indeauour to obey,
 for

for perfect obedience. Thus *David, Zachary, Elizabeth, and others* are said to fulfill the law.

Obiect. IIII. We pray that we may fulfill the law, when we say, *Let thy will be done in earth, as it is in heauen.* *Ans.* Wee pray not that we may fulfill the law in this, but that we may strue as much as may be, to attaine to the fulfilling of the law. That is the scope of the petition. We desire not to be equall to the Angels, and Saints; but onely to imitate them more and more, and to be like to them.

Obiect. V. Romanes. 7. 18. *To will is present with mee:* therefore (say they) in will the lawe may bee kept, though the flesh relent. *Answer.* When *Paul* saith, *that to will was present,* hee doth not signifie that he could perfectly will that which is good. For his will beeing partly renewed, and partly vnrenewed, the good which he willed, hee partly nilled; and the euill which he nilled, hee partly willed.

Obiect. VI. *Christ tooke our flesh, that the righteousness of the lawe might be fulfilled in vs.* *Rom. 8. 4.* *Ans.* The righteousness of the law is fulfilled in vs, not because we doe all things required in the law, but because we haue faith in vs, and by that faith wee apprehend the obedience of *Christ* in fulfilling of the law.

Obiect. VII. *Rom. 13. 8.* *Loue is the fulfilling of the law: & the regenerate loue their neighbours.* *Ans.* If we could loue our neighbour as our selues, perfectly, we should then fulfill the whole law. But our loue is imperfect.

Obiect. VIII. *He that is borne of God sinnes not: 1. Ioh. 3.* he that sins not, fulfills the law. *Ans.* He that is borne of God sinnes not, that is, hee doth not commit sinne, or make a practice of sinne. He may fall of frailtie, yet then he recouers himselfe, and doth not keepe a course in sinning. This is the meaning of *Saint Iohn*.

Obiect. IX. *The commandements of God are not grievous. 1. Ioh. 5.* *Ans.* They are not grievous three wayes; first, in respect of remission: because they that beleue in *Christ*, haue the transgression of the law pardoned. Secondly, in respect of imputation, because *Christs* obedience in fulfilling the law, is imputed to euery beleueer. Thirdly in respect of inchoation. For they that beleue receiue the spirit of God, whereby they are enabled to indeauour themselves to obey God in all his commandements. Otherwise in respect of our owne personall obedience, they are a yoke that no man can beare.

Obiect. X. *The workes of God are perfect, Deuter. 32. 4.* Good workes, are workes of God: therefore they are perfect. *Answer.*

Workes,

Workes, that are meerely workes of God, which he worketh by himselfe, and not by man, they are all perfect: and thus must the text in *Moses* be vnderstood. Now good workes, are workes of God in vs: and withall they are our workes, hauing their beginning in the minde, and will of man: and hence they are defiled. For when the first and second cause concur in a worke, the said work takes vnto it the condition of the second cause. Water pure in the fountaine, is defiled, when it passes by the filthy channell.

Obiect. XI. If God haue giuen vs an impossible law, he is more cruell then any tyrant. *Ans.* When God first gaue the law, he also gaue power to fulfill the law. If the law be impossible, it is not Gods fault, but mans, who by his owne fault hath lost this power of keeping the law.

The ground before named of the double fulfilling of the law, one for this life, the other for the life to come, is false. For there is onely one generall, and vnchangeable sentence of the law, *Cursed is euery one that continues not in all things written in the law to doe them.*

I now come to other vses of the former conclusion. If the law bee impossible, then must wee seeke for the fulfilling of it, forth of our selues in Christ, *who is the end of the law for righteousness, to them that beleene.* Hence it followes necessarily, that our iustification must be by the imputation, or application of Christs iustice vnto vs.

Because we cannot fulfill the law, wee must make it a glasse to see our impotencie, and what we cannot doe: and it must bee our schoolemaster to driue vs to Christ. And by our impotencie wee must take occasion to make praier to God for his spirit to inable vs to obey the lawes of God. Thus come wee to be doers of the law, and no otherwise.

Againe, it may be demanded, (considering we cannot fulfill the law,) how our workes can please God? *Ans.* In euery good worke, there is something that is Gods, and something that is ours alone. The defect of the worke is ours alone, and that is pardoned to the beleeuers. That which is good in the worke, is from God, and that he approoueth as being his owne. And thus euery good worke, is said to please God.

Lastly, after that we haue begun to please God in obedience to his lawes, considering we fulfill them not, all boasting of our goodnesse must be laid aside, and we must humble our selues vnder the hand of God euen to the death. Read the practise of *Dauid*, *Psal.* 143. 2. and *Psal.* 130. 3. *Iob* 9. 1.

11 And that no man is iustified by the law in the sight of God, it is manifest. For the iust liueth by faith.

12 And the law is not of faith: but he that shall doe these things, shall liue in them.

The meaning. *By the law*] that is, the law not onely ceremoniall, but also iudiciall and morall. Indee the occasion of *Pauls* disputation in this place, is taken from Circumcision, pertaining to the ceremoniall law: but he enlarges his disputation, from one part to the whole law. For they which thought Ceremonies necessarie to iustification, would much more thinke morall duties necessarie. And that *Paul* speakes here of the morall, it appeares by the 10. verse, where he alleadgeth a sentence that specially appertaines to the morall law: *Cursed is every one, &c.* Againe, the law may be considered, two waies, in the iustification of a sinner: first, as it iustifieth without Christ. Secondly, as it iustifieth with Christ: and both waies it is excluded from iustification, and here specially in the second regard. For the intent of the Galatians was, to ioine Christ and the law, in the worke of our iustification.

Before God] that is, in the iudgement of God, before whose iudgement seate we must all appeare, and be iudged.

The iust shall liue by faith] The scope of these words is this. The Iewes were oppressed by the Babylonians, and it was further told them by the Prophet, that they should be led into captiuitie, by the said Babylonians. Now in this distresse of theirs, the Lord sets downe the duty of the faithfull Iewes, namely, that they must slay themselves by their faith in the Messias, and consequently, that they shall haue safetie in this life in the midst of all dangers, and in the end haue eternall life. And *Paul* applies this text to his purpose. thus. Life eternall comes by faith: and therefore true righteousness before God is by faith. For righteousness is the foundation of life eternall: and therefore it is called *iustification of life*. Rom. 5. 17.

The law is not of faith] The meaning of these words must be gathered, by the opposition in the latter part of the verse: *but he that doth these things shall liue in them.* And the meaning is this. The law doth not prescribe faith in the Messias: neither doth it promise life to him that beleueth in the Messias, but to him that doth the things contained in the law.

In these wordes, *Paul* addes a new argument to the former, thus. Iustice is by faith: the law is not of faith: therefore the law is not our iustice. Or againe, thus. He that is iustified, is iustified by faith:

faith: the law iustifies no man by faith: therefore the law doth not iustifie. The conclusion is first in the 11. verse. The proposition is expressed, and confirmed by the testimonie of the Prophet *Habacuk*. The assumption is in the 12. verse.

5 The vsa, When *Paul* saith, *No man is iustified by the law in the sight of God*: he makes a double iustification: one, before God: the other, before men. Iustification before God is, when God reputes a man iust, and that onely for the merit, and obedience of Christ. Iustification before men, is, when such as professe faith in Christ, are reputed iust of men. By this distinction, *Paul* who saith, *that a man is iustified by faith without workes*, *Rom. 3. 28.* and *James*, who saith, *that Abraham was iustified by faith, and workes*, *Iam. 2. 24.* are reconciled: for *Paul* speakes of iustification before God, as hee himselfe expressly testifieth, *Rom. 4. 2.* and *Saint James* speakes of iustification
10 before men, which is not onely by the profession of faith, but also by workes.

In the same sort, there is a double Election. One speciall, whereby *God* knowes who are his. The other, is more generall, whereby wee repute all men to be Elect, that professe faith in Christ, leauing secret iudgements to God. Thus *Paul* writes to the Ephesians, *Philippians*, &c. as Elect. And the Ministers of the word, are to speake
15 to their congregations, as to the Elect people of God.

In the same manner, there is a double sanctification: one before God, in truth, *Eph. 4. 28.* the other before men, in the iudgement of
25 charitie. Thus men are said, *to tread vnder foote the blood of Christ wherewith they were sanctified*, *Heb. 10. 29.* Thus all that are of right to be baptised, are holy and regenerate: not in the iudgement of certentie, which is Gods; but in the iudgement of charitie, which is mans: secrets alwaies reserved to God.

30 Againe, when *Paul* saith, *in the sight of God*, he gives vs to vnderstand, that there is an vniuersall iudgement of God, before whom we must all appeare, and be iudged. And when *Paul* saith in the time present, that *God iustificieth* (though not by workes) he signifies, that this iudgement is already begunne vpon vs, even in this
35 life. This must teach vs, to walke in godly and holy conuersation, in the feare of God: and to watch and pray, that we may be found worthie, to stand before God. Malefactours, when they are going to iudgement, & when they see the Iudge set, lay aside skorning, and bethinke themselues what to say, or doe. Now we are these
40 malefactours: and we know that God hath alreadie begunne to giue iudgement of vs: and therefore we must prepare our selues to make a good reckoning.

In the testimonie of the Prophet our dutie is set downe, and that is, that we must in this world live by faith. That we may live by faith, we must doe two things. One is, to choose the true God for our God: the second is, in our hearts to cleave vnto him, and that according to his word. First therefore, wee must cleave fast to his commandements, by entring into the way of his precepts, and by walking in them. For this cause we must haue alwaies about vs the eye of knowledge, to direct our steps in the waies of God, that wee euer keepe our selues in our callings, that is the dutie wee owe to God and man. Secondly, while we stand in the waies of God, we shall be assailed with many Temptations on the right hand, and on the left: therefore we must further cleave to the promises of God: beleeuing his presence, protection, and assistance, in all temptations and dangers. And this our faith must be as it were a hand to stay vs. Here two caueats must be remembred. One, that we must not prescribe vnto God the manner of his assistance: but leaue it, with other circumstances of time, and place, to God. The second is, when all earthly things faile vs, wee must rest vpon the bare word of God, and beleue the promise of remission of sinnes, and life euerlasting. This is to live by faith. And this dutie must be practised, when we are in the field to fight for our countrey: when we lie on our death beds: and when we are in any danger.

Marke further, *Paul* faith, *the iust man liues by faith*: he therefore that is iustified continues to be iustified by his faith: and therefore the second iustification, that is said to be by our workes, is a meere fiction. And in that none liues by faith, but he that is a iust man, we see that true faith is alwaies ioyned with the Purpose of not sinning, or with the iustice of good conscience: and where they are seuered, there is no more but a meere pretence of faith.

When *Paul* faith [*the Law is not of faith*] he sets downe the maine difference betweene the Law and the Gospel. The Law promiseth life, to him that performes perfect obedience, and that for his workes. The Gospel promiseth life, to him that doth nothing in the cause of his saluation, but only beleeueth in Christ: and it promiseth saluation to him that beleueth, yet not for his faith, or for any workes else, but for the merit of Christ. The law then requires doing to saluation, and the Gospel beleeuing, and nothing else.

Obiect. 1. The Gospel requires repentance, and the practise of it. *Ans.* Indeepe the law doth not teach true repentance; neither is it any cause of it, but onely an occasion. The Gospel onely prescribes repentance, and the practise thereof: yet onely as it is a fruite

fruite of our faith, and as it is the way to saluation in which we are to walke, and no otherwise.

Obiect. II. The law requires and commands faith. *Ans.* The law requires faith in God, which is to put our affiance in him. But the Gospel requires faith in Christ, the Mediatour, God-man: and this faith the law neuer knew.

Obiect. III. In the Gospel there are promises of life, vpon condition of our obedience. *Rom. 8. 13.* If by the spirit ye mortifie the deedes of the flesh, ye shall live. *1. Ioh. 1. 9.* If we confesse our sinnes, God is faithfull to forgive them. *Ans.* The promises of the Gospel are not made to the worke, but to the worker: and to the worker not for his worke: but for Christs sake, according to his worke. As for example: promise of life is made not to the worke of mortification, but to him that mortifieth his flesh, and that not for his mortification, but because he is in Christ, and his mortification is the token or euidence thereof. And therefore it must be remembred, that all promises of the Gospel that mention workes, include in them Reconciliation with God in Christ.

Obiect. IV. Faith is a vertue, and to beleue is a worke: therefore one is worke is commanded in the Gospel, and is also necessarie to saluation. *Answer.* The Gospel considers not faith as a vertue, or worke, but as an instrument, or hand, to apprehend Christ. For faith doth not cause, effect, or procure our iustification and saluation, but as the beggers hand, it receiues them, being wholly wrought and giuen of God.

This distinction of the law and the Gospel, must be obserued carefully. For by it we see that the Church of Rome hath erroneously confounded the law and the Gospel, for this many hundred yeares. The law of *Moses* (say they) written in tables of stone, is the law: the same law of *Moses*, written in the hearts of men by the holy Ghost, is the Gospel. But I say againe, that the law written in our hearts, is still the law of *Moses*. And this oversight in mistaking the distinction of the Law and the Gospel, is and hath bin, the ruine of the Gospel.

We must here further obserue, that ^{*}beleueing, and doing, are opposed, in the article of our iustification. In our good conuersation they agree: faith goes before, and doing followes: but in the worke of our iustification, they are as fire and water. Hence I gather, that to the iustification of a sinner, there is required a speciall and an applying faith, for generall faith is numbred among the workes of the law: and the diuels haue it. This kinde of beleueing therefore, and doing, are not opposit. Again, hence I gather, that workes of

* Credere.
Facere.

faith and grace, are quite excluded from iustification ; because the opposition doth not stand betweene beleeuing, and the workes of nature : but simply, betweene beleeuing, and doing.

Lastly, it may be demanded, why the Lord saith, *Hee that doth the things of the law shall live* ; considering no man since the fall, can do the things of the law ? *Ans.* The Lord since mans fall, repeates the law in his old tenour, not to mocke men, but for other weighty causes. The first is, to teach vs that the law is of a constant, and vnchangeable nature. The second is, to aduertise vs, of our weaknesse: and to shew vs, what we cannot doe. The third is, to put vs in minde, that we must still humble our selues vnder the hand of God, after we haue begun by grace to obey the law ; because euen then wee come farre short in doing the things which the law requires at our hands.

13 *Christ hath redeemed vs from the curse of the law, when he was made a curse for vs : (for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on the tree.)*

14 *That the blessing of Abraham might come to the Gentiles, through Christ Iesus, that we might receiue the promise of the spirit by faith.*

Paul hauing prooued the truth of his doctrine by sundrie arguments, in the former part of this chapter, he here answereth an objection, the occasion whereof is from the 10. verse. It may be framed on this maner : If they be accursed that continue not in all things written in the law to doe them, then all men are accursed: and the Gentiles are not partakers of the blessing of *Abraham* (as you haue said.) Answer is here made, that to them that beleue there is full redemption, from the curse of the law. And *Paul* for the better inlightning of his answer, here makes a description of our redemption by foure arguments. The first is the author: *Christ hath redeemed vs from the curse of the law.* The second is the forme or manner of our Redemption, in these words, *When he was made a curse for vs.* And this forme is further declared by the signe, in these words : *for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on the tree.* The third argument is the end, in these words, *that the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles.* The last is also an other end, *that we might receiue the promise of the spirit.*

Touching the Author, in these words, *Christ hath redeemed vs from the curse of the law*, sundrie things may be learned. First of all, comparing these words with the 10. vers. or comparing the answer, and

and the obiection together, we see and are to obserue, that the threatnings of the law, are to bee vnderstood with an exception from the Gospel. All are cursed, saith the law, that doe not continue to doe all things written therein, *Except they haue pardon*, and be redeemed by Christ, saith the Gospel. And thus are all curses of the law to be conceiued, with a limitation or qualification, from the Gospel.

Againe, in that Christ hath redeemed vs from the curse of the law, here is our comfort, that neither, hell, nor death, nor Satan, hath any right or power ouer vs, so be it we do vnfaignedly beleeeue in Christ. *For we are bought with a price*. And for this cause, we must be admonished, not to feare any euill ouermuch, as the reuillings, & curses of euill tongues, witchcraft, the plague, pestilence, famine, the sword, or death. For the curse which makes all these, and many other things hurtfull vnto vs, is remooued from them that are in Christ. And therefore all immoderate feare should be restrained.

Thirdly, our dutie is, to glorifie God and Christ, who hath redeemed vs, and that both in bodie and soule. The redeemed must liue according to the will of their redeemer. 1. Cor. 6. verse 20. This is all the thankfulness that we can shew to our Redeemer for his mercie.

Lastly, here an obiection made by some, may be answered. If (say they) we were redeemed by Christ, beeing captiues to the diuell, the price of our Redemption was paid to him, and not to God. *Ans.* We were captiues properly to the iustice of God in the law, to the order whereof we stand subiect: and hy this meanes we are captiues to the curse of the law, and consequently to the diuell, who is the minister of God, for the Execution of the said curse. And being captiues to the diuell, no otherwise then as he is the minister of God, for the inflicting of punishment: the price must not bee paid to him, but to God, who is the principall, and hath a soueraintie ouer him and vs.

I come now to the forme of our Redemption, *Who was made a curse for vs*. For the better vnderstanding of these words, foure points are to be handled. The first is, what is this curse? *Ans.* A double death: the first of the bodie, the second of the soule. The first is, the separation of the bodie and soule. The second is, the separation of the whole man from God: not in respect of his vniuersall power and presence (for the very damned haue their moouing and beeing from him,) but in respect of his fauour, and speciall loue, whereby God ceaseth to be their God. And this is death indeede, whereof the first, is but a shadow: and this is the curse of the law.

The second point is, How Christ was a curse, or accursed, who is the fountaine of blessednesse? *Ans.* He is not so by nature: for he is the naturall Sonne of God: nor by his owne fault: for hee is the vnspotted Lambe of God: but by voluntarie dispensation: and therefore *Paul* saith, *he was made a curse*. And he was made a curse, first, because hee was set apart in the eternall counsell of the Father, Sonne, and holy Ghost, to be our redeemer, and consequently to be a curse. In this regard, the Father is said to *hane sealed him*, *Ioh. 6. 27.* and he is said againe to be *preordained before all worlds*, *1. Peter 1. 20.* and given *according to the counsell and foreknowledge of God*. *Act. 3. 22.* Secondly, he was made a curse, in that he was in time consecrated to be our Mediatour and so a curse. And this consecration was first in his baptisme, in which he put vpon him our guilt, as we put off the same in ours; and secondly on the crosse and passion, in which he tooke vnto him the punishment of our sinne. And thus was he made a curse. It may be objected, that he is the Son of God: and therefore no curse. *Ans.* Christ must be considered as the Son of God, and againe as our pledge and suretie. *Heb. 7. 2 2.* In the first respect he was not accursed, but in the second.

The third point is, In what nature was Christ accursed? *Ans.* Whole Christ God-man, or Man-god, was accursed. For the Lord of life (saith *Paul*) was crucified, and consequently accursed. *1. Cor. 2. 8.* Yet this limitation must be added, that the curse was not vpon the Godhead of Christ, but onely in his flesh, or manhood. For he suffered (saith *Peter*) in the flesh, *1. Peter 4. 1.* Moreouer, the soule of Christ was the more principall seate of the curse, as it was the principall seat of sinne. Therefore the Prophet saith, *he made his soule an offering for sinne*, *Isa. 53. 10.* and Christ said, *My soule is heauy unto the death*.

The fourth point is, How farre forth Christ was accursed? *Ans.* In the first death there are two degrees, separation of the bodie and soule, and the putrifaction of the bodie separated. And Christ entred onely into the first, and not into the second. For his bodie beeing dead indured no corruption. Againe, in the second death there are two degrees. The first is, a separation from God in sense and feeling: and the second, is an absolute separation from God. Into this second degree of death, Christ entred not, because he said in the midst of his passion, *My God, my God*. And this absolute separation could not be without the dissolution of the personall vnion. Into the first degree of the second death, he entred: namely, into the apprehension and feeling of the wrath & indignation of God due to mans sin. And this appeares by his bloodie sweat of thicke and

- and clotted blood; by his complaint that he was forsaken: by his feares and sorrowes in the time of death, in which he comes short of sundry Martyrs, vnlesse we acknowledge that he indured further paines of death then euer they did: by his condition, in that hee
- 5 takes vpon him the condition of the first *Adam*, who vpon his fall was to indure the first and second death. Here two questions are to be demanded: the first, How and in what manner Christ suffered the wrath of God? *Ans.* He indured it willingly of his owne accord: he did not onely in minde see it before his eyes, but also he felt it:
- 10 it was laid and imposed on him, and he incountred with it: but it had no dominion or lordship ouer him. *Act. 2. 24.* The second is, How much he suffered of the wrath of God? *Ans.* The punishment he suffered was in value and measure answerable to all the sinnes, of all the Elect past, present, and to come: the Godhead supporting the manhood, that it might be able to beare, and overcome
- 15 the whole burden of the wrath of God. If it be said, that a creature cannot haue an infinite apprehension of the wrath of God: I answer, it sufficeth that God laid infinite wrath vpon him, and that he apprehended it according to the condition of a creature. For in
- 20 so doing, he incountred with the whole wrath of God. One man in a breach, or at a bridge, may stand against an whole armie, and beare the brunt of it: why may not then the manhood of Christ supported by the Godhead, beare the stresse of the whole wrath of God? Against this doctrine, sundry things may be obiected.
- 25 *Obiect. I.* The Scripture ascribes all to the blood of Christ, and therefore to the death of the bodie. *Ans.* By blood, is meant a bloodie death: by the bloodie death, the death of the crosse: by the death of the crosse, a death accursed, or the death of the bodie, ioynd with the malediction of the law.
- 30 *Obiect. II.* The suffering of the anger of God was not figured in Sacraments or Sacrifices. *Ans.* The beast, whereof the burnt offering was made, was first tied to the hornes of the altar: his blood then was shed: and lastly hee was all burnt vpon the altar vnto God: and hereby was figured the fierie wrath of God.
- 35 *Obiect. III.* Temporall death, or the curse for halfe a day, cannot counteruaile eternall death. *Ans.* Yes, in Christ. For if man could suffer and overcome punishment in measure infinite, hee should not suffer eternally: but this no man nor Angel can doe: and therefore man must suffer punishment for measure finite, for
- 40 time infinite: because the punishment must be answerable to God, whose maiestie is infinite. Now Christ being God and man, suffered punishment indeede infinite: and therefore it was not necessary that

that hee should indure it eternally. Againe, here the dignitie of the person helpeth: for in that the Sonne of God suffered the curse of the law for halfe a day, it is more then if all men had suffered eternall death. Therefore the death of Christ in respect of the measure of the punishment, as also in respect of the value, and dignitie thereof, counteruailes death euërlasting.

Obiect. IV. It is hard to say, that Christ suffered the paines of hell. *Ans.* The Latin translation (commonly receiued,) hath as much, that *he could not be holde of the sorrows of hel, Act. 2. 24.* And there is no offence to say, he suffered the paines of hell, so farre forth as this suffering may stand with the puritie of his manhood, and with the truth of the personall vnion.

The vse. Friers teach, that if Christ had pricked his finger, and let fall but one droppe of blood, it had bin sufficient to redeeme all the world. But they dreame. For *Paul* saith, *hee was made the curse of the law, to redeeme vs.* This had bin a needlesse work, if a pricke in the finger, or any punishment without death, would haue done the deede.

That Christ became a curse for vs, it shewes the greatnesse and horribleness of our sinnes, it shewes the grieuous hardnesse of our hearts, that neuer almost mourne for them: it shews the vnspeakable loue and mercy of God, for which we are to bee thankfull for ever, and that all manner of waies.

In that the Sonne of God became a curse for our sinnes, we are put in minde, to see, acknowledge, and consider them, and with all to bewaile them, and to humble our selues for them: and to detest them more and more, vnto the very death. For what is more worthie of hatred, then that which causeth the Sonne of God to be accursed. They which beleue that Christ by beeing a curse hath redeemed them from the curse of the law, doe in truth die vnto all their sinnes, and liue vnto God. Many indeede professing Christ, make no change of life at all: and the reason is, because a secret Atheisme makes them say in their hearts, *There is no Christ, there is no curse, that was endured by Christ.* Clenſe your hearts of this hidden Atheisme, and looke that inwardly in your spirits, you die vnto your sinnes, and liue to God.

In that Christ was obedient to his Father in bearing the curse of the law, we are taught in all things to subiect our selues to the will of God. Our obedience must not onely bee in doing this or that, but also in suffering the miseries laid on vs to the death: this is the best obedience of all, and the trueſt marke of Gods child, to obey in our sufferings.

Moreouer,

Moreover, that Christ was accursed, it is confirmed by the sentence and decree of God: *Cursed is every one that hangeth on the tree.* Deut. 21. 23. The ground of this sentence is the sinne of the malefactor: for whom God curseth, hee curseth for his offence. And
 5 here it may bee demanded, why he that is stoned to death is not likewise accursed? *Ans.* Hee also is accursed: but there are speciall reasons why the man hanged on the tree is cursed. First, among the
 10 Jewes, they which were hanged, were most grievous malefactours, as blasphemers, and idolatours: and their punishment was accordingly, most grievous. Secondly, hanging (as among all nations, so among the Jewes) was a most odious, and infamous death. Thirdly, God did foresee that the Messiah should die on the crosse, and therefore he accursed this kinde of death. If it bee
 15 sayd, that there was no fault or offence in Christ; and therefore he could not bee accursed: I answer, that hee became sinne for vs, in that our sinne was applied and imputed to him. It may bee further objected, that the theefe which repented, was not accursed, though he were hanged on the tree. *Ans.* As a theefe, he was accursed; as he was a theefe, and repented, the curse was remooued. For the lawe
 20 in the curses thereof, giues place to the Gospel: iudgment yeelds to mercy: and the Gospel puts an exception to the law.

The vse. If the malefactor hanged, be accursed, and defile the earth: how vile and accursed is the living malefactor, the blasphemer, adulterer, murderer, &c. who hath entred no degree of punishment? Let this be considered, to terrifie offenders.

Againe, let vs consider the scope of this law. Because he that hangs on the tree, is accursed: therefore saith the law of God, *hee must be taken downe, and buried.* Marke the equity of the law: and that is, that things euill and accursed, are to be remooued from the eye
 30 and sense of man. This charge the Lord giues of lesse matters, namely, of sights vndecent, and vnseemely. Deut. 23. 15. Againe, we are commanded not so much as to name fornication, vncleannes, couetousnes, iesting, foolish talking, &c. Eph. 5. 3. Here we are to be put in minde, that the Plaies (commonly in vse) are to be
 35 banished out of all Christian societies. For they doe nothing else but reuiue and represent the vile and wicked fashions of the world, and the misdemeanour of men, which are things accursed, and therefore to be buried, and not once to be spoken of. Againe, all euill in our example, whether in word, or in deede, must bee buried, as much
 40 as may be: for it defileth, and is accursed.

Here it may bee demanded, how this law of God, (*he is accursed, therefore let him be taken downe, and buried*) standes with the order

order vsed in this and other countries, in which men are hanged in chaines for the terrour of the world? *Ans.* Iudiciall lawes, if they haue in them morall equitie, and serue directly to sense in the precepts of the Decalogue, are perpetuall, and bind all men; else not. As for the iudiciall determinations of this or that manner of punishment, they concerne vs not, but God hath left euery nation free, though not in respect of punishment, yet in respect of the manner and order thereof.

The third point, whereby our redemption is described, is the ende thereof, *that the blessing of Abraham, that is, righteousnesse and life euerlasting, may come vpon the Gentiles.* Here two things are to be considered. The first is, whence comes the benedictio of *Abraham*? *Ans.* From the cursed death of Christ. For thus are the words, *Hee was made a curse for vs, that the benediction of Abraham might come vpon the Gentiles.* Marke here how God workes one contrarie by the other. In the creation, he made something, not of something, but of nothing: he called light out of darkenes: he kills, and then makes aliuie, *Hof. 6.* he sends men to heauen, by the gates of hell: hee gaue light by a temper of spittle and clay, a fit meanes to put out light. In the worke of our redemption he giues life, not by life but by death, and the blessing by the curse. This shewes the wisdom, and power of God: and it teacheth vs in the worke of our conuersion and saluation, not to goe by sense and feeling, because God can, and doth worke one contrary, in, and by the other.

The second point is, where this benediction of *Abraham* is to be found. *Ans.* The text saith, *It is extant in Christ Iesus, who is as it were the store-house of Gods blessing, and the dispenser of it to all nations.* In him are hid all treasures of wisdom, and knowledge. *Col. 2.* God and the Lambe are al things to all the Elect in the kingdom of heauen. *Reu. 21.* Here wee see the right way to become rich: and that is, aboue all things to seeke to bee true and liuely members of Christ: for if he be ours, we can want nothing. *Rom. 8. 32. Matth. 6. 33. Psal. 34. 10.* This is a most sure way to procure vnto vs all good things that he sees to bee necessarie for vs. For Christ is the store-house of the benediction of *Abraham.* Againe, this must teach them that beleeeue in Christ, to be content in any estate, be it better or worse, for true riches is the blessing of God; and this blessing is in Christ. This is the truth, if we could discerne of things that differ. Thirdly, in our pouertie, and in the middelt of all our wants and losses, we must comfort our selues. For though we leese neuer so much, yet we retaine the principall, and that is Christ, who is the benediction of *Abraham.*

The

The fourth point is, an other end of our Redemption, *That wee might receiue the promise of the spirit by faith.* For the better vnderstanding of this, foure questions may be demanded. The first is, what is meant by the promise? *Ans.* The promise of God made in the
 5 old Testament, that he would powre out his spirit vpon all flesh. *Isa.* 44. 3. and *Ioel.* 2. 28. And here it is said, that this promise is fulfilled to the nations, when they belecue. Marke here how the promises of God lie as voide, dead, and of none effect, till the particular time of their accomplishmēt. God promiseth *Abrahā* that his po-
 10 sterity shall be a great nation after 430 yeares: for which time they remaine in thrall and bondage; but the very night after the former time was expired, nothing, no not the raging sea could stoppe their deliuerance. *Exod.* 12. 41. God promiseth deliuerance after 70 yeares captiuitie to the Israelites in Babylon. When this time was
 15 expired. *Daniel* prayed, and at the very beginning of his supplications, the decree of God for deliuerance came forth. *Dan.* 9. 23. *The vision of God* (saith the Prophet) *is for the appointed time.* *Hab.* 2. 1, and so is the promise. This must teach vs to be content, if after much praying, we finde not the fruit of our praies: because there is an appointed
 20 time for the accomplishing of them. In this respect *Dauid* saith, that *his eyes failed, and he was hoarse in praying.* *Psal.* 69. 4.

The second question is, what is meant by the giuing, or sending of the spirit? *Ans.* Without any alteration or change of place, it signifies two things. The first is, Order betweene the persons, where-
 50 by the Father, and the Sonne worke mediately by the holy Ghost, and the Holy Ghost immediately from them. The second is, that the Spirit doth manifest his presence by diuine effects in vs. In this respect hee is saide to be sent, or giuen of the Father, and the Sonne

30 The third point is, In what order is the spirit giuen? For it seemes, that we first of our selues belecue, and then receiue the spirit? *Ans.* Men are said to receiue the spirit, when they receiue some new gift of the spirit, or the increase of some old gift. *Iohn* 20. 22. Againe, to speake properly, faith and the receiuing of the spirit, are for a time
 35 both together. For first of all, we heare the promise of God: then we beginne to meditate, and to applie the saide promise to our selues, to strue against doubting, and to desire to beleue: and in doing of all this, we receiue the spirit. To beleue, is the first grace in vs that concernes our saluation: and when we beginne to be-
 40 leue, we beginne to receiue the spirit: and when we first receiue Gods spirit, we beginne to beleue. And thus by our faith receiue we the spirit: and thus also the spirit dwells in vs by faith. *Eph.* 3. 17.

And

And wee must not imagine, that we may, or can beleue of our selues, without the operation of the spirit.

The fourth point is, for what end we receiue the spirit? *Answ.* For sixe. For illumination of our minds, *1. Ioh. 2. 27. 1. Cor. 2. 12.* for regeneration, whereby the Image of God is restored in vs, *Ioh. 3. 5* for the gouernment of our counsels, wils, affections, actions, *Isa. 11. 1. Rom. 8. 14.* for the effecting of that coniunction, whereby we are vnited to Christ our head. *1. Cor. 6. 17.* for consolation, *Rom. 8. 16.* lastly, for confirmation in our faith, and euery good dutie. *2. Cor. 1. 22. Eph 1. 13.*

This receiuing of the spirit, is one speciall end of our redemption: and therefore it is most necessarie for vs, to haue the spirit of God dwelling in vs. If we haue not the spirit, we are not Christs: and without it, we can doe nothing.

We must for this cause doe such things, whereby we may obtaine and receiue a plentifull measure of Gods spirit. *Repent (saith Peter) and ye shall receiue the holy Ghost.*

Againe, we must carefully retaine and preserue the grace of the spirit in vs; by meditation in the word of God; by earnest and frequent prayer; by auoiding all such acts, in word, or deede, that may make a breach in conscience: for whatsoeuer offends conscience, quenches the spirit. Lastly, by saouring the thing of the spirit, *Rom. 8. 5.* that is, by thinking on things spirituall, by affecting of them, and delighting in them.

15 Brethren, I speake as men doe: though it be but a mans couenant, when it is confirmed, no man doth abrogate it, or adde any thing thereto.

16 Now to Abraham and his seede were the promises made. He saith not, and to the seedes, as of many; but, and to thy seede, as of one, which is Christ.

17 And this I say, that the law which was 430. yeares after, cannot disanull the couenant that was before confirmed of God in respect of Christ, that it should make the promise of none effect.

18 For if the inheritance be of the law, it is no more by promise; but God gaue it vnto Abraham by promise.

In these words, Paul meetes with a second Exception, or objection, made against that which he here principally stands vpon: namely, that the blessing of Abraham is conuained to the Gentiles, and

and that by Christ. The obiection may be framed thus: The promise made to *Abraham*, cannot now pertain to the Gentiles, because the law was added to it, and by the law it is abrogated: and therefore the Gentiles are to be iustified, and saved, by the obseruation of the law. To this obiection, *Paul* makes a double answer. One is, that the promise cannot be abrogated: the second, that if it might be abrogated, yet the law cannot doe it. The first he confirms on this manner:

The Testament of God confirmed, cannot be abrogated:

10 The promises made to *Abraham* and his seed, which is Christ, are his Testament confirmed:

Therefore they cannot be abrogated.

The proposition is expresse in the 17. verse, and is confirmed, by comparison, thus. The testament of man after it is confirmed, may
15 not be abrogated: much lesse the Testament of God. v. 15. The *minor* is propounded in the 16. and 17. verses. Now I come to speake of the words as they lie.

Brethren] *Paul* had before called them *fooles*; and that iustly, because they fell from the doctrine which he taught them, to another Gospel. And yet here he calles them *brethren*. And hence let vs learne, that in diuision of iudgement and opinion, there must be
20 no diuision but vnitie of affection. It is, and hath bin alwaies the plague of the Church, that diuision of heart and affection, there takes place, where any diuision is in iudgement, though men erre
25 of infirmitie. This euill causeth more to be condemned for heretikes, then indeede ought to be: it maketh schismes where none should be: it maketh dissentions to be incurable: which otherwise might be cut off. And therefore if dissentions in iudgement arise, we must remember to suppress, enuie, hatred, pride, selfe-loue,
30 and let Christian loue beare sway.

Againe, here we see it is lawfull, to speake in Sermons as men doe, so it be done after the example of *Paul*, with these cautions. First, it must be done sparingly, and soberly, without ostentation. Secondly it must be done vpon a iust cause, as when the sayings of
35 men serue to conuince the hearers, and that in their consciences. Thirdly, a difference must be made betweene the word of man, and the word of God; leaſt in adding one to the other, the word of God lose his grace, and excellencie. Lastly, Gods word onely must be the foundation of the doctrine which is taught, and the
40 word of man is to bee added, in respect of our infirmitie to giue light, or to conuince.

That which *Paul* speakes after the manner of men, is a principle of

of law, or a conclusion of the light of nature, namely, that a Covenant or testament confirmed, may not be abrogated. *Paul* saith, it is the propertie of them that are of reprobate mindes to bee *truce-breakers*. *Rom.* 1. 30. Hence sundrie questions may be resolved. The first is, whether Legacies giuen to the maintenance of the Masse, 5 may be applied to the maintenance of the true worship of God? *Ans.* The testator in the giuing of such Legacies, hath a double intention: one is general, & that is to preferue the worship of God: the other is speciall, and that is to preferue the idolatry of the Masse. In 10 this he erreth, and therefore his will may be changed. For testaments vnlawfully made, may be abrogated. In the general he erred not: and therefore the goods may lawfully be applied to the maintenance of the true worship of God. But it may be sayde, that the next heires may recall them when the Masse is abolished. I answer, 15 no. Because they may still bee applied to the publike good of the Church. The affection of the dead was good in this case, though their iudgement was naught: and therefore regard is to be had of their affection and intent.

The second question is, whether we are to keepe covenant with 20 heretikes, and enemies? *Ans.* Yea: for the principle, *A covenant confirmed, may not be abrogated*, is the conclusion of nature, which binds all men without exeption, at all times, if the covenant be lawfull.

The third question is, what if damages and losses follow vpon 25 the covenant made and confirmed, must it then be obserued? *Ans.* Of covenants some are single, that is, bare promises, not confirmed by oath; and some againe are with oath. Againe some covenants are meere ciuill, beeing made of man to man; and some are more 30 then ciuill, beeing made of man to God, as contracts of marriage. Now if covenants be single covenants, and meere ciuill, then may they be changed by the makers, or by their successours, if hurts and losses arise. Yet if covenants be confirmed by oath, and if they be made to God, they may not be changed, so long as they are law- 35 full, though great losses insue. Reade the example of *Iosua.* 9. 18. *A good man sweareth, and changeth not, though he lose thereby, Psal.* 15. 4.

The fourth question is, whether a contract may not be dissol- 40 ued, when one of the parties hath a disease contagious in deadly manner, and incurable? *Ans.* If such a disease follow the contract, the marriage not consummate, we may presume that God doth dissolve the contract. And the covenant dissolved by God, we may without daunger hold to be abrogated.

The last question is, whether the Church of Rome hath not 45 dealt wickedly in altering the last testament of Christ, when it ministreth

nisteth the Lords supper vnder one kind? *Ans.* They sinne against the light of nature, which teacheth vs not to abrogate the testaments of men, much lesse the testament of God. It is alleadged that we receiue whole Christ vnder the one kind. *Ans.* True indeed. But
 5 we must consider the end of the sacraments is to signifie and represent perfect nourishment, in, and by Christ: now perfect nourishment is not in bread alone, but in bread & wine: and by them both ioyned together, is signified, that Christ is the bread and the water of life: now to abolish the cuppe, is to abolish the principall vse
 10 of the sacrament, and to lessen our comfort.

In the 16. verse Paul saith, *the promises were made to Abraham*, in the plurall number: because they were sometime made to *Abraham*, sometime to his seede, and sometime to both: and they were often repeated to *Abraham*, and therefore are called promises,
 15 though in substance they are but one. The seede of *Abraham*, here mentioned, is the seede not of the flesh, but of the promise, *Rom 9 7.* and this seed is first Christ Iesus, and then all that beleue in Christ. For al these are giuen to *Abraham* as children by the promise & Election of God. Moreouer, this seed is not many, (as Paul obserueth) but one: that is, one in number. It is objected, that the
 20 word [*seede*] is a name *collectiue*, and signifies the whole posteritie of *Abraham*. *Ans.* It doth sometime, but not alwaies: for *Ene* saith of *Seth*, *God hath giuen me another seede*, *Gen. 4. 25.* that is, another
 25 sonne.

Lastly, it is said, that this one particular seede of *Abraham* is Christ Iesus. Here by the name Christ, first and principally the Mediatour is meant, and then secondly all Iewes and Gentiles beleuing, that are set and grafted into Christ by their faith. For Paul
 30 saith, *Rom 9. 8.* that the children of God, or, the children of the promise, are the seede of *Abraham*: againe, *Gal. 3. 29.* They which are of Christ, are the seede of *Abraham*. And the name, *Christ*, signifies not onely the head or Mediatour, God and man, but also the Church gathered partly of Iewes, and partly of Gentiles. The body (saith Paul) is one, but the
 35 members are many: euen so is Christ. *1. Cor. 12. 12.* that is, the Church of Christ. Again, *I beare in my body the remainders of the sufferings of Christ*, *Col. 1. 24.* and the Church is called the complement of Christ. *Eph. 1. 23.* It may be objected, that by this meanes the seede of *Abraham*, is many, and not one: because Christ and all beleeuers are the seede. *Ans.* They are all one in respect of one and the same blis-
 40 sing of God, which is first giuen to Christ, and by Christ to all that beleue in him. *All are one in Christ*, *Gal. 3. 28.* and he gathers things in heauen and earth into one head, *Eph. 1. 10.*

It is hereto be obserued, that the promises made to *Abraham*, are first made to Christ, and then in Christ to all that beleue in him, be they Iewes, or Gentiles. This Conclusion is of great vse. First, by it we learne the difference of the promises of the law and the Gospel. The promises of the law, are directed and made to the person of euery man particularly: the promises of the Gospel are first directed, and made to Christ, and then by consequent, to them that are by faith ingrafted into Christ.

Secondly, by this we learne to acknowledge the communion that is betwene Christ and vs. Christ as Mediatour, is first of all elected, and wee in him: Christ is first iustified, that is, acquit of our sinnes, and we iustified in him: he is heire of the world, and we heires in him: he died vpon the crosse, not as a priuate person, but as a publike person representing all the Elect, and all the Elect died in him, and with him. In the same manner they rise with him to life, and sit at the right hand of God with him in glory.

Thirdly, here we see the ground of the Certenty of perseuerance, of all them that are the true children of God. For the office of Christ to which he is set apart, is to receiue the promise of God for vs, and to apply it vnto vs. And this worke is done by Christ without impediment, and without repentance on his part. The seale & foundation of our saluation is this, that God accepts and knowes vs for his, *2.Tim.2.19.* and that which concernes vs is, that we must worshippinge God in Spirit and truth, and depart from iniquitie.

Lastly, here is comfort against the consideration of our vnworthines. Thou saiest thou art vnworthy of the mercy of God, and therefore hast no hope. And I say againe: dost thou truly exercise thy selfe in the spirituall exercises of faith, inuocation, repentance? be not discouraged: thou must not receiue the promise immediately of God, but Christ must doe it for thee. Though thou be vnworthy, yet there is dignity and worthines sufficient in him. If thou say, that thou must at the least receiue the promise at the hand of Christ: I adde further, that he will not quench the flaxe that doth but smoke, neither will he breake the bruised reede. He accepts the weake apprehension, if it be in truth. And our saluation stands in this, not that we know and apprehend him, but that he knowes and apprehends vs first of all.

v. 17. *This I say*] In the former verses *P.* hath laid downe two grounds: one is that Testaments of men confirmed, may not be abrogated: the other, that the promises were made to *Abraham* and his seede, which is Christ. Now, what of all this, may some

man say? *Paul* therefore addeth these words, *This I say*, that is, the scope and intent of all my speech is, to shew, that the covenant or testament confirmed by God, cannot be abrogated: and secondly if it might so be; yet that the law could not abrogate the testamēt, because it was giuen 403 yeares after the confirmation of the saide testament. And because it might be doubtfull what *Paul* meanes, when he saith, *the covenant confirmed cannot be abrogated*, he explaines himselfe in the end of the verse by saying, *the promise cannot be made of no effect*.

It is here to be obserued, that *Paul* saith, *the promise made to Abraham is a covenant, or testament*. It is a Couenant or compact, because God for his part promiseth remission of sinnes and life euerlasting, and requireth faith on our part. In respect of this mutuall obligation, it hath in it the forme of a covenant. It is also a Will, or Testament in two respects. First, because the promise is confirmed by the death of the mediatur, *Heb. 9. 15*. Secondly, the things promised, as remission of sinnes, and life euerlasting, are giuen after the manner of legacies, that is freely, without our desert, or procurement. In this we see the great goodnes of God, who vouchsafeth to name them in his testament, that haue made covenant with the diuell, and are children of wrath by nature, as we all are.

Againe, in that the promise is *a testament*, remission of sinnes, and life euerlasting is *a legacie*: and for the obtainment of them, wee must bring nothing vnto God, but hunger and thirst after them, and make suite vnto God for them, by asking seeking, knocking. Thus are all Legacies obtained, and there is no more required on our part, but to receiue and accept them. And though we bee neuer so vnworthy in our selues, yet shall it suffice for the hauiug of the blessing of God, if our names bee found in the Testament of God.

Againe, *Paul* saith, that *the promise made to Abraham, is a covenant confirmed of God*. It may bee demaunded, by what meanes it was confirmed? *Answer*. By oath, *Heb. 6. 17*. Againe, it may be demaunded, to whom it was confirmed? *Answer*. To *Abraham*, as beeing the Father of all the faithfull; and then to his seed, that is, first, to the Mediatour Christ, and consequently, to euery beleeuer, whether Iewe, or Gentile. For *Abraham* in the first making, and in the confirmation thereof, must bee considered as a publike person, representing all the faithfull.

Heere againe wee see Gods goodnesse. Wee are bound simply to beleue his bare word; yet in regard of our weakenesse, bee is

content to ratifie his promise by oath, that there might bee no occasion of vnbeleefe.

Againe, here we are admonished to rest by faith on the promise of God, as *Abraham* did, when there is no hope. Some may say, I could doe so, if God would speake to me, as he did to *Abraham*. I answer againe, when God spake to *Abraham*, in him he spake to all his seed: and therefore to thee whosoever thou art, that beleeuest in Christ.

And hence we are to gather sure hope of life euermlasting. For in the person of *Abraham*, God hath spoken to vs: he hath made promise of blessing to vs: he hath made couenant with vs: and he hath sworne vnto vs. What can wee more require of him? what better ground of true comfort? *Heb. 6. 17. 18.*

Lastly, in that God thus confirms vnto vs the promise of life euermlasting, it must incourage vs to all diligence in the vse of al good meanes, whereby wee may attaine to the condition of *Abraham*: and it must arme vs to all patience in bearing the miseries and calamities that fall out in the strait way to eternall life.

Further, *Paul* saith, that the promise is a couenant confirmed, and that in respect of Christ: because he is the scope and foundation of all the promises of God: partly by merit, and partly by efficacy. By merit; because he hath procured by his death and passion, remission of sinnes and life euermlasting. By his efficacy; because he seales vp vnto vs in our consciences, remission of sinnes, and withall restores in vs the image of God. The vse. If Christ be the ground of the promise, then is he the ground & fountaine of all the blessings of God. And for this cause, the right way to obtaine any blessing of God, is first to receiue the promise, and in the promise Christ: and Christ beeing ours; in him, and from him, we shall receiue al things necessarie.

The second answer of *Paul* to the former obiection, is, that if the promise made to *Abraham* might be disannulled, yet the law could not doe it. And he giues a double reason. The first is drawn, from the circumstance of time. Because the promise or couenant was made with *Abraham*, and continued by God 430. yeares before the law was giuen: therefore saith *Paul*, the law was not giuen to disannulle the promise.

Against this reason, it may be obiected, that *Abrahams* seed, was but 400. yeares in a strange land. *Gen. 15. 13. Ans.* *Moses* speakes of the time that was from the beginning of *Abrahams* seed, or from the birth of *Isaac* to the giuing of the Lawe: and *Paul* heere speakes of the time that was betweene the giuing of the promise to *Abraham*,

Abraham, and the giuing of the law: and that was 30. yeares before the birth of Isaac.

Againe, it may bee obiected, that the Israelites were in Egypt 430. yeares, *Exod. 12. 40. The dwelling of the children of Israel, while they dwelled in Egypt, was 430. yeares.* Therefore it seemes there was more time betweene the promise, and the law. *Ans.* The meaning of *Moses* in this place, is thus much: that the dwelling of the children of Israel, while they dwelt as pilgrimes, was for the space of 430. yeares: and that in part of this time they dwelt in Egypt as 10 strangers. The words may thus be translated, *The dwelling or Peregrination of the children of Israel, in which they dwelt in Egypt, was 430. yeares.* And this peregrination begins in the calling of *Abraham*, and ends at the giuing of the law.

In *Pauls* example, we see what it is to search the Scriptures, not 15 onely to consider the scope of whole bookes, and the parts thereof; but to ponder and weigh, every sentence, and every part of every sentence, and every circumstance of time, place, person. This is the right forme of the studie of diuinitie to be vsed of the sonnes of the Prophets.

20 The second reason vsed by *Paul*, is in the 18. v. it may be framed thus. If the law abolish the promise, then the inheritance must come by the law: but that cannot be. He prooues it thus: If the inheritance of life eternall be by the law, it is no more by the promise: but it is by the promise: because God gaue it vnto *Abraham* freely 25 by promise: therefore it comes not by the law.

The opposition betweene the law and the promise, shewes that *Paul* in this Epistle speakes not onely of the ceremoniall, but also of the morall. For the greatestt opposition is betweene the morall law, and the free promise of God.

30 Let vs againe marke here the difference betweene the law and the Gospel. The law promiseth life, but to the worker, for his works, or vpon condition of obedience. The Gospel called by *Paul*, the promise, offers and giues life freely without the condition of any worke, and requires nothing but the receiuing of that which is offered. It may be obiected, that the Gospel promiseth life vpon the 35 condition of our faith. *Ans.* The Gospel hath in it no moral condition of any thing to be done of vs. Indeede faith is mentioned after the forme & manner of a condition; but in truth it is the free gift of God, as well as life eternall: and it is to be considered not as a worke 40 done of vs, but as an instrument to receiue things promised. This difference of the law and the Gospel must bee kept as a treasure: for it is the ground of many worthy conclusions in true religion.

And the ignorance of this point in the Church of Rome, hath bin the decay of religion, specially in the article of *Iustification*.

Thirdly, wee must here obserue, the opposition betweene the Law & the free promise of God, in the iustification of a sinner. For if life come by the law, it comes by the promise, saith Paul. And Rom. 4. 14. 5
If they which are of the law are heires, the promise is of none effect. By this we see the Church of Rome ouerturnes and abrogates, the free promise of God. For they of that Church teach, that the first iustification is by meere mercie: and that the second, is by the workes of the law. But the law and the promise cannot be mixed together, 10
more then fire and water: the law ioyned with the free promise, disanuls the said promise.

Lastly, in that Paul saith, God gaue and freely bestowed the inheritance by the promise, it must be considered, that this Giuing is no priuate, but a publike donation. For Abraham must be considered 15
as a publike person: and that which was giuen to him, was in him giuen to all that should beleue as he did. Art thou then a true beleuer? doest thou truly turne vnto God? Here is thy comfort: the inheritance of eternall life is as surely thine, as it was Abrahams, when he beleued. For thou art partaker of the same promise with 20
him: and when God gaue him life, hee gaue thee also life in him. Againe, persons backward, and carelesse, must be stirred vp with all diligence to vse all good meanes that they may beleue truly in Christ, and truly turne to God. For so soone as they begin to beleue, and to turne vnto God, they are entred into the condition of 25
Abraham, and if they continue, they shall sit downe with Abraham, Isaac, and Iacob, in the kingdome of heauen: and after this life they shall rest in the bosome of Abraham. For that which was done to Abraham, shall be done to all that walke in his steps.

19 Wherefore then serues the law? It was added because of 30
transgressions, untill the seede was come to which the promise was made: and it was ordained by Angels in the hand of a Mediatour.

20 Now a Mediatour is not of one: but God is one. 35

Paul hath prooued before, that the law doth not abolish the promise: his last reason was, because then the inheritance should bee by the law: which cannot be. Against this reason in the 19. and 20. verse, there is an obiection made, and answered. The obiection 40
is this. If life and iustice come not by the law, the law then is in vaine. And this obiection is expessed by way of interrogation,
Where-

Wherefore then serves the law? The answer is, in the next words, *It is added for transgressions*, that is, for the reuealing of sinne, and the punishment thereof, and for the conuincing of men touching their sinnes. *Rom. 3. 19, 20.* Moreouer, *Paul* sets downe the time or continuance of this vse of the law, when he saith, *till the seede came to which the promise was made*: that is, till *Christ* come and accomplish the worke of mans redemption. Here two questions may be demanded. The first is, whether the law serue to reueale sinne after the comming of *Christ*? For *Paul* saith, *it is added for transgressions, till Christ.* Answer, The law serues to reueale sinne, euen to the ende of the world: yet in respect of the legall or Mosaicall manner of reuealing sinne, it is added, *but till Christ.* For the law before *Christ* did conuince men of sinne, not onely by precepts and threatnings, but also by Rites and Ceremonies. For Iewith washings, and sacrifices, were reall confessions of sinne. And they were an handwriting against vs, as *Paul* saith. And this manner of reuealing sinne, ended in the death of *Christ.* *Col. 2. 14.* Againe, the Ministry of condemnation which was in force till *Christ*, at his comming is turned into the Ministry of the spirit, and of grace. *2. Cor. 3, 11.*

For vnder the law there was plentifull reuelation of sinne, with darke and small reuelation of grace: but at the comming of *Christ*, men saw heauen opened, and there was a plentifull reuelation of sinne, with a more plentifull reuelation of grace, and mercie, And in this respect also the law is said to be *till Christ.*

The second question is, whether the seede of *Abraham* were before *Christ* or no? *Ans.* All that followed the steppes of *Abrahams* faith before *Christ*, were his seede. Yet were they not, that seed, that is, the principall seede, who is *Christ*, who is the seede blessed in himselfe, and giuing blessednesse to all other. And the beleeuers that were before *Christ* or after him, are the seede of *Abraham*; in respect they are set into *Christ*, who is principally the seede mentioned in this text.

When *Paul* saith, *ordained by Angels in the hand of a Mediatour*, he makes a declaration of that which he had said before by an euident signe, on this manner. That the law serues to discouer transgressions, it appeares by this, that the Iewes could not abide to receiue the law immediately from God, but it was deliuered by Angels, and received by the hand of a Mediatour: and this argues mans guiltinesse, and his disagreement with God; because a Mediatour is of two, at the least, and of two beeing at difference betweene themselves,

The law is said to be ordained or disposed by Angels: because they

they were attendants on God in the Mount, when the law was delivered. Secondly, they were witnesses and approvers of the deliverie. Thirdly it may be, the voice of God whereby the law was published in the hearing of all the Israelites, was uttered and pronounced by the ministerie of Angels: for the holy Ghost saith, *the word spoken by Angels was stedfast*, Heb. 2. 2. that is, the law. It may be said, all this prooves not, that Angels ordained the law. *Ans.* Often in Scripture, the worke or action of the principall Agent, is ascribed to the instrument, or minister. The Saints are said to *judge the world*, 1. Cor. 6. whereas indeede they are no more but witnesses and approvers of this iudgement. In the same manner *Timothie* is said to *save himselfe and others*, 1. Timothie, 4. 16. The last trumpet is sounded by Angels, *Matth. 24. 31.* and it is called the voice of an Archangel, and the trumpe of God. 1. Thess. 4.

Moreover *Paul* saith, *the law was delivered by the hands of a Mediatour*, that is, of Christ, (as some thinke) but that cannot be: for the hand of a Mediatour, signifies the ministerie and service of a Mediatour, and this service is inferiour to the service of Angels: because the law was delivered by Angels, and received of them by a Mediatour. Therefore the Mediatour here mentioned, is *Moses*, who stood betweene the people and God, in the deliverie of the law. *Deut. 5. 5.* It may be objected, that there is but *one Mediatour Christ*, 1. Tim. 2. 8. *Ans.* Mediatour of reconciliation is onely one, and that is Christ: and *Moses* is a Mediatour onely in the relating and reporting the law from God to the Israelites.

Paul adds that a Mediatour is not of one, that is, that every Mediatour is of two at the least, and of two at variance, and disagreement. And he saith further, that *God is one*: that is, alwaies the same and like himselfe without change. And the reason of the speech is this. *Paul* hath taught that the law was given by a Mediatour, and that this declared a difference between God and man. Now it might be said, where is the fault in this difference, and who is the cause of it? *Paul* saith, not God but man: because *God is alwaies one and the same*.

Thevse. In that the law is for transgressions, wee are taught to examine and search our hearts and lives by the law of God. *Zephaniah. 2. 1.* *Fanne you, O nation, not worthie to be loved. Lam. 3. 40.* *Let vs search our hearts, and turne againe to the Lord.* That we may the better examine our selues, foure rules must be observed.

The first, when any one sinne is forbidden in any commandment of the law, vnder it all sinnes of the same kind are forbidden, all causes of them, and all occasions.

The

The second, a commandment negative includes the affirmative, and binds vs not onely to abstaine from euill, but also to doe the contrarie good.

The third is, that eery commandment must be vnderstood with a curse annexed to it, though the curse be not exprested.

The fourth is, that we must especially examine our selues by the first and last commandments. For the first forbids the first motions of our hearts against God, and the last forbiddes the first motions of our hearts against our neighbor, though there be no consent to doe the euill which wee thinke. *Paul* saith of himselfe, that the commandment, *Thou shalt not lust*, was it that especially humbled him. *Rom. 7.*

According to these and other rules, (which now I omit) we must with special care examine our selues. The want of this dutie causeth men to rot away in their sinnes, without remorse or true repentance: and it is the cause that so many men profit so little in hearing the word preached; because they know not what sinne meanes, neither can they search aright their consciences and liues.

Moreouer, after we haue begunne to practise this dutie, we must often (as occasion shall be giuen) renew it to the end. Consider *Dauids* example. *Psal. 119. 59.*

When *Paul* saith, that the law is added till *Christ*, we see that the Legall ministerie of death is abolished now; and that we are vnder the Ministerie of the spirit and life. And for this cause wee in these last daies, that are Ministers of the word, must preach the doctrine of saluation plainly, to the very consciences of men. *2. Cor. 4. 1.* Again, the people of these daies ought to abound in knowledge, and their obedience should be answerable to the measure of their knowledge. And, if after much preaching in these dayes of light, the Gospel be hid, (as it is to very many, who remayne still in ignorance, and disobedience) it is a fearefull signe vnto them of their condemnation. *2. Cor. 4. 4.*

In that the law of God was ordained or deliuered by Angels, we are put in minde to reuerence it, and to esteeme it as a treasure. Secondly, we are to feare to breake the least commandment of the law: because the Angels that were ordainers of the law, doe no doubt, obserue the keepers & the breakers of it, and are ready prest to be witnesses and reuengers against them that offend. *Stenen* vpbraides the Iewes, that the law was giuen by the dispensation of Angels, and yet they brake it. *Act. 7. 53.* Thirdly, if thou offend and breake the law, repent with speede: for that is the desire ioy of Angels. They that deliuered the law, reioice to see the keeping of it.

Lastly,

Lastly, if thou sinne and repent not, looke for shame and confusion before God and his Angels.

Because *Moses* was a mediatur to the Iewes, Papists gather that therefore, Angels, and Saints, may be mediatours. *Ans.* It followes not, *Moses* was ordained a mediatur, so are not they. *Moses* was present with the Iewes, and had fellowship with them whose mediatur he was, Saints are absent in heaven, and Angels though they be about vs, haue no fellowship with vs. *Moses* was mediatur but once, and that onely in one thing: Saints are made continuall mediatours. Lastly, *Moses* was mediatur in relating and reporting the law from God, to the people: Saints and Angels are made mediatours to relate and report our praiers, and the secrets of our hearts to God.

Whereas *Paul* saith; that a *Mediatour* is not of one, but a third, betweene two at the least: it may be demanded, how Christ can bee mediatur betweene man and God, considering he is God? *Answer.* Though Father, Sonne, and holy Spirit, be one and the same in respect of Godhead, yet are they distinct in respect of person, or in respect of the manner of subisting: so as the Father is the Father, not the Sonne, or holy Ghost; the Sonne, the Sonne, and not the Father, or the holy Ghost; the holy Ghost, the holy Ghost, and not the Father, or the Sonne. The Sonne then, and the Father, beeing persons really distinct, the Sonne may be, and is Mediatur, first of all, in respect of order to the Father, and in him, to the Sonne, and the holy Ghost. For the three persons being of one nature and will, when the Father is appeased, in him also the Sonne, and the holy Ghost are appeased. Thus *Iohn* saith, *If any man sinne, we haue an advocate with the Father.* It may be said, that Christ cannot be Mediatur to himselfe. *Ans.* In Christ consider his nature, and his Office. By nature, he is the Sonne of God: by office, he is Mediatur, and thus he is *God-man*, or *Man-god*: and as Mediatur by voluntarie dispensation, he is inferiour to himselfe as he is the essentiall Sonne of God. And in the same manner, Christ as *God-man* is Mediatur to himselfe as he is the Sonne of God. For as he is the Sonne of God, he is the partie offended; as he is Mediatur *God-man*, he is the partie that makes reconciliation.

Lastly, the propertie of God must be obserued, that he is vnchangeable, *Iam.* 1. 17. *Mal.* 3. 16. It may be obiected, that God is said in Scripture to repent. *Ans.* God is said to repent, not because hee changeth either nature or will: but because he changeth his actions of mercie and loue, into effects of anger after the maner of men. Againe, it may be obiected, that God changed the law and abolished

abolished ceremonies. *Ans.* This God did by an vnchangeable decree, before all worlds: and so the change is in the law, and not in God. For God can decree to change this or that, without change.

The vse. Gods vnchangeablenesse is the foundation of our comfort. Saint Paul saith, *If we loue God, we are knowne of him, 1. Cor. 8. verse 3.* Now the first wee may certainly finde in our selues, namely, the loue of God, and Christ: and for the second, God is vnchangeable. For they which are once knowne of God, are euer knowne of him; and that euen then when they feele nothing but Gods anger.

Againe, we are put in minde to be vnchangeable in good things, as in faith, hope, loue, good counsels, honest promises, and such like, specially in the maintenance of true religion. For we ought to bee like vnto God. It is the poesie of our gracious Queene, *Semper eadem, Alwaies one and the same*; no doubt in good things, specially in the religion established among vs. The same mult be the minde of all good subiects and all good people. *1. Cor. 15. 58.*

21 *Is the law then against the promise of God? God forbid: if there had beene a law giuen, which could haue giuen life, surely righteousness should haue beene by the law.*

22 *But the Scripture hath concluded all vnder sin, that the promise by the faith of Iesus Christ, should be giuen to them that beleue.*

In these words, Paul propounds and answers an other obiection, in number the fourth. The occasion of the obiection, is taken out of the former words, in which Paul saith, *the law is for transgressions.* It may be framed on this manner: If the law serue to conuince and condemne vs of sinne, it serues not to giue life but to kill, and so it is contrarie to the promise which giueth life. The answer is made negatiuely, *God forbid.* And a double reason is rendered of the deniall. The first is this: If the law could giue life, it should also giue iustice, or iustifie: and so, it should be contrarie to the promise (because then there should be two contrarie waies of iustification, one by faith alone, the other by faith with workes.) Therefore in that it kills and condemnes, it is not contrarie to the promise. The second reason is in the 22. verse. Things subordinate, whereof one serues for the other, are not contrarie: the law and the promise are subordinate; for the law prepares the way for the accomplishing of the promise, in that it shuts all vnder sinne, that the promise may bee giuen to them that beleue in Christ.

The

The vsa. In that *Paul* reiects the blasphemous obiection, with;
God forbid: wee are taught to auoide things said or done to the
dishonour of God, with loathing and detestation. When it was
related to *Ahab* and *Iezabel*, that *Naboth* had blasphemed God,
they beeing idolaters, solemnise a fast, pretending danger by the
sinne. *1. King. 21. 12.* *Caiphas* supposing that Christ had blasphe-
med, rent his garments, *Matth. 26.* When *Iob* did but suspect his
children of blaspheming God, he called them and sanctified them.
Iob 1. 5. It is the fault of our daies, that many blaspheme by cur-
sing, swearing, &c. without feare, and many doe it (as many disso-
lute souldiers) in a brauerie: and hearers thereof for the most part
are nothing moued thereat, so ordinarie is the offence. This
shewes the wickednesse of our times.

In the first reason, *Paul* deliueres a notable conclusion, namely,
that the thing which is the meanes to procure life vnto vs, is also
the meanes of our iustice or iustification before God. And good
reason. For iustice causeth life: and that which giueth life, first of all
giueth iustice. Hence it followes that workes cannot meritoriously
deferue eternall life. For if life be by the workes of the law, then
iustice also: but that cannot be: for we must first of all be iustified,
before we can doe a good worke. Let the Papiſts consider this. A-
gaine, they which teach, that faith is alone in iustification, and that
both faith and workes concur as causes of saluation, are deceiued.
For by the former conclusion of *Paul*, if workes be causes of salua-
tion, then must they also haue a stroake in our iustification, which
they haue not. And therefore they are the way of our saluation,
but not any cause at all. Lastly, here we see that many among vs do
not hold Christ, or beleue in him aright, for their iustification: be-
cause they hold him without change of heart and life. For by *Pauls*
conclusion, whom Christ quickneth, them hee iustificieth: and
whom he doth not quicken, them he doth not iustifie. Examine
thy selfe then: if Christ haue sanctified & renewed thy heart, thou
art iustified: if thy heart be yet vn sanctified, and thy life vnre-
formed, deceiue not thy selfe with fond imaginations: thou art
not yet iustified.

The 22. verse followeth, containing the second reason. And first
let vs consider the meaning of the words. *The Scripture*] the words
are in the Originall thus, *That Scripture*, namely, the Scripture be-
fore named, the written law in the bookes of the old Testament.
And further, *by the law*, we must vnderstand, God in the law, *Rom. 40*
11. 32. God hath concluded all vnder vnbeleefe.

Concluded] The law is compared to a ludge, or sergeant: sinne,

to a prison. And the law is said to conclude, or inclose men vnder sinne: because it doth to the full accuse and conuince vs of sinne, so as our mouthes are stopped, and we haue no way to escape.

All] All men that came of *Adam* by generation, with all that comes from them, their thoughts, desires, words, and deeds.

The promise] The thing promised, which is remission of sinne, and life euerlasting.

By the faith of Christ] That is, the faith whereof Christ is both the Authour, and matter. This is added, to signifie vnto vs, who are true beleeuers, namely, they which are beleeuers by the faith of Christ.

Against this text of *Paul* blind reason mooueth many questions, as namely why God created man, and then suffered him to fall? why God did not reſtraine the fall of *Adam* to his person, but suffers it to enlarge it ſelfe to all mankind, ſo as all be ſhut vp vnder ſin? why the promiſe is not giuen to all, but only to beleeuers? But there are two ſpeciall grounds, vpon which we are to ſtay our mindes. The firſt is, that God hath an abſolute ſoueraignetie and lordſhip ouer all his creatures. We may not therefore diſpute the caſe with God, *Rom. 9. 20. He may doe with his owne what he will, Matt. 20. 15.* The ſecond is, that the waies and iudgements of God are a gulſe, into which the more we ſearch the more we plunge our ſelues: becauſe they are *unſearchable, Rom. 11. 33.*

Marke the phraſe of *Paul* [*the Scripture concludes all vnder ſinne*] if it conclude or ſhut vp, then it determines what is ſinne, what not. And if this be ſo: then it may alſo determine what is true, and what is falſe: and ſo be truly tearmed a Iudge of controuerſies in religion. If it ſhut vp ſinners vnder their ſin, then alſo it ſhuts them that erre vnder their error, for errors be ſinnes and fruits of the fleſh. It is ſaid blaſphemouſly, that if the Scripture be a iudge, it is but a dumb iudge: and I ſay againe, that offenders may pleade for themſelues on this ſort, that the law is but a dumbe iudge, when it condemnes them, and ſhuts them vnder ſinne: but they ſhall find it hath a loud voyce in their conſciences, when they reade it ſeriouſly, & examine themſelues by it: euen ſo the Scripture ſpeakes ſufficiently for the determination of truth and falſhood, in matters of ſaluation, when it is ſearched with care and humilitie.

When *Paul* ſaith, *We are all ſhut vp vnder ſinne*; he puts vnto mind of our moſt miſerable condition, that wee are captiues of ſinne and Satan, incloſed in our ſinnes as in a priſon, like imprifoned malefactours that waite daily for the coming of the Iudge, and ſtand in continuall feare of execution. And ſeing our condition is ſuch,

such, wee must labour to see and feele by experience this our spirituall bondage, that wee may say with *Paul*, *Wee are sold vnder sinne*, and that we know there is no goodnesse dwelling in our flesh, *Rom. 7. 14, 18.* This is one of the first lessons that we must take out in the schoole of *Christ*. Againe, if we seriously bethinke our selues that we are captiues of sinne, and worthy of death, it will make vs with contentation of minde to beare the miseries of this life, sicknesse, povertie, reproach, banishment, &c. considering they come farre short of that wee haue deserued; who are no better then slaues of sinne and Satan.

Whereas *Paul* saith, that all men with all that proceeds from them, is shut vnder sin, he teacheth that all actions of men vnregenerate are sinnes. *The wisdom of the flesh*, that is, the wisest cogitations, counsels, inclinations of the flesh, are enmitie with God, *Rom. 8. 5.* To the vncleane all things are vncleane, *Tit. 1. 15.* An euill tree cannot bring forth good fruite, *Matt. 7.* It may be objected, that naturall men may doe the works of the morall law, as to giue almes, & such like, *Rom. 2. 14.* *Answ.* Sinnes be of two sorts. One is, when any thing is done flat against the commandement of God. The second is, when the act or worke is done which the law prescribes, yet not in the same manner which the law prescribes, in faith, in obedience to the glory of God. In this second regard, morall workes performed by naturall men, are sinnes indeed. Hence it followes, that libertie of will in the doing of that which is truly good, is lost by the fall of *Adam*: and that man cannot by the strength of naturall will, helped by grace, apply himselfe to the calling of God.

Whereas *Paul* saith, that the promise is giuen to beleeuers, it is manifest, that the promise is not vniuersall in respect of all mankind, but only indefinite, and vniuersall in respect of beleeuers. Wherefore their doctrine is not sound, that teach the redemption wrought by *Christ*, to bee as generall as the sinne wrought by *Adam*. Indeed, if we regard the value and sufficiencie of the death of *Christ*, it is so: but if we respect the communication and donation of this benefit, it is not. For though all be shut vnder sinne, yet the promise is only giuen to them that beleue. It is objected, that God was in *Christ* reconciling the world to himselfe, *2. Cor. 5. 19.* *Answ.* The text in hand shewes that by the world, we are to vnderstand all beleeuers through the whole world. And whereas *Paul* saith, God shut vp all vnder vnbelleefe, that hee might haue mercie vpon all, *Rom. 11. 32.* His meaning is here set downe, that he shut both Iewes and Gentiles vnder vnbelleefe, that hee might haue mercie vpon all that beleue, both Iewes and Gentiles.

Marke further, the end of the law is conuiction : and the end of our conuiction is, that the promise of mercy may bee giuen to them that beleue. Here is notable comfort, with encouragement to all good duties. Doth the law as it were in the name of God arrest thee? doth it accuse & conuince thee of manifold sinnes? doth it arraigne thee at the barre of Gods iudgement, and fill thy soule with terrour? doest thou by the testimonies of the law and thine owne conscience, see and feele thy selfe to be a most miserable and wretched sinner? Well. It may bee thou thinkest that all this is a preparation to thy damnation : but it is not. For it is contrariwise a preparation to thy saluation. For the law with a loud voice in thy heart, proclaimes thee a sinner, and threatens thee with perdition : but the end of all this is, that Iesus Christ may become a Saviour vnto thee, so be it thou wilt come vnto him and beleue in him. For he saues no sheepe, *but the lost sheepe*, and he calls not *iust men*, but *sinners to repentance*. Let vs therefore with all our hearts come vnto Christ, and beleue in him, and that by the faith of Christ, that is, with a faith ioyned with hope, loue, and new obedience. Then shall the promise of pardon and life euerlasting bee giuen to vs. Vpon this ground, persons in despaire, and grievous offenders, may see a plain way to helpe and succour themselves. For the worke of the law concluding vs vnder sinne, by the mercy of God, tends to our saluation, if we will vse the good meanes.

Lastly, *Paul* saith, the promise is made not to euery oneth that beleueth according to any faith of his owne, but to them that are true beleeuers by the faith of Christ. Therefore euery man shal not bee saued in his owne faith and religion, but onely they that are of the faith of Christ.

23 *For before faith came, we were kept vnder the law, and shut vp vnto faith which should afterward be reuealed.*

24 *Wherefore the law was our schoole-master to Christ, that we might be made righteous by faith.*

25 *But after that faith is come, wee are no more vnder the schoole-master.*

Paul in the 19. verse had said, that the law was for transgressions, till the seed came, to which the promise was made. And heere hee makes a more large declaration of his owne meaning. The summe of all that he saith may be reduced to a comparison of things vnlke, on this manner. Before the coming of faith, we were vnder the dominion of *Moses* law : but after faith was come, wee were free.

The :

The first part of the cōparison is amplified by a double similitude: the law was a guard vnto vs, v. 23. and the law was our schoolemaster, v. 24. the second part of the comparison is in the 25. verse.

Faith] That is, the Gospel, or, the doctrine of remission of sinnes and life euerlasting by Christ, exhibited in the flesh. 5

Wee] We Iewes: I *Paul* a Iew, and the rest of that nation.

Law] That is, the whole Oeconomie, Policie, and Regiment of *Moses*, by lawes partly Morall, partly Ceremoniall, and partly Iudiciall.

Kept] Compasled or guarded. Because the law before Christ 10 was to the Iewes as a guard of armed men, to inclose and keepe them, that they should not depart from God, and from their allegiance to him, vnto the sinnes, idolatries, and superstitions of the Gentiles.

Into the faith] That is, till the faith come. 15

Afterward reuealed] From the creation to the law, the Church of God was in one family; and the rest of the world beside was no people of God. From the law till Christ, the Church of God was inclosed in the nation of the Iewes, and all the world beside no Church or people of God. And this distinction of a people and no 20 people, stood sometime after the coming of Christ. *Matth. 10. 5. Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into the cities of the Samaritans enter ye not.* After the ascension of Christ, this distinction ended: because the mysterie of mans redemption was then more plainly reuealed; and it began then to be reuealed to the whole world, *Colos. 25 1. 26, 27. and Rom. 16. 25.*

Thus wee see that the law serued for transgressions: because it was to the Iewes as a guard to keepe them in the compasse of their dutie, that they fell not away to sundry transgressions.

Theyse. This shewes the greatnesse of our corruption, and that 30 the very frame of our heart is euill continually, that the Lord must be faine to set his lawes about vs, as a guard of armed men, to keepe vs that we sinne not.

Again, here wee see the vse of Gods lawes, which serue to prevent, restraine, and cut off sinne, into which otherwise men would 35 fall, vnlesse they were compasled and guarded by lawes. Some object for freedome of will, on this maner: If the lawes of God cannot be kept, they are in vaine: but they are not in vaine: therefore they may be kept. *Answ.* The maior or first part of the reason, is not true. For there are other vses of the lawes of God, the keeping of 40 them: for they serue to restraine, and to prevent open offences: and to keepe men in order, at the least outwardly.

An other use of the Law of God, was to conclude and shut vp the Iewes into the vnitie of one faith and religion. For this cause the Iewes had but one Temple, on Mercy-seat, one high Priest, &c. Hence it followes, that in a godly and Christian Common-wealth where true religion is established, there may be no toleration of any other religion. For that which is the end of Gods laws, must also be the end of all good laws in all Common-wealths and kingdomes, namely, to shut vp the people into the vnitie of one faith,

10 The Church of the Iewes, is called a *fountaine sealed, a garden inclosed, Cant. 4. 12. a vineyard hedged in. Isa. 5. 5. Psal. 80. 13.* And here we see what is the hedge or wall of this garden, or vineyard: namely, the regiment or policy of *Moses* by a threefold kind of law. This admonisheth vs to respect and with care to obserue good lawes: because they are as it were hedges & fences of all good societies: and
15 the breaking of them is the pulling downe of our fence.

Where *Paul* saith, *till the faith be reuealed.* Note, that the faith, or the Gospel, was not reuealed to the world, till the last age, after the comming of Christ. It may be said, it was alwaies reuealed to all
20 men, but not so cleerly as in these last daies. *Ans.* It was not reuealed to all, either darkly or cleerly, before the comming of Christ. *Act 14. 16.* God suffered the Gentiles to walke in their owne wies. *Eph. 2. 12.* they were without God, and without Christ. *Rom. 15. 20.* *Paul* preached where Christ was not so much as named. Hence it followes, that
25 the Vocation of men to life euermlasting, is not vniuersall: because Christ was neuer vniuersally reuealed. Neither is mans Redemption vniuersall in respect of the whole world. For Redemption by Christ was not reuealed to all nations before the comming of Christ: and a benefit to be apprehended by faith, if it be vnknown,
30 is no benefit. Lastly, it is erroneous that some teach, namely, that grace supernaturall is vniuersall: that is, that the power to beleue in Christ, and the power to turne to God, if men will, is generally given to all. But this cannot be: because it is not given to all men, so much as to heare of Christ, and to know him.

35 Seeing faith is now come, it may bee demaunded, what is the guard whereby we are kept now? *Ans.* The precepts of the morall law. *The sayings of the wise are as nailes or stakes fastened to* range men in the compasse of their owne dueties, *Eccles. 12. 11.* Againe, the peace of God, or the assurance of our reconciliation
40 with God, is a guard, to keepe our hearts and senses in Christ, *1. bit. 4. 7.* If this will not doe the deed, God hath in store his corrections and iudgements, to bee as an hedge to hedge vs in, *Hosea 2. 6.*

This beeing so, our duty is to guard and inclose our selues, specially our hearts, *Prov* 4 23. and all the senses and powers of our soules, *Psal* 141 3. by the wholesome precepts, and counsells of God. Considering we lie open to so many enemies, we should continually be armed and fenced from the head to the foote, *Eph* 6 13. otherwise we shall vpon every occasion be ouerturned.

To come to the 24 v. the Iewes might haply say, Seeing we are thus kept and shut vp by the law, what meanes haue we of comfort and of saluation? The answer is made, *the law is further our schoolemaster*. Here by *schoolemaster*, vnderstand one, that teacheth little children or Petits, the first rudiments or elements, A. B. C. And the law is a *schoolemaster to Christ*, for two causes. One, because it points out and shadowes forth vnto vs Christ, by bodily rudiments of ceremonies and sacrifices. The second is, because the law, specially the morall law, vrgeth and compelleth men to goe to Christ. For it shewes vs our sinnes, and that without remedy: it shewes vs the damnation that is due vnto vs: and by this meanes, it makes vs despaire of saluation in respect of our selues: & thus it inforceth vs to seeke for helpe out of our selues in Christ. The law is then our schoolemaster not by the plaine teaching, but by stripes and correction.

In this verse, *Paul* sets downe the manner and way of our saluation, which is on this manner; first, the law prepares vs by humbling vs then comes the Gospel, and it stirres vp faith. And faith wrought in the heart apprehends Christ for iustification, sanctification, and glorification. *Paul* sets this forth by a fit similitude. They that would be the seruants and children of God, must come into the schoole of God, and be taught of him. In this schoole are two formes, and two masters. In the first forme, the teacher and master is the law. And he teacheth men to know their sinnes, and their deserued damnation. & he causeth vs to despaire of our saluation in respect of our selues. And when men haue bin well schooled by the law, and are brought to acknowledge their sinnes, and that they are slaues of sinne and Satan; then must they be taken vp to an higher forme, and be taught by another schoolemaster, which is Faith, or the Gospel. The lesson of the Gospel is, that men after they are humbled, must fly to the throne of grace, beleue in Christ, and with all their hearts turne vnto God: that they may be iustified, and glorified. VVhen we haue by the teaching of this second master, learned this good lesson, we are become children and seruants of God.

By this then it is manifest, that there are two sorts of badde schole-

schollers in the schoole of Christ, among vs. One sort are they, which come to the Lords table, & yet learne nothing, either from the law, or from the Gospel: but content themselves with the teaching of nature. The second sort are they, which learne something, but in preposterous manner. For they haue learned that mercy & saluation comes by Christ: and with this they content themselves, not suffering themselves first of all to be schooled by the law, till they despaire in respect of themselves: nor to be schooled of the Gospel, till they beleue in Christ and repent of their sinnes.

10 In a word, he is a good scholler in the schoole of Christ that first learns by the law to humble himselfe, and to goe out of himselfe: and being humbled, subiects his heart to the voice and precept of the Gospel, which bids vs beleue in Christ, turne to God, and testifie our faith by new obedience.

15 In the second part of the comparison 25. v. Paul sets downe one point, that at the coming of the faith the Jewes were freed from the dominion of the law of *Moses*, and consequently that the said law was abrogated. The lawgiuer, that is, the expounder of *Moses* law was to last but till the coming of *Shilo*. *Gen. 49. 10.* The Law of commandements standing in ordinances, was abrogated by the flesh of Christ. *Eph. 2. 15.* And the change of the priesthood, brought the change of the law. *Heb. 7. 12.*

For the better cleering of this point, three questions are to be demanded. The first is, when was the policy, regiment, or law of *Moses* abrogated, *Ans.* At the coming of the faith, or when the Gospel first beganne to be published to the world: which was at the Ascension of Christ. And he in his death cancelled the ceremoni- all law, and tooke it out of the way, *Col. 2. 14.* When the old Testament ended, and the new began, then was the abrogation of the law: now the ending of the old Testament, and the begin- 30 of the new, was in the Resurrection of Christ. For then was the beginning of the new world, as it were.

The second question is, how farre forth the law is abrogated? *Ans.* The law is threefold: Morall, Ceremoniall, Iudiciall. Morall is 35 the law of God, concerning manners, or duties to God and man. Now the morall law is abrogated, in respect of the Church, and them that beleue three waies. First, in respect of *iustification*: and this *Paul* prooues at large in this Epistle. And secondly, in respect of the *malediction*, or curse. *There is no condemnation to them that are* 40 *in Christ, Rom. 8. 1.* Thirdly, in respect of *rigour*. For in them that are in Christ, God accepts the in-deauour to obay, for obedience it selfe. Neuertheless, the law, as it is the rule of good life, is v- changeable

changeable, and admits no abrogation. And Christ in this regard did by his death establish it. *Rom. 3. 31.*

The Ceremoniall law, is that which prescribed rites and gestures in the worship of God, in the time of the old testament. Ceremonies are either of figure and signification, or of order. The first are abrogated at the coming of Christ, who was the accomplishment of them all. *Col. 2. 17.* The second being ceremonies of particular order to the times of the old and new Testament, concerne not vs. For example: In the commandment of the Sabbath, some things are morall, some ceremoniall, some iudiciall. That in one day of seven there should be an holy rest, it is morall. Rest upon the seventh day from the creation, is Ceremoniall, in respect of order. Strictnes of rest from all labour, is ceremoniall in respect of the signification of rest from sinne, and rest in heaven. Therefore the particular day of rest, and the manner of rest, is abrogated: and Christ by his owne example, and by the example of the Apostles (examples not being contradicted in Scripture) appointed the eight day, or the day of Christs resurrection, to be the Sabbath of the new Testament.

Iudiciall lawes are such as concerne inheritances, lands, bargaines, controuersies, causes criminall; and they pertaine to the regiment of the Common wealth. If the Common wealth of the Iewes were now standing, they should be gouerned by these lawes. For to them were they giuen. The case is not likewise vs. Some are of minde, that all iudiciall lawes are abrogated: and some are of contrary minde, that all Common wealths are to be gouerned by them. But they are both deceiued: and the meane betweene both, is the truth. Know then that of Iudiciall lawes of *Moses*, some are abrogated, some are not. Such lawes as are meere Iudiciall, that is, iudiciall and not morall, and doe particularly concerne the nation of the Iewes, the land of Canaan, the times before Christ, the things of the old Testament, are abrogated. Of this kind is the law that commãds the brother to raise vp seed to his brother. *Dent. 25. 5* The law of Tenth is partly ceremoniall, & partly iudiciall, & specially concernes the land of Canaan. For as countries are richer or poorer then Canaan, so must their allowance to the Ministry be more or lesse. The seuenths, the eights, the ninths, the eleuenths, the twelfth, and not the tenths. And the allowance of Tenth, stands not in force in this & other Common wealths by the Iudiciall law of God, but by positieue laws of countries. For if it did, then Ministers should not meddle with their Tenth, either for the gathering, or for the disposing of them, but they should be brought into

into store-houses by certaine ouerseers, and they should dispose of them according to the need of the Minister, *2.Chron. 31. Malac. 3.* The law that the theefe must either restore fourefold, or be a bond-man, concernes Canaan, and those countreys. In Europe, (special-
 5 ly in the Northern and Western parts,) a straighter law is required. For the people are much giuen to idlenesse, and consequently to robbing: and they are of fierce disposition, & therefore with theft ioyne violence, & disturbance of the common peace. And for this
 10 cause (excepting in some cases) theft is punished with death. And this must not seeme hard. For euen the Iewes, when the theft was aggravated with other circumstances, might punish it with death, *2.Sam. 12.6.* And it is in the power of the Magistrate, when sinnes are increased, to increase the punishment.

Now iudiciall lawes, that are in foundation and substance moral, are not abrogated, but are perpetuall. For the better discerning of
 15 them, I giue two notes. The first is this: If a iudiciall law serue directly and immediatly, to guard and fense any one of the ten commandements, in the maine scope and end thereof, it is morall in equitie, and perpetuall: because the end and vse of it is perpetuall. I
 20 will giue sundry examples. It is the law of God, that hee of the Israelites that shall intise them to goe and worship other gods, shall be put to death, *Deut. 13.6.* This law serues to maintaine and vphold the first commandement, the end whereof is to inioyne vs to take the true God for our God: and this end is most necessarie both for
 25 Gods glory, and for the saluation of men: and therefore whatsoever thing or person ouerturneth or abolisheth this end, it must bee cut off from the society of men. Here note by the way, that they which haue beene borne, baptized, and brought vp among vs: and yet afterward become Masse-priests, and seeke maliciously and obstinat-
 30 ly, without ceasing to seduce our people, deserue in this respect, to be put to death.

Example 2. *Thou shalt not suffer a witch to liue, Exodus 22. 18.* This law againe is a fense to the first commandement. For Witches renounce God, and humane societie: and therefore are wor-
 35 thily cut off, though they doe no hurt; euen becaule they make a league with the deuill.

Example 3. *Hee that blasphemeth the name of God, shall bee put to death, Levit. 24. 16.* Vnderstand this law of manifest and notorious blasphemies, that pearce through God, as the words import: and
 40 then it is a maine fense to the third commaundement. For Gods name may in no wise be abused, and trod vnder foot: and therefore blasphemers pearcing God, are to be cut off. This is the very
 law

law of nature, as appears by *Nabuchadnezzar*, who gave in commandment to his people, that whosoever blasphemed the name of the true God, should be put to death, *Dan. 3. 29*. Here note, that manifest and convicted Atheists, if they bee put to death, haue but their deserts.

Example 4. *He that curseth father or mother, shall die the death, Levit. 24. 9.* This law is a necessary fense to the fitt commaundement, and vpholds the honour that is due to parents.

Example 5. *Hee that smites a man that hee die, shall die the death, Exodus 21. 12.* To this law there is no exception made, but one, and that is, when a man is killed at vnawares. And it is for his equitie perpetuall. For it is a maine and direct fense to the sixth commaundement. Consider an other reason, *Num. 35. 33.* *The whole land (saith the Lord) shall bee defiled with blood, till his blood bee shed that killeth a man.*

Example 6. *The adulterer and the adulteresse shall both be put to death, Levit. 20.* This Iudiciall serues to vphold and maintaine chastitie, which is the end of the seuenth commaundement. Marke withal the reasons, *Levit. 20. 22, 23.* *Lest the land spue you out: and, for these things that is, for suffering this and other sinnes vnpunished, the Gentiles were cast out.* It may be said, that Christ did not condemne the woman to death, which was taken in adulterie. *Answ.* He came to be a Mediatour, and not a Iudge or Magistrate. It is alledged that *David* was not put to death for adultery. *Answ.* He was the highest in the kingdom: there was none to iudge him. Againe, it may be said, that if adultery be death, then innumerable persons must die. *Answ.* We must doe that which we find to be the will of God: and the euents of things must be left to God.

The second note, whereby we may discern a iudiciall law to be morall for his equitie, is this; If it follow necessarily and immediately from the light, principles, and conclusions of nature. For example, *Deut. 22. 5.* *The man shall not put on the things that appertaine to the woman, nor the woman the things that appertaine to the man.* This law is more then Iudiciall: for it is a rule of common honestie, practised in those countries by the light of nature, where the written law was neuer knowne. And things good and honest which nature teacheth, are morall and must be done. This is *Pauls* rule, *Doeth not nature teach this? 1. Cor. 11. 14.*

This I speake, not to censure and condemne the lawes of this or any other common wealth: but onely to shew how farre Iudiciall lawes haue moralitie in them, and stand in force.

The third question is, what is our guide now in the time of the

new Testament, seeing the regiment and law of *Moses* is abrogated? *Ans.* The outward guide is the doctrine of the morall law, and of the Gospel. It is therefore called *the rod and the staffe of God*, *Psal.* 23. and *the rod of his mouth*, *Isai.* 11. 4. The inward guide, is the Spirit of God, writing the lawes of God in our hearts, and by them
 5 guiding vs, and being a law vnto vs, *Rom.* 8. 3, 14. Thirdly, God by manifold afflictions natures and schooles vs, partly to prevent sinnes to come, and partly to humble vs for that which is past, 1. *Cor.* 11. 32. *Iere.* 31. 18.

10 The vse. Seeing the law is abrogated (as I haue said) we must be a free and voluntary people, seruing God not of constraint but willingly, as if there were no law to compell vs. *All nations shall flow as waters to the mountaine of the Lord*, *Isa.* 2. 2. *Thy people shall come willingly in the day of assembly*, *Psal.* 110. 3. *In the dayes of Iohn Baptist, the king-*
 15 *dom: of heauen suffered violence.* *Ieremie* saith, *They shall teach euery man his neighbour and his brother*, *Ierem.* 31. 31. because men shall learne freely without compulsion, or calling vpon. Here is the fault of our times. Many say in heart to Christ, *Depart from vs, we will none of thy wayes*; and many againe are zealous for the things of this life, but
 20 for duties pertaining to Gods worship, and the saluation of their soules, they are neither hote nor colde. This negligence and slacknesse is full of danger, and therefore with speed to be amended. For *curst is he that doeth the worke of God negligently*: and the Lord will spue out such persons.

25 26 For yee are all the sonnes of God by faith in Christ Iesus.

27 For all yee that are baptized into Christ, haue put on Christ.

30 28 There is neither Iew nor Grecian: there is neither bond nor free: there is neither male nor female: yee are all one in Christ Iesus.

Paul had said before, verse 25. that the beleeuing Iewes, after the
 35 publishing of the Gospel, were no more vnder the law as vnder a schoolemaster: In this 26. verse he renders a reason hereof: and it may be framed on this manner: If wee Iewes were still vnder the law as vnder a Schoolemaster, then we should be still after the manner of seruants: but we are not after the manner of seruants: be-
 40 cause wee are children: for euen ye Galatians, and that all of you are children of God, not by Circumcision, or by the keeping of the law, but by faith in Christ. Againe, that they are children of
 God,

God, he prooves it thus: Ye are baptised into Christ, and in baptism ye haue put on Christ, in that ye are ioyned with him, and haue fellowship with him, who is the naturall Sonne of God: therefore ye are sonnes of God. It may be saide, All children of God? all baptised? all put on Christ? How can this be? seeing some 5 are Iewes, some Gentiles; some bond; some free; some men, some women. The answer is made, v. 27. there are differences of men indeede, but in Christ, all are as one.

In these words, I consider two things. The first is, the benefit or gift bestowed on the Galatians, which is sonne-ship, Adoption, 10 or the condition of Gods children. The second is, the description of this benefit by foure arguments. The first is, by the circumstance of the persons, *ye all are children of God*. The second is, the inward meanes, namely, *faith in Christ Iesus*. The third is, the outward meanes, or the pledge of adoption, *ye are all baptised into 15 Christ*. The last is, the foundation of adoption, and that is, *to put on Christ*, or, *to be one with him*.

For the better conceiuing of the benefit, three questions may be mooued. The first is, whose sonnes the Galatians were? *Answer*. 20 The sonnes of God. It may be saide, how the sonnes of God? I answer againe, God is called a father, in two respects: first, he is a father in respect of Christ, the essentiall word: and then *God* signifies the first person. Againe, God is called a father in respect of men Elect to saluation; then the name of *God* is put indefinitely: and it comprehends not onely the first person, but also the 25 sonne, and holy Ghost. For all three doe equally regenerate them that are adopted. And *Paul* saith of the Godhead indefinitely: *there is one God and father of all*. Eph. 4.6. And when we pray, saying, *Our father*, &c. we inuocate not onely the first person, but also the Sonne, and holy Ghost. And the sonne of God, is expressly called *the father of eternitie*, in respect of vs, Isa. 9.6. and he is said to 30 haue his seede. Isa. 53. 11.

The second question is, in what respect are the Galatians the children of God? *Answer*. A childe of God is two waies. *by nature*; 35 *by grace*. The childe of God *by nature*, is Christ as he is the eternall sonne of God. A childe *by grace*, is three waies. By *creation*: thus *Adam* before his fall, and the good Angels are the children of God. Secondly, by *the personall union*: thus Christ as he is man is the child of God. Thirdly, by *the grace of adoption*: thus are all true beleeuers, and in this text, the Galatians are saide to be *the children 40 of God*. In this grace of adoption, there be two acts of God: one is *Acceptation*, wherby God accepts men for his children. The other 45

is *Regeneration*, whereby men are borne of God, when the image of God is restored in them, in righteousness and true holiness.

The third question is, what is the excellency of this benefite?

Answer. Great every way. *Iob. 1. 12.* he which is the child of God is heire and fellowheire with Christ, *Rom 8. 17.* and that of the kingdom of heaven; and of all things in heaven and earth. *1. Cor. 3. 22.* he hath title in this life, and shall have possession in the life to come. Againe, he that is Gods child hath the angels of God to attend on him, and to minister vnto him for his good and
 10 salvation. *Heb. 1. 14.*

The first argument whereby the adoption of Gods children is set forth, is concerning the persons to whom it belongs, in these wordes, *All ye are the children of God.* So *Paul* saith, all the Ephesians are *Elect.* *Eph. 1. 3.* And *Peter* calls all them to whom he
 15 writes, *1. Pet. 1. 1. Elect;* and *Iohn* i. epist. 3. *the children of God* And herein they follow the iudgement of charity, leauing all secret iudgements to God. Here I obserue one thing, that euery grievous fall doth not abolish the fauour of God, and extinguish the grace of
 20 regeneration. For the Galatians erred in the foundation of religion, and had fallen away to an other Gospel: and yet *Paul* saith, that *they were* (for all this) *the children of God*, and not some, but *all of them.* This truth may be seene by experience. The child of God before his fall, hath a purpose not to sinne: in the time of temptation when he is in falling, he hath a strife, after he is fallen,
 25 he lieth not in his fall, as wicked men doe, but he recouereth himselfe by new repentance. And this shews, that the child of God by his fall doth not returne againe to the estate and condition of wicked men. When *S. Iohn* saith, *he that is borne of God sinnes not*, his meaning is this; he that is borne of God, if he fall into any offence
 30 of frailty, yet doth he not make a practise of sinne, as the wicked, and vngodly doe.

It may be saide, the Galatians, and all the Galatians, are the children of God: but what is that to vs? *Answer.* They among vs that professe true faith in Christ, with care to keepe good conscience, are likewise to hold themselves to be children of God. He be-
 35 lieues not the Gospel, that doth not beleue his owne adoption. For in the Gospel there is a promise of all the blessings of God, to them that beleue: and there is also a commandement to apply the said promise to our selues, and consequently, to apply the gift
 40 of adoption to our selues. When we are bidden to say; *Our Father*, we are bidden to beleue our selues to be children of God, and so to come vnto him. Therefore with *Paul* I say, that al we that truly be-
 leue

leeue in Christ, and haue care to leade a good life, all I say, are indeed the children of God.

The vse. Comforts arising by this benefit, are many. First, if thou be Gods childe, surely he will provide all things necessarie for thy soule and body, *Mat. 6. 26.* Our care must be to doe the office and dutie that belongs vnto vs: when this is done, our care is ended. As for the good successe of our labors, we must cast our care on God; who will provide that no good thing bee wanting vnto vs, *Psal. 34. 10.* They that drowne themselves in worldly cares, liue like fatherlesse children. 10

Secondly, in that we are children, we haue libertie to come into the presence of God, and to pray vnto him, *Ephes. 3. 12.*

Thirldy, nothing shall hurt them that are the children of God. *The plague shall not come neere their tabernacle: they shall walke vpon the lyon and the aspe, and tread them under foot, Psal. 91. 13.* All things shall 15 turne to their good, *Rom. 8. 28.* And the rather, because the Angels of God pitch their tents about them.

Lastly, God will beare with the infirmities and frailties of them that are his children, if there be in them a care to please him, with a purpose of not sinning, *Mal. 3. 7.* If a childe be sicke, the father 20 or mother doe not cast it out of doores: much lesse will God.

The duties. First, if ye be Gods childre, then walk worthy of your profession and calling. Be not vassals of sin and Satan: carry your selues as kings sonnes: bearing sway ouer the lustes of your owne hearts, the temptations of the deuill, and the leud customes and fashions of the world. When *Dauid* kept his fathers sheepe, he behaued himselfe like a shepheard: but when hee was called from the sheepfold, and chosen to be King, he carried himselfe accordingly. So must we do, that of children of the diuell, are made the children of God. And if we liue according to the lusts of the flesh, as the men 30 of this world doe, whatsoeuer we professe, wee are in truth the children of the deuill, *Iohn 8. 44. 1. Iohn 3.*

Secondly, we must vse euery day to bring our selues into the presence of God, and wee must doe all things as in his sight and presence, presenting our selues vnto him, as instruments of his glorie 35 in doing of his will. This is the honour that the child of God owes vnto him, *Mal. 1. 6.*

Thirldy, our care must be (according to the measure of grace) to resemble Christ in all good vertues, and holy conuersation. For he is our eldest brother the first borne of many brethren: and therefore we should be like vnto him. 2. *Ioh. 3. 2, 3.* 40

Fourthly, we must haue a desire and loue to the word of God, that

that we may grow by it, in knowledge, grace, and good life. For this is the milke and foode whereby God feedes his children, *1. Pet.* 2. 2. Such persons then among vs, that haue no loue or liking of the word, but spend their daies in ignorance and securitie, shew themselves to be no children of God. The child in the armes of the mother or nurce, that neuer desires the brest, is certēly a dead child.

Lastly, we must put this in our accounts, that we must haue many afflictions, if we be Gods children: for he corrects all his children. And when we are vnder the rodde of correction, we must resigne our selues to the will and good pleasure of God. This is child-like obedience: and this must be done in silence, and with all quietnes: then God is best pleased.

The internall meanes of Adoption, is faith in Christ. And for the better conceiuing of it, three questions are to be propounded. The first, what a kind of faith is this? *Ans.* A particular or speciall faith: and it hath three acts or effects. The first is, to beleue Christ to be *Iesus*, that is, a Sauour: the second is, to beleue that Christ is my or thy Sauour: the third is, to put the confidence of heart in him. When *Thomas* felt the wounds of Christ, he said, *My Lord, and my God*: and thereupon Christ said, *Because thou hast seene thou belieuest.* *Iob.* 20. 29. Here marke, that to beleue Christ to be my Christ, is faith. Against this speciall faith, the Papists object three arguments. The first is this: Euery speciall faith must haue a speciall word of God for his ground: but there is no speciall word that thy sinnes, or my sinnes, are forgiven by Christ: therefore there is no speciall faith. *Answer.* We haue that which in force and value is equiualent to a speciall word: namely, a generall promise, with a commādemēt to apply the said promise to our selues. Secondly, I answer, that the word and promise of God generally propounded in Scripture, is made particular in the publike Ministry, in which when the word is preached to any people, God reueales two things vnto them: one, that his will is to saue them by Christ: the other, that his will is that men should beleue in Christ. And the word thus applied in the publike Ministry in the name of God, is as much as if an Angel should particularly speake vnto vs from heaven.

The second Argument. Speciall faith (say they) is absurd; because by it a sinner must beleue the pardon of his sinnes, before he hath it: in as much as faith is the means to obtaine pardon. *Ans.* The giuing and the receiuing of pardon and faith, are both at one moment of time: for when God giues the pardon of sinne, at the same instant he causeth men to receiue the same pardon by faith. For order

order of nature, faith goes before the receiuing of the pardon (because faith is giuen to them that are to be ingrafted into Christ, and pardon to them that are in Christ;) for time it doth not: and therefore this second argument is absurd.

The third argument. The full certaintie and perswasion of Gods mercie in Christ, followes good conscience and good workes: and therefore faith followes after iustification. *Answer.* There be two degrees of faith. A weake faith, and a strong faith. A weake faith is that, against which doubting much preuailes, in which there is a sorrow for vnbeleefe, a will and desire to beleue in Christ, with care to vse good meanes, & to increase in faith. Strong faith is that which preuailes against doubting, and it is a full perswasion or resolution, of the loue and mercy of God in Christ. This second degree of faith follows iustification, vpon the obseruation and experience of the prouidence and goodnes of God: but the first degree of speciall faith before named, for order goes before iustification, and for time is together with it.

The second question is, when faith begins first to breed in the heart? *Answer.* When a man begins to be touched in his conscience for his sinnes, and vpon feeling of his owne spirituall pueritie, earnestly hungers and thirsts after Christ and his righteousness about all things in the world. Christ saith, *I will giue to him that thirsteth, of the well of the water of life freely, Reuel. 21. 6.* This promise declares that in thirsting there is a measure of faith. To eat & drink Christ the bread and water of life, is to beleue in him: and to hunger and thirst, hauing as it were a spirituall appetite to Christ, is the next step to this eating and drinking. Therefore this must be remembred, that the professors of the Gospel, yea teachers of the same, that want this sense of their vnworthinesse, and this thirsting, are farre wide, what gifts soeuer they haue. For they are not yet come to the first step of true faith.

The third question is, how faith in Christ is conceived in the heart? *Answer.* It is not faith to conceive in mind a bare perswasion, that Christ is my Saviour: and thereupon to thinke to be saved. But faith in Christ is conceived in the spirituall exercises of inuocation and repentance. When I see mine owne sinnes and Gods anger against me for them by the law; when I see mine owne guiltinesse, I draw my selfe into the presence of God, making confession of mine offences, and prayer for the pardon of them; and in this prayer I stroue against mine vnbeleefe, I will, desire, and endeavour to assent to the promise of God touching forgiveness: and withall I purpose with my selfe to sinne no more. This is my daily

daily practise: and thus is faith truly conceived, and confirmed. Again faith is conceived in the use of holy meanes, namely, the preaching of the word and Sacraments. For in hearing and receiving the Lords Supper to meditate vpon the promise of mercy, and in meditation to apply the said promise to my selfe, is the right way
 5 to conceive true faith. Therefore it must be remembered, that faith conceived without the exercises of inuocation and repentance, or conceived without the use of the word and Sacraments (as commonly it is) is not true faith, but an imagination or fiction of the
 10 braine, which will faile in the end.

The third point to be considered, is the signe, or the outward meanes of Adoption, and that is Baptisme. It may be demanded, how Baptisme can be a marke or signe of the childe of God, considering all sorts of men are partakers of it? *Answer.* Baptisme alone is no marke of Gods childe, but baptisme ioyned with
 15 faith: for so must the text be conceived; *All ye Galatians that beleene, are baptized into Christ.* For *Paul* had said immediatly before, *Ye are the sonnes of God by faith.* Again, the Scripture speaking of Baptisme, comprehends both the outward and the inward baptisme,
 20 which is the inward Baptisme of the Spirit, *Matth. 3. 11.* and *1. Pet. 3. 21.* And thus is Baptisme alwaies an infallible marke of the child of God.

It may further be demaunded, what are the markes of the inward baptisme? *Answer.* The new birth, whereby a man is washed and
 25 cleansed by the spirit of God, hath three speciall markes. The first is, the spirit of grace and supplications, *Zach. 12. 10.* that is, the spirit of regeneration, causing men to turne to God, and withall to make instant praier and supplication for mercy and forgiuenesse of finnes past. The second is, to heare and obey the voice of God in
 30 all things, *Iohn 8. 47. & 10. 27.* The third is, not to sinne, that is, not to liue in the practise of any sinne after this new birth is begun, *1. Iohn 3. He that is borne of God, doth not commit sin.* He may faile in this or that speech, or doe amisse in this or that action; but after his calling and conuersion, the tenour and course of his life shall be according to the commandements of God. And this is a speciall marke
 35 to discerne the inward baptisme.

Some alledge, that hauing long agoe been baptized with water, yet they feelee not the inward baptisme: and therefore they feare that they are not the children of God. *Answer.* If there be in thee a
 40 sorrow for thy corruptions and sinnes past: if thou hast a purpose to sinne no more: if thou auoideest the occasions of sinne, and fearest to offend: if hauing sinned, thou liest not in thy sinne, but

but recoverest thy selfe by new repentance : thou art verily borne of God, and baptized with the baptisme of the holy Ghost.

Others alleadge, that although they haue beene baptized, yet they feare they haue no faith : and therefore they thinke they are not the children of God. *Answer.* If there bee in thee a sorrow for thine vnbeleefe, a will and desire to beleue, and a care to increase in faith by the vse of good meanes, there is a measure of true faith in thee, and by it thou mayest assure thy selfe that thou art the child of God.

Others againe alleadge, that they haue long made prayer vnto God, and that according to his will, and yet their praier haue not bin heard : and therefore they often doubt they are not Gods children. *Ans.* If thou canst pray, though thy praier be not heard according to thy desire, content thy selfe. For the praier of the heart is the marke of the spirit of adoption, *Rom. 8. 16, 26.* And by it thou mayest know that thou art the childe of God.

Thus then wee see what is the infallible marke of the childe of God ; namely, Baptisme ioyned with true faith in Christ, or the outward baptisme ioyned with the inward baptisme of the spirit. The vse. Many auouch the present Church of Rome to bee the true Church of God : and that because they say, in it there is true baptisme, which is a marke of the Church of God. But they are deceiued : for baptisme in the Church of Rome is seuered from true faith, or from the Apostolike doctrine : and the outward baptisme is seuered from the inward baptisme. For they of that Church, ouerturne iustification by the meere mercie of God, which is the principall part of the inward baptisme. Again, the ten Tribes retained circumcision after their Apostasie : yet for all that condemned to be no people of God, *Ose. 1. 9.* The light in the lanthorne pertaines not to the lanthorne, but to the passengers in the street : euen so the confession of faith in the Symbole of the Apostles, and Baptisme that are retained in the Papacie pertaine not to the Papacie, but to another hidden Church, which by these and other meanes is gathered out of the middelt of Romish Babylon. And therefore Baptisme is rather a signe of this, then of the Romish Church.

Again, wee must be warned to take heed that wee deceiue not our selues, thinking it a sufficient matter that wee haue beene baptized. For except Christ inwardly wash vs with his Spirit, wee haue no part in him, *Iohn 13. 8.* Circumcision (saith Paul) anaileth not, unless thou bee a doer of the law, *Romanes 2. 25.* Baptisme indeed saueth, *1. Peter 3. 21.* but that is not the baptisme of water, but the

stipulation of a good conscience, by the resurrection of Christ. The outward baptism without the inward, is not the marke of Gods childe, but the marke of the foole that makes a vow, and afterward breakes it, *Ecclef. 5. 3.*

5 Moreover, baptism is not only a signe of our adoption, but also a seale thereof, and a meanes to conuay it vnto vs: and for the better vnderstanding of this point, and for a further clearing of the 27. verse, I wil speake of the whole nature of baptism. That which is to be deliuered, I reduce to eight heads. I. the name of baptism
10 and the phrases. II. the matter. III. the forme. IV. the ende. V. the efficacie of baptism. VI. the necessitie thereof. VII. the circumstances. VIII. the vse.

Touching the name; Baptisme is taken sixe waies. First, it signifies the superstitious washings of the Pharisees, who bound
15 themselves to the baptismes or washings of cups and pots, *Mat. 23. 17. 4.* Secondly, it signifies the washings appointed by God in the Ceremoniall law, *Hebr. 9. 10.* Thirdly it signifies that washing by water, which serues to seale the covenant of the new Testament, *Mat. 28. 19.* Fourthly, it signifies by a metaphor, any grieuous crosse
20 or calamitie. Thus the passion of Christ is called his baptism, *Luk. 12. 50.* Fifthly, it signifies the bestowing of extraordinary gifts of the holy Ghost, and that by imposition of hands of the Apottles, *Acts 1. 5.* and *11. 16.* Lastly, it signifies the whole Ecclesiasticall Ministerie. Thus *Apollos* is said to teach the way of the Lord, *knowing*
25 *nothing but the baptism* (that is, the doctrine) of *Iohn*, *Acts 18. 25.* In the third sense is baptism taken in this place, when *Paul* saith, *Yee are all baptized into Christ.*

The phrases vsed in Scripture of baptism are strange in reason: and therefore they are to bee explained. Here it is said, *Yee that are*
30 *baptized into Christ, put on Christ.* The reason of this speech is threefold. The first is this: the washing of the bodie with water, is an outward signe to represent to our eyes and minde the inward washing, and our vnion or coniunction with Christ: therefore they that are baptized, are said to *put on Christ.* The second reason is, be-
35 cause the washing by water, seales vnto vs our inward ingrafting into Christ: for as certainly as the body is washed with water; so certainly are they that beleue, ingrafted into Christ. The third reason of the speech is, because baptism is after a sort an instrument whereby our initiation into Christ, and fellowship with him is
40 effected. For in the right and lawfull vse of baptism, God according to his owne promise, ingrafts them into Christ that beleue: and the inward washing is conferred with the outward washing.

For

For these causes, they that are washed with water in baptisme, are said to put on Christ. In the same manner must other phrases be vnderstood; as when it is said, that baptisme sancteth, *1. Pet. 3. 21.* that men must be baptized for the remission of sinnes, *Acts 22. 6.* that we are buried by baptisme into the death of Christ, *Rom. 6. 3.*

The second point concernes the matter of baptisme. Here I consider three things, the signe, the thing signified, the Analogie of both. The signe, is partly the element of water, *Acts 8. 36.* and partly the rite by diuine institution appertaining to the element, which is the sacramental vse of it in washing of the body: and these two, water, and externall washing of the body, are the full and complete signe of baptisme.

Here a question may be made, whether washing of the bodie in baptisme, must be by dipping, or by sprinkling? *Answer.* In hote countries, and in the baptisme of men of yeares, dipping was vsed, and that by the Apostles: and to this *Paul* alludes, *Rom. 6. 3.* and dipping doeth more fully represent our spirituall washing, then sprinkling. Neuerthelesse in cold countries, and in the baptisme of infants new borne, sprinkling is to bee vsed, and not dipping, in respect of their health and life. For the rule is, *Necessitas et charitie,* dispense with the ceremoniall law. Vpon this ground, *Dauid* did eate the shewbread: Circumcision was not alwaies the eight day, as appeares by the Israelites in the wilderness: and for the same cause in these countries, dipping may be omitted, though otherwise a sacramental rite. And it must be remembred, that baptizing signifies not onely that washing which is by diuing of the bodie, but also that which is by sprinkling.

The thing signified, or the substance of baptisme, is Christ himselfe our Mediatour, as hee gaue himselfe to wash and cleanse vs. Thus *Paul* saith, that hee cleanseth his Church by the washing of water, *Ephes. 5. 6.*

The Analogie, or proportion of both is on this manner. Water resembles Christ crucified, with all his merits. *S. Iohn* saith, *The blood of Christ cleanseth vs from all our sinnes,* *1. Iohn 1. 7.* that is, the merit and efficacy of Christ crucified, freeth vs from our sinnes, and from the guilt and punishment thereof. Externall washing of the body, resembles inward washing by the Spirit, which stands in iustification and sanctification, *1. Cor. 6. 11. Titus. 3. 5.* The dipping of the body, signifies mortification, or fellowship with Christ in his death: the staying vnder the water, signifies the burial of sinne: and the comming out of the water, the resurrection from sinne to newnesse of life, *Rom. 6. 3, 4.*

The

The third point concernes the forme of Baptisme, *Matt. 28. 19. Goe teach all nations, baptizing them in the Name of the Father, &c.* I explaine the words thus: Marke, first it is said, *Teach them*, that is, make the my disciples, by calling them to beleue & to repēt. Here
 5 wee are to consider the order which God obserues in making with man the couenant in baptisme. First of all, hee calls men by his word, and commands them to beleue and repent: when they begin to beleue and repent, then in the second place God makes his promise of mercy and forgiuenesse: and thirdly, he seales his pro-
 10 mise by baptisme. This diuine order Christ signifieth when hee saith, *make them disciples*: and it was alwaies obserued of God. Before he made any couenant with *Abraham*, and before he sealed it by circumcision, he saith to him, *Walke before me, and be upright, Gen.*
 17. 1. and of his seed, he saith, they must first *doe righteousness and*
 15 *iudgement, and then he will bring upon them all that he hath spoken, Gen.* 18. 19. to the Israelites hee saith, that they must *turne and obey, and then hee will make all his promises and covenants good. Deut. 30. 1, 6, and* Isa. 1. 16, 17, 19. To the Iewes *Peter* saith, *Repent first, and then they shall bee baptized for the remission of sinnes, Actes 2. 38. 42.* And *Philip* said to the Eunuch, *If thou beleuest with all thy heart, thou mayest bee*
 20 *baptized, Actes 8. 37.*

The vse. By this order we see, that the commandement to beleue and to repent, is more large and generall, then the promise of mercy in Christ. For the commandement is given to all hear-
 25 ers, to turne and beleue, and the promise made onely to such hearers, as doe indeede turne and beleue: therefore it is a falshood to imagine, that the promise of saluation belongs generally to all mankind.

Againe, by this order it appeares, that Repentance belongs to
 30 baptisme: and it is one of the first things that are required: & therefore it is follie to make Repentance a distinct meanes of saluation, and a distinct sacrament from baptisme.

Thirdly, if it be demanded, why so many persons that haue bin
 35 baptized, liue for all this, as if they had not bin baptizd, in the common sinnes of the world, like prophane *Esaus*: and yet doe comfort themselves in their baptisme? *Ans.* They doe not know and consider the order which God vsed in couenancing with them in baptisme: but they deale preposterously, ouerlipping the commandement of repenting & beleueing, and in the first place lay hold of
 40 Gods promise made to them in baptisme. This is the cause of so much prophanenesse in the world.

Againe, there be many persons that haue bin baptized, who
 p neuer.

neuertheles cannot abide to heare and reade the word of God: and the reason is, because they obserue not the order of their baptisme, first of all to become disciples, and then to lay hold of the promises of God.

They likewise are to be blamed, that bring vp their youth in ignorance. For they are baptized vpon condition that they shall become disciples of Christ, when they come to yeares of discretion. And they are by this meanes barred from all the mercies of God: for we must as good disciples obey the commandement that bids vs turne and beleue, before we can haue any benefit or profit by any of the promises of God.

Lastly, we are here taught in the working of our saluation to keepe the order of God which he hath set downe vnto vs in baptisme, which is, first of all to turne vnto God, according to all his lawes; and secondly vpon our conuersion to lay hold of the promises of God, and the confirmation thereof by the sacraments. Thus shall we find comfort in the promises of God, and haue true fellowship with God, if we begiune where he beginnes in making of his covenant with vs, and end where he ends. And this we must doe not onely in the time of our first conuersion, but also afterward in the time of distresse and affliction, and at such times as by frailty we fall and offend God. In a word if for practise we alwaies keepe our selues to this order, we shall find true comfort in life and death.

It followes, *Baptizing them into the name, or in the name of the Father, Sonne, and holy Ghost.* These words signifie: first, to baptize by the commandement and authoritie of the Father, Sonne, and holy Ghost: secondly, to baptize by and with the inuocation of the name of the true God. *Whatsoeuer ye doe in word or deede, doe it in the name of our Lord Iesus Christ,* that is, by the inuocation of the name of Christ: *Col. 3. 17.* Thirdly, *to baptize in the name, &c.* signifies to wash with water in token that the partie baptized hath the name of God named vpon him, and that he is receiued into the household or familie of God, as a child of God, a member of Christ, and the temple of the holy Ghost. Thus *Iacob* saith in the adoption of *Ephraim* and *Manasses*, *Let them be named, and let my name be called vpon them, Gen. 48 5. 16.* And *Paul* saith, that the *Corinthians* might not be named and distinguished by *Paul, Cephas, Apollos*, because they were not baptized into their names, but into the name of Christ, *1. Cor. 1. 13.* And this I take to be the full sense of the phrase.

Here we see what is done in baptisme; the Couenant of
grace

graces is solemnised betweene God and the party baptised. And in this couenant some actions belong to God, and some to the parties baptised. Gods actions are two. The first is, the making of promise of reconciliation, that is, of remission of sinnes, & life everlasting to them that are baptised, and beleeue. The second is, the oblation or sealing of this promise: and that is twofold, outward, or inward. The outward seale, is the washing by water: and this washing serues not to seale by nature, but by the institution of God, in these words, *baptize them, &c.* and therefore Paul saith, *cleansing the Church by the washing of water in the word. Eph. 5. 26.* The inward sealing is by the earnest of Gods spirit, *Eph. 1. 13.* The action of the party baptised, is a certaine stipulation, or obligation, whereby he binds himselfe to giue homage to the Father, Son, and holy Ghost. This Homage stands in faith, whereby all the promises of God are beleeued, and in Obedience to all his commandements. The signe of this obligation is, that the party baptised willingly yeelds himselfe to be washed with water.

It is not said *in the name of God*, but *in the name of the Father Sonne, and holy Ghost*, to teach vs the right way to know and to acknowledge the true God. This knowledge stands in sixe points, all here expresse, The first is, that there is one God, & no more. For though there be three that are named, yet there is but one name, that is, one in authority, will, and worship of all three. And elsewhere, men are said to be baptised *into the name of the Lord, Act. 10. 48.* The second is, that this one true God, is the Father, Sonne, and holy Ghost. A myserie vnsearchable. The third, that these three are really distinct, so as the Father is first in order, the Sonne the second, and the holy Ghost, not the first or second, but the third. The fourth is, that they are all one in operation, *Ioh. 5. 19.* and specially in the act of reconciliation, or couenant making. For the Father sends the sonne to be our Redeemer: the Sonne workes in his owne person, the worke of redemption: and the holy Ghost applies the same by his efficacy. The fift is, that they are all one in worship: for the Father, Sonne, and holy Ghost, are ioynly to be worshipped together, and God in them. The last is, that we are to know God, not as he in himselfe, but as he hath reuealed himselfe vnto vs in the couenant of Grace: and therefore we must acknowledge the Father to be our father, the Son to be our Redeemer, the holy Ghost to be our comforter; and seeke to grow in the knowledge and experience of this.

It may bee demanded, whether baptisme may not be administered in the name of Christ alone, or in the name of God, without

mention of the persons in the Godhead? *Ans.* No. For the true forme of baptisme is here prescribed. If it be said, that *Peter* biddes them of *Ierusalem*, *repent and be baptized into the name of Christ.* *Act. 2. 38.* I answer, that *Peters* intēt in that place is, to set down not the forme of baptisme, but the end and scope thereof, which is, that we may attaine to true fellowship with *Christ*. 5

The fourth point is, concerning the endes of baptisme, which are foure. The first is, that baptisme serues to be a pledge vnto vs in respect of our weaknes, of all the graces and mercies of *God*, and specially of our vnion with *Christ*, of remission of sins, and of mortification. Secondly, it serues to be a signe of *Christian* profession before the world: and therefore it is called *the stipulation or interrogation of a good conscience.* *1. Pet. 3. 21.* Thirdly, it serues to be a meanes of our first entrance or admission into the visible Church. Lastly, it is a meanes of vniy. Reade *Eph. 4. 5. 1. Cor. 12. 13.* 15

The fifth point concernes the efficacie of baptisme. Of which there be foure necessarie questions. The first is, whether the Efficacie of baptisme extend it selfe to all sinnes, and to the whole life of man? For answer, I will set downe what we teach, and what the *Papists*. We teach, that the vse of baptisme inlargeth it selfe to the whole life of man, and that it takes away all sins past, present, and to come: one caution remembred, that the partie baptised, stand to the order of baptisme, which is, to turne vnto *God*, and to beleue in *Christ*, and so to continue by a continuall renouation of faith and repentance, as occasion shall be suffered. Reasons may be these. First, the scripture speakes of them that bad long before bin baptised, and that in the time present, *Baptisme saueth*, *1. Pet. 3. 21.* and, *ye are buried by baptisme, into the death of Christ,* *Rom. 6. 4.* And in the future tense it is saide, *he that beleueth, and is baptised, shall be saued.* And *Paul* saith, that the Church is cleansed with the washing of water, that it may be presented glorious and without spot vnto *God.* *Eph. 5. 26.* And all this shewes that baptisme hath the same efficacie after, which it had before the administration thereof. Secondly, the covenant of grace is euerallasting, *Isa. 54. 10. Hos. 2. 19.* and the covenant is the foundation or substance of baptisme: therefore baptisme is not to be tied to any time: but it must haue his force, so long as the covenant is of force. And this appeares by the example of the *Galatians*, who are now fallē away to an other gospel after their baptisme, and yet are instructed and directed by their baptisme. Lastly, it hath bin the doctrine of the ancient Church, that all sins are done away by baptisme, euē sinnes to come. 40

Angels to pt.
& conceiv. l. i.
sup. ad. l. i.
l. i. p.

The doctrine of the *Papists* is, that baptisme takes away all sinnes

sinnes that goe before the administration thereof: and that sinnes after baptisme are not taken away by baptisme, but by the Sacrament of penance. But the doctrine is erroneous, as may appeare by the arguments which they vse.

5 Argument 1. Circumcision had no vse after the administration thereof for the abolishing of sinne. Therefore neither hath baptisme. *Answer.* Circumcision had. And this appeares, because the Prophets put the Iewes in minde of their circumcision, when they fell away from God, bidding them to circumcise the foreskinne of
10 their hearts, *Jerem. 4. 4.*

Argum. 2. The Apostles vsed to call them that sinned after baptisme, to confession of sinne, and to repentance, or penance, *Acts 8. 21. 1. Iohn 1. 9.* *Answer.* This makes for vs: for in so doing they bring men to their baptisme, and to the order set downe there, which is,
15 that the partie baptized must first of all turne to God, and beleue in Christ: and there is no new order set downe afterward, but only a renewing of this first baptismal order, both in the ministry of the word, and in the Supper of the Lord. And whereas they make a distinction of penance the vertue, and penance the Sacrament, placing the vertue before and after Baptisme, and the Sacrament only
20 after: for this they haue no word of God.

Arg. 3. If a man bee enlightened, that is baptized, and then fall againe, hee cannot bee renewed by repentance, which is in baptisme, *Hebr. 6. 6.* *Answer.* The text speakes not of them that fall after baptisme, but of
25 them that fall away by an vniuersal apostasie, denying Christ. For it is said, *v. 7. that they crucifie Christ againe*, that is, crucifie Christ crucified, and so make a mocke of him, and tread vnder foot the blood of Christ, *Hebr. 10. 29.* Againe, the text speakes not particularly of repentance in baptisme, but of all repentance whatsoever; yea of repentance after baptisme. For there is no place for repentance where
30 Christ is renounced.

Arg. 4. Penance (as *Hierome* saith) is a second table after a shipwracke. *Answer.* Repentance in indeed is a second table or boord, whereby a sinner fallen from his baptisme returnes againe to it, and
35 so comes to the haven of eternal happinell. Thus then we see that baptisme is the true Sacrament of repentance: for repentance pertaines to the inward baptisme.

The vse. If baptisme serue for the whole life of man: then if thou be in any misery or distresse, haue recourse to thy baptisme,
40 and there shalt thou finde thy comfort, namely, that God is thy God, if thou truly turne and beleue in him. Secondly, remember every day the obligation of homage, wherewith thou halt bound thy

thy selfe to God; specially in thy temptations remember it: and see thou stand to it and make it good.

The second question is, whether baptisme abolish Originall sinne, or no? The answer of the Papist is, that it doth: so as in the party baptised, there remaineth nothing that God may iustly hate: and therefore he saith, that Originall sinne after baptisme, ceaseth to be sinne properly. We teach, and are to hold, that the perfect and intire baptisme (in which the outward and inward baptisme are ioyned together) abolisheth the punishment of sinne, and the guilt, that is, the obligation to punishment, and the fault: yet not simply, but in two respects: first, in respect of *imputation*; because God doth not impute Originall sinne to them that are in Christ: secondly, in respect of *dominion*; because Originall sinne raigneth not in them that are regenerate. Neuerthelesse, after baptisme, it remaines in them that are baptised, and is still, and that properly, sinne. Paul saith *Rom. 7. 20. If I doe that I would not, it is no more I that doe it, but sinne that dwelleth in me* doth it. Here marke, Paul calls concupiscence in himselfe after regeneration, *sinne*; and that properly: because he saith it is the same that maketh men to sinne. And *Col. 3. 5.* he saith, *Mortifie your earthly members*: and amongst the rest he nameth, *euill concupiscence*. And to the *Ephesians. 4. 22. Be ye renewed in the spirit of your mindes*. Therefore after baptisme some portions remaine still of the old man, or of originall sinne. S. Iohn saith. *1. Ioh. 1. 8. If we say we haue no sinne, we deceiue our selues*. Answer is made, that this is spoken of veniall, or small sinnes: but how can they be small sinnes that are to be washed away with the blood of Christ, as he saith. *v. 7.* And if these words be spoken of infants (as they are) then must Concupiscence be a sin in them: for they haue no actuall sins. Lastly, Christ saith, *Ioh. 13. 10. He that is all washed, must haue his feete*, that is, his carnall affections, washed. Here obserue two things. One, that defilements of sinne remaine in them that are washed. The second, that they are after the first washing, to be done away by Christ and not by the acts of our penance.

The grounds of Popish doctrine in this point, are two. The first is this. They make three degrees of Concupiscence. The first is, the pronenes in the flesh to rebell against the law of the minde, or the pronenes to euill. The second, stands in the first motions to sinne, which goe before consent of will. The third, stands in acts of lust ioyned with consent of will. This third, they say, is forbidden in the moral law, which forbids and condemnes voluntarie concupiscence: and the two first are not. Because (as they speake)

concupiscence it selfe with the first motions, are not in mans power: and therefore they are rather to be tearmed defects or infirmities, then sinnes: and that men are no more to be blamed for them then for the diseases of their bodies. *Ans.* The doctrine is false: for
 5 it is an euident truth, that Concupiscence with the first motions thereof to euill, is condemned in the morall law. It is a Principle in expounding the law: where any actuall sinne is forbidden, there all causes, occasions, and furtherances thereof, are likewise forbidden. Therefore considering actuall concupiscence ioyned with consent,
 10 is forbidden in the law, Originall concupiscence with the first motions thereof, beeing causes of the former, are likewise forbidden. And *Paul* saith, he had not knowne Lust to be sinne, vnlesse the law had said, *Thou shalt not Lust. Rom. 7. 7.* Now he was a Doctor of the law, & knew that lust with consent was a sinne: for thus much the
 15 light of nature teacheth: therefore the law speakes of an higher degree of lust, namely, of lust going before consent.

The second ground is this. When sinne is remitted, it doth not make men guilty, but ceaseth to be a fault: Originall sinne therefore ceaseth to be sinne after baptisme. *Ans.* Though actuall guilt be taken away, yet potentiall guilt remaineth, namely, an aptnes in
 20 Originall sinne, to make men guilty: and though it be not the fault of this or that person, yet it is a fault in nature, or as it is considered in it selfe.

The vse. If Originall sinne remaine after baptisme to the
 25 death, then we must humble our selues, and vse to the very death, the plea of mercy and pardon, denying our selues, and resting on Christ.

Againe, if persons baptised be sinners to the death, it may be demanded, what difference there is betweene the godly and vngodly? *Ans.* In them that are regenerate, there is a sorrow for their inward corruptions, and for their sinnes past, with a detestation of them: and withall there is a purpose in them to sinne no more, and with this purpose there is ioyned an endeavour to please God in all his commandements: so as if they doe sin, they can say with good
 35 conscience, that they sinned against their purpose and resolution. This cannot the vngodly man doe.

The third point is, how baptisme conferres grace? *Answer.* It conferres grace: because it is a meanes to giue and exhibite to the beleeuing minde, Christ with his benefits; and this it doth by
 40 his signification. For it serues as a particular and infallible certificate to assure the party baptised, of the forgiuene of his sinnes, and of his eternall saluation. And whereas the Minister, in the name of

God, applieth the promise of mercy to him that is baptised, it is indeede as much as if God should haue made a particular promise to him. In this regard, baptisme may well be said to conferre grace, as the Kings letters are said to saue the life of the malefactor, when they doe but signifie to him and others, that the kings pleasure is to shew fauour. Again, baptisme may be said to conferre grace, because the outward washing of the body is a token or Pledge of the grace of God: and by this pledge faith is confirmed, which is an instrument to apprehend or receiue the grace of God. And this confirmation is made by a kind of reasoning in the minde, on this manner: He that vseth the signe aright, shall receiue the thing signified: I (with the party baptised, beeing of yeares) vse the signe aright in faith and repentance: therefore I shall receiue the thing signified, remission of sinnes, and life euerlasting. A king saith to his subiect, He that brings the head of such a traytour, shall haue a thousand poundes. Well: the head of the foresaid traytour is cut off: and he that hath the head may say, Here is a thousand pound, or, this will bring me a thousand poundes, because it is vnto him as a pledge vpon the kings word of the reward of a thousand poundes. And so is the washing in baptisme an infallible pledge to him that beleeueth, of the pardon of his sinnes. Thus doeth the sacraments conferre grace, and no otherwise. One reason for many may be this. The word of God conferreth grace (for it is the power of God to saluation to them that beleue) and this it doth by signifying the will of God, by the eare to the mind: now euery sacrament is the word of God made visible to the eye: the sacrament therefore confers grace by vertue of his signification, and by reason it is a pledge by the appointment of God, of his mercy and goodnes. It may be said, a sacrament is not only a signe and a seale, but also an instrument to conuay the grace of God to vs. Answer, It is not an instrument hauing the grace of God tyed vnto it or shut vp in it: but an instrument to which grace is present by assistance in the right vse therof: because in & with the right vse of the sacrament, God conferres grace: and thus it is an instrument, and no otherwise, that is, a morall and not a phylicall instrument.

The doctrine of the Papill is, that the Sacrament conferres grace by the worke done: that is, that the outward action of the Minister conferres grace by his owne force, when the Sacrament is administered. And that it may conferre grace, some say, that the said action hath vertue in it for this purpose, which palleth away when the action is ended: others say, it hath no vertue in it, but that Gods vsing of the action eleuates it, and makes it able to conferre grace.

Thom. Sum.
p. 2. q. 62. art.
4. Bell. de
Sacram. c. 11.

grace. But this doctrine is a fiction of the braine of man. *John the Baptist, Matt. 3. 11.* make two baptizers, himselfe, and Christ; and hee distinguisheth their actions: his owne action is, to wash with water; & the action of Christ is, to wash with the H. Ghost. This distinction he wold not haue made, if he by the washing of water had
 5 conferred the holy Ghost. *Paul* saith, *Christ sanctifieth his Church by the washing of water through the word, Ephes. 5. 26.* Baptisme therefore doeth not conferre grace, because the body is washed with water: but because when it is washed, the word of promise is beleaved,
 10 and receiued. The Apostles are called, *fellow-workers with God, 1. Cor. 3. 9.* and yet in the worke of regeneration, and in giuing of life, they are not any thing, verse 7. *Peter* saith directly, *that the washing away of the filth of the flesh doeth not save, but the stipulation that a good conscience makes to God, 1. Pet. 3. 21.* The worke of creation is from God
 15 immediatly, and onely: now regeneration is a worke of creation: and therefore it is of God immediatly, and not immediatly from the Sacrament and mediately from God. The flesh of Christ is eleuated and exalted aboue the condition of all creatures: neuer-thelesse, vertue to giue life is not in the flesh of Christ, but in the
 20 godhead: much lesse then shal the Sacraments haue vertue in them to conferre grace. Faith is said to iustifie, yet not by his owne vertue: for it doth not cause our iustification, but serue as a meanes to apprehend it, when it is caused by God: how then shall the sacraments cause iustification? Lastly, if the outward washing of the
 25 body bee eleuated aboue his naturall condition, in the administration of baptism, then so oft as the outward element is vsed in any Sacrament, there is a miracle wrought: and Ministres of Sacraments are workers of miracles, which may not be said.

Againe, their doctrine is erroneous, in that they teach, that the
 30 outward act in the Sacrament performed by the Minister, confers grace, where there is no gift of faith to receiue that which is conferred: contrary to that saying, *John 1. 12. As many as receined him, he gaue this power to be the sonnes of God.* Indeed they say, there must bee faith and repentance to dispose the party: but this disposition serues
 35 onely to take away impediments, and not to inable vs to receiue that which God giueth.

The vse. We must not thinke it sufficient that wee come to the Church, heare Gods word, and pray, contenting our selues in the worke done. For thus shal we deceiue our selues: but in doing these
 40 acts of religion, we must in our hearts turne vnto God, and by faith imbrace his promises: otherwise the best actions we doe shall bee vnprofitable vnto vs, *Heb. 4. 2.*

Againe,

Againe, if the vsing of the element in the Sacrament do not conferre grace, then bee assured, that charmes, and spels, be the wordes neuer so good, haue no vertue in them to doe vs good, but by diabolicall operation.

The last question is, whether baptisme imprint a character or marke in the soule, which is neuer blotted out? *Answer.* In Scripture there is a two-fold marke of distinction, one visible, the other inuisible. Of the first kinde was the blood of the Paschall Lambe, in the first Passeouer: for by it the first borne of the Israelites were marked, when the first borne of the Egyptians were slaine. Of this kinde is Baptisme: for by it Christian people are distinguished from Iewes, Turkes, and Infidels. The inuisible marke is two-folde. The first is, the eternall election of God, *2. Timothee 2. 19. The foundation of God stands sure, and hath this seale, The Lord knows who are his.* By vertue of this, Christ saith, *I know my sheepe,* *John 10.* And by this the Elect of all nations are marked, *Apoc. 7.* and *9.* The second is the gift of regeneration, which is nothing else but the imprinting of the image of God in the soules of men: and by this beleeuers are said to bee sealed, *Ephes. 1. 13. 2. Cor. 1. 22.* And baptisme is a meanes to see this marke in vs; because it is the lauer of regeneration.

The Papists haue deuised another worke, which they call the *Indeleble character*: and they make it to bee a distinct thing from regeneration: and they say it is imprinted in the soules of all men, good and bad, and remains with them when they are condemned. What this marke should be they cannot tell; some make it a qualitie: some, a relation; but indeed there is no Scripture for it, the truth is, it is a meere fiction of the braine of man.

The sixth point to bee handled, concernes the necessitie of Baptisme. Here we must put difference between the couenant of grace and baptisme, which is the confirmation or seale of the couenant. To make couenant with God, and to be in the said couenant, is absolutely necessary to saluation: for vnlesse God be our God, and we the seruants of God, we cannot be saved.

Baptisme it selfe is necessarie in part: first, in respect of the commaundement of God, who hath enioyned vs to vse it: secondly, in respect of our weakenesse; who haue need of all helpes that may confirme our faith. Yet Baptisme is not simply necessary to saluation; for the want of Baptisme (when it cannot be had) doth not condemne; but the contempt of it when it may be had: and the contempt is pardonable, if men repent afterward: for the children of beleeuing parents are borne hely, *1. Corinth. 7. 14* and theirs

theirs is the Kingdome of God: and therefore if they die before baptisme, they are saued. The theefe vpon the crosse, and many holy Martyrs, haue died without baptisme, and are in the kingdome of heauen.

5 It is obiected, that the male childe, which is not circumcised, must (by Gods commaundement) bee cut off from the people of God, *Genesis 17. 14.* and therefore hee that is not baptized, must also be cut off. *Answer.* The text is spoken and meant, not of infants, but of men of yeares, who beeing till then vncircumcised, despise the ordinance of God, and refuse to bee circumcised.
10 And this appeares by the reason following: *for hee hath made my covenant voyd: now* infants doe not this, but their parents, or men of yeares.

Secondly, the speech of Christ is obiected, *John 3. 5.* *Except a*
15 *man be borne of water and the holy Ghost, he cannot enter into the kingdome of God.* *Answer.* Christ alludes to the washings of the old Testament, *Ezech. 36. 25.* and withall giues an exposition of them on this manner. Thou art a Pharisee, and louest much washing: but if thou wouldest enter into the kingdome of heauen, thou must
20 be washed with cleane water, that is, born anew by the holy Ghost. Againe I answer, that if the words be meant of baptisme, they carry this sense. The kingdome of heauen doeth not signifie life eternall, but the Church of the new Testament, and that in his visible estate, *Mark. 9. 1.* and baptisme makes men visible members of the
25 Church, and regeneration by the spirit, makes them true and lively members. Here then baptisme is made necessary, not in respect of eternall life, but in respect of our admission and entrance into the Church, whereof it is now the onely meanes.

The seuenth point is, touching the circumstances of Baptisme,
30 which are five. The first, concernes the persons which are to administer baptisme, of whom I propound foure questions.

The first is, whether not onely Ministers of the word, but also lay persons (as they are called) or meere priuate men, may administer Baptisme? *Answer.* Ministers of the word onely. For to
35 baptize is a part of the publike Ministerie, *Matthew 28. 18.* *Go teach all nations, baptizing them.* And marke how preaching, and baptizing are ioyned together: and things which God hath ioyned, no man may separate. Againe, hee that must performe any part of the publike Ministry, must haue a calling, *Rom. 10. 14.* *Heb.*
40 *3. 5.* but meere priuate persons haue no calling to this businesse. And whatsoeuer is not of faith, is sinne: now the administration of baptisme by priuate persons, is without faith. For there

is neither precept, nor fit example for it in the word of God.

The example of *Zipporai* is alleadged, *Exod. 4. 28.* who circumcised her child. *Answer.* The example is many waies discommendable. For shee did it in the presence of her husband, when there was no need: shee did it haste, that shee might haue prevented her husband: shee did it in anger: for shee cast the foreskin at the feet of *Moses*. And it seemes she was no belecuer, but a meere Midianite. For shee contemned circumcision, when shee called her husband *a man of blood*, by reason of the circumcision of the child, *verse 26.* and in this respect it seemes, *Moses* either put her away, or shee went away when he went downe to Egypt.

Againe, it is objected, that priuate persons may teach: and therefore baptize. *Answer.* Priuate teaching, and Ministeriall teaching are distinct in kinde, as the authoritie of a master of a family, is distinct in kinde from the authoritie of a Magistrate. A priuate person, as a father or master, when hee teacheth the word of God, hee doeth it by right of a master or father, and hee is mooued to doe it by the law of charitie: but Ministers when they teach, are mooued to teach by speciall calling, and they doe it with authoritie, as Embassadours in the roome of Christ, *2. Corinthians, 5. 21.* Againe, though a priuate man might dispense the word alone: yet doeth it not follow, that hee may administer both the word and the seale thereof: both which are ioyned in baptism, and ioyntly administred.

The second question is, whether baptism administred by a wicked man or an heretike, be indeed true baptism? *Answer.* If the said partie bee admitted to stand in the roome of a true pastour, or minister, and keepe the right forme in baptizing, according to the institution, it is true baptism. The Scribes and Pharisees the chiefest doctors of the Iewes, were not of the tribe of *Leui*, but of other tribes: and they were indeed euen the best of them, but heretikes and apostataes, and consequently to be deposed, and excommunicate: neuertheless, because they were in the place of good teachers, and sate in *Moses* chaire, that is, taught sundry points of *Moses* doctrine: therefore Christ saith, *Hear them, Matth. 23. 1.* And to this effect was the conclusion of the Churches in Africa, against *Cyprian*.

Vpon the same ground, the same answer is to be made, if it bee demaunded, whether baptism administred by him that cannot preach, bee of force or no? It were indeed to bee wished, that all Ministers of holy things, were preachers of the word: neuertheless, if such as preach not, stand in the roome of lawfull pastours, and

and keepe the forme of baptisme, it is baptisme indeed.

The third question is, whether an Intention to baptize, be necessary in him that baptizeth? *Answer.* If the word of Institution come to the Element, it is a Sacrament, whatsoever the Minister intend. *Paul* reioyced that Christ was preached, though many preached him of enuie or contention, intending no good, *Philip.* 1. 16. And the Priest in the Masse pronouncing the wordes of consecration, if hee intend not to consecrate (in Popish learning) there is no consecration: and thus the bread eleuated is meere bread, and not the bodie of Christ: and consequently the people adore not Christ, but an Idoll. The intention therefore of the minde is not necessarie, so be it the Institution be obserued. And the efficacie of the Sacrament depends not on the will of man, but on the will of God.

The last question is, what is the dutie of the Minister in baptizing? *Answer.* He stands in the roome of God: and what he doth according to the Institution, it is as much as if God himself had done it with his owne hand from heauen. And therefore, when the Minister applieth water, (which is the signe and pledge of grace,) to the body hee doeth withall apply the promise of remission of sinnes, and life euerlasting, to the partie baptized. And that is as much as if God should say to the partie, calling him by his name, I freely giue vnto thee the pardon of thy sinnes, and life euerlasting, vpon condition thou keepe the order set downe in baptisme, which is, to turne vnto mee, and to beleue in Christ. Heere we see a ground of speciall faith: for if God for his part by the hand of the Minister apply the promise of mercy vnto euery particular beleuer: euery particular beleuer is againe by a speciall faith to receiue the promise. Againe, the consideration of this which God hath done for vs in baptisme, must mooue vs seriously to turne vnto him according to all his lawes, and by faith of our hearts to apprehend his mercifull promises, and to rest on them. For when God shall speake vnto vs particularly, and as it were, assure vs of his mercies with his owne hand and seale, we must needs be much moued and affected therewith.

The second circumstance is concerning the persons to be baptized: and they are all such as be in the Couenant, in likelihood, or in the iudgement of charitie. For the seale may not be denied to them that bring the tables of the couenant. And they are of two sorts, Men of yeares, and infants.

Men of yeares that ioynethemselues to the true Church, are to be baptized: yet before their baptisme, they are to make confession of

of their faith, and to promise amendment of life, *Actes 2. 38.* and *10. 38.* And thus places of Scripture that require actuall faith, and amendment of life in them that are baptized, are to be vnderstood of men of yeares.

Infants of beleeuing parents are likewise to bee baptized. The grounds of their baptisme are these. First, the commaundement of God, *Matthew 28. 18.* *Baptize all nations, &c.* in which wordes the baptisme of infants is prescribed. For the Apostles by vertue of this Commission baptized whole families, *Actes 16. 31.* and *38.* Againe, circumcision of infants was commaunded by God, *Genesis 17. 14.* and Baptisme in the new Testament, succeedes in the roome of Circumcision, *Coloff. 2. 11.* therefore baptisme of infants is likewise commanded. The second ground is this: Infants of beleeuing parents, are in the couenant of grace: for this is the tenour of the couenant, *I will bee thy God, and the God of thy seede, Genesis 17. 7.* It may bee said, that this promise was made in this sort onely to *Abraham*, because he was to be the father of the faithfull. *Answer.* It pertaines to all beleeuing parents. *Exod. 20.* God promisethto shew mercie to thousands of them that loue him. *Actes 2. 39.* *Peter* saith to the Iewes that heard him preach, *The promises belong to you, and to your children.* *Paul* saith, *If the parents beleene, the children are holy, 1. Cor. 7. 14.* If holy, then are they in the Couenant: now they are holy: because wee are in the iudgement of Christian charitie to esteeme them all as regenerate and sanctified, secret iudgements (in the meane season) left to God. Now then because infants are in the couenant, they are to bee baptized. For this is the reason of *S. Peter*: To whom the promises belong, to them belongeth baptisme: but to you and your children belong the promises: therefore you and your children are to be baptized, *Actes 2. 38, 39.*

It may bee objected, that wee cannot tell, whether infants bee indeed the children of God, or no: and if they bee not children of God, wee may not baptizethem. *Answer.* The same may be said of men of yeares: for we know not whether they bee indeed the children of God. And therefore wee may by the like reason exclude them from all Sacraments. Againe, wee are to presume (in all likelihood) that infants of beleeuing parents, are the children of God, because in their conception and birth, God begins to manifest his election: shewing himselfe a God, not onely to the parents, but also to their seed.

Secondly, it is objected, that infants haue no faith; and consequently, that baptisme is vnprofitable vnto them. *Answer.* Some thinke

thinke they haue faith, as they haue regeneration, that is, the inclination, or seed of faith. Others say, that the faith of the parents is also the faith of their children: because the parents by their faith, receiue the promise of God, both for themselves and their
5 children: And thus to bee borne in the Church of beleeuing parents, is in stead of the profession of faith. To this second opinion I rather incline, because it is the ancient and receiued doctrine of the Church.

Thirdly, it is alleadged; that infants know not what is done,
10 when they are baptized. *Answer.* For all this, baptism hath his vse in them: for it is a seale of the Couenant, and a meanes to admit them into the fellowship of the visible Church, whereof for right they are members. A father makes a purchase for himselfe and his children: at the time of the sealing, the children
15 know not what is done; and yet the purchase is not made in vaine for them.

It may bee demaunded, whether the children of Turkes and Iewes are to bee baptized? *Answer.* No: because the parents are fourth of the Couenant.

20 Secondly, it is demaunded, whether the children of professed Papists, are to be baptized? *Answer.* The parents are persons baptized in the name of the Father, Sonne, and Holy Ghost. And though the Papacie bee not the Church of God, yet is the Church of God hidden in the Papacie, and to bee gathered out of it: and
25 for this cause baptism remains still in the Church of Rome. For this cause I thinke, that infants of professed Papists may be baptized, two cautions obserued: the first, that the foresaid parents desire this baptism: the second, that there be sureties which promise the education of the child in the true faith.

30 Thirdly, it may bee demanded, whether the children of wicked Christians, that is, of such as hold in iudgement true religion, and denie it in their liues, may be baptized? *Answer.* They may: for all without exception, that were borne of circumcised Iewes (whereof many were wicked) were circumcised. And we must not onely re-
35 gard the next parents, but also the ancessours: of whom it is said, *If the root be holy, the branches are holy, Rom 11.* Vpon this ground, children borne in fornication, may be baptized, so be it, there bee some to answer for them beside the parents. And there is no reason, that the wickednesse of the parent, should prejudice the child in things
40 pertaining to life eternall.

Lastly, it may bee demaunded, whether the children of parents excommunicate, may be baptized? *Answer.* Yea, if there bee any beside

belide the parents to answer for the childe. For the parents after excommunication remaine stil (for right) members of the Church, hauing still a right to the kingdome of heauen: out of which they are not cast absolutely, but with condition, vnlesse they repent: and in part; that is, in respect of communion, or vse of their libertie, but not in respect of right or title: euen as a freeman of a corporation imprisoned, remaines a free man, though for the time he hath no vse of his libertie.

The third circumstance concernes the time. Here one question may be mooued: How oft baptisme is to be administred? *Answer.* But once: for the efficacy of Baptisme extends it selfe to the whole life of man: and we are but once borne againe, and once ingrafted into Christ. Here let it be obserued, that the gift of regeneration is neuer vtterly extinguished: for if a man be the second time borne againe, he must be baptized againe and againe: because baptisme is the Sacrament of initiation. It may be said, that a man may remaine still ingrafted into Christ, and by his owne wickednes make himselfe a dead member. I answer, that all the members of the mystical body of Christ, are liuing members. *The spirituall temple is made of liuing stones, 1. Pet. 2. 5.* And marke what *Paul* saith, *All the body of Christ increaseth with the increasing of God, Col. 2. 19. and Ephes. 2. 21.* Beleeuers are of the bone and flesh of Christ: now there is no part of the bone and flesh of Christ that dieth.

The last circumstance is touching the place: and that is, the publike assembly or congregation of the people of God. Because baptisme is a part of the publike Ministry, and a dependance vpon the preaching of the word of God. Secondly, the whole congregation is to make profit by the enarration of the institution of baptisme: and lastly, the said congregation is by praier to present the infant baptized vnto God, and to intreate for the saluation thereof, the prayer of many being most effectuell.

The eighth and last point followes, concerning the vse of Baptisme. And first of all, our baptisme must put vs in minde, that wee are admitted and receiued into the family of God: and consequently, that wee must carrie our selues as the seruants of God. And that wee may doe so indeed, wee must diuide our liues into two parts; the life past, and life to come. Touching the life that is past, we must performe three things. The first is, *Examination*, whereby wee must call our selues to an account for all our sinnes, euen from the cradle: the second is, *Confession*, whereby we must with sorrowfull hearts bewaile and acknowledge the same sinnes in the presence of God, accusing and condemning our selues

for them. The third is, *Deprecation*, whereby wee are to intreat the Lord in the name of Christ, and that most instantly from day to day, till wee receiue a comfortable answer, in the peace of conscience, and ioy of the holy Ghost.

5 And for the life to come, there must be two things in vs: the first is, the purpose of not sinning; and it must be a liuely and distinct purpose, daily renewed in vs, euen as we renew our dayes: so as wee may say, if wee sinne, it is against our purpose and resolution. The second is, an endeauour to performe new obedience, according to
10 all the commandements of God. These things if we doe, we shall shew our selues to be the seruants of God. And of all these things, baptisme must be (as it were) a daily Sermon vnto vs: and so oft to thinke on them, as oft as wee thinke or speake of our names giuen vs in Baptisme. This is the doctrine of *Paul*, who teacheth vs that
15 we must bee conformable to the death and resurrection of Christ, because we haue been baptized, *Rom. 6. 3. 4.*

Againe, our baptisme into the name of the Father, &c. must teach vs, that we must learne to know & acknowledge God aright; that is, to acknowledge him to be our God, and Father in Christ: to ac-
20 knowledge his presence, and therefore to walke before him; to acknowledge his prouidence, and therefore to cast our care on him; to acknowledge his goodnesse and mercie, in the pardon and free forgiuenesse of our sinnes.

Thirdly, our baptisme must bee vnto vs a store-house of all
25 comfort in the time of our need. If thou bee tempted of the diuell, oppose against him thy Baptisme, in which God hath promised and sealed vnto thee the pardon of thy sinnes, and life cuerlasting. If thou bee troubled with doubtings, and weakenesse of faith, consider that God hath giuen thee an earnest and pledge of
30 his louing kindnesse to thee. Wee vse often to looke vpon the willes of our fathers and grand-fathers, that wee may be resolved in matters of doubt: and so, often looke vpon the will of thy heavenly Father sealed and deliuered to thee in thy baptisme, and thou shalt the better be resolved in the middelt of all thy doubts.
35 If thou lie vnder any crosse or calamitie, haue recourse to thy baptisme, in which God promised to be thy God, and of this promise hee will not faile thee.

Lastly, if a man would bee a student in diuinitie, let him learne and practise his baptisme. Commentaries are needfull to the studie of the Scriptures: and the best Commentarie to a mans owne
40 selfe is his owne baptisme. For if a man haue learned to know ought and to practise his owne baptisme, he shall the better be able

to vnderstand the whole: and without this helpe, the scriptures themselves shall be as a riddle vnto vs.

The fourth point whereby the gift of adoption is described, is the ground thereof, in these words, *We haue put on Christ: and all are one in Christ.* The phrase which *Paul* vseth, is borrowed from the custome of them which were baptised in the Apostles daies, who put off their garments, when they were to be baptised, and put on new garments after baptism. To put on a garment, is to apply it to the bodie, and to vse or weare it. And to put on Christ, is to be ioyned necerly to Christ, and to haue spirituall fellowship with him. Here then the foundation of our adoption is in two things, our vnion with Christ, and our communion with him. Of which we are somewhat to be aduertised for the better vnderstanding of the text.

The vnion with Christ, is a worke of God whereby all beleeuers are made one with Christ. Heretwo questions are to be demanded. The first in what respect, or for what cause are they saide to be one with Christ? *Answer.* They are not one with him in conceit or imagination: for this coniunction is in truth a reall coniunction. *Iohn. 17. 22.* Christ prooues that all beleeuers may be one with him, as he is one with the Father. Secodly, they are not one bare ly by consent of heart and affection: for thus all familiars and friends are one: and they of Ierusalem are saide thus to be of one heart & mind. *Act. 4. 32.* Thirdly, they are not one in substance, for so many beleeuers as there are, so many distinct persons are there: and every one of them distinct from the person of Christ: And the substance of the godhead of Christ is incommunicable: & the flesh of Christ is in heauen and shall there abide till the last iudgement: whereupon it cannot be mixed or compounded with our substances. Lastly, beleeuers are not one with Christ by transfusion of the properties and qualities of the godhead, or manhood vnto vs. It may be said, how then are they one with him? I answer, by one and the same spirit dwelling in Christ and in al the members of Christ. *1. Cor. 6. 17.* He that cleaueth to the Lord, is one spirit. *Paul* saith in this sense, *1 ph. 2. 14.* that Christ maketh the two distinct nations of Iewes and Gentiles one new man. *S. Iohn* saith, that Christ dwells in vs and we in him by the spirit, *1. Iohn 3. 23.* For the better conceiuing of this, suppose a man whose head lies in Italy, his armes in Germany, and Spaine, his feet in England: suppose further that one and the same soule extends it selfe to al the foresaid parts, & quickens them all: they are all now become one in respect of one and the same soule, and all concur as members to one and the same bodie:

even so, all the Saints in heaven, and all beleeuers vpon earth, ha-
uing one and the same spirit of Christ dwelling in them, are all one
in Christ.

The second question is, how are all beleeuers made one with
5 Christ? *Ans.* By a donation on Gods part whereby Christ is gi-
uen vnto vs: and by a receiuing on our part. The donation is wher-
by Christ is made ours for right, so as a man may say truly, Christ
is mine with all his benefits. Of this donation 4. things are to be
observed. The first is, that Christ himselfe and whole Christ is gi-
10 uen to vs. For here we are said to put on Christ. Here a distinction
must be observed: the Godhead of Christ, is giuen to vs, not in re-
spect of substance which is incommunicable, but onely in respect
of operation. But the very flesh or manhood of Christ is really gi-
uen to the beleeuing heart, *Ioh. 6. 54. 56.* By it we receiue eternal life
15 from the godhead, and by it God is ioyned to man, & man to God.
The second is, that Christ giues his merit and satisfaction to them
that beleeue. And this satisfaction imputed, is the couer whereby
our sinnes are couered, *Psal. 32. 1.* and the white robes dipped in the
blood of Christ. *Ren. 7. 14.* Thirdly, Christ giues the efficacy of his
20 spirit to make vs conformable to himselfe in holines and newnes of
life: and thus *he makes vs put off the old man, and put on the new man,*
created after God in righteousness and holines, *Eph. 4. 24.* The fourth
is, that the word preached and the sacraments, are (as it were) the
hand of God, whereby he exhibits and giues Christ vnto vs with al
25 his benefits.

Of our receiuing of Christ giuen by God, two things must bee
observed: one is, that wee must there receiue Christ, where God
offers and giues him, that is, in the word and Sacraments. The se-
cond is, that faith is our hand, whereby we receiue Christ; and this
30 receiuing is done by a supernaturall act of the minde, whereby we
beleeue Christ with his benefits to be ours, *Iohn 1. 12.* Thus we see
how we are one with Christ, and Christ with vs.

Communion with Christ is, when wee haue, possesse, and inioy
Christ and his benefits: and that is partly in this life, and fully in
35 the life to come. Of this communion speaks *Salomon* at large in the
Song of Songs; and *Dauid*, *Psal. 45.*

The vse. In that we are to put on Christ, wee are put in mind to
consider our fearefull nakednesse. What is that? *Ans.* There is a
nakednes of creation, and a nakednes following the fall. The na-
40 kednesse of creation is, when the body without all couering, is in
health, full of glory and maiesty, in respect of other creatures. Na-
kednesse arising of the fall of man, is either inward or outward. In-

ward, is the want of the image of God, the want of innocencie, of good conscience, of the fauour of God, and affiance in him. For these are (as it were) the coverings of the soule. Outward nakednes is, when the bodie beeing vncouered is full of deformitie & shame. Now that inward nakednes of heart is noted as a speciall euil, *Gen. 5* 3. 7. *Exod. 1. 32. 15. Prov. 29. 17. Ren. 3. 17.* We must labour to see & seele this nakednes in our selues. For by it, we are deformed and odious in the eye of God.

Secondly, we are here put in minde to haue a speciall care of the trimming and garnishing of our soule. And for this cause we must *put on the Lord Iesus, Rom. 13. 14.* And that is done two waies. First by vncouering our nakednes before God, and by praying him to couer it. To vncouer our shame, is the way to couer it. *Psal. 2. 1, 2. 3.* The second way is, to subiect our selues to the word & spirit of God, and to be conformable to Christ both in his life and death. *15* It stands vs in hand thus to put on Christ. For the king of heauen, hath long inuited vs to the marriage of his Sonne: we haue yeilded our selues to be his guests: and there is a time when the king will take a suruay of all his guests, whether they haue the wedding garment, which is Christ himselfe: and they which are not cladde *20* with this robe, shall be cast into vtter darknes. We are as naked infants exposed to death, *Ezech. 16 7.* the merit and obedience of Christ is as swadling clothes and swadling bands. If we would then liue, we must lap and infold our selues in them. I rather I speake this: because in these daies men and women are intoxicated *25* with a spirituall drunkennes, or rather madnesse, whereby they are alwaies tempering and trifling about their bodics, & let their soules ly naked. It may be said, we haue al put on Christ in baptisme. I answer: we haue had in England peace & prosperity this *43* yeares: & we haue liued all this while, as it were in the warme sun-shine: and *30* therefore many of vs (no doubt) haue worne this garment very loosely.

Thirdly, there is a great temptation arising vpon the consideration of our owne indignitie. For when our sinnes come to our remembrance, they driue vs from the presence of God, and make vs *35* that we dare not pray. Now the remedy is this. We must come clothed with Christ into the presence of God: we may not come in our names, but we must come in his name & present the merit of Christ vnto the Father, euen as if we were one and the same person with him. Thus shall we be accepted. *40*

Fourthly, it may be demanded, what we must doe for our selues in the time of plague, famine, sword? We must put on Christ, *45*

Christ, then shall we walke in safetie in all dangers. This garment serues not onely for a couering of our shame, but also for protection. *Isa. 4. 6.* And if we be taken away in any common iudgment, beeing clothed with Christ, there is no more hurt done to
 5 vs then to him: and he carrieth vs in his brest, as if we were part of his bowels.

Lastly, though we be clothed with Christ in baptisme, yet we must further desire to be clothed vpon. *2. Cor. 5. 4.* In this life we are clad with the iustice of Christ, *1. Cor. 1. 30.* this is one garment. In
 10 the life to come, we shall be clad with immortalitie. This is the second garment to be vpon the former.

Verse. 28. *There is neither Iewe nor Grecian, &c.* These words (as I haue said) containe an answer to an obiection, which is this: If all beleeuers among the Gentiles be children of God, and all put
 15 on Christ, then there is no difference betweene Iewe and Gentile, and the prerogative of the Iewe is nothing. *Paul* answers thus: there be sundry differences of men in respect of nation, condition, sexe: yet in respect of Christ, all are one. Moreouer, I haue shewed, that these words containe the ground of the Adoption of the
 20 Galatians, which is an vnion with Christ, whereby all beleeuers are made one with him. There remaine other things to be added.

By occasion of this text, two questions are mooued, the answer whereof serues much to cleare the meaning of *P. vi.* The first is,
 25 whether Magistracie and gouernment be necessary in the societies of Christians? *Answer.* Yea: *Kings and Queenes shall bee nourcing fathers and nourcing mothers to the Church of God,* saith the Prophet, *Isai. 49. 23.* *Paul* bids vs pray for Kings and all in authoritie, that we may liue in peace and godlinesse, *1 Tim. 2. 1.* The fift Commaundement,
 30 Honour thy father, &c. requires subiection to authoritie: and this commandement is eternall.

Obiection I. All beleeuers are one in Christ: therefore there is no subiection among them. *Answer.* Beleeuers are vnder a two-fold Estate or Regiment: the first is, the Regiment of this world,
 35 in ciuill societie: the second is, the regiment of the Kingdome of heauen, which stands in *Iustice, peace of conscience, ioy in the holy Ghost.* In the first estate, there are sundrie differences of persons that beleue: some fathers and mothers, some children, some masters and seruants, some Magistrates and subiects. In the
 40 second estate, there are no outward differences of men, but all are members of Christ, and all one in him. Thus must the text bee vnderstood.

Obiection II. Beleeuers are governed by Gods spirit, and therefore outward gouernment by magistrates is needlesse. *Answer.* In the visible Church, hypocrites are mingled with true beleeuers, and they are not governed by Gods spirit, but by the spirit of the deuil: and therefore in respect of them, ciuill authority is requisite. 5
 Againe, true beleeuers are but in part governed by the Spirit, for the time of this life. And for this cause, ciuill gouernment is requisite, for the ordering of the outward man, and for the protection of the Church.

Obiect. III. They that are in Christ, are freed from sinne, and consequently from subiection which followes vpon sinne. *Answer.* Subiection is either politique, or seruile. Politicke is, when men are subiect for their owne good: and this was before the fall, yeilded by *Eue* to *Adam*. Seruile subiection, when they are subiect for the good of their masters, and this onely comes of sinne. Againe, 15
 subiection with ioy was before the fall: subiection ioyned with paine and misery, followes vpon sinne: *Gen. 3. 16.*

The second question is, whether bondage, in which some are Lords, others bondmen, or slaues, may stand with Christian religion? *Answer.* It may, in the countries where it is established by positive 20
 lawes, if it be vsed with mercy and moderation. Righteous *Abraham* had in his owne house, bondslaues: *Gen. 17. 13.* God did permit the Iewes to buy the children of the *Canaanites*, *Leu. 25. 45.* *Paul* saith, *If any man be called beeing a seruant or bondman, let him not care for it, 1. Cor. 7. 21.*

Obiection I. Be not seruants of men. *1. Cor. 7. 23.* *Answer.* That is, in respect of conscience, the subiection whereof must be referred to God. 25

Obiection II. Christians haue libertie by Christ: and where liberty is, there may be no bondage. *Answer.* Christians obtaine by 30
 Christ spirituall libertie in this life, and bodily libertie in the life to come.

Obiection III. Bondage is against the law of nature. *Answer.* Against the law of pure nature, created in innocencie, not against the law of corrupt nature, the fruite whereof is bondage, 35

Obiection IV. All are one in Christ: therefore the difference of bond men and free-men must cease. *Answer.* All are one in respect of the inward man, or in respect of faith & fellowship with Christ: but all are not one in respect of the outward man, and in regard of 40
 ciuill order.

The sense then of the Text is this. There are distinctions of

of men in respect of nation, some Iewes, some Gentiles : in respect of condition, some bonde, some free, some rich, some poore, some in authority, some in subiection, &c. in respect of sexe, some men, some women: yet in Christ Iesus, all are euen as one
5 man.

The vse. By this text we may expound another, 1. *Timothy*.
2. *God would haue all men to be saved*: that is, not all particular
persons vpon earth, but all kinds. For heere *Paul* saith, *All are one*
in Christ: that is, men of all nations, of all conditions, and of all
10 sexes.

Againe, the name (*Iewe*) opposed to Gentiles, signifies not
onely men of the tribe of *Iuda*, but all circumcised perions of all
tribes, *Romanes* 2. 28. and thus it is all one with an *Israelite*. And
thus we see how to expound the place of Scripture, 2. *Chronicles*.
15 21. 2. where *Iehosaphat* king of *Iuda* is called king of *Israel*. The
words *Iuda* and *Israel*, are sometime opposed, *Iuda* signifying
the kingdome of the two tribes, *Iuda* and *Beniamin*: and *Israel*
signifying the tenne tribes. Sometimes againe, they are *Synonymes*
and are put one for another, as *Psalme* 114 1, 2. and in this text.
10 And *Iuda* at this time was indeed the true *Israel* of God, and *Ieho-*
saphat without any fault in the text (as some suppose) is called king
of *Israel*.

Thirdly, they which are of great birth and of high condi-
tion, must bee put in minde not to be high minded, nor to dispise
25 them that are of lowe degree, for all are one in Christ: the obscure
and base person hath as good part in Christ, as the greatest men
that bee. Therefore wee may not swell in pride for outward
things. *The king must not lift up his heart against his brethren*, *Deut.*
17. 20. *Rich men* (saith *Paul*) *must not bee high minded*, 1. *Timothy*
30 6. 17. *Iob* would not despise the cause of his handmaid, *Iob* 31.
13. *Naaman*, a great man, respected the counsell of his seruants,
2. *Kings* 5. 13.

Fourthly, all beleeuers must bee of one heart and minde, 1. *Cor.*
1. 10. In the kingdome of Christ, the wolfe and the lambe dwell
35 together, *Isai.* 11. 6. And good reason: for all are one in Christ.
And we haue great cause to bee humbled, when schismes conten-
tions, and differences arise in points of religion. For that shewes
that hypocrites are mingled with true beleeuers, and that wee are
but in part (as yet) vnited to Christ.

40 Lastly, hence wee learne not to hate any man, but alwayes to
carrie in minde a purpose to doe good to all by thought, word,
and deede, and to doe good to men in respect of their names,

their goods, their liues. And this holy minde and purpose, must alwaye beare sway in vs. *There is no hurt in the Mount of the Lord, Isai. 11. 9.* Men turne their swords and speares into mattocks and sithes, that are of the kingdome of Christ, *Isai. 2. 4.* because they are one with Christ by the bond of onespirit. 5

29 And if yee bee Christs, then are yee Abrahams seed, and heires by promise.

Before, *Paul* had taught verse 7, 8, 9. that all beleeuing Gentiles were the children of *Abraham*, and not the Iewes onely. Heere hee returnes to the same poynt againe, and prooues it by a new Argument, thus: Christ is the seed of *Abraham*, verse 16. and all Gentiles beleeuing in Christ, are parts of him, and one with him: therefore they also are children of *Abraham*, and heires of all the blessings of God. 10

The intent of *Paul* in these words, is to establishe and confirme an argument which before hee had vrged in this chapter against patrons of works in the case of our iustification: it may be framed thus. As *Abraham* was iustified, so are all they that beleeue in Christ iustified: for they are *Abrahams* children and succeed him, vers. 29. but *Abraham* was iustified by faith without works; therefore all beleeuers in Christ are so iustified. Let the argument be obserued: for it makes against the Papist, who if hee study till his head and heart ake, shall neuer answer it. 15

In this verse, *Paul* sets downe the fruite and benefit that comes by the gift of adoption, to them that beleeue: And that is, to bee children of *Abraham*, and heires of all the blessings of God. And therefore learne heere one golden lesſon; namely, that the basest person that is, if he beleeue in Christ, is in the place of *Abraham*, and succeeds him in the inheritance of the kingdome of heauen. Some man may say; O this is excellent comfort, if I might know that I were in the case of *Abraham*. Answer. Thou mayest know it certainly, if thou wilt doc as *Abraham* did; namely, followe the calling of God, and obey the Gospell; that is, subiect thy heart to the commandements of God, which bid thee repent, and beleeue in Christ: for then all the good things reuealed in the Gospell shall be thine. 20

The vse. Beleeuers in this world must bee content with any estate that God shall lay vpon them. For they are heires with *Abraham* of heauen and earth. In this regard, *Abraham* was content 25

to forsake his countrie, and his fathers house, and as a pilgrime to dwell in tents to the death, *Heb. 11. 8, 9.*

Secondly, they that beleue in Christ, must moderate their worldly cares, and not liue as drudges of the word. For they are
5 heires of God, and haue a title or right to all good things promised in the Covenent. Therefore they shall neuer want any good thing that is needfull for them. Hee that hath made them heires, will carefully prouide for them. Therefore our care must bee, to
10 doe the duties that belong vnto vs: and all other cares wee must cast vpon God. They in this world, that are borne to land and liuing, are content to liue sparingly, and oftentimes very barely with a little, vpon hope of further enlargement, after the deceasse of some friends.

Lastly, our speciall care must bee for heauen. For the things of
15 this world are but trifles in respect of it. The citie of God in heauen is thy portion, or childs part. Seeke for the assurance of that aboue all thing. Thus did *Abraham, Heb. 11. 15, 16.*

- 1 And I say, that the heire, as long as hee is a child, differeth
nothing from a seruant, though he be Lord of all:
- 2 But is vnder Tutors and gouernors, till the time appointed
of the father. 5
- 3 Euen so we, when we were children, were in bondage vnder
the rudiments of the world
- 4 But when the fulnesse of time was come, God sent forth
his Sonne made of a woman, and made vnder the law, 10
- 5 That he might redeeme them that were vnder the law, that
we might receiue the adoption of sonnes.
- 6 And because ye are sonnes, God hath sent forth the spirit of
his Sonne into your hearts, which crieth, Abba, Father. 15
- 7 Wherefore thou art no more a seruant, but a sonne: and if
thou be a sonne, thou art also an heire of God through Christ.



Hese wordes depend on the former Chapter, as an answer to an obiection, which may be framed on this manner. *Paul*, thou saiest that the Iewes before Christ, were vnder the law, as vnder a Schoolemaster, c. 3. v. 24. and that we are free from the same Schoolemaster, v. 25. being children of God, and heires by Christ, verse 29. but we for our parts thinke our selues seruants vnder the law, as well as the ancient Iewes, and that they are as well the children of God, as we. To this obiection *Paul* makes answer in these 7. verses, as the very first words import; And I say: that is, whatsoeuer you suppose, I say thus. And then hee propounds the reason of his answer, which may be framed thus: If the time of our bondage be ended, and the full time of our libertie come, then are wee sonnes, and not seruants: but the time of our bondage is ended, and the time of our libertie is come: therefore we are not seruants, but sonnes. 25

The maior is omitted, because it is manifest. The minor is in the sixe first verses: the conclusion is expressed in the 7. verse. 35

Again the minor, [the time of our bondage is ended, and the time of our libertie is come] is first of all declared by a similitude, and then confirmed. The similitude is borrowed from the Ciuill law; and it may be framed thus: Heires in their minoritie, liue in subiection to tutors and gouernours: but when they are of riper yeares, at the appointed point. 40

pointment of their parents; they are at their owne libertie. Euen so, the people of God before Christ, were in their infancie vnder the law as vnder a Tutor: but when the fulnesse of time was come, which God had appointed, they entred into the fruition of their libertie. The first part of the similitude is exprest in the two first verses, and the second in the 3. and 4.

Againe, the *minor* is confirmed by two reasons. The first is this: Your libertie is procured by Christ: therefore the time of your libertie is come. This reason is in the 4. and 5. verses. The second reason is taken from the signe, *You haue receiued the spirit of adoption*: therefore the time of your libertie is come, verse 6. Of these points in order.

First, where he signifies, that the father hath authoritie to dispose of his child. This is the law of nature, and the law of nations. *Paul* 15 saith, *Col. 3. 20. that children must obey their parents in all things*. When the diuell had obtained libertie to afflict *Iob* in all things that belonged to him, saue his person; hee destroyed his children, *Iob* 1. 12, 18. And this shewes, that the children in respect of their bodies, are the goods of their parents. In this respect the Iewes were permitted to sell their children, *Exod. 21. 7*. And so sacred a thing was the authoritie of the parent, that hee which rebelliously despised the same, was put to death, *Dent. 21. 21*.

This authority shewes it selfe, specially in two things: in the marriage, and in the calling of the child. In the marriage of the child, 25 the parent is the principall agent, and the disposer thereof, *Dent. 7. 3. Exod. 34. 16. 1. Cor. 7. 8*. Where obserue, that the commandement touching the marriage of the child, is giuen not to the child, but to the parent: and the parent hath authoritie by the said commandement to giue and bestow his childe, and to take wives to his 30 sonnes. Thus *Abraham* tooke a wife for *Isaac*, and *Isaac* suffered himselfe to be disposed at the appointment of his father. For a more full declaration of this authoritie, I propound these three questions.

The first is, whether the father may commaund his childe to marrie? *Answer*. Presuppouse two things; one, that the commandement be without compulsion; the second, that the father knowes 35 what is for the good of the child: then I answer, that he may command his child to marrie, and to marrie a person thus or thus qualified. Thus *Isaac* commanded *Jacob* to marrie in the house of *Laban*, *Gen. 28. 1, 2*. & *Jacob* obeyed. Now whether a father may command 40 his child to marrie this or this person, I doubt, and therefore suspend.

The second question is, whether parents may make voyd the contract secretly made by their children, without or against their consent?

consent? *Ans.* The scripture giueth them authority either to ratifie such contracts, or to make them void. *Num.* 30. 6. the father may make void the vow of the child pertaining to Gods worshipping: much more a matrimoniall promise. If a yong man deflowre a maide, and this be found, in equity he is to be compelled to marrie her, *Deut.* 22. 28. yet by Gods law this may not be, except the father consent. *Exod.* 22. 17.

The third question is, whether a marriage made without and against the consent of parents, be a marriage or no? *Ans.* It may be called a politicke, or ciuill marriage, because it is ratified in the courts of men, according to humane lawes: and by this meanes the issue is freed from bastardie. Neuerthelesse it is not a diuine or spirituall coniunction, or marriage (as it ought to be) because it is flat against the commandement of God.

Touching the callings of children, they are to be ordered and appointed at the discretion of parents. For if the parent may order the vowe and the marriage of the child, then much more the calling.

Here take notice of the impiety of the Romane religion. There are three especiall estates whereby man liues in society with man: the Church, the Common wealth, the Family. In the Church, that religion sets vp an other head, beside Christ: in the Commonwealth, it sets vp an authority that serues to curb and restraine the Supremacy of Princes in causes Ecclesiasticall. In the family, it puts downe the authority of the father: for it ratifieth clandestine contracts, & it giues liberty to children past twelue or fourteene yeares of age, to enter into any Order of religion against the consent of their parents.

Againe, parents must be put in minde to know their authority, to maintaine it, and to vse it aright, for the good of their children, specially for their saluation. And children must be warned in all things honest and lawfull, to yeeld subiection to their parents: and in this subiection shall they find the blessing of God.

Againe, here is set downe the office of parents, and that is, to prouide meete ouerseers and Tutors for their children after their departure. When Christ vpon the crosse had the pangs of death vpon him, he commends his Mother to the tuition of *Iohn.* 19. 26. When widdowes and Orphanes are wronged, God himselfe takes vpon him the office of a Tutor in their behalfe. *Exod.* 22. 22. And this shewes that it is a necessary duty to be thought vpon.

Thirdly, here the duty of children is set downe, and that is, that

that they must be subiect to their Tutors and gouernors, as to their owne fathers and mothers. *Ruth loued Naomi, and claue vnto her as to her mother, Ruth. 1. 16.* Christ was subiect to *Ioseph* who was but a reputed father, *Luke 2. last.* The sonnes of the Prophets obey their master as their owne fathers, *2 King. 2. 12.* and so doe the seruants to their master, *2. King. 5. 13.*

Now I come to the second part of the similitude, v. 3. *Euen so we* that is, the Iewes, and all the people of God in the old Testament. *Were children* were as children in respect of the Christian Church in the new Testament.

Were in bondage The Iewes are said to be in bondage in respect of vs: because they were subiect to more lawes then we are, and they wanted the fruition of the libertie which we enioy. They had the right of sonnes, but they inioyed not their right as we do: and this is their bondage. For other wise liberty in conscience from hel, death, and sinne, they had euen as we now haue.

Rudiments of the world that is, the law or ministry of *Moses*; and it is so called, in respect of a more full and plentiful doctrine, in the Ministry of the new Testament. And it is called *the Rudiments of the world*, because lewry was as it were, a little schoole set vp in a corner of the world; the law of *Moses* was as it were, an *a, b, c,* or *Primar*, in which Christ was reuealed to the world, in darke and obscure manner, specially to the Iewes.

The vse. Here we see, that the people of the old Testament, were for right, heires as well as we, and therefore they had right to all the blessings of God. The difference betweene vs and them, is onely in the manner which God vsed in dispensing the foresaid blessings to vs.

Againe, the Fathers of the olde Testament before Christ, were but as children in respect of vs now. Thus much saith *Paul* in expresse words. And they were so two waies. First, in respect of the Mosaicali regiment: because they were kept in subiection to more lawes then we. Secondly, they were so in respect of reuelation: because God hath reuealed more to vs, then to them. Reade *Luk. 10. 24.* It may be said, we now are (the best of vs) but children to *Abraham* & the Prophets, whether we respect knowledge, or faith. *Ans.* It is so if we compare person and person: but it is otherwise, if we compare body with body, & compare the Christian Church, with the Church of the Iewes before Christ: then we exceed them & they are but children to vs. This must teach vs al to be carefull, to increase in knowledge, & in the grace of God, that we may be answerable to our condition. And to liue in ignorance

(as the most doe) is the shame of vs all. For in respect of the time, we should all be teachers, *Heb. 5. 12.* and yet God knowes, the most are very babes. For aske a man how he lookes to be saued, he will answer, by seruing God, and dealing truely. Now his seruing of God, is his saying of his prayers: and his prayers are the Beleeefe, and the ten Commaundements. This is a poore seruing of God, fitter for babes, then for men of yeares. It is further to be obserued, that *Paul* saith, the fathers of the old Testament were in bondage under the law, after the manner of seruants, specially by reason of rites and ceremonies. And hence it followes, that the obseruation of a religion, in which are manifold bodily rites and figures, is a kind of bondage, and pertaines to the Church, for the time of her infancie or minoritie. Let this bee remembred against the Romish religion: for it is like to that of the Iewes in the olde Testament; standing for the greatest part in bodily rites, in differences of meates and drinckes, in differences of times, places, garments; in exercises, and afflictions of the bodie, in locall succession, in the collation of grace by the worke done, and such like. This is manifest to them which know the *Mass*, which indeed is nothing but a *mass* of ceremonies. Therefore the Romane religion is a childish and babish religion: and if it were of God, yet is it not fit for the Church of the New Testament, that is come forth of her minoritie. Religion that stands in the afflicting of the body, is but a shadow, and an appearance of humilitie, *Coloss. 2. 23.* And the true worshippers of God in the new Testament, worship him in spirit and trueth, *Iohn 4. 24.*

The fulnesse of time, or the full time, is that time in which the captiuitie of the Church endeth, and her libertie begins. This time was ended 4000. yeares from the creation: and it is called a full time, because it was designed and appointed by the will and prouidence of the heauenly Father. For he is Lord of time: and all seasons are in his hand: and his will or prouidence makes times fit or vnfit. Marke then, that is the onely full and fit time for the enioying of any blessing of God, which he by his prouidence appointeth. This must teach vs, when by prayer wee aske any good thing at Gods hand, not to prescribe any time vnto God, but to leave it to his prouidence. Againe, if thou liue in any misery, waite on the Lord, and bee content. For that is the fit and best time of thy deliuerance, which God hath appoynted. Lastly, thou must bee admonished to pray to God for grace and mercie, and to turne to him this day before to morrow. For this is the time which God hath appoynted for these dueties: *This is the day of grace,*

and therefore the onely fit time, *Hebrewes 3.7. Psalme 32.6.*

Thus much of the similitude: now I come to the first reason, whereby *Paul* confirms his maine argument. Christ hath purchased and procured your libertie: therefore the time thereof is come and past. For the better clearing of this reason, *Paul* sets downe the way and order which was vsed in procuring this libertie. And it containes five degrees. The first is, the sending of the Sonne; the second, his incarnation; the third, his subiection to the law; the fourth, our redemption from the law; the fift, the fruition of our adoption, *verf. 4. 5.*

The first, the sending of the Sonne, in these words, *In the fulnesse of time, God sent forth his Sonne.* That we may attaine to the sense of this great myserie, fixe questions are to be propounded.

The first is, what is meant by God? *Answer.* The Father, the first person. *Ephes. 1. 3. Blessed be God the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, 2. Cor. 1. 3. & Ioh. 20. 17.* And he is called God, not because he partakes more of the Godhead then the Son, or the holy Ghost: but because he is the first in order of the three diuine persons: and he is the beginning of the Sonne, and the holy Ghost; and hath no beginning of his owne person: because he doth not receiue the Godhead by communication from any other. In this respect hee is called God more commonly then the Sonne, or the holy Ghost.

The second question is, How the Father sends the Sonne? *Answer.* By his counsell and eternall decree, whereby the Sonne was designed to the office of a Mediatour, and consequently to become man, *Actes 2. 23.* And thus is hee said to bee sealed of the Father, *Iohn 6. 27.* and to bee sanctified, and sent into the world, *Iohn 10. 36.* And therefore this sending implies no alteration or change of place.

The third question is, whether the Sonne was sent with his owne consent or no? *Answer.* Yea, the decree of the Father is the decree of the Sonne, and the holy Ghost: because as they are all one in nature, so are they all one in will. All the persons then haue a stroke in this sending, yet for orders sake the Father is said to send, because he is first.

The fourth question is, how the Father can send the Sonne, considering they are both one? *Answer.* In the doctrine touching the Trinitie, *Nature*, and *Person* must bee distinguished. *Nature* is a substance commen to many, as the Godhead. A *person* is that which subsisteth of it selfe and hath a proper manner of subsisting, as the Father begetting, the Sonne begotten, the holy Ghost proceeding. Now the Father and the Sonne are one indeed for nature

or Godhead, but they are not one for person. Nay thus they are really distinct. The Father is not the Sonne, nor the Son the Father. And thus doth the Father send the Sonne.

The first question is, why the Sonne is so called? *Answer.* Because he was begotten of the Father, by a perfect & eternall generation, not to be vttered of man, or conceived. And we must be warned, not to conceive it in any carnall or humane maner. For an earthly father is in time before his sonne, and the sonne after: but God the Father and the Sonne are coeternall, and not one before or after the other for time. An earthly father is forth of the sonne, and the sonne forth of the father: but God the Father is in the Sonne, and the Son in the Father. An earthly child is from his father by propagation, but the Son is from the heavenly Father, not by propagation, but by communication of substance. Lastly, the heavenly Father begets the Sonne by communication of his whole substance, and so doth no earthly father.

The last question is, whether the Sonne bee God? For it is here said, *God sent his Sonne.* *Answer.* He is God. For he that is sent forth from God, was before hee was sent forth. And the Sonne is said to bee sent forth; because *hee was with God the Father before all worlds, Iohn 1. 1.* and because *hee came from the bosome of his Father, verse 18.*

Obiect. 1. The Sonne is sent of the Father: and he that is sent, is inferiour to the Father: and he that is inferiour to God, is not God. *Answer.* Two equals by common consent may send each other: and therefore sending alwayes implies not inequality. Againe, inferioritie is of two sorts, inferioritie of nature, and inferioritie of condition. The first doth not befall Christ: because for nature he is one and the same with the Father. The second agrees vnto him, because of his owne voluntary accord, hee abased himselfe, and tooke vpon him the shape of a man, *Phil. 2. 5.*

Obiect. II. God hath his beginning of none: the Son hath his beginning of his Father: therefore he is not God. *Ans.* The Sonne in respect of his person is of the Father: but in respect of his Godhead he is of none. The Sonne of God considered as he is a Sonne, is of the Father, *God of very God.* But considered as he is God, he is God of himselfe, because the Godhead of the Sonne is not begotten, more then the Godhead of the Father.

Obiect. III. The Sonne was made Lord in time, *Actes 2. 36.* therefore no God. *Answer.* Christ, as he is the Sonne of God, was not made Lord in time, but is in nature an eternall Lord, as the Father. And he is said to be made Lord in respect of his condition

as he is God-man, and that in time, in respect of both his natures. In respect of his manhood, because it is received into the vnity of the second person, and exalted to the right hand of God in heaven. In respect of his Godhead, the Maiesty and Lordship whereof, he declared and made manifest in the flesh after his resurrection. Thus was he made Lord by declaring himselfe to be so indeede.

Rom. 1. 4. 1. Tim. 3. 16.

Thus we see how God sent forth his Sonne : the vse followes. This act of God in sending, declares his infinite loue : for this sending was for their sakes that were the enemies of God. And it further signifies vnto vs the most free loue of God. For nothing in vs moued him to send, but his owne goodnesse. This loue of God must moue vs to loue God againe, and to be thankfull.

The Sonne of God takes not to himselfe the office of a Mediatour, but he is called and sent forth of his Father : whereby two things are signified; one, that the office of a Mediatour was appointed of the Father : the other, that the Sonne was designed to this office in the eternall counsell of the blessed Trinity. And so, that we may please God in our callings and places, we must haue a double assurance in our consciences : one, that the offices and callings which we performe, are good, and pleasing vnto God : the second, that we are designed and called of God to the said offices and callings. By this must we stay our minds in all our miseries.

The Sonne is *sent forth*, that is, he comes from his Father, layes aside his maiesty, and takes on him the condition of a seruant. The same minde must bee in vs to humble and abase our selues before God, to thinke better of others then of our selues, to be content with our condition, to be well pleased when we are despised and contemned, because we are worthy of it. This is to conforme our selues to Christ.

That the Sonne of God himselfe must be sent forth from the bosome of his Father, this shewes the greatnesse of our sinne and misery, which was the occasion of this sending. And this must teach vs with bitternesse to hate and detest our sinnes, which fetched the Sonne of God from heaven, and to humble selues with *Dauid* even to the deepes, and thence to pray to God for his mercy.

Psal. 130. 1.

The second point, namely, the Incarnation of the Sonne, is expressed in these words, *Made of a woman* : that is, made man, or made flesh of a woman. The word was *made flesh*. Ioh. 1. 14. Here three questions are to be handled. The first is, why the Sonne was made flesh? *Answer.* There be two speciall causes hereof. First, the

order of diuine iustice requires that Gods wrath should be appeased, and a satisfaction made, in the same nature in which his Maie-
sty was offended. Now the offence was in mans nature : and there-
fore in it must satisfaction to God be performed. Secondly, the Me-
diatour betweene God and man, must be both for nature and con-
dition in the meane betweene God and man, that is, both God and
man : and thus the Sonne of God is a perfect Mediatour.

The second question is, how farre forth the Sonne of God was
made flesh ? I answer three things. The first, that he tooke vnto
him the whole and perfect nature of man in respect of Essence, 10
namely, the intire substance of a reasonable soule, and human body.
Here remember, that quantity, that is, length, breadth, and
thicknesse, is not an accident which may passe and repasse, but it is
of the substance of euery body, & therefore of the body of Christ.
And for this cause it is impossible that the body of Christ in his 15
quantity, beeing foure or fise foote in length, should be included
in the compasse of a peece of bread that is but two or three inches
in quantity. The second is, that the Sonne of God tooke vnto him
the properties of mans nature, the powers of ~~all~~ sense, motion, the
facultie of reason, will, and affection. The third is, that he tooke to 20
him the infirmities, and miseries of mans nature. Here two caueats
must be remembred. The first, that he tooke to him onely such in-
firmities as are meere infirmities, and no sinnes. For example, vpon
the words of Christ, *Let this cuppe passe, Mat. 26.* some say, that there
was obliuion in Christ : but this may not be said. For obliuion is a 25
sinne, namely, a forgetting of that which a man ought to remem-
ber : and there may be in Christ or other men, a suspending of the
Memory, by some externall and violent cause, without obliuion.
The second caueat is, that the Sonne of God tooke to him the in-
firmities which pertain to the nature of man, and not such as per- 30
taine to the persons of men, as dropies, gouts, consumptions, and
such like. For he tooke not the person of any man, but the nature of
all men with all the appurtenances thereof except sinne.

The third question is, How was he made flesh ? *Answer.* The
flesh or manhood of Christ, was first framed, then sanctified, 35
and then vnitd to the Godhead of the Sonne. And thus was
he made man. Remember here that the forming of the flesh of
Christ, the sanctifying of it, and the personall Vnion are all to-
gether for time : and I distinguish them in this sort, onely for
doctrines sake. 40

In the framing of the manhood, I consider the matter, and the
manner. The matter was the substance of the Virgin, signified in
these

these words, *made of a woman*. By this Christ is distinguished from all men in the world: from *Adam*, because hee was neither of man nor woman, but of red clay. From *Eue*, because shee was made of man, and not of woman. From all that come of *Adam* and *Eue*, for they are both of man and woman; whereas Christ is of woman, and not of man. Againe, *Paul* addes these words, [*made of a woman*] to note the accomplishment of the promise, *the seed of the woman shall breake the Serpents head*, *Gen. 3.15*.

The manner of framing is expressed, when *Paul* saith, *made*, not begotten of a woman. The manhood then of Christ, was framed without naturall generation, by an extraordinarie worke of the holy Ghost. Heere a doubt is answered. Some man may say, if hee were made of a woman, he comes of *Adam*, and consequently hee is a sinner. Answer. The order set downe by God with *Adam* in the creation is, that whatsoever hee loseth, all his posteritie shall lose that comes of him by generation. Vpon this order, all that are begotten of *Adam*, with the nature of man, receiue the sinne and corruption of nature. And so should Christ haue done, if he had descended of *Adam* by generation. But considering his flesh was made of the substance of a woman, and not begotten of any man: therefore he take the nature of man, and not the corruption of nature.

The sanctifying of the manhood of Christ, is a worke of diuine power, whereby at the time of the framing thereof, it was filled with the gifts of the holy Ghost aboue measure, that he might in both natures be a perfect Sauiour. Here obserue, that Christ by the actions of his life, did not merit for himselfe glory, and eternall happiness: because he was most worthy of all glory and honour at the very first moment of his conception. Againe, obserue that Christ in his manhood increased in grace, as in age, and stature, *Luk. 2*. And this increase was without all imperfection: for in his infancy, Christ receiued a full measure of grace fitte for that age: when he was twelue yeares old, he receiued a further measure, fitte for that age: and so when he was thirty yeares old. And thus increase of grace, and the perfection thereof, stand both together. And this increase is not onely in respect of experience, and the manifestation of Grace before God and men, but also in respect of the habit or gift: though the *Schooles* for 400. yeares haue taught the contrary euer since the daies of *Lumbard*.

The third thing is, the Vniting of flesh to the Godhead of the Sonne: and that is done, when the Sonne of God makes the flesh or nature of man, a part of himselfe, and communicates vnto it his

own substance. The like example to this is not to be found againe in the world: yet haue we some resemblance of this myserie in the plant called *Mistletoe*, which hath no roote of his owne, but growes in a tree of an other kinde, and thence receiues his sappe. And so the manhood of the sonne hath no personality or personal substance, but is receiued into the Vnitie of the second person, and is sustained of it. It must here be obserued, that there is a difference betweene the manhood of Christ, and all other men. *Peter* is a person subsisting of himselfe, and so is *Paul*, and euery particular man: but so is not the manhood of Christ: and therefore it is to be termed a nature, and not a person. And it is no disgrace, but an exaltation to the nature of man, that it subsists by the vncreated substance of the second person.

It may be objected, that all beleeuers are ioyned to the sonne of God, as well as the flesh of Christ: I answer, they are so, but in an other kinde, and in a lower degree, by communication of grace, and not by communication of personall substance.

Thus wee see how the sonne was made flesh: the vse followes. Hence wee learne to vse all meanes, that wee may become new creatures, and be borne of God. God becomes man, that we men might be partakers of the diuine nature. Christ is made bone of our bone, and flesh of our flesh by his incarnation, that we might be made bone of his bone, and flesh of his flesh by regeneration. The Sonne of God was made the sonne of man, that we which are the sonnes of men might be made the sonnes of God.

To be made flesh, is the abasement of his Sonne: in this abasement he goes on, till he become euen as a worme of the earth, *Psalm. 22. 7.* so must we abase our selues, till we be annihilated and brought to nothing: then shall wee bee like to Christ, and filled with the good things of God.

Our sinnes are a wall of partition betweene God and vs: so as we are farre from God, and God from vs, *Isai. 59. 2.* and this partition is of our owne making: and by this meanes wee haue no access to God of our selues, though we pray vnto him, and fill heaven and earth with our crie. Now the Sonne of God made man, is *Emmanuel*, that is, *God with vs*, *Isa. 7. 14.* and his incarnation is a meanes whereby we haue access to God, and hee is neere vnto vs, when wee pray vnto him in truth, *2. Chronicles 15. 2.* This must teach vs to draw neere to God, in the hearing and obeying of his word, in prayer, and in the vse of the holy Sacraments. If this be not done, great is our wickednesse, and great shall bee the punishment, *Iob 21. 14. Psalm. 73. 27.*

The

The incarnation of Christ, is the foundation of all our comfort, and al good things which we inioy. By it God comforts *Adam*. The seed of the woman, shall bruise the Serpents head. *Iacob* is comforted by the vision of a ladder, reaching from heauen to earth: and this
 5 ladder is the Sonne of God made man, *Ioh. 1. 51.* *Iob* comfort himselfe, in this, that his Redeemer of his owne flesh (as the word signifieth) liueth, *Iob. 19. 25.* In the old Testament, they which sought vnto God, came to the Arke or Propitiatory, and there were they heard, and receiued the blessings of God. Now Christ, God and man, is
 10 in stead of the Arke, *Rom. 3. 25.* and therefore we must come to him if we would receiue any good thing of God. The godhead is the fountaine of all good things, and the flesh or manhood is a pipe or conduit to conuay the same vnto vs. If we would then receiue true comfort, we must hunger and thirst in our hearts after
 15 Christ, and by our faith eate his flesh and drinke his blood, *Ioh. 6. 54. 56.*

The third point or degree, is the subiection of the Son of God to the law, expresse in these words, *made vnder the law.*

Here two questions are to be answered. The first is, who is made
 20 subiect to the law? I answer, the Sonne of God. And this may not seeme strange, that he which is Lord of the law, should be subiect to the law: for he must be considered, as he is our pledge and surety, *Heb. 5. 22.* and as one that standes in our place, roome, & stead; and before God represents the person of all the elect: and in this respect is he subiect to the law, not by nature, but by voluntary abasement and condition of will.

The second question is, how the Sonne of God was subiect to the law? Answer. By a twofold obedience: namely, by the obedience of his passion, and by his obedience in fulfilling the
 30 law. The obedience of his passion stands before God as a satisfacti- on for the breach of the law. In it consider two things, the foundation of the passion, and the passion it selfe. The foundation is, that the Sonne of God was made sinne for vs, *2. Cor. 5. 21.* that is, all the sinnes of all the Elect were imputed to him, and he in our roome
 35 and place was recounted a sinner. The passion it selfe, is the curse of the law, laid on the Sonne of God, namely, the first death, and the paines of the second death, which is in effect and substance, the paines of hell, as I haue shewed in the 3. chap. v. 13. of this Epistle.

40 By the second Obedience in fulfilling the law, the Sonne of God performed for vs, all things contained therein, that we might haue right to life euermlasting, and that according to the tenour of

the law, *Leuit. 18 5. Doe all these things and live.* Of this obedience 2. questions are demanded. The first is, whether it be necessarie for the iustification of a sinner? *Answer.* It is: The summe of the law is, *Love God with all thy heart, and thy neighbour as thy selfe:* Now every iot and title of the law must necessarily be fulfilled, *Math. 5. 18.* 5
Much more then the summe and substance of the lawe. And it cannot be fulfilled by vs, being sinners: therefore there must needs be a translation of the law from our persons, to the person of the Mediatour, who is to accomplish euery iot of the law for vs. Againe, *He that doth not all things contained in the law: is cursed. Gal. 3. 13.* 10
He therefore that would eschewe the curse of the law, and come to life euerlasting, must by himselfe accomplish all things contained in the law: and if this cannot be done, the law and all the contents thereof, must needs be accomplished in the person of the Mediatour: otherwise the curse cannot be avoided. Lastly, we owe 15
vnto God a double debt or tribute. The first is, homage or subiection to be performed with all the powers of the soule, and with all the strength of all the powers, and that from the first conception. The second is, a satisfaction by death for the breach of the law. And the law is the bond that binds vs to the payment of this double debt. And till the iustice of God in the law be answered to the 20
full, this bond cannot be cancelled. Therefore the Sonne of God, the Mediatour, must not only dy for vs, but also performe homage for vs to God, according to the tenour of the law. Therefore he saith, that he must performe all righteousnesse, *Math. 3. 15.* And Paul, that 25
Christ is the end of the law for righteousness. Rom. 10. 4.

It is alledged, that Christ as man fulfilled the law for himselfe: and therefore not for vs. *Answer.* The flesh or manhood of Christ considered by it selfe apart from the godhead of the Sonne, is a creature that owes homage vnto God. Yet if it be considered as it 30
is receiued into the vnity of the second person, & is become a part thereof, it is exempted from the common condition of all other men, and is not bound to performe subiection, as all men are. For if the Sonne of man be Lord of the Sabbath, then also is he Lord of the whole law. And Paul here saith, that the Sonne of God, is not borne 35
but made under the law.

Againe, it is alledged, That the blood of Christ taketh away all sinne, *1. Ioh. 1. 7.* and when all sinne is taken away, the law is fulfilled, and the person iustified. *Answer.* When S. Iohn saith, the blood of Christ purgeth vs from all sin, he excludes the blood of beastes, and all 40
meritorious meanes of saluation in man, out of Christ: and he excludes not the obedience which the Mediatour yeelded to the Father
ther

ther in all his sufferings. Again, it is not true that a sinner is justified, when all sinne is abolished: vnlesse iustice be added. For iustification is an alteration of a sinner from one contrary to another, from euill to good, from life to death: and therefore sinne must depart, and iustice come in the roome thereof. That a darke house
 5 may be inlightned, darkenes must first be abolished, and light must come in the stead thereof. And that a man may be iustified, sinne must be couered, and righteousness imputed.

The second question is, how the Sonne of God performed
 10 this obedience? *Answer.* He was obedient to his Father to the death, and that according to all the duties of loue in the first table: & for the second table, he loued his enemies as himselfe, because he gaue his life for man. Mark then, he did all things contained in the law, and more too, in respect of the duties of the second Table.
 15 For the law binds vs to loue our neighbours as our selues, and not more then our selues, This obedience therefore is truly to be tearmed *a worke of supererogatio*: & there is none in the world beside.

The yse. That the Sonne of God was conformable to the law, it argues the goodnesse, perfection, and excellencie thereof. Here againe marke the difference, betweene the man Christ, and all other
 20 men. He was not borne subiect to the law, but made subiect: not subiect by nature, but by will and by voluntary abasement. All other men are subiect not by wil, but by nature, not made, but borne subiect. Therefore *Paul* saith, *the Gentiles doe by nature the things of*
 25 *the law.* The remainders of the law since the fall are naturall in all men: therefore the whole law was naturall before the fall. Man was at the first created in righteousness and holines, *Eph. 4. 24.* and therefore in a perfect subiection and conformity to the law. It is a naturall propertie of a reasonable creature, to doe homage to the creator. It is an error then in the papist to teach, that the Image of God
 30 in our first parents was supernaturall.

The fourth point or degree is, the Redemption of man from vnder the law, in these words: [*that he might redeeme them which were vnder the law.*] Here five things are to be considered. The first is,
 35 what is meant by being vnder the law? *Answer.* The law must be considered two waies: first, as the Rule of life. Thus angels are vnder the law, and *Adam* before his fall, and the Saints now in heauen. And none yeeld more subiection to the law then they: and this subiection is their libertie. Againe the law must be considered
 40 as a grieuous yoke which none can beare. It is a yoke three waies. first, because it did bind the Church of the old Testament to the obseruation of many and that very costly ceremonies, for the

mainenance of the altar at Hierosalem was a matter of great charges. Secondly, it is a yoke because it binds every offendour to euermorling death, *Gen. 2. 17. Gal. 3. 10.* Thirdly, it is a yoke as it increaseth sinne and as it is the strength of it, *1. Cor. 15. 56. Rom. 5. 20.* and *7. 8.* And it increaseth sinne, not as a cause, but as an occasion. For the wicked nature of man is, the more to doe a thing, the more he is forbidden. The Israelites are bidden to goe on to Canaan, then they like Egypt sell. They are forbidden to goe to Canaan, and commanded to stay in the wilderness. But then they will needs go to Canaan. Circumcision commanded, was lothed of all nations: when it was abolished, then men of iundry nations embraced it as needfull to saluation. To be vnder the law then, is to be in subiection to it, as it is a burden and yoke in the three former respects, specially to be subiect to the curse of the law.

The second point is, who are vnder the law? *Answer.* The Jewes before the coming of Christ, were vnder the law in respect of Ceremonies: and all men naturally are vnder the law in respect of the malediction and curse thereof, all being borne children of wrath, *Ephesians 2. 3.* Heere comes a lamentable matter to bee considered. Very few in respect know themselves to bee in bondage to the curse of the law. For they thinke it an easie matter to obserue the law: and it is vsed for a forme of prayer whereby men vse to blesse themselves morning and euening. Learne therefore this one lesson, that thou art by nature in thy selfe vnder the curse of the law, and for thine offences by it bound ouer to euermorling death. If thou shouldst be proclaimed an outlaw, or a writ of rebellion should bee serued on thee, it would make thee at thy wits ende. Now behold, the law proclaimeth thee a traytour, and rebell against God through heauen and earth. The law shuts heauen against thee: it sets hell and death wide open for thee, and it armes all the creatures of God against thee. Therefore it stands thee in hand to looke about thee, and to flie from the sentence of the law to the throne of grace for mercie and forgiveness. It hath been the fashion of all holy men, to acquaint themselves with this one lesson, that they were by nature vnder the law, specially then when they were to humble themselves in the presence of God. *Daniel* in his praier, ascribes shame and confusion to himselfe, *Daniel 9.* according to the voice and cry of the law: and the prodigall sonne confesseth that he had sinned against his father, and against heauen, and that hee was unworthy to bee accounted a child of God; according to the law iudging and condemning himselfe.

The third point is, what is the price wherby men are bought or redeemed from vnder the law? *Answer.* The obedience of the Son, wherby he stood in subiection to the Law for vs: as *Paul* signifies in the words immediatly going before. It may be said, how can the obedience of one man be a price of redemption for another? *Answer,* wee must consider *Christ*, not as a meere man, but as God-man, and by this meanes his obedience is of infinite merit and efficacy. Againe, we must consider him not as a priuate, but as a publicke person, representing all the elect in his obedience to his Father. And by this meanes his obedience serues for all that beleue in him. Againe, it may bee alleadged, that the law saith, *Thou shalt loue, thou shalt not lust, &c.* And, *the soule that sinnes, that soule shall die, Ezech. 18. 20.* And, *a man shall not redeeme the life of his brother, Psal. 49. 7.* *Answer.* The law requires that euery man performe obedience, and make satisfaction in his owne person, & the law knowes no other obedience. But this must be considered, that the law is but one part of the reuealed will of God: and that the Gospel is an other distinct part, reuealing more then the law euer knew. And the Gospell teacheth a Translation of the law in respect of obedience, from our person to the person of the Mediatour, and thereby it addes an exception to the law.

The fourth point is, who are partakers of this redemption? *Ans.* They which see, and feele, and bewaile their condition that they are vnder the law, and flie from the sentence thereof to the throne of grace for mercy. *Christ came to saue sinners, Matth. 9.* that is, such as are conuicted by the law, and know themselves to be sinners. He offers ease to them that trauell and are heauyladen, *Matth. 11. 28.* Hee preacheth deliuerance to captiues, *Luke 4. 18.* Here wee are to bewaile the misery of our people, that know not themselves to be vnder the law: nay they loue and delight to be vnder it. For they alleadge for themselves, that they say their prayers duely and truly, that they meane well to God-ward, and deale truly with men: and therefore they thinke God will haue mercy on them, and haue them excused for all their offences.

The last poynt is, what benefits arise of this deliuerance from vnder the law? *Answer.* They which turne to God, and beleue in *Christ*, reape foure benefits thereby. The first is, that no sinne shall haue dominion over them, *Romanes 6. 14.* Heere marke by the way, that they which are in *Christ*, cannot wholly fall from grace. For they which wholly fall away, are vnder the dominion of sinne.

The second is, that God will accept the indeauour to obey,
for

for obedience, because they are freed from the rigour of the law. Reade *Malach. 3. 17.*

The third is, that they haue libertie to liue and serue God without feare of damnation, or any other euill, *Luke 1. 74.*

The last is, that affliction cease to bee curses, and are turned to blessings: and for this cause they are delaied and qualified for the good of them which are afflicted. *Psalm. 89. 32. I will correct them that offend with a rodde, but I will not take my mercie from them. Prou. 3. 11. Griue not for the correction of the Lord: for hee loueth whom hee correcteth. Ierem. 10. 24. Correct vs in iudgement: and powre foorth thy wrath vpon the nations, that haue not known thee.* This must teach men that professe or teach Christ, not to be discouraged when they are abused, railed on, slandered, or cursed. For if they bee from vnder the law, and from vnder the sting of a guiltie conscience, nothing shall hurt them. They must be content for a while to suffer the snatches and bitings of the diuell: for in the end his head shall be bruised in pieces.

To ende this poynt; it may bee said, if we that beleeeue be not vnder the law, then we may liue and doe as we list. *Answer.* We are free from the law, as a yoke, but not free from it, as it is the rule of obedience, and good life. And because we are freed from the bondage of the law, therefore wee must bee a law to our selues: wee must bee *voluntaries*, *Psalm. 110. 4.* without constraint, freely yeelding subiection to the will of God, and not for feare of hell, and the last iudgement.

The third and last degree, is the fruition of adoption, in these words [*that wee might receiue the adoption of sonnes.*] Heere two questions are to be considered. The first is, How the Church of the new Testament is said to receiue the adoption which was before receiued in the old Testament? *Answer.* In Scripture a thing is often said to bee done, when it is done more fully, and plentifully. Christ tells *Nathanael* that *hee shall see heauen open*, *Iohn 1. 51.* that is, more plainly opened. For it was not shut in the olde Testament. And, *the holy Ghost was not yet*, *Iohn 7. 39.* that is, in the full measure. And, *the way into the Holiest, was not open while the Tabernacle was standing*: *Hebr. 9. 8.* that is, plainly made manifest. And in this place, beleeuers of the New Testament receiue the adoption: because they receiue it in a more full and plentifull manner, in that the spirit of children is powred foorth vpon them in larger measure, whether wee regard Illumination, or the gifts of regeneration. This must teach vs that liue in these latter dayes, to put on the condition of sonnes and daughters of God, in reuerence, obedi-

obedience, and thankfulness. But alas, among the multitude, it is farre otherwise. For the most live even as Atheists in ignorance, according to the lusts of their owne hearts. The faith and repentance, which they professe, is but ceremoniall Faith, and repentance.

The second question is, whence springs our adoption? The answer is plaine in the words: From the obedience of the Sonne, whereby he stood in subiection to the law. Here the question of all questions is answered; namely, what is that thing, by which, and for which a sinner is iustified before God, and saued? *Answer.* The obedience of the Sonne of God made man, and made vnder the law for vs. For this is it that frees vs from vnder the law, and giues vs the adoption of sonnes. And this alone is it, whereby we stand before the tribunall seat of God, which also we are to oppose to the iudgement of God, to hell, death, and condemnation.

Therefore our common people erre, that looke to bee saued by their good deeds, that is, by their good meaning and dealing. They thus tread the blood of Christ vnder their owne feet, and become Iesusses, or Saviours to themselves.

Secondly, they erre, that teach iustification by the essentiall iustice of the Godhead of the Sonne: for that it is incommunicable: and they which are iustified by it, are also deified.

Thirdly, the Papist erreth, which teacheth iustification partly by remission of sinnes, and partly by that which we call inward sanctification: which is imperfect and mixed in this life with our corruption, and therefore vnfit to absolue and acquit vs before God.

It may be said, what must we doe that wee may bee iustified and saued by this obedience of the Mediatour? *Answer.* In the olde Testament, when a man had sinned, he brought a sheep or an ox to the doore of the Tabernacle, and when the Priest cut the throat of it, the partie laid his hand vpon the head of it, *Exod. 29. 10.* And hereby he signified, that the beast had done no hurt, and that hee as a guiltie malefactor had deserued death. Now all this was done in figure. And it teacheth vs that we miserable sinners must come to God; that wee must bring our sacrifice with vs, namely, the Lambe of God, which is the Sonne of God made man, and made vnder the law: that wee must present this Lambe, and the oblation thereof to the Father for vs, laying our handes on the head of it: that is, confessing our guiltinesse, and that we haue iustly deserued death and perdition from the presence of God. In the last place, we must intreat the Lord to accept the blood of the Lambe for

for vs, and the whole obedience of the Mediatour. Thus shall we be iustificed and saued. Thou wilt say, I will therefore doe this when I am dying. I say again, let it be thy daily exercise to the very death. Thou wait seuen yeares in learning thy trade; thinke not therefore in an houre or two, to worke thy reconciliation with God. If thou art many yeares in learning such things as are done by the strength of nature, thinke not to attaine to things aboue nature, when, and how thou wilt. It is a rule receiued of al men, that they must blesse themselves: now the right way to blesse thy selfe, is to pleade guiltie before God, and to intreat him to accept the obedience of the Mediatour for thee.

Vers. 6.

Sonnes] that is, such as inioy the libertie of sonnes. *Sent forth*] a speech borrowed fro Embassadors, which are set forth with instructions, what they shall say or doe: and it signifies, that the spirit reueales nothing but that which is the will of the Father and Sonne, *Iohn 16. 14.* *Crying*] making vs to crie, *Rom. 8. 26.* For if the wordes bee taken properly, the spirit must pray to it selfe. *Abba*] the next word is the exposition, *Father.*

The sense. The Father hath sent forth the spirit of his Sonne vnto you; this spirit sent forth, dwells in your hearts: dwelling in your hearts, it makes you pray to God as to a father: and all this it doth, because you are indeed the sonnes of God.

The scope. The question is, whether beleeuers of the New Testament bee seruants to the law, or children? *Paul* answers, No: and hee giues two reasons. The first, was in the former verses: the second in this. And it is drawne from the signe, thus. Yee haue receiued the spirit crying, *Abba, Father*: therefore yee are sonnes indeed.

In the words, I consider fise things: the person sent forth, the spirit of the Sonne: the person sending, God: the maner of sending: the place whither the spirit is sent, your hearts: the office of the spirit, *Crying, Abba.*

Of the first: the spirit of the Sonne it is, who is sent forth. He is so called: first, because he proceeds by communication of substance, or Godhead, not onely from the Father, but also from the Sonne. Secondly, because in his manhood hee is annoynted and filled with the holy Ghost, aboue measure: Thirdly, because by his death, he hath merited the giuing and sending of the Holy Ghost vnto vs.

Moreover, the spirit of the Sonne is here described. First, he is a person subsisting of himselfe, in that he is said to be sent forth: secondly,

ly, hee is a diuine person, and no creature, because he dwells in the hearts of all beleeuers: thirdly, hee proceeds from the Father and the Sonne: from the Father, because hee is sent of him: from the Sonne, because he is the spirit of the Sonne.

5 The vse. By this we learne, that the Intercession of Christ, is of force with God. For he praied for the sending of the Spirit, and it is accomplished. Reade *Iohn 14. 16.*

And it is a superfluous doctrine, to teach the Reall presence of the flesh of Christ in the Sacrament. For Christ is departed
10 from vs in respect of his manhood: because the Spirit is sent, *Iohn 16. 7.*

Thirdly, that which the Spirit inwardly teacheth, is the same with that which the Sonne hath reuealed by the ministration of the Prophets and Apostles, because the Spirit is the Spirit of the Son.
15 Reade *Iohn 16. 14.* Doctrines then concerning saluation, that are beside, or contrary to the Scriptures (as a great part of the Romish religion is) are not reuealed by the Spirit of God, but are the fictions of the diuell.

The person sending, is God, that is, the Father, in these words,
20 *God sent forth the Spirit of his Sonne.* Where marke the distinction of the persons in Trinitie. There is the Father, the Sonne, and the Spirit of the Sonne. And heere remember, that this action of sending forth, argues not superioritie in the person sending, nor inferioritie in the person sent: (for equalls may send each other by
25 common consent,) but it argues order, and a distinction of persons in respect of their beginning. For the Father is of none, the Sonne is of the Father, and the holy Ghost is of both: and hence it is that he is sent of both.

The manner of this sending forth, was on this sort. We may
30 not imagine that in this sending, there was any change of place: For the Holy Ghost is euery where. But hee is said to be sent forth, when hee manifesteth his presence by his diuine operation, or by speciall and supernaturall gifts in the hearts of beleeuers, as by the gift of illumination, faith, regeneration. Life, sense and
35 motion are the gifts of the Spirit, and so are ciuill vertues: but the sending of the Spirit, is onely in respect of such gifts as are bestowed in the Church, in the receiuing of which, the Spirit is acknowledged.

The place or mansion of the Spirit is the heart, that is, the mind,
40 will, and affection. The heart is the very sinke of sinne; yet that doth the Spirit choose for his abode. Hence we learne.

1. That the beginning of our new birth is in the heart, when a
new

new light is put into the minde, a new and heauenly disposition into the will and affection.

2. The most principall part of our change or renouation, is in the heart, where the spirit abides. The end of all teaching is *loue out of a pure heart, good conscience, and faith vnfeined, 1. Tim. 1. 5.*

3. The beginning and principall part of Gods worship is in the heart. Hee that serues God in the righteousness of his heart, in peace, and ioy in the holy Ghost, is accepted, *Rom. 14. 17.*

4. In our hearts no wicked or carnall thought, will, desire, or lust must reigne, but onely Gods word and Spirit. For thy heart is the house where the Spirit dwells, and hee must be Lord of his owne house.

5. Aboue all things keepe watch and ward about thy heart, and fill it with all good cogitations and desires, that it may be a fit place of entertainment for the spirit, who is (as it were) an Embassadour sent from the great God vnto thee.

The last thing is, the office of the spirit, which is, to make beleeuers crie, *Abba.* Here I consider 4. things: 1. The meanes whereby this crie is caused. 2. The nature of it. 3. To whom it is directed. 4. The maner of direction.

For the first, in the effecting or causing of this crie, there are foure works of the Spirit. The first is, *Conuiction*, when a man in his iudgment and conscience is conuicted, that the Scriptures of the Prophets and Apostles, are indeed the word of God. To this purpose there are many arguments which now I omit. This conuiction is a common worke of the spirit, yet necessary, because much Atheisme lies lurking in our hearts, which makes vs call into quelling on euery part of the word of God.

The second worke is *Subiection*, whereby a man conuicted that the Scripture, and euery part of it, is the word of God, subiects himselfe in his heart to the commandement of God, which bids him turne to God, and beleeue in Christ. And this second is a worke of the spirit of grace proper to the elect.

The third is, the *Certificate* or testimony of the spirit, which is a diuine manner of reasoning framed in the minds of them that beleeue and repent, on this manner:

He that beleeues and repents, is Gods child. Thus saith the Gospel. But I beleeue in Christ, and repent: at the least I subiect my will to the commaundement which biddes mee repent and beleeue: I detest mine unbeleeefe, and all my sinnes: and desire the Lord to increase my faith.

Therefore I am the childe of God.

This

This is the practicall Syllogisme of the Holy Ghost. It is the testimonie of the Spirit, that we are the sonnes of God: it is the earnest of the Spirit, and the seale whereby wee are sealed to the day of our redemption: and it containes the certaintie of speciall faith.

The fourth thing that followes vpon this testimonie, is peace of conscience, ioy and affiance in God. And from this affiance comes the crying heere mentioned, whereby every true beleeuers with open throat (as it were) cries vnto God the Father. This doctrine is of great worth, it is the hinge vpon which the gate of heaven turnes: and therefore to be remembred.

The vse. By this we see a manifest error in the Popish religion, which teacheth, that we can haue no other certaintie of our salvation in this life, but that which is probable or coniecturall, that is, a certaintie ioyned with feare, suspition, and some doubting. Certaintie in respect of God that promisseth: feare and doubting, in respect of our owne indisposition. But this doctrine is false. For they which are Gods children, receiue the spirit, crying, Abba: and this crying argues affiance or confidence in God. By faith wee haue confidence in God, and entrance with boldnesse, *Ephes. 3. 12.* and boldnes is opposite to feare, and excludes doubting in respect of our selues.

Again, by this doctrine we see it is ordinary & possible for all that beleue & repent, to be certainly assured that they are the children of God. For if they haue the spirit of God crying in them (as all Gods children haue) they cannot but perceiue this crie, and withall they haue the testimony of the spirit in them, which is the ground of this crie, *Rem. 8. 16.* And seeing this is so, we must be admonished to vse all means that we may be assured that we are the children of God. *2. Pet. 1. Give all diligence to make your election sure. Paul bids rich men lay up a good foundation against the time to come, 1. Tim. 6. 18.* And this foundation must be laid, not in heaven, but in the conscience God of his mercy hath made a couenant or bargain with vs that beleue and repent: in this bargain he hath promised to vs pardon of our sinnes, & life euerslasting: let vs then neuer be at rest, till we haue receiued earnest from the hand of God, & haue his promise sealed vnto vs by the spirit in our hearts. You will say, what shal I do to be assured that I am Gods child? *Ans.* Thou must examine thy selfe of two things. The first is, whether thou art conuicted in thy iudgement, that the Scripture is indeed the word of God: if thou art not yet conuicted, then enquire & vse meanes that thou maiest indeed be conuicted: otherwise all is in vaine. Secondly, inquire whether thou dost indeed and in good earnest, submit and subiect thy will,

new light is put into the minde, a new and heauenly disposition into the will and affection.

2. The most principall part of our change or renouation, is in the heart, where the spirit abides. The end of all teaching is *loue out of a pure heart, good conscience, and faith vnfeined, 1. Tim. 1. 5.*

3. The beginning and principall part of Gods worship is in the heart. Hee that serues God in the righteousness of his heart, in peace, and ioy in the holy Ghost, is accepted, *Rom. 14. 17.*

4. In our hearts no wicked or carnall thought, will, desire, or lust must reigne, but onely Gods word and Spirit. For thy heart is the house where the Spirit dwells, and hee must be Lord of his owne house.

5. Aboue all things keepe watch and ward about thy heart, and fill it with all good cogitations and desires, that it may be a fit place of entertainment for the spirit, who is (as it were) an Embassadour sent from the great God vnto thee.

The last thing is, the office of the spirit, which is, to make beleeuers crie, *Abba.* Here I consider 4. things: 1. The meanes whereby this crie is caused. 2. The nature of it. 3. To whom it is directed. 4. The maner of direction.

For the first, in the effecting or causing of this crie, there are foure works of the Spirit. The first is, *Conuiction*, when a man in his iudgment and conscience is conuicted, that the Scriptures of the Prophets and Apostles, are indeed the word of God. To this purpose there are many arguments which now I omit. This conuiction is a common worke of the spirit, yet necessary, because much Atheisme lies lurking in our hearts, which makes vs call into quelling on euery part of the word of God.

The second worke is *Subiection*, whereby a man conuicted that the Scripture, and euery part of it, is the word of God, subiects himselfe in his heart to the commandement of God, which bids him turne to God, and beleeue in Christ. And this second is a worke of the spirit of grace proper to the elect.

The third is, the *Certificate* or testimony of the spirit, which is a diuine manner of reasoning framed in the minds of them that beleeue and repent, on this manner:

He that beleeues and repents, is Gods child. Thus saith the Gospel. But I beleeue in Christ, and repent: at the least I subiect my will to the commaundement which biddes mee repent and beleeue: I detest mine unbeleeffe, and all my sinnes: and desire the Lord to increase my faith.

Therefore I am the childe of God.

This

This is the practicall Syllogisme of the Holy Ghost. It is the testimonie of the spirit, that we are the sonnes of God: it is the earnest of the Spirit, and the seale whereby wee are sealed to the day of our redemption: and it containes the certaintie of speciall faith.

The fourth thing that followes vpon this testimonie, is peace of conscience, ioy and affiance in God. And from this affiance comes the crying heere mentioned, whereby every true beleever with open throat (as it were) cries vnto God the Father. This doctrine is of great worth, it is the hinge vpon which the gate of heaven turnes: and therefore to be remembered.

The vse. By this we see a manifest error in the Popish religion, which teacheth, that we can haue no other certaintie of our salvation in this life, but that which is probable or coniecturall, that is, a certaintie ioyned with feare, suspicion, and some doubting. Certaintie in respect of God that promisseth: feare and doubting, in respect of our owne indisposition. But this doctrine is false. For they which are Gods children, receiue the spirit, crying, Abba: and this crying argues affiance or confidence in God. By faith wee haue confidence in God, and entrance with boldnesse, *Ephes. 3. 12.* and boldnes is opposite to feare, and excludes doubting in respect of our selues.

Again, by this doctrine we see it is ordinary & possible for all that beleue & repent, to be certainly assured that they are the children of God. For if they haue the spirit of God crying in them (as all Gods children haue) they cannot but perceiue this crie, and withall they haue the testimony of the spirit in them, which is the ground of this crie, *Rem. 8. 16.* And seeing this is so, we must be admonished to vse all means that we may be assured that we are the children of God. *2. Pet. 1. Give all diligence to make your election sure. Paul bids rich men lay up a good foundation against the time to come, 1. Tim. 6. 18.* And this foundation must be laid, not in heaven, but in the conscience God of his mercy hath made a couenant or bargain with vs that beleue and repent: in this bargain he hath promised to vs pardon of our sinnes, & life euermlasting: let vs then neuer be at rest, till we haue receiued earnest from the hand of God, & haue his promise sealed vnto vs by the spirit in our hearts. You wil say, what shal I do to be assured that I am Gods child? *Ans.* Thou must examine thy selfe of two things. The first is, whether thou art conuicted in thy iudgement, that the Scripture is indeed the word of God: if thou art not yet conuicted, then enquire & vse meanes that thou maiest indeed be conuicted: otherwise all is in vaine. Secondly, inquire whether thou dost indeed and in good earnest, submit and subiect thy will,

to

to the commandement of God, which bids thee beleue in Christ, and turne vnto God. For if thou canst say, that thou doest will to beleue, and will to repent, it thou shew this will indeed in the vse of good meanes, if thou condemne and detest thy vnbeleefe, and al other thy sins, thou hast receiued the earnest of the spirit, & thou art indeed the child of God. And this assurance shall be vnto thee of great vse. For it will make thee reioyce in afflictions: and it will worke patience, experience, hope, *Rom. 5. 5.* It wil make thee despise this world, it will take away the feare of death, and kindle in thy heart a desire to be with Christ.

Touching the nature of this crie, it stands in the desires and groanes of the heart, directed vnto God. And these desires may be distinguished from all carnall desires, by three properties. First of all, they are in the hearts of them that are turned to God, or at the least beginne to turne vnto him. For God heareth no sinners. Secondly, they are conceived in the minde according to the reuealed will of God, *Rom. 8. 27. 1. Iohn 5. 14.* Thirdly, they are diuine and spirituall, touching things which concerne the kingdome of God, *Rom. 8. 5.*

Desires thus qualified, haue the force of a loud crie in the eares of God. *Psal. 10. 17. God heareth the desire of the poore. Psalm. 38. 9. All my desires are before thee. Psal. 145. 19. He fulfilleth the desire of them that feare him. Isai. 64. 24. Before they crie, I will answer: that is, so soone as a desire of my helpe is conceived, and before it be vttered I will answer.*

That the desires of our hearts are cries, it is by meanes of the intercession of Christ. This Intercession is not a vocall, but a *vertuall* prayer, in that the Sonne of God presents his manhood and his merits before the Father in heauen, willing as God, and desiring as man, that the Father should accept the said merits for vs. Now this will and desire of the Sonne, is of great force with the Father. It is a crie in which the Father is well pleased: and by it the desires of our hearts are cries in the eares of God.

Of these desires there bee two speciall examples in the Scriptures. The first is, when we are touched in our hearts for our sinnes, to flie to the throne of grace, & to desire reconciliation with God in Christ. When *Dauid* did but desire the pardon of his sinnes, and therefore purposed in his heart to humble himselfe, hee receiued pardon: *Psalme 32. 5. I said, I will confesse my wickednesse against my selfe vnto the Lord, and thou forganest the punishment of my sinne.* When the prodigall sonne conceived a desire to bee reconciled to his father, with a purpose to confesse his offence, before

fore he had vttered his desire, he is receiued to mercy, *Luke 15. 21.*

The second example is a desire of Gods presence and protection in common iudgements. When *Moses* stood at the red sea in great danger, hauing the sea before him, and *Phar. iohs* chariots behinde him, no doubt he lifted vp his heart vnto God; but we reade not of any thing that he said, and yet the Lord saith, *Why criest thou to mee? Exod. 14. 15.* When *Iehosaphat* was in great distresse, by reason of the army of the Ammonites, confounded in himselfe, hee saith, *O Lord, we know not what to doe, but our eyes are towards thee, 2. Chron. 20. 12.* and hereupon he obtained deliuerance.

The vse. By this we learne to lay aside formall praying, and lip labour, and learne to lift vp our hearts to God in heavenly sighs and desires: for that is indeed to pray. It is the very first thing that the childe of God doeth, inwardly to sigh and desire reconciliation with God in Christ: and hee which cannot doe this, is not as yet borne of God.

Againe, many are cast downe in themselves, because they see their minds full of ignorance, their wils full of rebellion, and subiect to many temptations; and they finde little goodnes in themselves, but they must be comforted by this: if they can but groane & sigh vnto God in their hearts for mercy and forgiuenesse, they haue the spirit of God crying in them, *Abba*; and they haue receiued the first fruits of the spirit. The desires and cries of our hearts are fruits of the intercession, or crye of the Sonne of God in heauen for vs.

Others are grieved, because they haue prayed long, and they finde not the fruite of their prayers: but if they can pray, sighing and groaning in their hearts for grace and mercy, let them be content: for it is the spirit of grace and praier, that makes them sigh and groane. And euery sigh of a contrite heart, hath a loude crye in the eares of God.

It falls out often, that men in extremitie of danger confounded in themselves, know not what in the world to say, or doe. *Ezechias* in his sicknesse could not say any thing, but chatter in his throat, and mourne like a doue, *Isa. 38. 14.* Some lie vnder the sword of the enemy, others in a tempest are cast ouer shipboard into the sea. Now this must be their comfort, if they can lift vp their hearts vnto God, if they can but sigh and groane for his presence & assistance, the Lord will heare the petition of their hearts: for the inward sobbs, groanes, and sighs of repentant sinners, are loud and strong cries in the eares of God the Father.

The third point is, That the crye of the spirit is directed to God, because it makes vs crye, *Abba, Father.* Here first obserue, that prayer

to Saints and Angels, is carnall prayer. For the prayer which is caused by the spirit, is direct to the Father. And good reason: for it is the propertie of God to heare the crie of the heart, *Romanes* 8. 27. Some say, that the Saints in heauen are with God, and that in him they see the desires of our hearts: but it is false which they say. For the Scripture saith, that *God alone searcheth the heart*, *1 Kings* 8. 39. None knowes what is in man, but God, and the spirit of man; *1 Cor.* 2. 11. Though *Abraham* had the sight of God, yet is it said, *Thou art our Father, and Abraham knowes vs not*, *Isai.* 64. 16. And for this cause Inuocation of Saints, whether it be called *Latria*, or *Dulia*, is flat idolatrie.

Againe, Prayer is to bee made to God as he hath reuealed himselfe in the word; that is, to God, who is the Father of Christ, and in him our Father, who also sends his spirit into our hearts, crying, *Abba*. It is an heathenish practise (which is also the practise of many among vs) to pray to an absolute God, that is, to God out of the Father, Sonne, and holy Spirit.

Thirdly, here we see that true and spirituall Inuocation of God, is a marke of the Church of God: because it is a fruite of the spirit of God in them that are the children of God. And by this the people of God are noted, *Act.* 9. 14. *1 Cor.* 1. 2. and on the contrary, it is the marke of an Atheist not to pray, *Psal.* 14. 4.

The last poynt is, the manner of directing our cries to God. First of all, they are to bee directed to him with reuerence, as being present with vs: for to crie *Abba*, is not to speake words into the ayre, but to direct our hearts to one that is present with vs, in all dutifull and childlike manner. Thus did *Dauid*, *Psalme* 119. 58. and *Paul*, *Ephes.* 3. 14. Secondly, our cries are to be directed to God with subiection to his will. Reade the example of Christ, *Mathe* 14. 36. and of *Dauid*, *2 Samuel* 15. 26. This condemnes the practise of many men. *Balaam* desired to die the death of the righteous, but without subiection to God: for hee would not liue the life of the righteous. And many among vs haue often good motions and desires in their minds, but there is no soundnesse in them: because they are not ioyned with a change and conuersion of heart and life. Thirdly, our desires are to be directed vnto God with importunitie and inconstancie. For the Spirit makes vs crie *Abba*, Father: that is, My Father, and thy Father. God requires this importunitie of vs, *Leke* 18. 1. It is practised by *Dauid*, *Psalme* 69. 4. by the woman of Canaan, *Matth.* 15. We must doe as *Isaac* did, wrestle with God, and giue him no rest till he fulfill the desires of our hearts, and giue vs the blessing. And our constant desires
and

and groanes to heaven for mercie, shall neuer bee in vaine. For if wee aske any thing according to his will, hee heareth vs indeed, 1. Iohn 5. 14.

Verse 7.

5

These words are the conclusion of the former doctrine of *Paul*. The time of your libertie is come, in that your libertie is procured and purchased by Christ, and ye haue receiued the spirit of sonnes crying, *Abba*: therefore ye are not seruants to the law, but sonnes of God. And from this conclusion *Paul* deriues a second, which is the summe and substance of the whole disputation, from the beginning of the third chapter to this place; namely, that they which are sonnes, as also heires, not by the law and the workes thereof, but by Christ.

15 This verse is a repetition of the 26. and 29. verses of the third Chapter: therefore I will not stand any longer in the handling of it.

One thing is to bee obserued, namely, the change of the number. *Paul* said before, *ye are sonnes*: here hee saith, *thou art a sonne*. And this hee doeth, to teach vs, that they which turne to God, and beleue in Christ, must bee assured that they are the sonnes and heires of God. *Paul* hath set downe immediately before, the infallible signe, whereby a man may know himselfe to bee the childe of God: therefore in the next wordes hee saith; that thou art the sonne of God. Saint *Iohn* saith, *These things wee write vnto you that beleue, that yee may know that yee haue life euerlasting*, 1. Iohn 5. 13. Thus must every beleuer apply the Gospel, and the benefits thereof to himselfe.

The meditation of this point serues greatly to sweeten all crosses vnto vs: for if we know that we be Gods children, that is comfort enough; and wee may then assure our selues, that in every crosse, God comes vnto vs as a father. Againe, this meditation workes a contentation in every losse. For if thou be the child of God, thou canst haue no great losse. *For all things are thine, thou Christ, and Christ Gods*, 1. Cor. 3. 22. Lastly, this meditation must stirre vp in vs a care to leade a heauenly and spiritual life, 1. Iohn 3. 3. that we may be like our eldest brother Christ Iesus.

8 But euen then when yee knew not God, ye did seruice vnto them, which by nature are not Gods.

9 But now seeing yee know God, or rather are knowne of

God, how turne ye againe vnto impotent and beggarly rudiments, whercunto as from the beginning, ye will be in bondage againe? .

10 Ye obserue dayes, and moeths, and times, and yeares.

11 I am in feare of you, lest I haue bestowed labour on you in vaine.

Heere *Paul* returnes againe to the principall conclusion of the whole Epistle, which is on this maner. If I *Paul* be called to teach, and my doctrine be true: yee haue done euill to reuolt from it to another Gospel: but I am called to teach, and my doctrine is true: this *Paul* prooued in the first, second, and third chapters. Therefore ye haue done euill to reuolt from my doctrine. This conclusion he propounded before, and heere againe he repeates it: and withall amplifies it two waies. First, by setting downe the particular matter of the reuolt and apostasie of the Galatians, v. 9. 10. *Ye returne to impotent rudiments: yee obserue daies and times.* Secondly, hee sets downe the greatnesse of their reuolt: first, by comparison thus: Once ye serued false gods: but there is some excule of that offence: because ye did not know God: but that yee haue returned to the rudiments of the world, there is no excule of it: for ye then knew God, or rather were known of God. Againe, he sets forth the greatnesse of their reuolt, by the effect, verse 11. It makes me feare lest I haue lost my labour among you.

Heere *Paul* sets downe a threefold estate of the Galatians: their estate in Gentilisme before their conuersion, their estate in their conuersion, and their estate in their apostasie.

Their estate in Gentilisme stands in two things: Ignorance of God [*then yee knew not God.*] Idolatry or superstition, yee serued them which are not Gods by nature.

Touching their ignorance of God, it may be demaunded, how they can bee said not to know God, whereas *Paul* saith, *that which may be known of God, is manifest vnto the Gentiles? Rom. 1. 20.* and *that God did not leane himselfe without witnesse? Actes 14. 17.* Answer, Knowledge of God is twofold, Naturall, or reuealed knowledge. Naturall is, that which all men haue in their mindes by the light of nature, which also they may gather by the view and obseruation of the creatures. This knowledge hath two properties. The first, it is imperfect: because by it wee know some few and generall things of God: as namely, that there is a God, and that he is to bee worshipped, &c. In this respect, this knowledge is like the ruines of a princely palace. Againe, it is weake: because it serues onely to cut off excule, and it is not sufficient to direct vs in the worship

of God. Nay, when by it we beginne to set downe the worship of God, wee then runne headlong into superstition and vanitie. *Revealed knowledge* is, that which is set downe in the written word, whereby wee may know what God is in himselfe, and what hee is to vs: namely, a Father in Christ, giuing pardon of sinne, and life everlasting. This knowledge the Gentiles altogether want: nay, by reason of the blindnesse and impotency of their mindes, they iudge it foolishnesse. Thus then in effect, though the Gentiles by nature know somethings of God, yet doe they not know God, as he will be knowen of vs.

Againe, it may be demanded, whether this ignorance be a sinne in the Galatians? *Answer.* Yea. For all men are bound to know God by the first Commandement. And this ignorance is a want of the image of God in the mind, *Col. 3. 10.* And euery defect of the image of God, is a branch of originall sinne. And vengeance is the punishment of this sinne, *2. Thess. 1. 8.*

It may bee objected, that *Paul* heere excuseth the Galatians by their ignorance. *Answer.* It excuseth *à tanto, non à toto*, that is, the degree and measure of the sinne, and not the sinne it selfe; *20 Luke 12. 48.*

Againe, it may be said, that this their ignorance is invincible, because as the Gentiles doe not know God, so they cannot know him. *Answer.* That they cannot know him, it is not Gods fault, but the fault of their first parents, and consequently their fault: and this ignorance spreads it selfe ouer all mankind, as a punishment of the first offence.

The third point is, that this ignorance is a great and grievous sinne: for here *Paul* makes it the mother of superstition and idolatry. This must teach vs all to detest this ignorance of God and his wil, and to seeke by all meanes to know God. God hath a controuersie with men, because they know him not, *Hosea 4. 1. 6.*

Againe, this serues to warne all Ministers of the word to be carefull to root out ignorance out of the mindes of the people, and to plant the knowledge of God. And by this we see, it is false which the Papist teacheth, that Ignorance is the mother of deuotion.

The second sinne of the Galatians is, that they served them, which are not Gods by nature, that is, false gods, not gods indeed, but gods in opinion.

It may be objected, that the wisest of the Gentiles worshipped the true God, creatour of heauen and earth. *Answer.* False gods are set vp two wayes. The first is, when that which is not God, is placed, and worshipped in the roome of the true God, as when the

Sunne, Moone, and Starres are worshipped, &c and this is the grossest kinde of idolatrie. The second is, when men acknowledge the true God, but doe not conceiue him, as he will bee conceiued, and as he hath reuealed himselfe in the word. In this respect the Ephesians are said to be *without God*, Ephes. 3. 12. and the Samaritanes to worship *they knew not what*, Iohn 4. 22. For they conceiued the true God in a false manner, because they conceiued him forth of the Father, Sonne, and holy Ghost: and therefore they set vp a false god vnto themselues. False worship giuen to God, presupposeth a false opinion of God: and a false opinion of God sets vp an idole, or false god, in the roome of the true God. For it is not sufficient to conceiue some true things of God, but wee must precisely conceiue him, as hee hath reuealed himselfe, without addition or detraction. And thus did the wisest of the Galatians worship false gods.

This Idolatrie is a common sinne, and bred (as it were) in the bone. The Turkes at this day worship a false and fained God. For they conceiue and worship a God creatour of heauen and earth, that is neither Father, Sonne, nor holy Ghost: and the Iewes worship God out of Christ: and so a fained God. For, *hee which hath not the Sonne, hath not the Father*, 1. Iohn 2. Likewise the religion of the Papist teacheth and maintaineth the worship of false gods. For it giues to Angels and Saints a facultie or power to know the desires of our hearts, to heare and helpe vs in all places, at all times: and hereupon prayer is made to them: but all this is indeed the prerogative and priuiledge of the true God: and in as much as it is giuen to Angels and Saints departed, they are set vp in the roome of the true God.

Againe, that religion teacheth men to worship God, in, at, and before Images. And this worship presupposeth an opinion or imagination that there is a God that will bee present to heare and helpe vs, in, at, and before Images: now this God is a God deuied by the braine of man. Papists alleadge, that their intention is to worship the true God, the Father, Sonne, and Holy Ghost. And I say againe, that the true God hath reuealed his will that hee doeth detest this manner of worship: and therefore the worship is directed either to the images themselues, or to the god deuised in the braine.

Thirdly, they of the Popish religion worship a fained Christ of their owne deuiling: namely, a Christ that sits at the right hand of the Father in heauen, and is withall in the hands of every Priest, after the words of consecration. And they worship a God set vp by them.

themselves, namely, a God that will bee appeased by humane satisfactions, and at whose hands a sinnefull man may merit euerlasting life, that is to say, a God all of mercy, and little or no iustice.

Though our religion teach no Idolatrie, yet certaine it is, that many among vs practise a spirituall idolatrie in their hearts. For looke what a man loues most, and cares most for, and delights most in, that is his God; some therefore haue their riches for their God, some their pleasures, some their beauly lustes. For where the heart is, there is thy God. Againe, the ignorant multitude worship a God of their owne coyning, which is a God made all of mercie, and no iustice. For they perswade themselves, that there is mercie with God, though they repent not, but goe on in their sinnes: whereas the true God is infinite, not onely in mercie, but also in iustice, *Exod. 34.*

That this sinne of Idolatrie may be rooted out of the minds of men, there must be first an *illumination* of the mind, with the knowledge of the true God and his will: and there must also be a *renouation* of the heart and affections, that they set not vp something else in the roome of God.

The estate of the Galatians after their conuersion is in these words, *Ye know God, or rather are known of God.*

The knowledge wherby men know God, is either *literall knowledge*, or *spirituall knowledge*. *Literall*, is when the doctrine of God, and his will is known, without reformation of life. *Spirituall knowledge*, is when the minde is enlightened by the Spirit of God, with the knowledge of God, by the word, and according to the word; so as thereupon men are transformed into the image of God, 2. *Cor. 3. 18.* And this kind of knowledge is here meant, when *Paul* saith, *Ye know God.*

The foundation of this knowledge is, that God is to be known in Christ, for in him God hath manifested his infinite wisdom, iustice, mercy. Therefore is he called *the ingrauen image of the person of the Father*, *Heb. 1. 2.* and *Paul* saith, that *we haue the knowledge of the glory of God, in the face of Iesus Christ.* 2. *Cor. 3. 6.*

The properties of this knowledge are three. The first is, that it must be a speciall knowledge, whereby we must acknowledge God to be our God in Christ. The first commandment of the law requires, that we take the true God for our God. The commandment of Christ is, *Beleeue the Gospel.* Now the stipulation of the covenant of grace (which also is the substance of the Gospel) is this, *I am thy God, Ier. 31. 33.* this therefore must we beleeue. And to this knowledge is the promise of life euerlasting annexed, *Ioh. 17. 3. I/a. 53. 11.*

The second proprietie is, that this knowledge must not bee confused, but distinct. First, we must acknowledge the true God in respect of his presence with vs in all places. Thus *Moses* is said to know the invisible, *Heb.* 11. 27. Secondly, we must know and acknowledge God in respect of his particular providence euer vs. Thus *Dauid* 5 knew God, when hee said that hee numbered his flittings, and put his reares into his bottle, *Psal.* 56. 8. Thirdly, we must know God in respect of his will in all things to bee done, and to bee suffered: and this is the right knowledge of God, to have regard to his will, *Romans* 12. 2. *Ephes.* 5. 17. *Dauid* saith, *All thy lawes are before mee,* 10 *2. Samuel* 22. 23. And when *Shimei* reuiled, hee spake thus, *Hee reuileth, because God biddes him reuile,* *2 Samuel.* 16. 10. Lastly, we must know, and acknowledge God in the power which hee shewed in the death and resurrection of Christ. Reade and consider *Ephesians* 1. 17. where *Paul* placeth the knowledge of God in two 15 things, in the knowledge of the riches of eternall life, and in an experimentall knowledge of the vertue of the resurrection of Christ in our selues.

The third proprietie is, that this knowledge must be an effectual and liuely knowledge, working in vs new affections and inclinatio- 20 ons. Hee that saith hee knowes God, and keepes not his commandments, makes him a liar, *1. Iohn* 2. 4. and 3. 6. *Titus* 2. last.

The vse. Seeing the conuersion of a sinner stands in this spirituall knowledge of God, we must bee stirred vp to seeke to know God according as he will be known of vs. We desire to serue God: 25 and we cannot serue him, vnlesse we know him: nay, so long as we know him not, we doe nothing but serue the false gods of our owne hearts. Againe, we desire life eternall: and this is life, in right maner to acknowledge God, *Iohn* 17. 3. And the whole matter of our boasting, must be the knowledge of God, *Ierc.* 9. 24. God himselfe ministreth vnto me a farther argument to mooue you to this desire: namely, by the moouing of the earth yesterday. For though Philosophers ascribe all to nature, yet the truth is, that the trembling and shogging of the earth, is a signe of the great and extraordinary anger of God. The cause of this anger is, that we know not 35 God, neither doe we for the most part care to know him. We haue had the Gospell long, but we bring forth but small fruits. For this cause the earth in his trembling, doth as it were groane to bee disburdened of so rebellious a nation; and it doeth after a sort craue leaue of God, that it may deuoure a sinfull people, as it once deuoured *Dathan*, and the company of *Abiram*. Now our dutie is, in this iudgement of God to acknowledge his maiestie, his anger, and his 40 iustice;

justice; and with feare and trembling to humble our selves for our sinnes past, therby to preuent his anger to come. The earth a bruite and dumbe creature in his kind, is become a preacher vnto vs: and his trembling must teach vs to tremble in our hearts, and to sinne no more.

Againe, if wee must know God, wee must remember God, and Christ: and as wee must know God, so must wee remember him. Now wee must not know Christ according to the flesh 2. Cor. 5. 17. and therefore we may not remember Christ according to the flesh, that is, in any worldly and carnall maner. This therefore is not to keepe a memory of Christ, to spend twelue daies in reuell and riot, in masking and mumming, in carding and dicing (as many doe:) this is rather to burie the memorie of Christ, and to doe homage to the god of pleasure. Of them that said, *Let vs eate, drinke, and sleepe*, Paul saith thus: *Awake and doe righteously: for some of you do not know God*, 1. Cor. 15. 34.

Paul saith further, *But rather ye are knowne of God*. The knowledge whereby God knowes men, stands in two things; his election of them to his speciall loue, 2. Tim. 1. 19. and the execution of election, whereby he makes men his peculiar people, by calling, iustifying and sanctifying of them, Titus 2. 14.

Hence obserue: first, that Gods Election is the root of all the gifts of God in vs. Wee know God, because hee first knowes vs. Paul saith, that wee were elected, that wee might bee holy, Ephes. 1. 4. Therefore wee are not elected (as some teach) either for our faith, or according to our faith, but to our faith, that is, elected that wee might beleeeue.

Secondly, hence we learne, that wee can neither thinke, will, or do that which is good, vnlesse God preuent vs with his grace. God must first vouchsafe to acknowledg vs, before we can acknowledg him, Iohn 10. 14. Preuenting grace is twofold. The first, and the second. The first, when God in our first conuersion takes away the stony heart, and puts a fleshy heart in the roome. The second is, after we are regenerate: for then God stil preuent vs with good motions and desires. Of both, reade Ezr. 3. 6. 26. Some teach, that if we doe that which wee can, God will giue vs his grace: but this is false: for then we should preuent God.

Thirdly, by this we see, that the workes of grace in God imprint their image in the hearts of them that belong to God. And this is worth the marking. There is a knowledge in God whereby hee knowes who are his: and this knowledge brings forth another knowledge in vs, whereby wee know God for our God. There is

an Election in God which workes in the Elect an other Election, whereby they choose God for their God. The loue, whereby God loues vs, workes in vs an other loue whereby we loue God. *1. Ioh. 4. 19.* Christ first apprehends vs : and this apprehension of his, works in vs the apprehension of faith, whereby we lay hold vpon him. *Phil. 3. 12.* When Christ makes intercession for vs in heauen, there is another intercession wrought in our hearts by the spirit, whereby we crie *Abba father, Rom. 8. 26.* The death of Christ hath a vertue in it, to worke in vs the death of sinne. Thus doth the Spirit of God seale vs to the day of our redemption. By this may we know, that we belong to God, if we finde any impression of the grace of God in vs. The Sunne by his light shines vpon vs, and by the same light we view and behold the Sunne.

Lastly, here is the foundation of true comfort. Our faith doth not saue vs, because it is a perfect vertue : but because it apprehends a perfect obiekt ; namely, the perfect obedience of Christ. So then, if our faith erre not in his obiekt, but be rightly fixed on the true causes of our saluation, though it be but a weake faith, and doe no more but cause vs to will, desire, and indeauour to apprehend Christ, it is true faith, and iustifieth : the weakenesse of it shall not hinder our saluation, which stands not in this, that we know God, but in this, that God knowes vs, whose knowledge is perfect and cannot faile. Againe, our saluation stands not in our apprehension of Christ, but in Christs apprehending of vs. *Phi. 3. 12.*

This knowledge of God whereby he knowes vs, hath two properties. First, it is speciall, whereby he knowes all the elect euen by name. *Exod. 33. 17.* Againe, it is a perpetuall and vnchangeable knowledge. For whom God once knowes, he neuer forgets, *Isai. 49. 15.*

The third estate of the Galatians is their estate in their reuolt or Apostacie, in these words, *How turne yee againe to impotent and beggarly rudiments, whereunto as from the beginning yee will bee in bondage againe ? or thus, to which yee will doe seruice againe as from the beginning.*

The words carrie this sense : *How turne ye againe ?* that is, it is an intollerable offence in you, having knowne God, to returne againe to the rudiments of the law. By *rudiments* we are to vnderstand Circumcision, the Iewish Sacrifices, and all the ceremonies of the law of *Moses*. And it may not seeme strange, that they are called impotent and beggarly rudiments. For they must bee considered three waies, with Christ, without Christ, and against Christ. With Christ, when they are considered as types and figures of Christ to come,

come, and as signes of grace by diuine institution for the time of the old Testament. Without Christ, when they are vsed onely for custome, whether before or after the death of Christ. Against Christ, when they are esteemed as meritorious causes of saluation, and the iustification of a sinner is placed in them, either in whole or in part: as though Christ alone were not sufficient. In this respect *Paul* calls them impotent and beggarly rudiments.

And *Paul* hauing said, that the Galatians returned againe to the rudiments of the law, in the next words he shewes how they doe it: namely, by *seruing them againe*. They serued or yeelded seruice to them three waies: In opinion, because they iudged them to be necessary parts of Gods worship, and meanes of their saluation. In Conscience: because they subiected their consciences to them. In affection, because they placed part of their affiance in them for their iustification and saluation.

It may be demanded, how the Galatians can be said to returne againe to the rudiments of the law, and serue them againe, that were neuer vsed to them before? *Answer*. In the speech of *Paul* there is that which is called *Catachresis*, that is, a kinde of speaking somewhat improper in respect of finenesse and elegancie. The like we haue, *Ruth* 1 22. when *Ruth* is said to returne to Iudea with *Naomi*; and yet she was neuer there before. Neuertheless, the speech in sense is most significant and proper. For *Paul* (no doubt) signifies hereby, that when the Galatians subiected themselves to the rudiments of the law, & placed their saluation in part even in them, they did in effect and in trueth as much as returne againe to their old superstitions, and serue againe their false gods.

Heere then wee haue a description of the apostasie of the Galatians. It is a voluntarie sinne (for *Paul* saith, *ye will serue*) after the knowledge of the trueth, in which they returne againe to the rudiments of the law, by yeelding subiection, and seruice to them: which acte of theirs is indeed as much as if they had serued againe their false gods. Heere some may say, if this bee so, then they sinned against the Holy Ghost. *Answer*. The sinne against the holy Ghost, is indeed a voluntary sinne: but that is by reason of the obstinacy and malice of the will: and this offence in the Galatians was voluntary onely by infirmitie. Againe, the sinne against the holy Ghost, is an vniuersall apostasie, in respect of all the Articles of religion: for that sinne makes men crucifie Christ crucified, *Hebrewes* 6 5. and to tread vnder foot the Sonne of God: the apostasie of the Galatians was particular onely in the article of iustification.

The

an Election in God which workes in the Elect an other Election, whereby they choose God for their God. The loue, whereby God loues vs, workes in vs an other loue whereby we loue God. *1. Ioh. 4. 19.* Christ first apprehends vs : and this apprehension of his, works in vs the apprehension of faith, whereby we lay hold vpon him. *Phil. 3. 12.* When Christ makes intercession for vs in heauen, there is another intercession wrought in our hearts by the spirit, whereby we crie *Abba father, Rom. 8. 26.* The death of Christ hath a vertue in it, to worke in vs the death of sinne. Thus doth the Spirit of God seale vs to the day of our redemption. By this may we know, that we belong to God, if we finde any impression of the grace of God in vs. The Sunne by his light shines vpon vs, and by the same light we view and behold the Sunne.

Lastly, here is the foundation of true comfort. Our faith doth not saue vs, because it is a perfect vertue : but because it apprehends a perfect object ; namely, the perfect obedience of Christ. So then, if our faith erre not in his object, but be rightly fixed on the true causes of our saluation, though it be but a weake faith, and doe no more but cause vs to will, desire, and indeauour to apprehend Christ, it is true faith, and iustificieth : the weakenesse of it shall not hinder our saluation, which stands not in this, that we know God, but in this, that God knowes vs, whose knowledge is perfect and cannot faile. Againe, our saluation stands not in our apprehension of Christ, but in Christs apprehending of vs. *Phil. 3. 12.*

This knowledge of God whereby he knowes vs, hath two properties. First, it is speciall, whereby he knowes all the elect euen by name. *Exod. 33. 17.* Againe, it is a perpetuall and vchangeable knowledge. For whom God once knowes, he neuer forgets, *Isai. 49. 15.*

The third estate of the Galatians is their estate in their reuolt or Apostasie, in these words, *How turne yee againe to impotent and beggarly rudiments, whereunto as from the beginning yee will bee in bondage againe ? or thus, to which yee will doe seruice againe as from the beginning.*

The words carrie this sense : *How turne ye againe ?* that is, it is an intollerable offence in you, having knowne God, to returne againe to the rudiments of the law. By *rudiments* we are to vnderstand Circumcision, the Iewish Sacrifices, and all the ceremonies of the law of *Moses*. And it may not seeme strange, that they are called impotent and beggarly rudiments. For they must bee considered three waies, with Christ, without Christ, and against Christ. With Christ, when they are considered as types and figures of Christ to come,

come, and as signes of grace by diuine institution for the time of the old Testament. Without Christ, when they are vsed onely for custome, whether before or after the death of Christ. Against Christ, when they are esteemed as meritorious causes of saluation, and the iustification of a sinner is placed in them, either in whole or in part: as though Christ alone were not sufficient. In this respect *Paul* calls them impotent and beggarly rudiments.

And *Paul* hauing said, that the Galatians returned againe to the rudiments of the law, in the next words he shewes how they doe it: namely, by *seruing them againe*. They serued or yeelded seruice to them three waies: In opinion, because they iudged them to be necessary parts of Gods worship, and meanes of their saluation. In Conscience: because they subiected their consciences to them. In affection, because they placed part of their affiance in them for their iustification and saluation.

It may be demanded, how the Galatians can be said to returne againe to the rudiments of the law, and serue them againe, that were neuer vsed to them before? *Answer*. In the speech of *Paul* there is that which is called *Catachresis*, that is, a kinde of speaking somewhat improper in respect of finenesse and elegancie. The like we haue, *Ruth* 1 22. when *Ruth* is said to returne to Iudea with *Naomi*; and yet she was neuer there before. Neuertheless, the speech in sense is most significant and proper. For *Paul* (no doubt) signifies hereby, that when the Galatians subiected themselves to the rudiments of the law, & placed their saluation in part even in them, they did in effect and in trueth as much as returne againe to their old superstitions, and serue againe their false gods.

Heere then wee haue a description of the apostasie of the Galatians. It is a voluntarie sinne (for *Paul* saith, *ye will serue*) after the knowledge of the trueth, in which they returne againe to the rudiments of the law, by yeelding subiection, and seruice to them: which acte of theirs is indeed as much as if they had serued againe their false gods. Heere some may say, if this bee so, then they sinned against the Holy Ghost. *Answer*. The sinne against the holy Ghost, is indeed a voluntarie sinne: but that is by reason of the obstinacy and malice of the will: and this offence in the Galatians was voluntary onely by infirmitie. Againe, the sinne against the holy Ghost, is an vniuersall apostasie, in respect of all the Articles of religion: for that sinne makes men crucifie Christ crucified, *Hebrewes* 6 5. and to tread vnder foot the Sonne of God: the apostasie of the Galatians was particular onely in the article of iustification.

The

The vse. In that the Ceremonies of the law set vp against Christ, in the cause of our iustification and saluation, are called impotent and beggarly rudiments, *Paul* teacheth a weightie conclusion: That Christ stands alone in the worke of redemption, without colleague or partner, without deputie, or substitute, whether we respect the whole worke of redemption, or the least part of it. Againe, that all the workes of mediation stand alone by themselves, and admit nothing to be added and adioyned to them: *There is no other name whereby wee can bee saued beside the name of Christ. Act 4. 12. Christ saues them perfectly that come vnto him, Hebrew. 7. 25. In him wee are compleate, Coloss. 2. 10. Hee alone treads the winepresse of Gods wrath, and none with him, Isai. 63. 3.* If Christ be a Sauour, he must be a perfect Sauour, considering he is God and man: and being a perfect Sauour in himselfe, he needs no partner, and because he is euery where at all times, therefore he needs no deputie in his stead. Againe, euery worke of redemption is acted by whole Christ, according to both his natures: and as there are in him two natures, so are there two operations of the said natures: and as both natures concur to make one person, so the operations of both natures concur to make the compound worke of a Mediatour, which is an admirable worke, not meere humane, but the *indricke*, that is, *humane-divine*. For this cause no action pertaining to redemption, can be performed by a meere creature, whether man or Angel.

Obiection I. Ioh. 20. 23. The Apostles haue the power to remit and retaine sinnes: therefore it is not proper to Christ. Answ. To remit by meriting and by efficacy in the conferring of pardon, is proper to the Mediatour. The Apostles and other Minist'ers remit by preaching and by declaring remission. The Ministers of the word doe not procure our reconciliation with God as Christ doth, but they exhort men to be reconciled to God. *2. Cor. 5. 20.*

Obiect. II. 1. Pet. 3. 18. Baptisme saueth: therefore not Christ alone. Answ. Baptisme saueth by signifying and by sealing vnto vs the grace and mercie of God: and the effecting of our saluation, is in the same place ascribed to Christ and his resurrection.

The conclusion then of *Paul* is to be remembred: for it serues as an engyne to ouerturne the maine grounds of poperie. The primacie of the Pope is a certain estate in which he is substituted into the place and roome of Christ: for hee takes vpon him to make lawes that properly and truly binde conscience, euen as the lawes of God. Againe, he takes vnto him a proper and iudiciall power, to remit or retaine the sinnes of men. Now these actions indeed,

are

are the proper actions of God and Christ, no meere creature is capable of them. In this respect the primacy of the Pope is an impotent and beggarly invention. Againe, the Romish religion beside the all-sufficient oblation of Christ vpon the crosse, sets vp the sacrifice of the masse for the sinnes of the quicke and the dead : besides the Intercession of Christ, it sets vp the Intercession of Saints and Angels : beside the perfect satisfaction of Christ, it sets vp humane satisfactions : beside the infinite merit of Christ, it maintains and magnifies the merit of humane workes. But all these are but impotent and beggarly deuices of men. For Christ in his Sacrifice, Satisfaction, Intercession, Merit, admits no corriuall or associate. All actions of his are perfect in their kind, and need no supply.

This againe must teach vs, to content our selues with Christ alone, and not to set vp any thing with him, or against him. This is the safest and the surest course. A certaine Papist writeth to this effect, that we Protestants in our iustification, cleaue onely to the body of the tree, and that the Papists cleaue both to the body and the branches. And I say againe, it is the safest with both the hands to cleaue to the body of the tree : and he that with one hand laies hold vpon the body of the tree, and with the other staies himselfe vpon the branches, is in great danger of falling.

The second conclusion of *Paul* is, that to set vp any thing out of Christ, as a meritorious cause of saluation, and to place our iustification in it, either in whole or in part, is indeede the seruice of Idols. And the reason is plaine. For this is to set vp something in the place and roome of Christ : and men put a confidence in that which they make a cause of their owne saluation.

The doctrine then of Iustification by workes, is a doctrine that maintaines idolatry : for if they iustifie, we may put our trust in them : and if we put our confidence in them, we make idols of them. That workes may merit at Gods hand, they must not onely be sanctified, but also deified.

The distinction vsed of the Papists, of *Latria*, and *Dulia*, that is, of worship, and seruice, falls to the ground. They say they giue worship to God, and seruice to Angels and Saints. It is a toy. For here *Paul* condemnes the very seruice to the heathen Gods : and the seruice of the rudiments of the law, is the Apostasie of the Galatians. And to giue seruice, or worship to any thing, are all one.

The third conclusion of *Paul* is, that they which haue giuen their names to God, and Christ, must not returne to any thing that they haue forsaken, or ought to forsake. He that puts his hand to the plough, must not looke backe : he that goes to the land

land of Canaan, must not looke backe to Egypt. Wee in England haue beene long deliuered from the superstition of Popery, and we must not so much as dreame of any returne. It is a common fault among vs, that in outward profession we cleave to the world, and walke a ter the lusts of our owne hearts. This is in shew to goe forward, but in deede to turne backe againe. But our duty is, in thought, conscience, will, affection, word, and deede, to goe on forward, and no way to goe backe.

Verse 10.

In the former verse, *Paul* sets downe the Apostasie of the Galatians in generall tearmes, saying, *How turne you againe to the Elements of the world?* In the 10. verse, he shewes, what these Elements be, *Ye observe daies, and moneths, and times, and yeares.* By *daies*, are meant Iewish Sabbaths: by *moneths*, the feasts obserued euery moneth in the day of the new moone. By *times*, some vnderstand the feast of the Pascheouer, the feast of Pentecost, and the feast of Tabernacles. But the word (*καιρος*) signifies, seasons, or fit times for the doing of this or that bulines. So is it translated, *Act. 1. 7. It is not for you to know the times and seasons.* It was the manner of the Gentiles to make difference of times in respect of good or bad successe, and that according to the signes of heauen. And it is very likely, that the Galatians obserued daies not onely in the Iewish, but also in the heathenish manner. By *yeares*, are meant euery seuenth yeare, & the Iubilie yeares, which the Galatians obserued after the fashion of the Iewes.

Again, there is a fourefold kind of obseruation of daies; one *Naturall*, the other *Ciuill*, the third *Ecclesiasticall*, the fourth *Superstitious*. *Naturall* is, when daies are obserued according to the course of the Sunne and Moone, *Gen. 1. 14.* Thus day followes night, and night followes day, and euery yeare hath foure seasons, Spring, Sommer, Autumne, Winter. And the obseruation of these times, is according to the law of nature. *Ciuill obseruation* is, when set times are obserued for husbandry in planting, setting, reaping, sowing: for household affaires, and for the affaires of the commonwealth, in keeping of faires, and markets, &c. And thus to obserue daies is not vnlawfull. *Ecclesiasticall obseruation* of times is, when set daies are obserued for orders sake, that men may come together to worship God: these daies, are either daies of thanksgiuing, or dayes of humiliation. Of daies of thanksgiuing, take the example of the Iewes, *Hest. 9. 26.* who obserued yearely the feast of *Purim*, for a memory of their deliuerance. In like manner they appointed and obserued the feast of *Dedication*: and it seemes that Christ was present

at Ierusalem, as an obseruer of this feast, *Ioh. 10. 22.* And thus for orders sake, to obserue certaine daies of solemnity, is not forbidden. Superstitious obseruation of dayes is twofold, *Iewish*, or *Heathenish*, *Iewish*, when set dayes are obserued with an opinion, that we are bound in conscience to obserue them, and when the worship of God is placed in the obseruing of this or that time. *Heathenish*, when dayes are obserued in respect of good or bad successe. Now then to come to the point, the intent of *Paul* is onely to condemne the Iewish manner of obseruing dayes, in these words. *Ye obserue dayes, moneths, and yeares:* and the Heathenish manner in these words, *Ye obserue seasons.*

Against this interpretatiou, the place of *Paul* may be objected *Rom. 14. 6.* *He that obserues the day, obserues it to the Lord.* *Ans.* Indeece *Paul* in these words excuseth the Romanes that obserued daies, and saith, that their intention was to obserue them to the honour of God: and this he saith, because as yet they were not fully instructed touching Christian libertie: but withall, let it be remembered, that in mild sort he notes this to be a fault in them, when he saith, that *they were weake in faith.* Now the case was otherwise with the Galatians: because they obserued dayes after they had beene informed touching their libertie in Christ: and withall, they placed their saluation, in part, in the obseruation of dayes: and thus they mixed the Gospell with the law. And therefore they were iustly to be blamed.

Againe, it may be objected, that now in the time of the new Testament, we in religious manner obserue the Lords day. *Ans.* Some men both godly and learned, are of opinion, that the Lords day was appointed by the Apostles for order sake: and that it is in the libertie of the Church to appoint the Sabbath vpon any other day in the weeke, because, they say, all daies without exception are equall: and they adde further, that when the publike worship of God is ended, men may then returne to their labours, or giue themselves to recreation on the Lords day. But this doctrine seemes not to stand with the fourth commandement.

It seemes to bee a truth more probable, that euery seuenth day in the weeke, must bee set apart in holy rest vnto God: for this is the substance of the fourth Commandement. And it is also very probable, that the Sabbath of the New Testament, is limited and determined by our Sauour Christ to the Lords day. For *Paul* and the rest of the Apostles obserued the first day of the weeke for a Sabbath day, *Actes 20. 7.* and he saith, *Whatsoeuer yee haue heard, and what yee haue seene in me, that doe;* *Phil. 4. 9.* Againe, it was the decree

or constitution of *Paul*, that the collection for the poore should be the first day of the weeke at Corinth : now this collection in the Primitive Church, followed preaching, praier, Sacraments, and it was the conclusion of all other exercises in the assembly. 1. Cor. 16. 2. And this first day of the weeke is called *the Lords day*. Apoc. 1. 11. and it is so called, because it was dedicated and consecrated to the honour of Christ our Lord. And who is the author of this Dedication but Christ himselfe the Lord of the Sabbath ? It is alleadged, that the Sabbath, and the commandement louching the Sabbath, is Ceremoniall : and vpon this ground, they take liberty, and keepe no Sabbath at all. But the truth is, that the commandement touching the Sabbath is not wholly Ceremoniall. It may be, the first words, *Remember the Sabbath day to sanctifie it*, and the words, *In it thou shalt doe no manner of worke*, &c. are spoken of the Iewes Sabbath : but the words, *Six daies shalt thou labour, and the seventh day is the Sabbath of the Lord thy God*, are morall, and containe a perpetuall truth. Therefore the words of *Paul* must be conceiued with an exception of the Sabbath day, which is the seventh day in euery weeke ; which day Christ hath limited by his Apostles, to the *Lords day*.

The vse. This text of *Paul* discouers vnto vs a great part of the superstition of the Popish Church, in the obseruation of holy daies. First, beside *the Lords day*, they appoint many other Sabbaths : whereas it is the priuiledge of God to appoint an ordinary day of rest, and to sanctifie it to his owne honour. Secondly, they binde mens consciences to the obseruation of their holy daies, which *Paul* here forbids, and Col 2. 16. Thirdly, they place the worship of God in the obseruation of their holy daies : but God is worshipped in vaine by mens precepts. Math. 15. Fourthly, they place a great holinesse in their festiuall dayes, more then in other daies. Fifthly, they dedicate many of their holy daies to the honour of Saints and Angels : whereas the dedication of ordinary and set daies, is a part of diuine or religious worship. Lastly, their holy daies for number are more then the festiuall daies of the Iewes : and thus they bring people into their old bondage, nay to a greater bondage then euer the Iewes indured, in respect of daies and times. It may be said, that the Church of the Protestants obserues holy daies. Answ. Some Churches doe not : because the Church in the Apostles daies, had no holy day, beside the Lords day : and the fourth commandement inioynes the labour of sixe daies. Indeede the Church of England obserueth holy daies, but the Popish superstition is cut off. For we are not bound in conscience to the obseruation of these daies:

daies: neither doe we place holines or the worship of God in them: but we keepe them onely for orders sake, that men may come to Church to heare Gods word. And though we retaine the names of Saints daies, yet we giue no worship to Saints, but to God alone. And such daies as contained nothing in them but superstition, as the conception and assumption of the Virgin *Mary*, we haue cut off. Thus doth the Church with vs obserue holy daies, and no otherwise. Indeepe the ignorant multitude among vs faile greatly in the obseruing of daies. For they greatly solemnise the time of the birth of Christ, and then they keepe few or no markets: but the *Lords day* is not accordingly respected: and men will not bee dissuaded from following of faires on that day.

Againe, to obserue daies of good and bad successe, according to the constellations of the heauens, is an heathenish fashion to bee auoided. For it is here condemned in the Galatians. Here therefore, we must be put in minde, not to obserue the planetarie houres: for men suppose that the houres of the day are ruled by the planets, and hereupon, that some houres are good, and luckie (as they say) and some vnluckie: that men are taken with planets, and borne vnder vnluckie planets. But these are heathenish conceits. Neither must we respect our *Horoscope* or the time of our birth, and the constellation of the heauens then, as though we could hereby know, what should befall vs to the end of our daies. And we must not put difference of daies, as though some were luckie vnto vs, and some vnluckie, according to the course of the starres. The like I say of the Criticall daies, that is, the 7. and the 14. day after that a man begins to be sicke. For they are grounded vpon the aspects of the moone, which are not to be regarded. And the *Climactericall* yeares are not to be obserued as dangerous and dismall. The obseruation of the signes, is of the same nature. For the 12. signes are nothing else, but 12. parts of the first moouable, which is but a supposed heaven. Therefore there is no danger in the thing, but in our conceit. We are to feare God, and not to feare the starres: neither are we to make differences of daies in respect of them, as though the affaires we take in hand, should prosper the better or the worse, in respect of their different operation. Gods commandement is, *Fear not the signes of heauen*, *Ierem. 10. 1.* And good reason. For no man can by learning know the operation of the starres: because their lights and operations are all mixt together in all places vpon earth: and therefore no obseruation can be made of this or that starre, more then of this or that hearbe, when all hearbes are mixed and compounded together. Againe, the operation of the starres is by the r

T

light,

light, and light hath no operation but in heate or cold, moillure or drincke. In this respect, (though we may well obserue the full and the change of the moone) it is foolishnesse to ascribe the regiment of our affaires to the starres, they being matters contingent, which depend on the wil and pleasure of man. Lastly, it is a great ouersight to hold sundrie of the starres to be malignant and infortunate, in respect of vs; whereas they are the creatures of God, and their light serues for the good of man. In a word, we are not to make difference of daies, neither in respect of holines, nor in respect of good or badde successe.

Vers. 11. I am afraid, &c.

In these words, the Apostle sets forth the greatnesse of the Apostasie of the Galatians, by the effect thereof, which was to cause him to feare, lest he had beliewed labour in vaine among them.

First the occasion of the words must be considered, and that is exprest in the former words, *ye obserue daies and moneths*. And hereupon he saith, *I am in feare of you*. And thus *Paul* teacheth, that works set vp as causes of saluation with Christ, make void the Ministry and grace of God. It may be said, this is meant of ceremoni- all workes, and so it is true. I answer, it is indeed spoken of ceremoni- all workes, but it must be enlarged to all workes without exception. For *Paul* saith c. 5. v. 3. *If ye be circumcised, ye are bound to fulfill the whole law*. Hence then it followes, that the doctrine of iustification by workes, is an error in the foundation, and being distinctly, and obliquely maintained, there is no hope of saluation.

Again, here we see the fidelity of the Apostle *Paul*, and it stands in two things: the first is, his painefull and wearisome labour, to gaine the Galatians to God. The second is, his care that the fore- said labour be not in vaine. And in this example of his, we learne three things. The first, that they which are, or desire to be dispensers of the word, must doe it not for the belly, or for lucre sake, or for the praise of men, but simply for this ende, that they may gaine soules to God. The Scribe that would haue followed Christ for gaine, was repelled with this answer, that Christ had not so much as a place where to lay his head, *Math. 8. 20.* and to preach for by-respect, is to make a merchandise of the word of God, *2. Cor. 2. 17.* The second is, that Ministers after the example of *Paul*, must be labourers indeed, *1. Cor. 3. 9.* and workemen, *2. Tim. 2. 15.* And they must shew themselves to be so, by their care and industry in winning soules to God.

God. And it is not sufficient now and then to make a discourse vpon a text. Thirdly, Ministers of the word must be watchmen. *Ezech. 3. 14.* and *Heb. 13. 17.* Their office is not onely to gaine and call men to God, but also to preferue and keepe them in Christ, which are already called.

Thirdly, here we see the condition of the Church of Galatia, and of all other visible Churches vpon earth, that they are subiect to Apostasie. It may be said, how can this be, considering true beleeuers cannot fall away? *Ans.* In the visible Church on earth, there are foure kinds of beleeuers. The first are they which heare the word without zeale, and they are like the stony ground. The second are they, which heare, know, and approoue the word. The third are they, which heare, know, and approoue the word, and haue a taste of the power thereof, and accordingly yeeld some outward obedience. The fourth are they, which heare, know, approoue, and keepe the word, in that they beleue it, and are turned into the obedience of it. The three first may fall quite away, the fourth cannot. And by this meanes it comes to passe, that visible Churches vpon earth may fall away: because of them that professe the faith, three to one may vtterly fall away.

The vse. This must teach vs that are members of the visible Church, to feare and to suspect our selues: and not to content our selues, because we haue some good things in vs: but we must labour to be sealed up to the day of our redemption, and to lay up a good foundation against the time to come. *1. Tim. 6. 18.* By seeking to haue in vs such good things, as are proper to the Elect, as vnfained faith in Christ, and conuersion to God from all our sinnes.

It may be demanded, how *Pauls* labour should be in vaine? *Ans.* It was in vaine in respect of his owne desire and affection to saue all the Galatians: secondly, it was in vaine, in respect of the whole body of that Church, whereof many were hypocrites. It was not in vaine in respect of the elect, nor in respect of the counsell of God, *Isa. 55. 11.*

Againe, it may be demanded, what must be done when the labours of our callings are in vaine? *Ans.* We must follow the calling and commandement of God, whether we haue good successe or no, and whatsoeuer come of it. *Paul* feares least his labour is in vaine, and yet he still labours. When *Peter* had laboured all night and caught nothing, he saith, at the commaundement of Christ, *In thy word will I cast out my net, Luk. 5.* And thus to doe, (whatsoeuer followes) is true wisdome, and the feare of God. For it must suffice vs, that the worke we take in hand is pleasing vnto God.

God. And though it bee in vaine, in respect of men, it is not so before God, *Isai.* 49. 4. and *2. Corinth.* 2. 18. This must euery man remember in his place and calling, for the establiſhing of his mind against all euents.

12 Bee you as I, for I am euen as you: I beseech you brethren: ye haue not hurt me at all.

The words in this verse, to the 16. verse, are an answer to an obiection. The obiection is this, wee see now by these reproofes, that *Paul* hath changed his minde toward vs, and that hee hath turned his loue into hatred. The answer is, *Be as I, I am as you*: the speech is very effectuell and significant, and it is like the common prouerbe, *Amicus, alter ego, alter idem*, that is, a mans friend is all one with himselfe. The sense of the words is, *Be as I*: looke that your minds be not estranged from me, but tender me euen as your owne selues: for I *Paul* am the same that euer I was, I respect and tender you euen as mine owne selfe. And lest the Galatians should say, see ye not how *Paul* commands imperiously, *bee ye as I*? therefore he addes, *I beseech you brethren*, I command you not. In the next words he addes a reason of his answer, thus: Hatred presupposeth a hurt or wrong to be done: ye haue done me no hurt or wrong: therefore ye may not thinke that I hate you.

When *Paul* saith, *Be as I, I am as you*: we learne, that there must bee a speciall and mutuall loue betweene the teachers and the people. *Paul* saith, that he did enlarge his heart for the *Corinthians*, and he requires the like of them, *2. Cor.* 6. 11, 13. Teachers must shew their loue, by tendering the saluation of the people by all meanes, euen as their owne soules. *Paul* could haue found in his heart to haue beene accursed for his countrey men the Iewes. *Rom.* 9. 1. Hee desired that he might be offered vp as a drinke offering vpon the sacrifice of the faith of the *Philippians*, *Phi.* 2. 18. When the *Israelites* had sinned, *Moses* stands in the breach, as it were in the face of the Cannon, betweene the wrath of God and them, by his prayer to stay the iudgement of God. *Psal.* 106. 23. Againe, the people must shew their loue to their teachers; first, by praying for them, as for themselves, *Rom.* 15. 30. Secondly, by hauing in singular price the worke of the ministerie, *2. Thess.* 5. 13. and that is, by wholesome doctrine to repaire the image of God, and to erect the kingdom of God in the hearts of men. When this thing is loued & desired, then are Ministers loued. This mutual loue is of great vse, it encourageth people to obey, & the preachers of the word to labour in teaching.

When

When *Paul* saith, *I beseech you brethren*, hee shewes what moderation is to be vsed in all reproofes. He tells the Galatians his minde plainly to the full: and withall he indeauours to shew his owne loue to them, and to keepe theirs.

5 It may be asked, how *Paul* can say, *Yee haue done me no hurt at all*. For when a beleeuer in Corinth committed incest, *Paul* tooke it for a wrong to himselfe? 2. Cor. 2. 10. And no doubt, to call the doctrine of the Apostle into question, was a great wrong vnto him. I answer, the wrong was no wrong in his estimation and affection, 10 who was content to put vp, and to forgive the wrong. Here wee see the meeknesse of *Paul*, in that he quietly beares the crosses and wrongs laid vpon him. The like was in *Moses*, who 40. yeares together indured the bad manners of the Israelites, *Actes* 13. 18. but the perfect example of this vertue is in Christ, who saued them that 15 crucified him. We likewise are to exercise our selues in this vertue. And that we may indeed so doe, we must first of all haue a sence of our spirituall pouertie, and a faith in the mercie, presence, and protection of God.

Againe, mark the mind of the Apostle, that he may winne soules 20 to God, he is content to suffer any wrong. The Priests and Iesuites among vs in England, are content to venter life and limme, that they may winne Profelites to the Church of Rome: much more then must the true Ministers of the Gospell bee content with any condition, so they may gaine men to God. In this case hurts and 25 abuses, must be no hurts nor abuses.

13 *And yee know how through the infirmitie of the flesh, I preached the Gospel vnto you at the first:*

30 14 *And the triall of mee which was in my flesh, yee despised not, neither abhorred: but receiued me as an Angel of God, yea, as Christ Iesus.*

53 15 *What then was your felicitie? for I beare you record, that if it had beene possible, you would haue plucked out your eyes to haue giuen them to mee.*

16 *Am I therefore become your enemie, because I tell you the truth.*

40 The answer to the obiection in the former verse, was this: *Be ye as I: I am as you*. And the reason was this: hatred presupposeth an offence: ye haue done me no offence or hurt: therefore ye may

not thinke that I hate you. The *minor* is in the 12. verse, the *conclusion* in the 16. verse.

Againe, the *minor* [*Yee haue done mee no hurt*] is confirmed in the thirteene, fourteene, fifteene verses. The summe of the argument is this: Though my outward condition was subiect to contempt; yet did the Galatians shew loue and reuerence to me: therefore ye did me no hurt. Againe, *Paul* sets forth both the parts of his argument. And first of all he describes his owne condition, by three things: that he preached in *weaknesse of the flesh*: that he preached *the first*: that he preached *hauing the triall of himselfe in his owne flesh*. Secondly, the loue and reuerence of the Galatians is set out by three signes, or effects: *They despised him not; they receiued him as an Angel, or as Christ himselfe: they would haue plucked out their eyes to haue done him good.*

The first thing in *Pauls* condition is, that hee published the Gospel in the *infirmities of his flesh*, that is, in a meane and base estate, without the shew of humane wisdom, and authority, and subiect to many miseries. In this sense *Paul* opposeth *infirmities* to the excellencie of humane wisdom, *1. Corinth. 2. 1. 3.* and vnder it he comprehends all the calamities and troubles that befell vnto him. *2. Cor. 12. 10.*

This was the condition of the rest of the Apostles. For they were but fishers, and preached the word in their fisher-like simplicity. Nay, this was the condition of Christ himselfe. For he hid the Majesty of his Godhead vnder the veile of his flesh: and his outward man was subiect to reproch, and contempt. *Isa. 53. 3.* And this is the order of God. The word must be dispensed in the infirmity of mans flesh for sundry causes. First, that we might not exalt our teachers about their condition, who are no more but instruments of grace. When the men of Derbe, and Listra, would haue offered sacrifice to *Paul*, and *Barnabas*. *Paul* forbids them, saying, *that they were not subiect to the same passions with themselves, Act. 14. 15.* The second cause, that we might ascribe the whole worke of our conuersion not to men, but to God alone. *2. Cor. 4. 7.* The third is, that God might by this meanes confound the wisdom of the world, and cause men that would be wise, to become fooles, that they might be wise. *1. Cor. 3. 18* The last is, that we might be assured, that the doctrine of the Apostles is of God: because it preuailes in the world without the strength and policy of man.

And as the word is preached in weakenesse, so it is beleued of men; and the grace of God is conferred to vs, and continued in vs, in the weakenesse of the flesh. Gods loue is shedde abroad in the hearts

hearts of men : but when ? euen then, when we are in the midl of manifold afflictions. *Rom. 5. 2. 5. Paul beares about him the mortification of our Lord Iesus,* not for his damnation, but that the life of God might be manifest in his mortall flesh. *2. Cor. 4. 10.* And he saith plainly, that the grace of God is made perfect through weaknesse. *2. Cor. 12. 9.* By this we are taught a high point of religion, and that is, not onely to be content with the miseries and troubles of this life, but to reioyce therein : because when we are weakest, we are strongest; and when we thinke our selues forsaken of God in the time of distresse, we are not forsaken indeede, but haue his speciall fauour and protection. *2. Cor. 12. 10.* Let this be thought vpon : for the workes of God in the cause of mans saluation, are in, and by their contraries. This is the manner of Gods dealing.

The second thing is, that *Paul* preached the Gospel to the Galatians at the first, as it were breaking the ice, where none had preached before. In this he claimes his priuiledge, that he was to be esteemed as a Maister-builder, that laid the foundation of the Church of Galatia : and withall he giues a close *Item* to the false Apostles, who did not plant Churches, but onely corrupt them after they were planted. Againe, *Paul* here notes the condition of Gods Church, or kingdome : in which first comes the husbandman and sowes good seede, and then after comes the diuell with his tares, *Math. 13. 24.* and all this is euident in the Church of Galatia, first planted by *Paul*, and then seduced by false teachers.

The third thing is, that *Paul* preached bearing about him the triall of God. This triall is a worke of God whereby he discouers vnto vs, and to the world, either the grace or the corruption of our hearts. Thus God tried *Abraham*, *Heb. 11. 17.* the Israelites, *Deut. 6. 1.* and *Ezechias*, *2. Chron. 32. 31.* and *Paul* in this place.

The vse. We must not thinke it strange, when we are afflicted any way. Nay, we must looke for trials, and be content when they come. *1. Pet. 4. 12. 1. Iam. 1. 2.* We are either gold indeede, or gold in shew ; if indeede, we must be cast into the furnace, that we may be purged : if we be gold in appearance, we must againe into the furnace, that we may be knownewhat we are. The best vine in the vineyard must be lopped and cut with the pruning knife, that it may beare the more fruite. *Ioh. 15.*

Againe, we must take heed lest there be any hidden corruption reigning in our hearts : and we must labour to be indeed that which we appeare to be. For we must be tried by God : and then that which now lies hid, shall be discovered to our shame.

Lastly, we must looke to it, that there be soundnesse of grace in

vs, that we may be able to heare the trialls of God, and shew forth some measure of faith, patience, obedience.

The first signe of Reuerence in the Galatians is, *that they did not despise Paul* in his base condition. This is a matter of commendation in them, and it is to be followed of vs. And he is a blessed man that is not offended at Christ, *Math. 11. 6.* 5

The second signe of reuerence is, *that they receiued Paul as an Angel of God, or as Christ Iesus.* Here first we must distinguish betweene Pauls person, and his doctrine or ministry. And he is said to be receiued as an Angel, or as Christ: because his doctrine was receiued euen as if an Angel, or Christ had deliuered it. Secondly we must put a difference betweene an Apostle, and all ordinary Pastours and teachers. And to be receiued as an Angel, or as Christ, properly and simply concerns Paul, and the rest of the Apostles. For to them it was said, *It is not you that speake, but the spirit of the Father in you. Mat. 10. 20* Againe, *he that heareth you, heareth me, he that despiseth you, despiseth me, Luk. 10. 16.* The Apostles were called of God immediatly, taught and inspired immediatly, and immediatly gouerned by the Spirit, both in preaching and writing, so as they could not erre in the things which they deliuered to the Church: and therefore they were to be heard euen as Christ himselfe. 15

As for other ordinary teachers, they are in part and in the second place to be heard as Angels, and as Christ, so farre forth as they follow the doctrine of the Apostles. Thus are they also called *the Angels of the conenant, Malac. 2. 7. And Embassadors in the stead of Christ, 2. Cor. 5. 21.* 25

Here Paul notably expresseth the Authority, and Honour of an Apostle, which is to be heard euen as Christ himselfe: because in preaching he is the mouth, and in writing the hand of God. This authority is to be maintained: and the consideration of it is of great vse. The Papists say, we know the scripture to be the word of God, by the testimony of the Church: but indeede the principall meanes whereby wee are assured touching the truth of Scripture, is, that the books of Scripture were penned by men, whose writings, and sayings, we are to receiue, euen as from Christ himselfe, because they had either Propheticall or Apostolicall authority, and were immediatly taught and inspired in writing: and all this may be discerned, by the matter, forme, and circumstances of the foresaid books. 35

De contid. ad
Angen.

Secondly, they are to be blamed that call the Pope *the sponse of the Church*, and Christ by *anointment* (as Bernard did,) for thus is he more then an Apoitle. 40

Thirdly,

Thirdly, here we see the goodnesse of God, that doth not speake to vs in his Maiesty, but appoints men in his stead, who are his Embassadors to beseech vs to be reconciled to him.

Fourthly, there must be fidelity in teachers, because they stand
5 in teaching, in the stead of Christ: and therefore must onely deliuer that which they know to be the will of Christ.

Fifthly, They must haue a speciall care of holinesse of life, because they speake in the name and roome of God. Reade *Leuit. 10. 2.*

Sixtly, the people are to heare their teachers with all reuerence,
10 euen as if they would heare the very Angels of God, or Christ himselfe.

Seauently, the comfort of the Ministry is as sure and certaine, as if an Angel came downe from heauen, or Christ himselfe to comfort vs: so be it we doe indeede truely turne to God and
15 repent.

Verse 15.

What was your felicity?] that is, you esteemed it to be your felicity, that you receiued me and my doctrine. *Yee would haue plucked out your eyes, and haue giuen them to mee*] a prouerbiall speech, signifying the speciall loue of the Galatians to *Paul*, so as nothing which they had could be too deare for him. *If it had benne possible*] this he
20 good: or thus, no man can possibly giue his eye and the sight thereof to another.

In these words *Paul* sets downe the third signe of the loue and reuerence which the Galatians shewed to him: and that is, that they thought themselves happy by reason of *Pauls* Ministry, and
30 would haue parted with their owne eyes for his good.

Hence we learne, that there is a felicity in the time of this life, and that is, to receiue and imbrace the doctrine of the Gospell. So saith Christ else-where. *Luk. 8. 21. and 11. 18. Math. 7. 26.* True happinesse stands in our reconciliation with God in Christ. And
35 this reconciliation is offered and giuen vs on Gods part by his word and promise, and it is receiued of vs, when we turne to God, and by faith rest on the said promise. To be in Gods kingdome is happinesse: and this is the kingdome of God, when we religne our selues in subiection to his will and word. The preaching of the
40 word is the key of this kingdome, *Math. 16. 19.* and when it is receiued into our hearts by faith, heauen is set open vnto vs euen in this life, *Iob. 1. 51.*

The

The Philosophers therefore haue erred, that place our happinesse in honours, riches, pleasures, or in ciuill vertue.

Secondy, our common people are deceiued, who think because they deale truly and iustly before men, that they are in as good a case as they that heare all the Sermons in the world: as though true happinesse stood in ciuill conuersation.

Thirdly, this doctrine serues to beate downe a point of natural Atheisme in the heart of man, which makes many thinke it a vaine thing to serue God, and to heare his word, *Iob 21. 15. Malac. 3. 14. David* was troubled with this corruption, *Psalme 73. 15.* Many of them which professe the name of Christ, will not bee brought to keepe the Sabbath day: and in their dealings they vse fraud, and lying as other men doe: and all is because they thinke they cannot liue by their religion.

Fourthly, the onely way to establish a kingdome or commonwealth, is to plant the Gospell there: for this makes an happy people. And this is the maine cause of our happinesse and successe in this Church and land. And the obedience of the Gospel it is that makes euery man in his trade, office, and calling whatsoeuer it be, to prosper. Reade *Psal. 1. 3.*

Fifthly, on the contrary, they are wretched and miserable that liue without the Gospel, *Prou. 29. 18. 2. Cor. 4. 3. 2. Tim. 3. 7.*

Sixtly, to receiue the doctrine of the Apostles, is an infallible marke of the Church of God. For this is it that makes a people blessed and happy.

Seuenthy, we may not despise the preaching of the word, *1. Thes. 5. 20.* If we doe, we despise our owne happinesse. If it be said, Preachers sometime are deceiued. Answer. Marke the addition of *Paul*, *Prooue all things, hold that which is good, 2. Thess. 5.*

Touching the speciall loue of the Galatians to *Paul*, first it may be demanded, what was the cause of it? Answer. The very ministerie of the Apostle, whose office it was to make disciples, *Matth. 28. 19.* and so to plant the Church of the New Testament. And for this cause, hee had a priuiledge to preach the truth, so as hee could not erre in things which he deliuered to the Church. Secondly, he preached with authoritie, as hauing power to correct rebellious offenders, *2. Cor. 10. 6.* and *1. Cor. 4.* Thirdly, he preached with vnspokeable diligence. Reade *Acts 20. 31.* Fourthly, he had a prerogatiue, (as therest of the Apostles had) after hee had made disciples, by imposition of hands to giue vnto them the extraordinary gifts of the holy Ghost, *Acts 8. 17.* And these are the meanes whereby this speciall loue was procured.

Secondly,

Secondly, it may bee demaunded, whether the Galatians did not more then keepe the law, when they would haue plucked out their owne eyes, and haue giuen them to *Paul*? for thus they loue him more then their owne selues. *Answer.* The commandement
 5 [*Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe*] doth not prescribe that we must in the first place loue our selues, and then in the second loue our neighbour: but it sets downe the right manner of louing our neighbour, and that is, to loue him, as heartily and vnfainedly, as our owne selues.

10 The measure of loue is expressed when Christ saith, *we must loue one another, as Christ loved vs, Iohn 13. 34.*

There is a certaine case in which wee must consider our neighbour, not onely as a neighbour, but also as a speciall instrument of God: and thus are wee in some respects to loue, and to preferre
 15 him before our selues. Thus a subiect is more to loue the life of his Prince, then his owne life. Thus *Paul* was content to bee accursed for the Israelites, *Rom. 9. 1.* And the Galatians would haue giuen their eyes to *Paul*, that was so worthy an instrument of the grace of God.

20 In their example we are taught to be willing to forsake the dearest things in the world for the Gospel of Christ, euen our eyes, hands, feete, yea, and our life.

Verse 16.

Because I tell you the trueth.] We must after *Pauls* example speake
 25 the truth to all men, *Ephes. 4. 25. Am I therefore your enemy*] the conclusion of the Apostles argument. Here we see a corruption of nature, which makes vs that wee cannot abide to heare the trueth in things that are against vs. Wee hate them that speake the trueth: selfe-loue makes vs conceiue the best things of our selues. Heere
 30 then learne.

1. To search thy heart and life, that thou mayest know the very worst by thy selfe: If thou wilt not know it now, thou shalt know it to thy shame in the day of iudgement.

2. Be vile and base in thine owne opinion, *Iob. 34. last.*
 35

17 *They are iealous ouer you amisse: yea, they would exclude you, that ye should altogether loue them.*

18 *But it is good to loue earnestly alwayes in a good cause; and not onely when I am present with you.*
 40

The word *zeale*, hath many significations; heere it is fitly translated *iealousie*. *Ye are iealous*] hereby much is signified; that there

is a spirituall mariage betweene Christ and his Church: that the Church is the Bride, Christ the Bridegroom, or husband, the Gospel an instrument drawne touching the marriage: the Sacraments as seales, the graces of the Spirit as loue tokens, the Ministers of Christ, as friends of the Bridegroom, and suters for him. In this respect they put on the affection of Christ, and are zealous for him. 5
This ielousie is twofold, *Pretended ielousie*, and *true ielousie*. *Pretended ielousie*, is, when men falsely pretend the loue of the Church for Christes sake. Thus *Paul* saith, *They are ielous*, that is, they pretend a loue vnto you for Christes sake, but indeed they doe it 10
amisse. And the reason followes, *They would exclude you*, namely, from louing of me. Others read the words thus, they would exclude *quos, vs*: the difference in the originall is onely in one letter: and the sense is the same, that the false apostles would exclude *Paul* from the loue of the Galatians, that they onely might bee honou- 15
red and loued.

It is good] These words may be vnderstood, either of the Galatians, or of *Paul*. I rather choose to apply them to *Paul*, that for ielousie he may make an opposition betweene himselfe and the false teachers. The sense is this: that ielousie is a good thing, if it be in 20
a good cause; that is, if it be indeed for Christes sake, and be alwayes the same. And *Paul* addes further, that this kinde of ielousie is in himselfe: because he is ielous ouer the Galatians not only when he is present with them, but also when he is absent: and this he further confirms in the two next verses. 25

The scope. In these words, *Paul* meets with a conceit of the Galatians: for they might haply say, that their new teachers loued them exceedingly, and were zealous for their saluation. *Paul* therefore answers by a comparison, thus: they are ielous ouer you, but it is amisse: nay, ielousie for you is good. The first part of the com- 30
parison is in the 17. verse, the second in the 18.

The vse. When *Paul* saith, that the false apostles were ielous ouer the Galatians amisse, hee sets out the fashion of men in the world, which is to doe things which are good in their kinde, but to doe them for wrong ends. It is an excellent office to preach the word, but some doe it of enuy and contention, *Phil. 1. 15*. others 35
make merchandise of the word. It is an excellent thing to imbrace the Gospel: and yet many men doe it amisse for feare, or for honour, or for profit, or for other sinister respect, and not for the Gospels sake. This temporall life is an excellent thing, yet few there 40
are that know the ende of this life. For men commonly spend not their time to seeke the kingdome of heauen, and to serue God in
seruing

seruing of men, but with all their might: they aime at honours, profits, pleasures: and thus they liue amille, not for the honour of God, but for themselves. This must teach vs not onely to doe good, but to doe it well, and to propound good ends to our selues:
 5 and to seeke to bee vpright in the statutes of God, *Psalm 119. 80.* To this ende, three things must bee done. First, wee must set before vs the will and commaundement of God, and this must mooue vs to doe the good we doe. Secondly, the outward action must be conformable to the inward motions of the inward man:
 10 and they must both go together. Thirdly, we must directly intend to obey God in all things wee doe, and to approoue our hearts and doings to him.

In that the false apostles are said to be *iealous*, or *zealous*, we see how nature can counterfeit the grace of God: and that which the
 15 child of God doth by grace, that the naturall man can doe by nature. Thus *Pharaoh* fained repentance, *Exod. 9. 37.* and *Ahab*, that *solde himselfe to worke wickednesse*, *1. Kings 21. 27.* and *Indas* in the midst of his despaire, is said to *repent*, *Matth. 27. 1.* Daily experience shewes the like in such persons, who in their extremitie, with teares
 20 vse to bewaile their liues past, and with many vowes and protestations, promise amendment: and yet afterward when they are on foot againe, they returne to their old bias. In a word, there is nothing that the godly man doeth by the spirit of God spiritually, but an hypocrite may doe the like carnally. Nature can play the part
 25 of the ape, in imitating good things. Therefore it stands vs in hand to pray, and examine our hearts, lest we bee deceived in our selues. For there may lie a depth of deceit and falshood lurking in the heart. And that we be not deceived, two things must be obserued, One is, that wee must cherish in our hearts an vniuersall hatred of
 30 all and euery sinne; first in our selues, and then in others. The second is, that we must bee changed and renewed in our minds, consciences, and affections.

Thirdly, heere wee see the propertie of enuie, and ambition, in these false teachers. *Paul* must be excluded from the loue of the
 35 Galatians, that they alone may be loued. Thus *Iosua* would haue excluded *Eldad* and *Medad* from prophesying, and hee would haue *Moses* to be the only Prophet: but *Moses* saith, *I would to God all the people could prophesie*, *Numb. 11. 29.* *Iohns* disciples would haue excluded Christ baptizing: but *Iohn* saith, *He must increase, and I must de-*
 40 *crease*, *Iohn 3. 30.* The disciples of Christ would haue excluded one that cast out diuels in the name of Christ, but did not follow him, and Christ forbad them, *Luke 9. 49.*

Lastly,

Lastly, we here see the propertie of deceiuers is to make a diuision betweene the Pastors and the people.

Beside the former pretended ielousie, there is a good ielousie, which the Apostle takes to himselfe, and elsewhere hee calls it the *ielousie of God*, 2. Cor. 11. 2.

This ielousie presupposeth the office of the Apostles, and all Ministers, which stands in three things. The first is, to become suiters to the Church, or to the soules of men, in the name of Christ, and to make the offer or motion in his name, of a spiritual marriage: and this is done in the ministerie and dispensation of the Gospell. The second is, to make the contract betweene mens soules and Christ. Now to the making of a contract, the consent of both the parties (at the least) is required: Christ giues his consent in the word, *Ose. 2. 20.* and we giue our consent to him, & choose him for our head, when we turne to God, and beleue in Christ. And the ministry of the word, serues to signifie the will of Christ vnto vs, and to stirre vp our hearts to an holy consent. The third is, after the contract, to preserve them in true faith, and good life, that they may bee fit to be presented to Christ in the day of iudgment, and so be married to him eternally: for then, & not before, is the marriage of the lambe. These dueties are all noted by *Paul*, when he saith, *that hee prepared the Corinthians that he might present them as a pure virgin vnto Christ*, 2. Cor. 11. 2. And because this charge and office is laid vpon the Apostles and Ministers: therefore they are said to bee ielous.

This ielousie stands in three things. The first is, to loue the Church, in deed and truth for Christs sake. The second is, to feare least by reason of weaknesse, and by meanes of the temptations of the diuell, the Church and they that beleue, should fall away from Christ. The third is, after the fall of the Church, to be angry with holy anger and indignation for Christs sake. Thus *Moses* was ielous, when the Israelites worshipped the golden calfe: and *Elias* with like zeale slue the priests of *Baal*. Thus is *Paul* said to be ielous in this place, *Actes 14.*

If the Apostle bee thus ielous, how much more then is Christ himselfe ielous, who hath espoused himselfe to his Church? This plainly shewes, that hee cannot brooke either partner, or deputie. And therefore his sacrifice on the crosse must stand without the sacrifice of the Masse, his intercession without the intercession of Saints, his merits without the merit of workes, his satisfaction without any satisfaction of ours. He will haue the heart alone, and all the heart, or nothing: and he will not giue any part of his honour to any other.

This

This ielousie in the Minist'ers must teach all faithfull seruants of God, that they keepe themselves as pure virgins for Christ, and set their hearts on nothing in the world: but on him. Therefore they must hunger after Christ: they must account all things dung for him: they must haue their conuersation in heaven with him: and loue his comming vnto them by death, *Psalm* 45 10. Contrariwise they that set their hearts on any other thing beside him, are said to goe a whoring from him, and therefore they are accursed, *Psalm* 73. 27. Thus many Protestants doe in their practise, whatsoeuer they professe. Thus doth the Church of Rome both in word and deed. For beside Christ she hath many other louers: and she goes a whoring after them when shee worships Angels and Saints, the images of God and Christ, with religious worship.

Againe, by this we are put in minde to yeeld an vniuersall subiection to Christ: for this is the dutie of the espoused wife to her husband.

Lastly, that good things may be well done, good ends must bee propounded: and we must be constant in the good which we doe. And thus *Paul* saith, it is good to be ialous.

19 *My little children, of whom I trauell in birth againe, till Christ be formed in you.*

20 *I would I were now with you, that I might change my voice: for I am in feare of you.*

Paul hath said before, that his ielousie ouer the *Galatians* was good: because it was in a good cause, and it was constant, not only in his presence, but euen in his absence: and this he declares here by two signes: his loue now in his absence, in the 19. verse, and his desire in the second verse.

The word, *ὄσως*, translated, *I trauell in birth*, signifies not onely the trauell of the woman at the birth of the childe, but also the painefull bearing thereof, before the birth. And the wordes haue this sense, O ye *Galatians*, once heretofore I bare and brought you forth, when I first preached Christ vnto you: and because now yee are reuolted from my doctrine, I am constrained once againe to beare you, and to trauell with you in my ministerie, till by the operation of the Holy Ghost, the right knowledge, and the true image of Christ defaced by the false apostles, bee once againe reformed and restored.

In these words (*my little children*) *Paul* takes to him the condition

tion of a mother, and hee signifies his most tender and motherly affection to the Galatians. It is the fashion of mothers, when their children prosper and doe well, to reioyce; when they are sicke, or die, to mourne exceedingly, and to bee mouued with pitie and compassion. The Galatians deserued no loue at *Pauls* hand: for their apostasie was very foule: yet because there were some good things remaining in them, and there was hope of recouery, hee enlargeth his bowels towards them, and shewes his loue with compassion. If this bee the case with *Paul*, then great is the loue and compassion of God to his children. If the childe be sicke and forward, the mother doeth not cast it forth of the doores, but shee tenders it, and carefully lookes vnto it: much more then will the Lord haue pitie and compassion. Heere then a maine comfort is to be remembred: if we be of the number of them that beleue in Christ, hating vice, and hauing a care to please God, our weaknesses and falls of weaknesse, doe not abolish the mercie of God, but are occasions to illustrate the same. The weaknesse of the child, stirres vp the compassion in the mother: and *David* saith, *As a father hath compassion on his children, so hath the Lord compassion on them that feare him*: and marke the reason: for he knowes our frame, and that we are but dust, *Psal. 103. 14.*

When *Paul* saith, *I trauell*, hee signifies the measure of his ministeriall paines, that they were as the trauell of a woman with child: and this he shewes plainly in the particulars, *2. Cor. 11. 23.* *Elias*, that was sent in his time to restore religion, was at length so wearied in this businesse, that he desired the Lord to take him out of the world, *1. King. 19. 4.* The paines of the Prophet *Isai*, made him crie, *My leanneesse, my leanneesse*; and *Jeremy* cries, *my belly, my belly*: signifying, that his griefs and his paines in the ministry, were as the paine of the *Cholicke*. By this we see, that they haue much to answer for before God, that are in this calling, and yet take little or no paines therein. And that they which take the most paines, come far short of their dutie.

Againe, when hee saith, *I trauell*, hee signifies the dignitie of the ministerie, that it is an instrument appointed of God for the worke of regeneration: for *Paul* compares himselfe to a woman in trauell, and the worke of his ministerie, to the trauell it selfe, whereby children are borne to God. This serues very well to stop their mouthes, that condemne the vocall and externall ministerie.

When he saith, *I trauell*, he teacheth, that if men fall after their first initiall repentance, there is still a possibilitie of mercie, and

and place for a second repentance. We must *forgive till seventy seven times, Mat. 18 22*. Much more will God doe it. The parable of the prodigall Sonne shewes, that they which fall from God after their calling and first conuersion, may againe by new repentance
5 be recouered.

An obiection: *Pauls* second trauell presupposeth a second regeneration in the Galatians: and if they are borne againe the second time, then in their Apostatie they fell wholly from God. *Ans.* When *Paul* saith, *I trauell againe*, he doth not presuppose any second Spirituall generation: for the child of God is but once begotten to the Lord, and *Paul* here calls the Galatians, *little children*, because even in the time of their fall, the seede of God still remained in their hearts. And because the image of Christ was againe to be reformed and restored in the Galatians, in this respect he saith, *I trauell*
10 *again with you.*

The end of *Pauls* ministry is expressed in the words, *till Christ be formed in you*: that is, till (as it were) the counterfeite or image of Christ be stamped and imprinted in your hearts. This image hath two parts. The first is, a Right knowledge of Christ in respect of his natures and offices, as they are set forth in the word. This knowledge was defaced in the Galatians, when they toyed
15 workes with Christ: for then they made him to be an imperfect Sauiour. The second part of this image, is a Conformity with Christ, *Rom. 8. 29.* It is twofold, *conformitie in quality, and conformitie in practise.*

Conformity in quality is againe twofold. The first is a *Conformitie to the death of Christ*, when the vertue thereof works in vs a death of sinne, and when we suffer as Christ suffered, in silence, contentation, obedience, subiecting our selues to the will of God. The second
20 is, a *conformity to the resurrection or life of Christ*, and that is, when we liue not onely a naturall, but also a Spirituall life, which is to submit our selues to be ruled by the word and Spirit of Christ.

Conformity in practise is, when we carry our selues as Prophets in the confession of the name of Christ, in teaching, exhorting, and
25 admonishing one another: as Priests to offer our bodies and soules in sacrifice to God: as Spirituall Kings, bearing sway over the lusts and corruptions of our owne hearts. And thus is Christ to be framed in the hearts of men.

The vse. Here we see, the end of all preaching, is to make sinne-
30 full men to become new creatures, like vnto Christ: this is the drift of the Ministry: and the doctrine that tends to this purpose, is sound and wholesome.

Againe, here we see, that in the new Testament, there is but one rule and order for all men, and that is the rule of Christ, *Take up thy crosse and follow me*: and for this cause the Ministry serues to frame Christ in the hearts of all beleeuers: Therefore the seuerall rules and orders of Monks and Friars in the Church of Rome, are meere superstitions.

Furthermore, *Paul* here makes two degrees of Gods children; one is, when they are begotten of God, & Christ is formed in them. The second is, when they are begotten of God, yet so, as they are as yet vnformed. Such were the Apostles when they confessed Christ to bee the Sonne of the liuing God, *Math. 16.* for then they knew not the article of Christs death, resurrection, ascension, at that time, nor the manner of his kingdome. Of this sort was *Rahab*, when she receiued the spies, *Heb. 11.* for then she was not informed in the religion of the Iewes, but only acknowledged the God of Israel to be the true God, and had a resolution to ioine her selfe to the people of God. Of this sort were the *Corinthians* at the first. For they were carnall more then spirituall, euen babes in Christ, *1. Cor. 3. 3.* This must teach vs, where we see any good thing in men, to cherish it. For though as yet they be not Christians formed, yet they may be Christians in forming.

When *Paul* saith, *untill Christ be formed*, he shewes that the conuersion of a sinner is not wrought in one moment, but by little and little, in proceffe of time. In the generation of infants, first the braine, heart, and liuer are framed: then the bones, veines, arteries, nerues, membranes: and after this, flesh is added. And the infant first begins to liue the life of a plant, by growing and nourishing: then it liues the life of a beatt, by sense and motion: and thirdly, the life of man, by the vse of reason. Euen so God outwardly preuents vs with his word, and inwardly he puts into vs knowledge of his wil, with the beginnings or seeds of faith and repentance, as it were a braine and a heart: from these beginnings of faith and repentance, arise heavenly desires: from these desires followes asking seeking knocking: and thus the beginnings of faith are increased, and men goe on from grace to grace, till they be tall men in Christ. And for this cause, we must with constancy vse the good meanes, in heating, reading, praying.

Lastly, we are all here put in minde to stusly, and to vse all good meanes, that we may be like to Christ, specially in the disposition of the inward man. I here is a spirituall madnes in the minds of many men: they thinke of nothing but of the fashion of their apparell, and of the trimming of their bodies: but let vs thinke how

how to imprint the gracious image of Christ in our hearts: thus shall we be lovely, and have favour in the eyes of God.

Thus much of *Paul's* loue now follows his desire in the 20 verse. In which I consider three things: the desire it selfe, *I would I were with you now*: the end of his desire, *that I might change my voice*: the occasion thereof, *for I am in doubt of you*.

When *Paul* saith, *I would I were with you now*, he shewes, that the presence of Pastours with their people, is a thing most necessary. And there are two reasons thereof. One is, to prevent spirituall daungers, which are manifold and continuall, in that *the devil seekes continually whome he may deuoure*: and we fight against principalities and powers in heavenly things. In this respect Pastours are called *watchmen*, and *ouerscers*. Secondly, the presence of Pastours with their people, serues to redresse things amisse, and to re-
 15 couer them that be in Apostasie: as *Paul* saith in this place. Therefore it were to be wished that this mind of *Paul* were in all Pastors, that with one consent they might say to their people, *I would I were with you now*.

In the words, [*that I might change my voice*] *Paul* continues the
 20 allusion (which he made in the former verse) to a woman with child: and hereby he signifies two things. The first is, that he will leaue further disputing with the Galatians, and fall to lamenting and crying, as mothers doe in the time of their trauell, by reason of their paine. This is to change the voice. It was the maner of *Paul*
 25 to abase himselfe, and to mourne for the sinnes of others, 2. Cor. 12. 24 and hee reprooues the Corinthians, that they were puffed vp, and did not mourne for the incestuous person. Like was the practise of *Dauid*, Psal. 119. 136 of *Lot*, 2. Pet. 2. 7 of *Jeremie*, Lam. 2. 11. of the friends of *Iob*, *Iob*. 2. last. of the godly in the daies of *Ezechiel*, c.
 30 9 4 of Christ in respect of Ierusalem, *Luke* 19 41. And it hath bin alwayes the practise of holy men, when there was no other helpe, with teares to commend the case to God.

If sorrow for other mens offences make *Paul* change his voice, much more are men to doe it for their owne. *Peter*, in his repentance left his presumptuous speaking, and fell to bitter and secret
 35 teares: and so did the woman that stood at the feet of Christ weeping, and washed his feet with her teares, *Luke* 7 83. The like ought wee to doe for our offences and finnes. The earth quake this Winter past, must stirre vs vp to this dutie. For it is a matter
 40 full of terrour, 1. Samuel 14. 15. and the sicknesse which hath taken hold of thousands as a gentle warning must bee respected. And it must bee considered, that the changes of the great world bring

with them like changes in the little world, that is, in the bodies of men.

Againe, *to change the voice*, is to conferre with the Galatians, and vpon conference to temper his voice to their manners and condition, as nourses stammer and lispe with children. For some are with pitie to be recovered: and some with terrour, *Ind. 22. 23.* Hence I gather,

That the conference of Pastours and people, is a thing very necessary. *Paul* heere ascribes more to it then to his Epistle. It is the life of preaching. For by it the teachers know better what to teach, and the people better to conceiue things that are taught. Here then we see a common fault. Men are content to heare, but they will not conferre with their teachers: and in the time of sicknesse, the first person that is conferred with, is the Physician: and the Minister is last sent for: whereas on the contrary, the cure of the soule, is the cure of the bodie, *Iob 33. 23. 25.*

Againe, here is set downe the way to attaine all good learning: and that is, that learners bee present with their teachers: and the teachers againe temper their voices to the capacitie of their learners. Thus *Samuel* was with *Eli* at the doore of the Tabernacle: thus *Christ* was in the Temple among the doctors, hearing them, and asking them questions, *Luke 2. 44.*

Thirdly, *Paul* heere sets downe the way to make a pacification for religion in these last dayes: and the way is, that the Pastours of the Church bee assembled together by the authoritie of Princes: and being assembled, they temper their voices one to another according to the written word. Thus may they that lie now vnder the apostasie of Antichrist, be recovered, *Actes 15. 6.* And the promise of God is, that *when two or three come together in his name, hee will be with them*, *Matt. 18.*

Lastly, the Ministers (as here wee see) are to temper their gifts and speach to the condition of their hearers. The Corinthians were babes in *Christ*, and *Paul* feeds them with milke, *1. Cor. 3. 3.* to the lew he became a lew, to the Gentile a Gentile, that he might winne some, *1. Cor. 9. 18.* For this cause it were to bee wished, that Catechising were more vsed then it is of our Ministers. For our people are for the most part rude and vncatechised: and therefore they profit little or nothing by Sermons. A sermon to such persons is like a great loose fet before a child. And it is no disgrace for learned Ministers, in plaine and familiar manner to catechise: for this is to lay the foundation, without which all labour in building is in vaine. Againe, our ignorant people should be content euen in their

their olde age to learne the Catechisme : for by reason of their ignorance, they lie as a prey to the Atheist and Papist : and in much hearing, they learne little, because they know not the grounds of doctrine that are vsually in all Sermons. And it is a fault in many, that they loue to heare Sermons, which are beyond their reach, in which they stand & wonder at the preacher : and plaine preaching is little respected of such.

The occasion of *Pauls* desire is in these words, *I doubt of you*, or thus, *I am in perplexitie for you* : and this *Paul* speakes as a mother in some dangerous extremitie, in the time of her travell ; as *Rachel* was in the birth of *Benjamin*, *Gen. 35*. And the words carry this sense, I am troubled for your recovery ; and I feare it will neuer be.

Heere wee learne, how dangerous a thing it is to fall from grace, though it bee but in part. For a man cannot recouer himselfe when hee will. Wee doe not the good wee can, vnlesse God make vs doe it, *Ezech. 36. 27. Cant. 1. 4. Ierem. 31. 29*. Therefore it is an errour to thinke that we may repent and turne to God when we will, as many suppose. And this must bee a warning vnto vs to preferue the good things that God hath put into vs, and not to quench the spirit.

And though *Paul* doubt of the recovery of the Galatians, yet he spares not to send his Epistle to them, and to vse meanes. And thus in desperate cases, we must vse the best meanes, & leaue the successe to God. Thus the Israelites when there was no other helpe, went into the sea, as into their deathbed, or graue, by faith staying themselves on the promise of God, *Heb. 11. 29. 2. Chron. 20. 12*.

That which *Paul* here saith, may bee said of many among vs, in whom Christ is not yet framed, whether we respect knowledge or good life : for they giue iust occasion of doubting, whether they will euer returne to God or no.

21 Tell mee yee that will be vnder the law, doe yee not heare the law ?

22 For it is written, that *Abraham* had two sonnes, one by a seruant, and another by a free woman.

23 But he which was of the seruant, was borne after the flesh : and he which was of the free woman, by promise.

40 From the eight verse of this chapter to the 20 verse, *Paul* hath handled the conclusion of the principall argument of this Epistle touching the Apostasie of the Galatians : and here he returnes againe

gaine to his former doctrine touching the iustification of a sinner, by faith, without the workes of the law: and he confirms it by another argument, the summe and substance whereof is this: Your libertie from the law, was prefigured in the family of *Abraham*: therefore ye are not bondmen to the law, but free men. 5

The argument is at large propounded, and it hath foure parts: a preface in the 21. verse: an history of *Abraham* and his family, ver. 22, 23, the application of the history from the 24. verse to the 30. the conclusion, verse 31.

And first of the Preface. *Law*] the word (*law*) in the first place, is 10 taken properly for the moral and ceremoniall law of *Moses*: and in the second place, for the books of *Moses*, and namely, for the booke of *Genesis*. And in this sense the word is taken, when *Christ* is said to expound the *Law* and the *Prophets*, *Luke* 24. And sometime it signifies all the bookes of the old Testament, *Iohn* 15. 15. 15

Under the law] to be vnder the law, is to hold our selues bound to the fulfilling of the law: and to looke for life eternall thereby.

Doe ye not heare the law] that is, ye reade and heare in deed, but ye vnderstand not the scope and drift of that which you reade.

In this Preface, first *Paul* meetes with the pride of mans nature, whereby the Galatians went about to establish their owne 20 righteousness by the law, when hee saith, *Ye that will bee vnder the law*, &c. With this pride were the Iewes tainted, *Romanes* 10. 3. and the young Prince that came to *Christ*, and said, *Good master, what must I doe to be saved?* And the Papists of our time, who will 25 not bee subiect to the iustice of God, but set vp their owne iustice in the keeping of the law. The like doe the ignorant people among vs, who hold that they are able to fulfill the law, and that they are to be saved thereby. And when they say, they looke to be saved by their faith, they vnderstand thereby their fidelitie, that 30 is, their good dealing.

Againe, *Paul* here notes the seruile disposition of men that loues rather to be in bondage vnder the law, then to be in perfect liberty vnder the grace of God. This we see in daily experience. All professe *Christ* among vs: yet is it euen a death to the most, to forsake 35 the bondage of the flesh. *Christ* we professe, yet so as we take libertie to liue after the lusts of our owne hearts.

When *Paul* saith, *Doe ye not heare the law?* hee notes the cause of our spirituall pride, and of the seruile disposition before named, namely, ignorance in mistaking and misconceiuing the true scope 40 of the law: for the Galatians did not consider that *Christ* was the scope of the law, but they supposed that the very obseruation of the 40

the law, euen since the fall of man, did giue life and iustice. This ignorance was to the Iewes as a veile before their eyes in the reading of the law, 2. *Corinthians* 3. 14. And this ignorance hath blinded the Papist at this day: for he supposeth that the Gospel is nothing else but the law of *Moses*: and that Christ indeed is but an instrument to make vs keepers of the law, and consequently sa-
 5 uiours of our selues.

In the history of *Abraham* I consider three things, the fact of *Abraham* in taking two wiues: the euent vpon this fact, he had two
 10 sonnes by them: the condition of these sonnes.

Touching the fact of *Abraham*, it may bee demaunded, what is to bee iudged thereof? The ground to the answer shall bee this; that marriage is the indissoluble coniunction of one man and one woman on-
 15 ly. This Christ of purpose teacheth, *Matth.* 16. where he saith, that God created them at the first man and woman, and not women, v. 4. that a man must forsake father and mother, and cleave to his wife, not to his
 20 wiues, v. 5. that they twaine shall be one flesh, v. 6. And in all this Christ makes no new law, but onely reuiues the first institution of marriage made in Paradise. And *Moses* hauing set downe this diuine in-
 25 stitution, addes withall, that *Lamech* was the first that brake it, by taking many wiues.

Now then, the answer to the question, is two fold. Some say, that *Abraham* and the rest of the Patriarks had a dispensation from
 30 God to marrie many wiues, and therefore that it was no sinne in them. Of this minde are sundrie learned men, both Protestants and Papists. But the answer is only coniecturall, and hath no eu-
 35 dence in Scripture.

The second answer is, that God did not approue the polygamic of the fathers, or commend it, but did onely tolerate it, as a lesser e-
 40 uill, for the preuenting of a greater. This tolleration appeares, in that God commanded that the king must not multiply his wiues, *Deut.* 17. 17. and that the child of the hated wife, (though shee be the se-
 45 cond wife,) if it bee first borne, shall be the heire, *Deut.* 21. 15. The occasions of this tolleration were two. One was, a desire in the Pa-
 50 triarkes to multiply their posterity, that if it were possible, the Mes-
 55 sias might descend of their line. The second was, the common cus-
 60 tome of men in the East countreyes, who made no matter of it, to marry many wiues: and a common custome bred a common error, and a common error bred common ignorance, wherby that which
 65 was indeed a sinne, was esteemed no sinne.

It may be objected, if the hauing of many wiues were an of-
 fence, that *Abraham* and the rest of the holy Patriarches liued and

died in a fire without repentance: because wee finde nothing in Scripture, touching their repentance for that sin. *Answer.* Knowne finnes require particular repentance: but if finnes be vnknownen, or vnconsidered, by reason that men are caried away with the sway of the times (as the Patriarchs were) a generall repentance suffi- 5
ceth, *Psalm* 19. 12.

Again, it may bee alleadged, that *Abraham* tooke *Agar* by the consent of *Sara*. *Answer.* That sufficeth not to make a full excuse for *Abraham*. For if marriage were a meere ciuill contract, as it is made by the consent of men and women, so it might be dissolued by like 10
consent. But it is more then a ciuill contract: because in the making of it, beside the consent of the parties, the authoritie of God is interposed: and therefore *Saraes* consent (in giuing *Agar* to *Abraham*) is nothing, without the allowance of God: and wee may not thinke that God will allow of that which is directly against 15
his owne ordinance.

Thirdly, it may be alleadged, that if the hauing of many wiues be a fault, then *Abraham* and the rest were adulterers. *Answer.* Not so, the polygamic of the Fathers is to bee placed in the middle, betweene adulterie, and holy wedlocke. They tooke not wiues of a lewde 20
minde, for the satisfying of their lust, but of a conscience not rightly informed in this point.

The euent vpon the fact of *Abraham* was, that his two wiues, bare him two sonnes. Hee had indeed more sonnes by *Keturah*, *Genesis* 25. 2. but these two, *Ismael* and *Isaac* are onely here men- 25
tioned: because by the speciall appointment of God, they were ordained as types of true beleeuers and hypocrites. Reade *Rom.* 9. 7. 8.

The condition of children is set foorth by a double difference. The first is, that one was borne of a bond woman, and therefore a bond- 30
man; the other of a free woman, and therefore a free man, & the heire. Here it may be demaunded, how the same person can bee both a wife, and a bond woman? *Answer.* Among the heathen (as also among the Iewes) there were two sorts of wiues. Of the first kinde were they, that were ioynt gouernours of the family with the hus- 35
band, and they were called mistresses of the house. Of the second sort were they, that serued onely for propagation, and were in all other respects as seruants or strangers. Of the first kinde was *Sara*, and of the second, *Hagar*, and *Keturah*.

The second difference of the children was this. One, that is, *Is- 40*
mael was borne after the flesh, that is, by the strength of nature, and according to the fleshly counsell of *Sara*, who did substitute *Hagar* into
into

Vxor minor-
familias.

Vxor maior.

into her owne roome. The other, namely *Isaac* was borne by the promise, that is, according to the order of nature yet not by the strength of nature, but by the vertue of the promise of God.

In the birth of *Ismael* *Saraes* desires was good, that the promise of God might bee accomplished: but the meanes was carnall, the substitution of her handmaid. This is the condition of the godly: they intend and desire the best things, but they faile in the maner of doing. The spirit stirres vp good motions, and the flesh corrupteth them. *Paul* saith, that *to will* was present with him, but he could not doe that which was good as bee ought. This must cause vs alwaies to humble our selues for our best works.

Againe, we are here taught not to make haste to accomplish our desires, but when God promiseth any thing, to wait his leasure, and in the meane season to liue in subiection. *Sara* with all her haste could not preuent Gods prouidence. Shee hath her desire in the birth of *Ismael*, but yet hee is borne according to the flesh, in bondage, and he is not the promised seed.

In the birth of *Isaac* wee see the vertue of the promise of God, when it is mixed with our faith: for then it makes things possible, that are otherwise impossible, *Matt. 17. 20*. If then we desire any good things at the hands of God, our duetic is in silence and patience to rest on the promises of God, and then our desire shall indeed be accomplished.

24 By the which things another thing is meant. For these mothers are the two Testaments, the one (which is *Agar*) of mount *Sinai*, which gendreth to bondage.

25 For *Agar*, or *Sinai*, is a mountaine in Arabia, and it answereth to *Ierusalem* which now is, and shee is in bondage with her children.

The application of the former here beginneth: and the sense of the words is. Another thing meant] the words are thus. These things are spoken by allegorie: that is, one thing is said, and an other thing is meant. Two mothers] *Agar* and *Sara*. Are two] they represent or signifie the two Testaments. *Est* is put for *significat*. Of the two Testaments I will speake afterward.

The one] the one Testament, which is the couenant of workes, [which is *Agar*] which Testament is figured by *Agar* [is of mount *Sinai*] came from mount *Sinai*, where the law was deliuered to the *Israelites*. And gendreth to bondage] that is, it makes all them bondmen that looke to be iustified and saued by the works of the law.

For

For *Agar* or *Sinai*] here the translatours are deceiued, supposing that mount *Sinai* had two names, *Agar* and *Sinai*: but this opinion of theirs hath no ground, and the words are thus to be read, *Agar is Sinai*. Here *Agar* signifies not so much the person of *Abrahams* handmaid, as that which is said in the former history of *Agar*. 5 For the words are, *וְאֶסְאָר*. And *Sinai* must be considered as a place where it pleased God to publish the law. And the words thus considered, haue this sense, *Agar is Sinai*, that is, *Agar* figures *Sinai*, two waies. First, in condition: for as *Agar* was a bondwoman, so *Sinai* in respect of the law, was a place of bondage: and in this respect also 10 it is called *Sinai* of Arabia, which was a desert out of the land of Canaan. Secondly, in effect: For as *Agar* bare *Ismael* a bondman to *Abraham*; so *Sinai* or the law, makes bondmen. And it answereth] *Sinai* answereth to *Ierusalem*, that is, as *Agar* figures *Sinai*; so *Agar* figures *Ierusalem*: and by this meanes, *Sinai* and *Ierusalem* are 15 alike, and stand both in one order. Now *Agar* figures *Ierusalem* two waies, in condition, and effect. In condition: for as *Agar* was a bondwoman, so *Ierusalem*, or the nation of the Iewes refusing Christ, and looking to be saued by the law, are in Spirituall bondage. In effect: for as *Agar* brings forth *Ismael* a bondman; so 20 *Ierusalem* by teaching the law, makes bondmen. Therefore *Paul* saith in the last place, of *Ierusalem*, *And shee is in bondage with her children*.

The vse. *These things are said by allegory*.] Here the Papists make a double sense of Scripture, one *literall*, the other *spirituall*. *Literall* is 25 twofold. *Proper*, when the words are taken in their proper signification. *Figurative*, when the holy Ghost signifies his meaning in borrowed tearmes.

Spirituall senses they make three. One *allegoricall*, when things in the old Testament are applied to signifie things in the 30 new Testament. The second, is *Tropologicall*; when scripture signifies something touching maners, The third, is *Anagogicall*, when things are in Scripture applied to signifie the estate of euerlasting life. Thus *Ierusalem* properly is a citie: by allegorie, the Church of the new Testament: in a tropologicall sense, a state well ordered: in an a- 35 nagogicall sense, the estate of eternall life. These senses they vse to applie to most places of the Scripture, specially to the historie. But I say to the contrary, that there is but one full and intire sense of euery place of Scripture, and that is also the *literall* sense, sometimes expressed in proper, and sometimes in borrowed or figurative 40 speeches. To make many senses of scripture, is to ouerturne al sense, and to make nothing certain. As for the three spirituall senses (so called)

called) they are not senses, but applications or vses of scripture. It may be said, that the historie of *Abrahams* familie here propounded, hath beside his proper and literall sense, a spiritual or mytheall sense. I answer, they are not two senses, but two parts of one full and
 5 intire sense. For not onely the bare historie, but also that which is thereby signified, is the full sense of the Holy Ghost.

Againe, here we see the Scripture is not only penned in the proper tearmes, but also in sundry diuine figures and allegories. The song of *Salomon* is an Allegory borrowed from the fellowship of
 10 man and wife, to signifie the Communion betweene Christ and his Church: & so is the 45. psalme. The booke of *Daniel*, and the Reuelation, is an allegoricall historie. The Parables of the old and new Testaments, are figures or allegories. When *Dauid* saith, *Psal.* 45. 4. *Ride on upon the word of truth, meekenes, and iustice*, he describes a Prin-
 15 ces charriot by allegory. The Guide is the word, the horses that draw it, are three, Truth, meekenes, iustice. And thus the throne of God is described by like allegorie. *Psal.* 89. v. 14. the foundation of the throne, are righteousness, and equity: the maine bearersto goe before the throne, are mercy and truth.

20 It may be demanded, when doth the Scripture speake properly, and when by figure? *Answer.* If the proper signification of the words be against common reason, or against the analogie of faith, or against good manners, they are not then to bee taken properly, but by figure. The words of Christ. *Ioh.* 15. 1. *I am the true vine,*
 25 *and my Father is an husbandman*; If they be taken properly, they are absurd in common reason: therefore the wordes are figurative, and the sense is this: *I am as the true vine, and my Father as an husbandman.* The words of Christ, *Take, eate, this is my body*, *1. Cor.* 11. v. 24. taken properly, are against the articles of faith, *He ascended into hea-*
 30 *uen, and sits at the right hand of God.* And they are against the sixth commandement, *Thou shalt not kill.* And therefore they must bee expounded by figure thus: *This bread is a signe of my body.* The like is to be said of other places: they must be taken properly, if it be possible: if not, by figure.

35 Here then they are to bee blamed, that make the vse of Rhetoricke in the Bible, to be a meere foppery. For to this purpose there is a booke in English heretofore published. As also they of the Family of loue are iustly to bee condemned, who in another extremity, turne all the Bible to an Allegorie, yea, euen that which is said
 40 of *Adam*, and of Christ.

They are two Testaments] they are, that is, they signifie: and so *Agar* is *Sinai a mountaine in Arabia*, that is, signifies *Sinai*. Thus *the rocke in*
 the

the wilde nesse is Christ, 1. Cor. 10. 4. that is, figures Christ. Like to this is the Sacramentall phrased, *This is my body*, that is to say, *this bread signifies my body*. Great is the madnesse of men that hence gather Transubstantiation, or the reall conuerſion of bread into the body of Christ. They might as well gather hence the conuerſion of Agar 5 into mount Sinai.

The two Testaments are the Couenant of workes, and the Couenant of grace, one promiſing life eternall to him that doth all things contained in the law: the other to him that turnes and belieues in Christ. And it muſt be obſerued, that *Paul* ſaith, *they are two*, that is, two in ſubſtance, or kind. And they are two, ſundry 10 waies. The law, or couenant of workes, propounds the bare iuſtice of God, without mercy: the couenant of grace, or the Goſpel, reueales both the iuſtice & mercy of God, or the iuſtice of God giuing place to his mercy. Secodly, the law requires of vs inward & perfect 15 righteouſneſſe, both for nature and action: the Goſpel propounds vnto vs an imputed iuſtice, reſient in the perſon of the Mediatour. Thirdly, the law promiſeth life vpon condition of workes: the Goſpel promiſeth remiſſion of finnes and life euerlaſting vpon condition that we reſt our ſelues on Christ by faith. Fourthly, the law was 20 written in tables of ſtone, the Goſpel in the fleſhy tables of our hearts. *Ier.* 31. 33. *2. Cor.* 3. 3. Fifthly, the law was in nature by creation: the Goſpel is aboue nature, and was reuealed after the fall. Sixtly, the law hath *Mofes* for a Mediatour, *Dent.* 5. 27. but Christ is the Mediatour of the new Teſtament. *Heb.* 8. 6. Laſtly, the law was dedicated by the blood of beaſts, *Exod.* 24. 5. and the new 25 Teſtament by the blood of Christ. *Heb.* 9. 12.

Here then falls to the ground a maine pillar in Popiſh religion, which is, that the law of *Mofes*, and the Goſpel, are all one law for ſubſtance: and that the difference lies in this, that the law of *Mofes* 30 is darke and imperfect, and the Goſpel or the law of Christ more perfect: becauſe he hath (as they ſay) added counſells to precepts. Againe, the law (they ſay) without the Spirit, is the law properly, and with the Spirit, it is the Goſpel. But all this is falſe which they teach. For the two Teſtaments the law and the Goſpel, are two in 35 nature, ſubſtance, or kinde: and the difference lies not in the preſence or abſence of the Spirit.

And whereas the Papiſts make two iuſtifications, the firſt meere-ly by grace, the ſecond by workes: beſides the two Teſtaments, they muſt eſtabliſh a third Teſtament compounded of both, and it 40 muſt be partly legall, and partly Euangelicall; otherwiſe the two-fold iuſtification cannot ſtand. For the law propounds onely one way

way of iustification, and the Gospel a second. The doctrine therefore that propounds both, is compounded of both.

God did not approve the polygamy of *Abraham*, yet doth he use it to signify the greatest mystery of our religion. Here we see a great point of the divine providence of God, who ordereth and useth well the things which he doth not approve. This is the foundation of our patience, and a meanes of true comfort. *Ioseph* thus comforts himselfe and his brethren, that God ordered and disposed their bad enterprise, to his and their good.

10 *Gen. 45. 6. 7.*

Here againe *Paul* sets downe two properties of the Testament of workes, or of the law. The first is, that it came from mount *Sinai*. And here lies the difference betweene the law and the Gospel: the law is from *Sinai*, the Gospel from *Sion* or *Ierusalem*. For there it was first to be preached, and thence conveyed to all nations. *Mich.* 4. 1. *Ezech.* 47. 1.

The second propertie of the law is, that it gendreth to bondage: because it maketh them bondmen, that looke to be saved and iustified thereby. And this it doth, by revealing sinne and the punishment thereof, which is everlasting death; and by convincing all men of their sinnes, and of their deserved condemnation. In this respect, it is called the ministerie of death, *2. Cor.* 3. 6 and *Paul* saith, that after he knew his sinnes by the law, he died, and the law was the meanes of death vnto him, *Rom.* 7. 10. Here is another difference betweene the law and the Gospel. The law genders to bondage: the Gospel genders to life. For it is an instrument of the Spirit for the beginning and confirming of our regeneration and salvation: and so is not the law, which is no cause, but onely an occasion of the grace of God in vs.

30 Whereas *Ierusalem* that now is, is said to be in bondage, as *Sinai* and *Hagar*: It is to be obserued, that there is no Church in the world, nor people, which is not subiect to apostasie. For God had made great and large promises to *Ierusalem*, *Psalms.* 122. and 132. and yet for all this, *Ierusalem* by refusing *Christ*; and by establishing the iustice of the law, is come into bondage, and depriveth her selfe of the inheritance of eternall life. Therefore it is a falshood which the *Papists* teach, that the infallible assistance of the Spirit is tyed to the Chaire and Consistorie of the Pope, so as hee, and consequently the church of *Rome*, cannot erre. Here againe, we see what may be the future condition of *England*. For it may be said of it hereafter, *England* that now is, is not that which it hath bene, namely, a maintainer of the Gospell of *Christ*. Therefore we must not

not be high minded but feare, and now take heed of the first beginning of apostasie. The holy Ghost, *Hebr. 3. 12. 13.* set downe the degrees thereof, and they are five in number. The first is, *the deceit of sinne*: the second is, *the hardening of the heart*, after men are deceived by sinne: the third is, *an euill heart*, which growes vpon hard-
 nesse of heart: the fourth is, *vnbeleefe*, whereby the word of God is called in question, and the truth thereof: and after vnbeleefe fol-
 lowes *a departure from God and Christ*. That this may not bee, wee must carefully auoid all the deceits of sinne, as namely, couetous-
 nesse, ambition, lust, &c.

Againe, as *Hagar* figures the law, so doeth *Ishmael* all iusticiaries, that looke to be saued by the law. Here then we see the condition of the world, the greatest part whereof are *Ishmaelites*. For the Turke, and the Iew, looke at this day to bee saued by their works. The Papist ascribes his conuersion not wholly to grace, but partly
 to grace, and partly to nature, or the strength of mans will helped
 by grace. And thus are they borne after the flesh as *Ishmael* was. And our common people, though in shew they professe reformed religion, yet indeed a great part of them are *Ishmaelites*. For they
 looke to be saued by their good seruing of God, and by their good
 deeds: and they little thinke on Christ and his merits. And thus
 they deprive themselves of all title to eternal life. Therefore it stands
 them in hand to condemne nature and the strength therof, and to
 renounce their owne workes, and to rest onely on the promise of
 mercy for eternall saluation: thus shall they be the children of the
 promise, and heires of God.

Lastly, in that Ierusalem is in bondage like *Agar*, or mount Sinai, wee see how vaine are the pilgrimages to the holy land, and how needlesse were the warres made for the recouery thereof.

26 But Ierusalem which is aboue, is free: which is the mother of vs all.

Heere *Paul* shewes what is figured by *Sara*, namely, the new Ierusalem, which is the Catholike Church, *Hebr. 12. 22. 23. Reuel. 35*
21. 2. And it is heere so rearmed, because Ierusalem was a type thereof in sixe respects. First, God chote Ierusalem aboue all other places to dwell in, *Psf. 132. 13.* And the Catholike Church is the company of predestinate, chosen to be a particular people to God. Secondly, Ierusalem is a citie compact in it selfe, by reason of the
 bond of loue and order among the citizens, *Psf. 122. 3.* In like sort the members of the Catholike Church are linked together by the
 bond

bond of one spirit. Thirdly, in Ierusalem was the Sanctuarie, a place of Gods presence, and of his worship, where also the promise of the seed of the woman was preserued till the comming of the Messias: and now the Catholike Church is in the roome of the
 5 Sanctuarie: In it must wee seeke the presence of God, and the word of life: therefore it is called *the pillar and ground of truth*, 1. *Timothie* 3. 15. Fourthly, in Ierusalem was the throne of *Dauid*, *Psalme* 122. 5. and in the Catholike Church is the Throne or Scepter of Christ, figured by the kingdome of *Dauid*, *Reuelation* 3. 7.
 10 Fifthly, the commendation of a citie (as Ierusalem) is the subiection and obedience of the citizens: now in the Catholike Church all beleeuers are citizens, *Ephesians* 2. 19. and they yeeld voluntarie obedience and subiection to Christ their King, *Psalme* 110. 2. *Isai.* 2. 5. Lastly, as in Ierusalem the names of the citizens were
 15 inrolled in a register: so the names of all the members of the Catholike Church, are inrolled in the booke of life, *Reuelation* 20. 15. *Hebr.* 12. 23.

Againe, the Catholike Church dwelling here belowe, is said to bee *aboue in heauen* for two causes. First, in respect of her beginning, which is from the election and grace of God, and from Christ
 20 the Mediatour, of whose flesh and bone we are that beleeue, *Ephes.* 5. 30. The iustice wherby beare iustified, is in Christ: our holinesse and life, flowes from the holinesse and life of Christ, as from a root. Secondly, the Church is said to *bee aboue*, because it dwels by faith
 25 in heauen with Christ: for the propertie of faith is to make vs present after a sort, when we are absent, *Heb.* 11. 2.

The vse. This being so, we are admonished to liue in this world as pilgrimes and strangers, 1. *Pet.* 2. 11. and therefore we must not set
 30 our loue vpon any earthly thing, but our minds must be vpon the countrey to which we are traueilling. And whatsoeuer is an hindrance to vs in our iourney: we must cast it from vs, that we may go lightly: and if we haue any wrongs done vs either in goods or good
 name, wee must the rather be content: because wee are out of our countrey in a strange place: and hereupon wee must take occasion
 35 to make haste to our iourneys end, to our own citie, and last abode. Thus did the Patriarches, *Heb.* 11. 13, 15.

Secondly, wee must carrie our selues as Burgesles of heauen, *Phil.* 3. 20. And this we shall doe, by minding, seeking, affecting of heavenly things, by *speaking the language of Canaan*, which is, to
 40 inuocate and praise the name of God. Lastly, by leading a spiritual life, that may beseme the citizens of heauen. Many faile in this point, when they come to the Lords table, they professe themselves

selues to bee citizens of the citie of God, but in their common dealings in the world, they play the starkerebels against God, and his word, and liue according to the lusts of their blinde and vnrepentant hearts.

Thirdly, when *Paul* saith, that *Ierusalem which is aboue is free, &c.* he shewes that the Catholike Church is one in number, and no more, *(Ant. 6. 8. My doue is alone, and the onely daughter of her mother, John 10. 16. One sheepefold. There be many members, but one bodie, 1. Cor. 12. 12.)*

Fourthly, hence we gather, that the Catholike Church is inuisible. For the company of them that dwell in heauen by their faith cannot be discerned by the eye. *John* saw the heauenly *Ierusalem* descending from heauen, yet not with the bodily eye, but *in spirit*, *Reuelation 21. 10.* The things which make the Catholike Church to bee the Church, namely, election, vocation, iustification, glorification, are inuisible. The Papist therefore erreth, when he teacheth, that the Catholike Church is a visible company vnder one Pastour, namely the Pope. And the places which they bring to prooue the vilibilitie of the vniuersall Church, concerne either particular Churches, or the Churches which were in the dayes of the Apostles, or againe, they speake of the inward glory, and beautie of the Church.

Free that is, redeemed from the bondage of death and sinne: and so from the curse of the law. Of this freedome I will speake more afterward.

The mother of vs all shee is called *a mother*, because the word of God is committed to the keeping of the Church, which word is seed, *1. Pet. 1. 23.* and milke, *1. Cor. 3. 2.* and strong meat, *Heb. 5. 14.* And the Church as a mother, which by the ministry of the said word, brings forth children to God, and after they are born, and brought forth, shee feeds them with milke out of her owne breasts, which are the Scriptures of the old and new Testament.

Here a great question is to be propounded, namely, where wee shall find this our mother? For it is the dutie of all children to haue recourse vnto their mother, and to liue vnder her wing. The aduocates of the Popish Church, Priests and Iesuits, say, we must be reconciled to the Church and See of Rome, if we would bee of the Catholike Church. To this purpose they vse many motives, I will here propound seuen of them: because heretofore they haue been scattered abroad among vs.

The first motive. The Church of Rome hath meanes of sure and certaine Interpretation, Tradition, Councels, Fathers: wee haue nothing

nothing but the private interpretation of *Luther, Melancthon, Calvin, &c.* *Answer.* Scripture is both the glosse and the text. And the principall meanes of the interpretation of Scripture, is Scripture it selfe. And it is a means, when places of Scripture are expounded
 5 by the analogie of faith, by the words, scope, and circumstances of the place. And the interpretation which is futable to all these, is sure, certaine, and publike: for it is the interpretation of God. Contrariwise, the interpretation, which is not agreeable to these, though it bee from Church, Fathers, and Councils, is vn-
 10 certaine, and it is private interpretations. Now this kind of interpretation we allow: and therefore it is false, that we haue only private interpretations: and that all the interpretations of the church of Rome are publike. Secondly, I answer, that we are able to iustifie our interpretation of Scripture for the maine points of religion, by
 15 the consent of Fathers, and Councils, as wel as they of the Church of Rome.

The second motive. Wee haue no diuine and infallible authoritie to rest on in matter of religion: but they of the Church of Rome haue. *Answer.* In the Canonickall Scriptures of the Prophets and
 20 Apostles, there is diuine and infallible authoritie: for they are now in the new Testament, in stead of the liuely voyce of God. And this authoritie wee in our Church acknowledge. Secondly, I answer, that the Church hath no diuine and infallible authoritie distinct from the authoritie of Scriptures (as the Papists teach) but
 25 onely a Ministerie, which is, to speake in the name of God, according to the written word.

The third motive. Wee haue no limitations of opinion, and affection, but they of the Church of Rome haue. I answer first: we suffer our selues to bee limited for opinion, by the analogie of faith,
 30 and by the written word, and so doth not the Papist, which addes tradition to the Scripture. And for affection wee suffer our selues to be limited by the doctrine of repentance, and new obedience. Secondly, I answer, that the Church of Rome vseth false meanes of limitation. For it teacheth, that for opinion, we must captivate our
 35 senses to the determination of the Church, by beleeuing as the Church beleeueth, though it be not knowne what the Church beleeueth. And it limits affection, by auricular confession, and by canonickall satisfactions, meere inuentions of men.

The 4. motive. The Romane religion drawes the multitude. *Ans.*
 40 It draws them indeed, because it is a natual religion: but it doth not turn them from darknes to light, from death to life. Secondly, I answer, that Antichrist in his comming shal draw the multitude, 2. *Thes.* 2. 9

The first motive. There was neuer but two alterations of religion. One, in the dayes of *Elias*; the other, in the dayes of *Iohn the Baptist*. *Answer.* I will shew a third. *Paul* saith, that before the end there shall be a departure, 2. *Thess.* 2. and this departure is generall in all nations, *Reuel.* 13. 16. and after a thousand yeares there shall 5 be the first resurrection, *Reuel.* 20. 5. and this resurrection is the reuiuing and the restoring of the Gospell, after long ignorance and superstition.

The sixth motive. The Church of Rome hath a Iudge to ende controuerſies: we haue none. *Answer.* Christ is our Iudge: and 10 the Scripture is the voice of this Iudge, determining all things pertaining to saluation, fully, and plainly, to the contentation of any conscience.

The seventh motive. The Romane religion is sutable to ancient tradition. *Answer.* It is contrary. For it abolisheth the second com- 15 mandement touching Images, and the tenth, touching lust. And it ouerturneth sundry articles of faith. For it abolisheth one of the natures of Christ by the reall presence, and his three offices, by ioyn- ing partners and associates with him.

To these seuen, I adde three other. *The eighth motive* then is this: 20 Our Ministers (say they) tooke vnto themselves new callings: and consequently, that we are but Schismatikes. *Answer.* The offices of the first restorers of the Gospell were ordinary: and their vocation to the said offices was ordinary: for they were all either Priests, or Schoole-doctors. It may be said, that they departed from their cal- 25 lings. I answer, they departed only from the common abuse of their callings, which they restored to their right vse.

The ninth motive. The Church of Rome hath true baptisme, and therefore it is a true Church. *Ans.* Baptisme in the Papacy pertaines not to it, but to another hidden church in the midst of the Papacy: 30 as the light in the lanthorne, pertains not to it, but to the passenger. Secondly, though the church of Rome hold the outward baptisme, yet doth it ouerturne the inward, which stands in the iustification of a sinner, by imputation of the obedience of Christ. Thirdly, bapt- 35 tisme seuered from the preaching of the Gospell, is no marke of a Church. Circumcision was vsed in Samaria, and yet they were no people of God, *Hosea* 10.

The tenth motive. The Church of Rome hath antiquitie and succession from the Apostles. *Answer.* They are no marks of the church, vnlesse they bee ioyned with Propheticall and Apostolicall do- 40 ctine. The kingdome of darkenes hath also antiquitie, succession, vniuersalitie, and vnitie.

Now

Now then we are to hold the church of Rome as a stepmother, nay, as a professed harlot: shee is no mother of ours. For the Lord saith, *Come out of her my people, Reuel. 18.* Let vs therefore come to the true answer.

5 The Catholike Church our Mother, is to bee sought for, and to be found in the true visible Churches, the certaine markes whereof are three. The preaching of the word of God, out of the writings of the Prophets and Apostles, with obedience, *Ioh. 10. 28. Eph. 2. 20* True inuocation of God the Father, in the only name of Christ by
10 the assistance of the Spirit, *Act. 9. 14. 1. Cor. 1. 2.* The right vse of the Sacraments, Baptisme, and the Lords Supper, *Matt. 28. 18.* And by these shall wee finde the true Church of God in England, Ireland, Scotland, Germany, France, &c.

Againe, in that the Church is called our Mother, the Papist gathereth, that her commandements must bee obeyed, *Pron. 1. 8.* and therefore in their Catechismes, beside the commandements of God, they propound the commandements of the Church. But I answer, that the precepts of the father and the mother must bee one: and then the mother must be obeyed.

20 The Church is called *the mother of vs all.* that is, of all true beleeuers. Hence it followes, that wicked men are not members of the Catholike Church, (as Popish doctors erroneously teach) for then the Church shall bee a mother, not onely to the children of God, but also to the children of the diuell.

25 Lastly, in that the Church is our mother, we are taught that wee must despise our first birth, and seeke to be borne againe vnto God, and suck the brest of our mother, feeding on the milke of the word, *Psal. 45. 1. 1. Pet. 2. 2.* Thus to be borne a member of the new Ierusalem, is a great priuiledge, *Psal. 87. 5. Reuel. 3. 12.*

30 27 For it is written, *Reioyce thou barren that bearest no children, breake forth and crie, thou that trauestlest not: for the desolate hath many more children, then shee which hath an husband.*

35 These words are the testimony of the Prophet *Isa. c. 54. 1.* and they are brought to proue that which *Paul* said in the former verse, that *the Catholike Church is the mother of vs all*, that is, not onely of the Iewes, but of all beleeuing Gentiles.

40 In the words, I consider the preface to the Testimonie, and the Testimonie it selfe. The Preface, *It is written:* where two points are to bee considered. The first is, who saith, *It is written?* Answer.

The Apostle *Paul*, whose authoritie was diuine, and infallible, because he was led into all trueth by the Spirit of God, so as he could not erre in deliuering doctrine to the Church. And yet for all this hee followes the rule of the written word. And his manner was so to doe, *Actes 26.22*. This shewes the shamelesse impudencie of the Church of Rome, which takes to it selfe an absolute power of iudgement in all matters, without, and beside the Scripture, yea, a power to iudge of the Scripture it selfe, and of the sense thereof, without the helpe of Scripture, vpon a supposed infallible assistance of the Spirit. 10

The second point is, In what question saith *Paul*, *It is written?* *Answer*. In a controuersie betweene him and the false Apostles, touching the iustification of a sinner. This shewes that the Scripture it selfe is the meanes to determine and decide controuersies. There was for this purpose in the old Testament, the liuely voyce of God vttered in the Oracle at the Merciesseate: but in the new Testament there is no such voyce of God, but the written word is in stead thereof, to the ende of the world. And therefore *Paul* saith, *It is written*. 15

In the Testimonie I consider three things, the condition of two Churches, the change of the condition, the ioy that is vpon the change. 20

The condition of the Church of the new Testament, in these words, *Barren that bearest no children: thou that trauellest not: the desolate*. 25

Barren] The Christian Church is so called, because by the vertue and strength of nature, it beares no children to God, no more then *Sara* did to *Abraham*, *Iohn 1.13*. *1. Cor. 3.7*. Secondly, it is so called in respect of the beginning thereof, when the Iewish Church was yet standing, till the spirit of God was powred forth vpon all flesh, after the ascension of Christ: and before this, the number of them which were conuerted to God, was very small: and therefore Christ himselfe complained, that he spent his strength in vaine, *Isa. 49. 1*. Thirdly, it is so called in respect of the latter times of the Church, in which Christ shall scarce finde faith vpon the earth, *Luke 18.8*. Further, that the Church is barren, it is declared by the signe, because she neither brings forth child, nor beares. 30 35

Desolate] that is, without husband in appearance, by reason of the crosse and affliction, and without children: because at the first the Christian Church was constrained to hide her selfe in the wilderness, *Reuel. 12.14*. It may bee demanded how the Catholike Church should be desolate? *Answer*. The estate of the Church is 40

twofold : inward, or outward. The inward estate stands in the true knowledge of God in Christ, in comfort touching remission of sinnes, and life euerlasting, in the hearing of our praiers, in protection and deliuerance from all spirituall enemies, in the gifts of the Spirit, faith, hope, loue, &c. In respect of this estate, the Church
 5 is all glorious within, and neuer desolate. *Psal. 45. 13.* The outward estate of the Catholike Church, stands in visible assemblies, in the publike Ministry of the word, and Sacraments, in a gouernement according to the word of God. In respect of this second estate,
 10 the Church may be in desolation. This was the condition of the Church in paradise vpon the fall of our first parents, of the Israelites at Mount *Horeb*, when they worshipped the golden calfe, and in the daies of *Elias*, *Rom. 11. 3.* and afterward, *2. Chron. 15. 3.* When Christ suffered, the Shepherd was smitten, and the sheepe were
 15 scattered. After Christs ascension, all the earth worshipped the beast, *Reuel. 13. 12.*

Hence it followes, that the Catholike Church is not a visible estate or company of men vnder one visible head: because in respect of her outward estate she may be for a time in desolation. And as
 20 this is the estate of the Church, so is it also of the members thereof. *They shall bee hated of all men, Luke 21. 17.* *Mens shall thinke they doe God good service, when they kill them, Iohn 16. 2.* And Christ himselfe was a man without forme or beautie, *Isai. 53. 2.*

Having an husband] in these words the condition of the Iewish
 25 Church is set foorth, that shee is married or espoused to God, who is her husband, *Ezech. 16. 8, 9.* *Osea 2. 19.* The like may be said of any other Church, and namely of the Church of England. The vse.

This must teach vs, to dedicate our bodies and soules to God
 30 and Christ, and to giue the maine affections of our hearts vnto him, as our loue, and our ioy, &c.

Secondly, wee must adorne and trimme our selues with grace, that we may please our husband, *Psal. 45. 12.*

Thirdly, we must be the glory of Christ, as the wife is to her husband, *1. Cor. 11. 7.* and that is by subiecting our selues to Christ, and
 35 his lawes.

Againe, if we betroath our selues to Christ indeed, we may assure our selues that Christ is our Christ, and that hee hath giuen himselfe vnto vs: and consequently, that he wil sanctifie vs, *Ezech. 16. 9.* protect vs as an husband doeth his wife, *Genesis 20. 16.* and indow vs with all things needfull for this life, and the life to come, *Ezech. 16. 10, 11.*

The second point is the change of the Church of the newe Testament, because she shall cease to be barren, and bring forth many children.. This is the promise of God: and hereupon *Paul* concludes, that the Church is a Mother of all beleeuers, both Jewes and Gentiles. Obserue, that the promise of God is of infinite vertue in his time and place. In the beginning God said; *Let there be this or that, and it was so.* Of like vertue is Gods promise, if we can waite his leisure. God promised that after 430. yeares, the Israelites should be deliuered out of Egypt; presently when the time was expired, nothing could hinder the promise. Reade *Exod. 12. 41.* Therefore our duty is, to rest on Gods promises in all times, both in life and death.

The third point is the ioy vpon the change. *Reioyce.* Here are two things to be considered. The first, who must reioyce? *Ans.* The Church. Gods kingdome is the place of ioy. *Rom. 14. 17.* Reioying belongs to the people of God, *Psal 68. 3. & 106. 5.* The musicke of the Temple was typicall, and figured the ioy of the Catholike Church, where is the assurance of remission of sinnes, and life eternall.

The second point is, in what must the Church reioyce? *Ans.* In the redemption of Christ and the fruit thereof, the conversion of sinners to God. For the prophet had shewed at large the passion and sufferings of Christ: *Isa. 53.* and hereupon he saith, *Reioyce thou barren.* The Israelites were commanded to feast and to be merry before the Lord, *Leuit. 23. 40. 1. Chron. 29. 32.* that is, before the Lords Arke, which was the pledge of his presence. Now this Arke was a figure of Christ: and the myrth before the Arke, signified, that the foundation of all our ioy, lies in our Reconciliation with God in Christ. The angels in heauen greatly reioyce at the conuersion of a sinner: and at the returne of the prodigall sonne, the fat calfe is killed,

The vse. It is false that religion breeds Melancholy, and cuts off all mirth. It doeth not abolish mirth, but rectifie it: nay it brings men to true and perfect ioy.

Our first and principall ioy must be, that we are in Gods fauour, reconciled to God by Christ, *Luk. 10. 20* In *Dauid*, the head of his ioy, was the good estate of the Church, *Psal. 137. 6.* And all other petty ioyes must flow from this, and be sutable to it.

Breake forth this signifies, that the Church vpon earth is (as it were) pent in with present griefe. Our ioy in this life is mixed with sorrow. The paschall lambe was eaten with foure hearbes, to signifie, that we feele no sweetnesse in the blood of Christ, till we

we feele the smart of our sinnes. We here must reioyce in trembling, *Psal. 2. 11. Ioy is for them that are upright in heart, Psal. 97. 12.*

Crie in our earthly ioyes, we must be moderate and sparing, we must not eate too much hony lest we surfet. Yet in spiritual ioyes the measure is to reioyce without measure, if we be rauished with ioy in Christ, that we cry againe, it is the best of all.

28. Therefore brethren, we are after the manner of Isaac, children of the promise.

Here Paul shewes, that as *Sara* figured the catholike Church: so *Isaac* was a figure of all true beleeuers the children of God.

Therefore [or thus, And we brethren.

15 We not only the Iewes, but also beleeuing Gentiles.

Promise the promise made to *Abraham*, *I will be thy God and the God of thy seed*: or the promise made to the Church, that beeing barren shee shall beare many children.

Children of promise beleeuers are so called: not because they beleeue the promise (though that be a truth) but because they are made children of God, by the vertue of Gods promise. For thus was *Isaac* the child of promise, in that he was borne to *Abraham*, not by the strength of nature, but by Gods promise. And *Paul* opposeth the children of the promise to the children of the flesh, which were borne by naturall strength, *Rom. 9. 8.*

Hence it followes, that the meere grace of God, is the cause of our election and adoption, & not any thing in vs. For the promise of God makes vs Gods children: and the promise is of the meere grace of God: & therefore we are Gods children by the meere grace of God. For the cause of the cause, is the cause of the thing caused. Therefore *Paul* saith, that the *Ephesians* were predestinate to adoption, *Eph. 1. 5.* And he saith, the 7000 that neuer bowed knee to *Baal*, were reserved by the election of grace, *Rom. 11. 5.* And it is a false Position, to teach, that Election and adoption, are according to Gods foreknowledge of our faith and obedience. For thus shall we elect our selues, and be children not of Gods promise, but of our owne freewill and faith. Moreouer God foresees our future faith and obedience, because he first decreed to give the grace of faith vnto vs: because the foreknowledge of things which are to come to passe, depends vpon a precedent will in God.

Marke further, the children of God are called the children of the promise, and this promise is absolute and effectual. Here a que-

tion may be resolved: and that is, whether the child of God in his conuersion, haue a libertie and power to resist the inward calling of God? *Answer.* No. The absolute will of God cannot be resisted: nor the promise whereby men are made, the children of God, is the absolute will of God. Againe, with this promise is ioy-
 5
 ned the infinite power of God, which without all resistance brings that to passe which God hath promised. For hee makes men to doe that which he commands, *Ezech.* 36. 26. he gives the will and the deed, *Phil.* 2. 3. so as men effectually called, cannot but come,
 10
Iohn 6. 45.

It may bee said, that this is to abolish all freedome of will. *Answer.* It sufficeth to the libertie of the will, that it bee free from compulsion: for constraint takes away the libertie of the will, and not necessitie. Secondly, the determination of mans will by the will of God, is the libertie of the will, and not the bondage thereof: 15
 for this is perfect libertie, when mans will is conformable to the will of God.

29 *But as he which was borne according to the flesh, persecuted him that was borne after the spirit; so is it now.* 20

These words are an answer to an obiection, on this maner. We are hated of the Iewes: and therefore wee are not the children of promise. The answer is two-fold. One in this verse, thus, No mar-
 uell: this is the olde fashion: it was thus in *Abrahams* family. For 25
Ishmael (borne after the flesh) persecuted *Isaac* (borne after the spi-
 rit:) and so it is at this day.

Obserue, that there is a perpetuall enmitie and opposition betweene true belecuers and hypocrites. God put enmitie betweene the
 seed of the serpent, and the seed of the woman, *Genes.* 13. 15. The world 30
 hates them that are chosen out of the world, *Iohn* 15. 19. Carnall
 men cannot abide that their opinions & doings should be iudged,
 and condemned of others, *Iohn* 3. 20. And hence comes the oppo-
 sition that is betweene belecuers, and hypocrites, who cannot abide
 such as are not like themselves. 35

This hatred and opposition shewes it selfe in persecution: of
 which three things are to be considered.

The first is, who persecutes? *Answer.* Carnall *Ishmaelites*, such as
 are of the same religion and family with *Isaac*. Thus the Iewes per-
 secuted their own Prophets, & the *Theisaloniens* were persecuted 40
 of their owne countrymen. 1. *Thess.* 2. 14. Thus Priests and Iesuits,
 that haue bin heretofore borne, baptized, & brought vp among vs,
 250

are the causes of many seditions, conspiracies, and seek the subversion of Church and land.

The second is, who are persecuted? *Ans.* Spirituall men, the children of the promise. They suffer wrong, but they doe none. In the mount of the Lord there is no hurt done. *Isa.* 11. 9. they turne their speares and swords into mattocks and sithes. *Isa.* 2. 4. And they which doe no wrong, but are content to suffer wrong (and that for a good cause,) are in this respect blessed, *Matth.* 5. 10.

The third point is, is, touching the kind of persecution: and that was skorning or mocking. *Gen.* 21. 9. It may be demanded how mocking can be persecution? *Answer.* Mocking and derision, which riseth of the hatred and contempt of our brother, is a degreee of murder. He which saith *Raca* to his brother, is guilty of a Countell. *Matth.* 5. 22. Here *Raca*, signifieth all signes & gellures that expresse contempt, as *snuffing, railing, scolding, gurning* &c. *Cain* is rebuked of God, even for the calling downe of his countenance. *Genes.* 4. verse 6.

Againe, the mocking wherewith *Ismael* mocked *Isaac*, proceeded from a contempt and hatred of the grace of God in *Isaac*: which *Paul* notes when he saith; that he was persecuted which was borne after the spirit. This hatred of Gods grace in men, is the beginning of all persecution, and the deciding of the grace of God, is as much as the spoiling of our goods, & the seeking of our lives. Thus *Cain* hated his brother, by reason of the grace of God: because his deeds were good. *1. Ioh.* 3. 12. A great part of the offerings of Christ stood in this, that he was mocked for his confidence in God. *Psal.* 22. 8, *Matth.* 27. 43. The children of *Bethel* mocked *Eliens*: first, for his person, calling him *hobdanie*: Secondly, for the favour of God shewed vpon him in his matter, in saying, *Ascend, bald pate*: that is, * ascend not to *Bethel*, but ascend to heauen as *Elias* did. And this prophane scorning he cursed in the name of God. *2. King.* 2. 23. The like skorning is vied among vs at this day. For the practise of that religion which stands by the law of God, and the good lawes of this land, is nicknamed with tearmes of *pretisenesse*, and *parstie*. A thing much to be lamented: for this bewraies that there is a great want of the grace of God among vs. Therfore take heede of it.

* Iustin. in quest.

30. But what saith the Scripture? Put out the bond-woman, and her sonne: for the sonne of the bondwoman shal not be heire with the sonne of the freewoman.

The second answer to the former obiection, is in these wordes, that

that they which hate the children of promise, shall at length be cast out of the house of God.

Obiect. I. These words, *cast out the bondwoman*, are the words of Sara to Abraham: therefore they are not the words of Scripture.

Answer. The words were uttered by Sara, but they were afterward approoved by God, *Genesis 21. 12.* and thus they are the voice of Scripture.

Obiect. II. Sara is commended for her subiection to Abraham, *1. Pet. 3. 6.* yet here she speaks imperiously, *Cast out the bondwoman.*

Answer. She speaks this not as a priuate woman, but as the voice and mouth of God, and that (no doubt) by instinct from God. And therefore the words shee vttereth, are to be esteemed as the commandement of God. This her case is extraordinarie, and not to be followed.

The vse. I. All carnall hypocrites, mockers of the grace of God, shall be cast forth of Gods family, though for a time they beare a sway therein. This is the sentence of God. Let vs therefore repent of our mocking, and hereafter become louers of the grace of God, as Christ was, *Marke 10. 21.*

II. Consolation: the persecution of the people of God shal not be perpetual. For the persecuting bondwoman and her sonne, must be cast out. *The rod of the wicked shall not rest upon the lot of the righteous; Psal. 125. 3.* This is our comfort.

III. All iusticiary people, and persons that looke to bee saued and iustified before God by the law, and the workes of the law, either in whole, or in part, are cast out of the Church of God, and haue no part in the kingdome of heauen. The casting out of *Agar* and *Ishmael*, is a figure of the reiection of all such. Behold here the voice of God casting downe from heauen the greatest part of the earth, the Turke, the Iew, the obstinate Papist, with the stepmother, the Romish Church.

31 *Then brethren, wee are not children of the seruant, but of the free woman.*

The conclusion of the whole argument following directly from the 27. verse. If we be children of the promise, then are we children of the free woman, and not of the bondwoman, and consequently wee are iustified and saued without the workes of the law, by the meere grace of God, causing vs by faith to rest on the promise of God, whose substance and foundation is Christ.

C H A P. V.

1 Stand fast therefore in the libertie wherewith Christ hath
5 made vs free, & be not intangled again with the yoke of bondage.



These words are a repetition of the principall conclusion of the whole Epistle. Which was on this manner: I *Paul* am called to teach, and my doctrine is true: therefore yee did euill to depart from it, and your dutie was to haue stood vnto it.

Further, they are collected and inferred vpon the conclusion of the last argument vsed
15 in the last chapter, thus: Yee are children of the free woman: and therefore ye are free: and therefore ye should hold fast your libertie.

In the words, two maine points of doctrine are propounded. The first is, that by nature wee are all intangled with the yoke of bondage. For the berter conceiuing of this, I will handle three
20 points; the nature of this bondage, the signe of it, and the vse.

Touching the nature of it. Our spirituall bondage stands in three things. The first, is bondage vnder sinne, which *Paul* teacheth when he saith, *I am carnall sold vnder sinne, Romanes 7. 13.* Heere remember, that by sinne, is meant originall sinne, which hath two
25 parts: Guiltinesse in the first offence of *Adam*, which is imputed to all mankind; and the disposition of all the powers of the soule to all manner of euill whatsoeuer. And this rebellious disposition is like a leprosie infecting the whole man: and it reignes like a tyrant over the soule of man, by tempting, intising, and drawing
30 him from one actuall sinne to another, so as hee can doe nothing but sinne, *James 1. 14.*

The second thing, is obligation or subiection to all punishment both temporall and eternall. And it hath three parts. The first is, Bondage vnder Satan, who keepes vnrepentant sinners in his snare
35 according to his owne will, *2. Tim. 2. 26.* hee rules in their hearts like a God, *2. Cor. 4. 4.* and hath power to blind them, and to harden their hearts, till he haue brought them to eternall death, *Heb. 2. 14.* The second is, bondage vnder an euil conscience, which sits in the hearts of offendours as an accuser and a terrible Iudge, and lies like a
40 wilde beast at a mans doore, ready euer and anon to plucke out his throat, *Gen. 4. 7.* The third is, bondage vnder the wrath of God, and the feare of eternall death, *Heb. 2. 15.*

The

The third part of this bondage, is the obligation of the ceremonial law. It pertaines not to all mankind, but onely concernes the Iewes, to whom it was a yoke of bondage, *Acts 15.*

The signe of this bondage, whereby it may bee discerned, is to keepe a course or practise in sinning, *Iohn 8. 34. Hee that commits sinne, is a seruant of sinne:* or againe, a life led according to the custome and fashion of this world, in the lust of the flesh, or the lust of the eye, (which is couetousnesse,) or in the pride of life, *Ephes. 2. 2. 1. Iohn 2. 16.*

The vse. We must learne to see, feele, acknowledge, and bewaile this bondage in our selues. Deliuerance belongs onely to such captiues as know themselves to be captiues, *Luke 4. 18.* and labour vnder this bondage, *Matth. 11. 28.* Thus did *Paul* when he saith, *I am sold vnder sinne:* and, *O miserable man, who shall deliuer me from this body of death?* To feele this bondage, is a step out of it: and not to feele it, is to be plunged into it.

Secondly, we must pray earnestly for deliuerance. The dumbe creatures ligh and trauel till they be deliuered from their bondage: much more then must we doe it, *Rom. 8. 22.*

Thirdly, we must learne to detest whatsoever is of our selues: because it wholly tends to bondage.

Lastly, we must be content with any affliction that God laies on vs, though it be lingring sicknesse, pouertie, imprisonment, banishment. For God might worthily lay on vs all shame and confusion: because we are by nature slaues of sinne and Satan.

The second maine doctrine is, that by grace there is a libertie pertaining to the people of God. Heere I consider foure things: First, what this libertie is. Secondly, the authour of it. Thirdly, the persons to whom it belongs. Fourthly, our duetie touching this libertie.

For the first: Christian libertie is called, *the good, or commoditie of Christians, Rom. 14. 16.*

It is a spirituall right or condition, lost by Adam, and restored by Christ. I say, *spirituall*, because it pertaines to the conscience. The vse indeed of our liberty is in outward things, as meat, drinke, apparell &c. but the liberty it selfe is in the conscience. And thus it differs from ciuill libertie, which stands in the moouing of the body, in the choise of bodily actions, and in the free vse of our goods.

Christian libertie hath two parts, a *Deliuerance from miserie*, and *Freedome in good things.*

Deliuerance hath foure parts. The first, is a deliuerance from the curse of the law for the breach thereof, *Rom. 8. 1. There is no condem-*

condemnation to them that are in Christ. And this comes to passe: because there is a translation made of the curse from our persons to the person of Christ. *Gal. 3. 13.*

5 The second deliuerance is from the obligation of the law, whereby it binds vs to bring perfect righteousness in our own persons for the attainment of euerlasting life, according to the renour thereof, *Doe this, and liue.* And this deliuerance is procured, because there is a translation made of the fulfilling of the law from our persons to the person of our Sauour Christ.

10 From these two deliuerances ariseth the Pacification of the conscience, partly for our Iustification, and partly for our conuersation.

Touching iustification: A sinner in his humiliation and conuersion hath by his doctrine a Liberty without respect to his own
15 workes, or to his owne fulfilling of the law, to rest on the meere mercy of God for the forgiveness of his sinnes, and the saluation of his soule, and to appeale from the throne of diuine iustice, to the throne of grace, & to oppose the merit of Christ against the wrath and iudgement of God. And this hath alwaies bin the helpe of the
20 godly in their distresse, *Reade 2. Chron. 33. 12. Ezra 9. Dan 9. Psal 32 31. 130. 143.* Consider the example of the Publican, and the Prodigall sonne, who condemnethemselues, and make their appeale to the court of mercy and grace.

Here some man may say, how shall I know that I am freed from
25 the rigour of the law, and from the curse thereof? *Ans.* Thou must first set thy selfe at the barre of Gods iudgements: and there must thou arraigne, accuse, and condemne thy selfe: this done, thou must vse thy liberty, and make thine appeale to Gods mercy and grace for pardon, by asking, seeking, knocking: and thus at length shalt
30 thou be resolved touching thy deliuerance.

Moreover, touching conuersation, our consciences are settled thus: In what we are freed from the Rigour of the law, God in mercy accepts the will and indeauour to belecue, repent, and obey, for
35 faith, repentance, and obedience He spares them that feare him, as a father spares his child when he indeauours to doe that which he can. *Mal. 3. 17.* The law requires perfect obedience at our hands: yet God of his mercy lookes more at the will to obey, then the perfection of obedience. This must be a stay to our mindes, when we see more corruption, then grace in our selues, and our obedience
40 tainted with many spots of disobedience.

The third Deliuerance, is from the obseruation of the Ceremoniall law of *Moses. Col. 2. 16.* And hence ariseth another deliuerance

rance from the bondage of humane Traditions, as Paul saith, *If ye be dead with Christ from the Elements of the world, why are ye burdened with traditions?* Col. 2. 20.

The fourth Deliuerance, is from vnder the tyrannie and dominion of sinne. *Romanes. 6. 14. Let not sinne haue dominion ouer you. For ye are not vnder the law, but vnder grace.* In the first conuersion of a sinner. Originall sinne receiues his deadly wound, and the dominion thereof is diminished according to the measure of grace receiued.

The second part of Christian liberty, is a *Freedom* in good things: and it is fourefold. The first, is a freedom in the voluntary seruice of God. *Luk. 1. 74. We are deliuered from our enemies, that we may serue God in righteousness and holinesse before him all the daies of our liues without feare.* Paul saith, that the law is not giuen to the righteous man, *1. Tim. 1. 9.* because he is a law to himselfe, and freely does good duties, as if there were no law to bind him, The cause of this freedom, is the Gift & donation of the free Spirit of God. Therefore David praies, *Stablish me with thy free spirit. Psal. 51.* And Paul saith, *Where the spirit is, there is libertie. 2. Cor. 3. 17.* And, *The spirit of life which is in Christ (is a Law to vs, and) frees vs from the power of sinne, and death. Rom. 8. 2.*

It may be obiected, that this freedom in the voluntary seruice of God, is bondage. For Christ saith, *Matth. 11. 29. Take my yoke vpon you.* And we are as streightly bound to the obedience of the law of God, as Adam was by creation, nay more streightly, by reason of our redemption by Christ. *Ans.* The more we are bound to obedience, the freer we are: because the seruice of God is not bondage, but perfect liberty.

The second freedom, is in the free vse of all the creatures of God. *Tit. 1. 15. To the pure, all things are pure. Rom. 14. 14.* And the reason is, because the dominion ouer the creatures, lost by Adam, is restored by Christ. *1. Cor. 3. 22.* And hence it is, that Paul calls the forbidding of marriage, and of meates, with obligation of conscience, a doctrine of diuells. *1. Tim. 4. 1.*

The third freedom, is a Liberty to come vnto God the Father in the name of Christ, and in praier to be heard. *Rom. 5. 2. Eph. 3. 12.*

Whereas according to our naturall condition, our sinnes are a wall of partition betweene vs and God, and cause vs to fly from the presence of God: and though we cry vnto God, and fill heaven and earth with our cries, so long as we are in our sins, we are not heard of him.

The fourth freedom, is a Liberty to enter into heauen in the

the day of our death: Christ by his blood hauing made a way,
Hebr. 10 19.

Thus we see what Christian libertie is. The vse followes. The
Anabaptills gather hence, that among Christians there must be no
5 magistrates; they must haue power to make lawes besides the lawes
of God: but this power they haue not, because Christians haue a
free vse of all the creatures of God by Christian libertie. *Ans.* We
must distinguish betweene the liberty it selfe, and the vse of it. And
the magistrates authoritie deales not with the libertie which is in
10 the conscience, but with the vse of it: and he doth neither diminish
nor abolish the vse of any of the creatures, but restraines the abuse,
and moderates the ouer common vse for the common good. Thus
Magistracie and Christian libertie may stand together: and the ra-
ther, because libertie is in the conscience, and the Magistrates au-
15 thoritie pertaines to the body.

Heere is further comfort for all the godly: for euen by Christi-
an libertie, their consciences are exempted from the power of all
creatures, men, and Angels, 1. Corinth. 7. 23. *Yee are bought with a*
price, bee not seruants of men, that is, let not your hearts and consci-
20 ences stand in subiection to the will of any man. Here then fall-
es to the ground the opinion of the Papistes, namely, that the lawes
and traditions of the Church bind conscience as truly and certain-
ly as the word of God. This doctrine is not of God, because it is
against Christian libertie.

25 *Obiect. I. Rom. 13. 5. Bee subiect to the higher powers for conscience.*
Answer. Conscience here is not in respect of the lawes of the Magi-
strate, but in respect of the law of God, that binds vs in conscience
to obey the law of the Magistrate.

Obiect. II. Heb. 13. 17. Obey them that haue the ouersight of you, and
30 *be subiect.* *Ans.* We must be subiect to them: because as Ministers
of God, they deliuer the word of God in the name of God vnto vs,
and that word binds conscience. Againe, the lawes which they
make touching order and comelinesse in the seruice of God, are to
be obeyed for the auoiding of scandall and contempt.

35 *Obiect. III.* A thing indifferent vpon the commandement of
the Magistrate, becomes necessary. *Answer.* It is true. But it
must be obserued, that necessitie is two fold, Externall, Internall.
And the law of the Magistrate makes a thing indifferent to be ne-
cessary onely in respect of externall necessitie, for the auoiding of
40 the contempt of authoritie, and for the auoiding of scandall. O-
therwise the thing in it selfe is not necessary, but remaines still in-
different, and may be vsed or not vsed, if contempt and scandall be
auoided.

auoided. The Apostles made a law that the Gentiles should abstaine from strangled and blood, & things offered to Idols, *Act. 15. 28.* yet *Paul* saith afterward to the *Corinthians*, *All things are lawfull,* *1. Cor. 10. 23.* and *whatsoeuer is sold in the shambles eate, and make no question for conscience sake, v. 25.* because their intent was not, that the law should simply binde, but onely in the case of offence: and therefore where there was no offence to be feared, they leaue all men to their liberty.

Againe, here is an other comfort to all that beleue in Christ, that nothing can hurt them, and that no euill can befall them, *Psalm. 91. v. 10.* nay all things shall in the end turne to their good, though in reason and sense, they seeme hurtfull. To beleue this one thing, is a ground of all true comfort.

The consideration of this benefit of Christian liberty, teacheth three duties. The first is, from our hearts, to imbrace, loue, and maintaine Christian religion: because it is the meanes of this liberty. The second is, carefully to search the scriptures: for they are as it were the Charter in which our liberties are contained. Thirdly, our Christian liberty puts vs in minde to become vnfaigned seruants of God in the duties of faith, repentance, new obedience. *Rom. 6. 22.* For this seruice is our liberty.

The second point is, touching the Author of this libertie, in these words, *wherewith Christ hath made vs free.* Christ then is the worker of this liberty. *Ioh. 8. 36.* he dissolues the works of the diuel. *1. Ioh. 3. 8.* he binds the strong man and casts him out of his hold. *Matth. 12. 29.*

He procures this liberty by two meanes, by his merit, and by the efficacy of his spirit. The merit of his death, procures deliuerance from death, and it purchaseth a right to life euermlasting. The efficacy of his spirit assures vs of our adoption, and withall abates by little and little the strength and power of sinne. The vse. Hence we learne the greatnes and grieuousnes of our spirituall bondage, because there was none that could deliuer vs from it, but Christ by his death and passion. Hence therefore we are to take occasion to acknowledge and bewaile this our most miserable condition in our selues.

Secondly, the price that was paid for the procurement of our liberty, namely, the pretious blood of the immaculate lambe of God, shewes that the liberty it selfe is a thing most pretious and excellent, and so to be esteemed.

Thirdly, for this liberty we are to giue all praise and thanks to God. Thus did *Paul* at the remembrance of it. *Rom. 7. 25.*

1. Cor.

1. *Cor.* 15. 57. And not to be thankfull, is an height of wickednesse.

The third point is, concerning the persons to whom this liberty belongs; and they are noted in these words, *Stand yee fast; hee hath made us free.* Whereby *Paul* signifies himselfe and the Galatians that beleeued in Christ. Beleeuers then are the persons to whom this libertie belongs, *John* 1. 12. 1. *Tim.* 4. 3. And true beleeuers are thus to be discerned. They vse the ordinary meanes of grace and saluation, the word, and Sacraments: in the vse of the meanes, they exercise themselues in the spiritual exercises of inuocation and repentance: and in these exercises they bewaile their vnbeleefe, and strue by all meanes to beleeue in Christ. As for them that conceiue a perswasion of Gods mercy without the meanes of saluation, and without the exercises of inuocation and repentance, they are not true beleeuers but hypocrites.

15 When *Paul* saith, *Christ hath made us free*, that is, mee *Paul*, and you the Galatians, hee teacheth, that euery beleeuer must by his faith apply vnto himselfe the benefit of Christian liberty. But to do this well, is a matter of great difficultie. The Papists in their writings report our doctrine to be this: that a man must conceiue a perswasion that hee is in the fauour of God the adopted child of God: and that vpon this perswasion hee hath the pardon of his sins, and the benefit of Christian liberty. But they abuse vs in this, as in many other things. For wee teach, that the application of Christ and his benefits, is to bee made by certaine degrees. The 25 first is, to vse the meanes of saluation, prayer, Sacraments: the second is, to consider and to grow to some feeling of our spirituall bondage: the third is, to will and desire to beleeue in Christ, and to testifie this desire by asking, seeking, knocking: the fourth is, a certaine perswasion, or a certainty conceived in mind of the mercy 30 of God by meanes of the former desire, according to the promise of God, *Aske, and it shall be giuen unto you.* The fifth is, an experience of the goodnesse of God after long vse of the meanes of saluation, and then vpon this experience followes the full perswasion of mercy and forgiveness.

35 The fourth poynt, concernes the office of beleeuers, and that is, to stand fast in their Christian libertie, and in the doctrine of the Gospell, which reueales this libertie. And by this wee in England are admonished to stand fast to the religion which is now by law established among vs, and not to reterne vnder the yoke of 40 Popish bondage. For the Popish religion is flat against Christian libertie, two wayes. For our libertie which we haue in Christ, frees vs from the law three wayes; in respect of *condemnation*, in respect

respect of *compulsion* to obedience, and in respect of *iustificacion*, (as *Paul* shewes at large in this Epistle:) and yet the Popish doctrine is, that we are to be iustificed by the workes of the law. Against Christian libertie: reesour consciences from the Traditions of men, *Colos.* 2. 20. and yet the Popish religion bindes vs in conscience to the Traditions of men: nay, it is nothing else but a heape of Traditions.

Here two things are to be considered, the manner of standing, and the time. The manner is signified in the very words. For to stand fast, is to hold and maintaine our libertie with courage and constancy: whatsoeuer comes of it, as the souldier keeps his standing, though it cost him his life. Wee are readie to defend the libertie of our countrey, euen with the hazard of our liues: much more then are we to defend Christian libertie with the losse of all that wee enioy: sinne must be resisted euen vnto blood, *Heb.* 12. 4. If men bee fearefull, they must pray to God for the spirit of boldnesse and courage: and if God vouchsafe not this gift when opportunitie is offered, they may withdraw themselves, and by flying, preserve their libertie.

The time of standing, is *the euill day*, that is, the day of triall, *Eph.* 6. 13. And then to stand fast, is a matter of great difficultie. And for this cause we are beforehand to prepare our selues by obseruing these rules following. First, wee must labour that religion be not only in mind and memory, but also be rooted in the affection of our hearts, so as wee loue it, reioyce in it, and esteeme it aboue all things. Secondly, we must not only be hearers of the word of God, but also doers of it in the exercises of faith, repentance, new obedience. Thirdly, we must ioyne with our religion, the soundnesse of good conscience: for if conscience faile, we cannot be sound in our religion. Lastly, we must pray to God with all manner of prayer and supplication for all things needfull, *Eph.* 6. 18.

2 Behold, I Paul say vnto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing.

These words, are a reason of the former conclusion: thus. If ye be circumcised, and go backe from your Christian profession, Christ shall profit you nothing: therefore stand fast.

In the words, I consider a sentence, and the prooffe of it. The sentence, *If ye bee circumcised, &c.* the prooffe, *I Paul say vnto you.* For the better vnderstanding of the sentence, Circumcision must here bee considered according to the circumstance of time, three wayes.

wayes. Before Christ it was a Sacrament, and a seale of the righteousness of faith, *Rom. 4. 11.* after the death of Christ, till the destruction of the Temple, it was a dead ceremony, yet sometime vsed as a thing indifferent. After the destruction of the Temple, when the
 5 Church of the new Testament was planted among the Gentiles it was a deadly ceremonie, and ceased to be indifferent: and in this last respect *Paul* saith, *If ye be circumcised, &c.* Again, circumcision must be considered according to the opinion which the false apostles had of it: now they put their confidence in it, and made it a
 10 meritorious cause of their saluation, and ioyned it with Christ. The words therefore carry this sense: If yee will be circumcised with this opinion, that circumcision shall bee vnto you a meritorious cause of your saluation, *Christ shall profit you nothing.* The vse. Hence it followes, that the doctrine of iustification by workes, is an error
 15 ouerturning the foundation of religion, which whosoever obstinately maintaineth, cannot be saved. It will be said, this is true of ceremoniall workes, but not of morall workes. *Answer.* Yea even of morall. For that which *Paul* saith here of circumcision, he speaks generally of the whole law, verse 4. *Ye are abolished from Christ, who-*
 20 *sooner are iustified by the law.* And circumcision must be considered as an obligation to the obedience of the whole law. Again, it may be said, this is true of the works of nature, but not of works of grace. *An.* Yea, even of workes of grace: for the Galatians were regenerate, and therefore looked not to be iustified, and saved by the works
 25 of nature, but by workes of grace.

Secondly, hence we gather, that to adde any thing to the passion as a meritorious cause of our iustification, and saluation, is to make Christ vnprofitable. For he must be a perfect Saviour, or no Saviour: he admits neither partner, nor deputie in the worke of our redemption. And the grace of God admits no mixture or composition with any thing that is of vs. Grace is no grace, vntill it be freely given euery way. Therefore the Popish religion is a damnable religion: because with the merit and satisfaction of Christ, it
 30 ioynes humane merites and satisfactions, in the case of our iustification. It may be alleadged, that the Popish religion maintaines all the articles concerning Christ, as we doe. *Answer.* It doeth so in word: but withall it addes to the foresaid articles the doctrine of humane merites and satisfactions, which make void the death of Christ. Again, Papists alleadge that it is the glory of Christ, that he
 40 merits for vs, and withall makes vs to merit for our selues; as it is the glory of an Emperour to make other kings vnder him. *Answer.* It is not the glory of the Emperour to make kings as partners
 with

with him in his kingdome. And works set vp as meritorious causes of salvation dishonour Christ; for they make him vnprofitable, as *Paul* here teacheth.

Popish religion therefore is in no wise, in any place to bee tolerated, where it may bee abolished: but it is to be wished that it were banished from towne and countrey: and students are to be warned with great circumspection to reade Popish writers. For no good can be looked for of that religion that makes Christ vnprofitable.

Lastly, we are heere taught to content our selues with Christ alone, and with his workes, merits, and satisfactions. For in him we are complete, *Col. 2. 10.*

The confirmation of the sentence followeth, *I Paul say it:* therefore it is so. This kind of reasoning may not seeme strange: for the Apostles in writing and preaching, had the diuine and infallible assistance of the spirit, so as they could not erre. This must bee held as a Principle in religion: and being denied, there is no certaintie of the Bible.

3 For I testifie againe to euery man that is circumcised, that he is bound to keepe the whole law.

4 Ye are abolished from Christ, whosoever are iustified by the law, ye are fallen from grace.

The meaning. *Paul* saith, *I testifie againe:* because hee hath spoken thus much in effect before, *Gal. 3. 10.*

That is circumcised] who is of opinion of the false apostles that will be circumcised, and looke for iustification thereby.

Bound to the whole law] that is, to the whole ceremoniall law, to the iudiciall law, and to the whole morall law. And further, bound in respect of iustification, and life, to doe all things in the law. For he that will be iustified by one act of the law, is bound to performe the rest for his iustification.

Abolished from Christ] that is, Christ is become an idle and empty Christ vnto you.

Whosoever are iustified by the law] that is, are of opinion that they are to bee iustified by the workes of the law. For indeed a sinner cannot bee iustified by the law, but onely in his owne false opinion.

Grace] that is, the loue, and fauour of God.

The resolution. The third verse is a confirmation of the reason

in the second verse, and it may be framed thus: He which is bound to keepe the whole law, hath no part in Christ: he which is circumcised, is bound to keepe the whole law: therefore he which is circumcised, hath no part in Christ. The 4. verse is a repetition of the
 5 second verse, with a declaration therof: for he shews what he means by circumcision, namely, iustification by circumcision, and consequently by the whole law. And therefore when he had said, *If ye be circumcised, he changeth his speech, saying, Who soeuer is iustified by the law.* Againe, lest men might thinke it a small matter to
 10 be abolished from Christ, he shewes that it is indeede to fall from grace.

The vsē. These verses are as it were a thunderbolt against all Popery. And first of all, I vrge the argument of *Paul* against the Popish Church, and against the Popish religion: If ye be iustified by the law, ye are abolished from Christ, and fallen from
 15 grace. Answer is made, that the words are to be vnderstood of such workes of the Law, as are from nature, and goe before faith: and not of such workes as are from grace, and follow faith: for such workes (they say) are from Christ, and stand with him. I
 20 answer, the words of *Paul* are to be vnderstood of all workes of the law, whether they be from nature, or from grace. For this Epistle of *Paul* was written about five yeares after the conuersion of the Galatians: therefore they were and had bin long regenerate persons: now men regenerate looke not to be iustified by workes
 25 of nature, but by good workes, which are workes of grace. And *Paul* saith, *Ephesians 2. 10. We are not saved by workes, which God hath ordained that we should walke in:* and these are the best workes that are or can be. Againe, *Tit. 3. 5. Of his mercy he saved vs, and not of workes of righteousness.*

30 By this Text we further see, that we and the Papists differ not about circumstances, vnlesse Grace and Christ be circumstances. Againe, we see that the Church of Rome is indeede no Church: because by maintaining iustification by works, it is abolished from Christ, and fallen from grace.

35 Againe, I vrge *Pauls* argument against them, on this manner. He which is debter to the whole law, hath no part in Christ: he which is iustified by workes, is debter to the whole law: therefore he which is iustified by workes hath no part in Christ. Let them answer, if they can.

40 I turne the same argument another way, thus: He which is iustified by workes, is bound to keepe the whole law: but no man can keepe the whole law: therefore no man can be iustified by workes.

They answer to the *minor*, by making a double fulfilling of the law, one for this life, the other for the life to come; and both in their kind perfect. The fulfilling of the law for the time of this life (they say) it is to love God above all creatures in truth: and that he which doth thus much, fulfils the law, and is no offender. Hereupon they inferre, that works may be answerable to the law, and be opposed to the iudgement of God. And for this doctrine, they alleadge S. *Augustine*. I answer againe, that *Paul* in this place takes it for a confessed truth, that no man can fulfill the law: and he vrgeth it as a great inconuenience, that any should be bound to keepe the whole law. And before he hath said, *He which is of the workes of the law, is cursed: Gal. 3. 10.* which could not be, if there were a fulfilling of the law for the time of this life. As for *Augustine*, it is true he makes two fulfillings of the law, and one of them for the time of this life: but this he saith is imperfect: and this imperfection he makes to be a sinne; whereas the Papists of our time teach, that men may fulfill the law for the time of this life without sinne.

Where *Paul* saith, *If ye be circumcised*: marke how the false Apostles abuse circumcision. It is by diuine institution a seale of the righteousness of faith, and they make it a meritorious cause of salvation. It is indeede rather Gods worke, then our worke: and they make it their owne worke, and that meritorious before God. Like doe the Papists at this day. Baptisme is a signe and seale of Gods mercy, by diuine institution: and they turne it into a physicall cause which containes and conferres grace. In like sort they turne the workes of the spirit, almes, praier, fasting, contrition; yea their owne traditions, confession, satisfaction, and such like, into meritorious causes of iustification, and life. And this is the fashion of deceiuers, to retaine the names of holy things, but not to retaine the right vse of them.

As here we see Circumcision was an obligation to the keeping of the whole law in the old Testament: so is baptisme in the new, an obligation or bond, whereby we haue bound our selues to liue according to all the lawes of God. *Math. 28. 19, 20.* This discovers the Atheisme and vnbeleefe of persons baptised in these our dayes: for few there be that thinke vpon, and performe this obligation.

We are further to obserue the condition of the law. It is wholly copulative. All the parts of it are linked one to another. He that is bound to one commandement, is bound to all: he that keepes one indeede, keepes all: he that breakes one, in respect of the disposition of his heart, is a breaker of all, *1am. 2. 10.* he that makes

no conscience to keepe some one commandement, if occasion be offered, will breake any. Hence it followes, that true regeneration is that which is a reformation and change according to the whole law of God, and containes in it the seedes of all good duties.

5 Christ saith, *He that is washed is all cleane, Ioh. 13. 10. Iosias turned to God according to the whole law. Zachary and Elizabeth walked in all the commandements of God without reproofe. Luk. 1. David saith, He shall not be confounded, when he hath respect to all the commandements of God. Psal. 119. 6.* On the contrary, he which hath many excellent things in
10 him, if he liue in the manifest breach of some one commandement, is found in none, nay indeede he is guilty of all. *Herod did many good things: and yet all was nothing: because he liued in incest. Mark. 6. 20.* The diuell is able to bring a man to perdition as well by one sinne, as by many.

15 Whereas *Paul* saith, *If ye be iustified by the law, ye are abolished from Christ:* First I gather, that the Law and the Gospel are not one in substance of doctrine, as the Papists teach: for they say the Gospel is nothing but the law made more perfect, and plaine: which if it were true, a man might be iustified both by Christ and the law,
20 which *Paul* saith cannot be. Secondly, I gather hence, that it is a meere deuce of mans wit, to say that Christ by his death and passion merited, that we should merit by our owne workes our iustification and saluation. For if this were true, that the merit of our workes, were the fruite of Christs passion, *Paul* would not haue said
25 that iustification by the law, should abolish Christ vnto vs. For the cause and the effect, both stand together: whereas Christs merit, and the merit of our workes, agree euen as fire and water. And no maruell. For the reason why Christ meriteth, is the Personall vnion of the Godhead with the manhood: which vnion, because it is not
30 to be found in any meere man, neither is there any true and proper merit to be found.

Whereas *Paul* saith, *Ye are fallen from grace,* some gather, that the children of God may fall quite from the fauour of God. *Answer.* Men are said to be vnder grace, two waies. First, in the iudgement
35 of infallibility: and thus onely the Elect are vnder the grace of God. Secondly, in the iudgement of Christian charitie: and thus all that professe Christ, (though indeede hypocrites) are vnder the grace of God. And in this sense *Paul* saith, that the whole Church of Galatia is vnder the grace of God. And they are said to fall from
40 grace, not because all were indeede vnder the fauour of God, and at length cast out of it: but because God makes it manifest to men, that they were neuer in the fauour of God. Thus Christs ene-

ries are said to be blotted out of the booke of life, *Psalm 69. 28.* when God makes it manifest that their names were neuer written there. Secondly, I answer, that *Paul* speakes not this absolutely, but vpon condition, if ye will be iustified by the law. And therefore *v. 10.* he saith, that he is perswade a better thing of them.

Lastly, heere we see it is false, that every man shall be saued by his religion: for he that is abolished from Christ, is quite out of the fauour of God. And therefore no religion, but that which is truly Christian, saueth.

5 For wee in the spirit by faith, waite for the hope of righteousness.

6 For in Iesus Christ neither circumcision, nor vncircumcision auaieth any thing, but faith which worketh by loue.

The meaning. *We*] I *Paul*, the rest of the Apostles, and all other Christian Churches. *In spirit*] that is, in the powers of the soule sanctified and renewed. In this sense *Paul* saith that the true circumcision is that which is in the heart, in spirit, *Rom. 2. 29.* and Christ saith, that true worship of God, is in spirit, *Iohn 4. 24.* And that spirit is heretaken in this sense, it is manifest: because it is opposed to circumcision which is in the flesh.

By faith wee wait] Faith apprehends the promise, and thereby brings forth hope: and faith by meanes of hope, makes them that beleue to waite. *Hope of righteousness*] that is, saluation or life eternall, which is the fruite of righteousness, *Titus 2. 13.* or againe, righteousness hoped for. Righteousness indeed is imputed to them that beleue, and that in this life, yet the fruition and the full reuelation thereof is referued to the life to come, when Christ our righteousness shall appeare, and when the effect of righteousness, namely sanctification, shall be accomplished in vs, *Romanes 8. 23. 1. Iohn 3. 2.*

The sense then is this. All the Apostles and Christian Churches with one consent in spirit, by meanes of their faith, waite for the full reuelation of their imputed righteousness, and for everlasting life: whereas the false apostles place their righteousness in the circumcision of the flesh, and looke to haue the fruition of it in this life.

Verse 6. *In Christ*] that is, in the Church, kingdome, or religion of Christ. *2. Cor. 5. 17.* If any be in Christ, that is, if any be a Christian, he is a new creature.

Vncircumcision.

Vncircumcision] that is, the condition and workes of men vncircumcised.

Auaileth any thing] is of no vse, respect, or acceptation with God.
Faith working] faith effectually in duties of loue.

5 The resolution. These words containe a second reason, where *Paul* confirms the former conclusion, and it may be framed thus. That thing which makes vs wait for the hope of righteousness, that iustifies: not circumcision, but faith makes vs wait for the hope of righteousness: therefore not circumcision but faith iustifies. The
 10 *proposition* is omitted: the *minor* is in the 5. verse. And it is confirmed by two arguments. The first, is the consent of all Churches, *We wait*. The second is taken from the property of faith in the 6. verse, thus: It is faith, and not circumcision that auailes before God: therefore faith and not circumcision makes vs wait.

15 Again, in these two verses, *Paul* meets with an obiection, which may be framed thus: If yee abolish circumcision and the ceremoniall law, ye abolish the exercises of religion. The answer is: in stead of them we haue other exercises in our spirit, namely, the inward exercises of faith hope, and loue. The vse. In the 5. verse, foure
 20 things are to be considered. The first is, who waites? *Paul* saith, *We wait*. Before he hath iustified his doctrine by the Scriptures, now he addes the consent of the Churches. Here then wee see what is the office of all faithfull dispensers of the word, namely, to declare such doctrines as are founded in the Scriptures, and approoued by
 25 the consent of the true Church of God. *Paul* an Apostle that could not erre, respected consent, much more are all ordinary Ministers to doe it.

Againe, it is the office of all Christian people to maintaine and defend all such doctrines and opinions as are founded in the
 30 Scriptures, and ratified by the consent of the true Churches of God, and no other. This to doe is to walke in the way of vnitie, and peace: and to doe otherwise is to walke in the way of schisme and heresie.

The second point is, what is waited for? *Paul* saith, *the reuelation*
 35 *of righteousness, and eternall saluation*. Here I obserue, that there is no iustification by the obseruation of the law: and I prooue it thus: The righteousness whereby a sinner is iustified, is apprehended by faith, and expected by hope: but if righteousness were by the law, men should haue the fruition of their righteousness in this life, and
 40 consequently the hope thereof should cease.

Secondly, heere is comfort for the godly. They complaine of the want of sanctification: but they are to know, that in this life
 they

they shall neuer feelee righteousnesse, as they feelee sinne: here they must hunger and thirst after righteousnesse, living in some want of it. If wee haue the first fruites of the spirit, the hatred of our owne sinne, the purpose of not sinning, the feare of God, and such like, wee must content our selues, and wait for the fruition of further 5
grace till the life to come.

Thirdly, we must become waiters for the mercy of God, and for life euerlasting, *Gen. 49. 18. Iud. v. 21.* For this cause we must doe as they which wait and attend for some great benefit: wee must daily stand with our supplications, knocking at the mercie gate to the 10
death: and wee must daily prepare our selues against the day of death, and it must bee welcome vnto vs: for then is the end of all our waiting and attending.

The third point is, by what are we to wait? *Paul* saith, *We wait by faith.* Hence it followes, that faith brings with it a speciall certaintie 15
of the mercy of God, and of life euerlasting. For men vse not to wait for the things whereof they are vncertaine. Waiting presupposeth certaintie. The Papists therefore that make speciall hope, should also make speciall faith.

The last point is, where is this waiting? *Paul* saith, *in spirit.* Here 20
obserue, that all the exercises of Christian religion, are to be in the spirit. *God must bee worshipped in spirit, Iohn 4. 24. Rom. 1. 9.* The heart must be rent, and not the garment, *Joel 2.* The inward motions of the spirit, are of themselues the worship of God, whereas our words and deeds are not simply, but so farre forth as they are founded in 25
the renewed motions of the heart. Men in our daies thinke they do God high seruice, if they come to Church, heare Gods word, and say some few praiers. Indeed these things are not to be condemned: yet are they not sufficient, vnlesse withall we bring vnto God, a renewed spirit indued with faith, hope, loue. 30

In the sixth verse, *Paul* propounds three conclusions. The first is this: that externall and bodily priuiledges are of no vse and moment in the kingdome of Christ. *Paul* saith, *1. Tim. 4. 8. Bodily exercise profiteth little, and that godlinesse is profitable for all things.* It was a great priuiledge to bee familiarly acquainted with Christ, and to 35
haue eaten and drunke with him: yet is it of no vse in the kingdom of Christ. For of such Christ saith, *Luke 13. 26. Depart from me, ye workers of iniquitie.* It was a great priuiledge to be allied to Christ in respect of blood, yet in the kingdome of Christ, it is of no vse: and therefore Christ saith, *He that doth the will of my Father, is my brother,* 40
sister, and mother, Marke 3. 33. To conceiue and beare Christ, was a great honour to the virgin *Marie*: yet was she not by this meanes

a mem-

a member of the kingdome of Christ, but by her faith in him. And if she had not borne him in her heart, as well as she bare him in her wombe, she had not been saued. To prophesie or preach, and that in the name of Christ, is a great dignitie: and yet many hauing this
5 prerogative, shall be condemned, *Matt. 7. 22.* It may be alleadged, that some outward exercises, as Baptisme, and the Lords Supper, are of great vse in the Church of Christ. I answer, the outward baptism is nothing without the inward. *Not the washing of the flesh, but the stipulation of a good conscience saueth, 1. Pet. 3. 18. Circumcision is profitable, if thou keepe the law, Rom. 2. 39.*

By this wee are taught, not to esteeme of mens religion by their riches, and externall dignities. For the fashion of the world is, if a man haue riches, and honour, to commend him for a wise, ver-
tuous, and godly man. This is foolishly to haue faith in respect of
15 persons, *Iames 2. 1.*

Secondly, by this wee are taught to moderate our affections in respect of al outward things, neither forrowing too much for them, nor ioying too much in them, *1. Cor. 7. 30.*

The second conclusion. Faith is of great vse and acceptance in
20 the kingdome of Christ. By it first our persons, and then our actions please God: and without it nothing pleaseth God. It is the first and the greatest honour we can doe to God, to giue credence to his word: and from this flowes all other obedience to all other commandements. Hence we learne,

35 First, that we must labour to conceiue faith aright in our hearts, by the vse of the right meanes, the word, praier, Sacraments: as also in, and by the exercises of spirituall inuocation, & repentance. This being done, wee must rest vpon the bare word and tellimonie of God, without, and against sense and feeling: and quiet our hearts
30 therein, both in life and death.

Secondly, faith in Christ must reigne and beare sway in our hearts, and haue the command ouer reason, will, affection, lust. And by it whatsoeuer we do or suffer, specially the maine actions of our liues, are to be ordered and disposed.

35 Lastly, it is a thing to bee bewailed, that the common faith of our dayes is but a ceremoniall faith, conceived without the ordinary meanes, and seuered from the exercises of inuocation, and repentance.

The third conclusion is, that true faith workes by loue. Hence
40 the Papists gather, that loue is the forme and life of faith, not because it makes faith to be faith, but because it makes it to be a true faith, a good faith, a liuely faith. But this their doctrine is false
and

and erroneous. For faith is the cause of loue, and loue is the fruite of faith. *1. Tim. 1. 5. Loue out of a pure heart, good conscience, and faith unfained.* Now euery cause as it is a cause, hath his force and efficacy in it selfe, and receiues no force or efficacy from his effect. Secondly, true faith is lively and effectuell in it selfe and hath a peculiar forme of his owne, and that is a certen power to apprehend Christ in the promise. For in faith, there are two things, *knowledge,* and *apprehension,* which some call application, or *speciall affiance,* which affiance because the Papists cut off, they are constrained to make a supply by loue. Thirdly, the operation of faith (according to the doctrine of the Papist) is to Prepare and dispose a sinner to his future iustification. Now, if this operation be from loue, then loue is before iustification: and that cannot be: because (as they teach) iustification stands in loue. Loue therefore is not the forme of faith. They alleadge for themselues this very Text in hand, where it is said, *faith worketh by loue:* or (as they translate it) *faith is acted and mooued by loue.* Answer. The meaning of the text is, that faith is effectuell in it selfe: and that it shewes and puts foorth his efficacy by loue, as by the fruite thereof. And it cannot hence bee gathered, that faith is acted and mooued by loue, as by a for-
mall cause.

Againe, they alleadge, *James 2. 26. As the bodie is dead without the spirit: so is faith without workes.* Answer 1. The soule of man is not the forme of his body, but of the whole man. 2. Spirit may as well signifie breath, or breathing, as the soule. And so it carries a fit sense. For as the body without breath, is dead, and it shewes it selfe to be alieue by breathing: so faith that is without workes, is dead, and it shewes it selfe to be alieue by workes. 3. There is a false composition of the words to be considered: *faith that is without workes, is dead:* is true: but to say, *faith is dead without workes* (as though workes gaue life to faith) is false; and not the meaning of S. James, but the former onely.

Againe, the Papists hence gather, that faith and loue are ioynnt causes in the iustification of a sinner, and that faith worketh loue in iustifying men before God. But this interpretation is against the whole scope of this Epistle, in which Paul prooues that there is no iustification by the law, c. 5. v. 4. and therefore no iustification by loue. Againe, Paul saith, *Rom. 3. 21. that righteousness is revealed without the law:* and therefore without loue. And againe, that *wee are made the righteousness of (Christ, as Christ is made our sinne,* namely, by imputation, and therefore not by infusion of loue, 2. Cor. 5. 21. Thirdly, faith iustifies by apprehending Christ in the promise,

promise, and therefore not by loue. The consequent I proouerthus. Faith and loue are two hands of our soule. Faith is an hand that laies hold of Christ, and it doth (as it were) pull him and his benefits into our soules. But loue is an hand of an other kind, for it serues
 5 not to receiue in, but to giue out the good it hath, and to communicate it selfe vnto others. Therefore faith cannot iustifie by loue. Lastly, loue in order of nature followes iustification, and therefore it doth not iustifie. For first of all faith laies hold on Christ: then followes iustification, vpon iustification follows sanctification, and
 10 loue is a part of sanctification.

They vrge for themselves the words of *Paul*, that *faith workes by faith*. *Ans.* *Paul* doth not shew in this verse, what iustifieth, but what are the exercises of Godlines in which Christians must be occupied. And he doth not shew how faith iustifieth, but how it may be
 15 discerned to be true faith, namely, by loue.

Secondly, they obiekt that faith and loue are alwayes ioyned: and therefore ioynly worke in iustification. *Answer.* They are ioyned in one person or subiect: and they are ioyned in the exercise of Christian life: but they are not ioyned in the article of iustification.
 20 fication.

Thirdly, they vrge the 2. of *S. Iames*, where it is saide, that a man is iustified not onely by faith, but also by workes. v. 24. *Ans.* Faith in *S. Iames* is put for an historicall knowledge of religion; or for the bare confession and profession of faith. Againe, iustification is twofold; one of
 25 the person, the other of the faith of the person. Iustification of the person is, when a sinner is absolved of his sinnes, and accepted to life everlasting, for the merit of Christ. Iustification of the faith of the person is, when faith is approoued and found to be true faith: and a beleuer iustifies himselfe to be a true beleuer. Of this second iustification speakes Saint *Iames*; and it is not onely by faith, but also
 30 by workes.

Lastly, it may be obiekted, that loue is of no vse, if it doe not iustifie. *Ans.* Iustification, and sanctification, are two distinct benefits. 1. *Cor.* 1. 30, and 6. 11. Iustification ministers vnto vs deliuerance
 35 from hell, and a right to life everlasting: Sanctification is a fruit of the former, and serues to make vs thankfull to God for our iustification: and loue serues for the same vse, because it is a speciall part of Sanctification.

Thus much of the deprauation of the text by the Papists. Hence
 40 further I gather, that many falsely in these last daies boast of faith: because it is not ioyned with profiting in knowledg, with the true conuersion vnto God, with fruits of loue to God and man: where-

as all true faith is fruitfull in good workes.

7. *Ye did runne well : who did let you, that ye should not obey the truth?*

The meaning. *Ye did runne well* In these words, *Paul* alludes to the games of running, vsed among the heathen. And he compares the word and precepts of God, to a way or race; believers to runners, life eternall to the price, God to the vmpire or iudge; the lookers on, are men and Angels, good and badde; and the Exercise of religion, is the running in this race. Reade of this, *1. Corinth. 9. 24. Phil. 3. 13, 14.* *Why* The Interrogation hath in it the force of a reproofe, or complaint. And the sense is this: they did euill, which turned you forth of the way, and you haue done euill that you obeyed not the truth. The like is, *Psal. 2. 1. Why doe the heathen rage?* that is, it is great wickednes for them to rage.

Let stoppe, intercept your course, turne you out of the way.

That you should not obey that you should not giue credence to the doctrine of *Paul*, and obey it.

The scope. These words, are a repetition of the principall conclusion of the whole Epistle. And this repetition is not in vaine. For it serues to bring the Galatians to a consideration of their offence, and to amendment of life. Hence I obserue, that the often and serious consideration of our sinnes and liues past, is a meanes to worke in vs a detestation of our sinnes, and a reformation of life. Thus *David* saith, that upon consideration of his waies, he turned his feete to Gods commandements. *Psal. 119. 59.* And the cause why there is so little amendment among vs, is, because we neuer so much as thinke what we haue done.

In these words, *Paul* sets downe three duties of Christian people. The first is, that they must be runners in the race of God. Indee the Sabbath of the Iewes figured a rest, which is contrary to running: but this rest is from sinne, and not from good duties. This duty of running teacheth vs foure things. The first is, that we must make hast without delay to keepe the commandements of God, specially the commandements of faith, repentance, new obedience. *Psal. 119. 32. 60.* Contrariwise it is a great fault for youth and others; to deferre amendment till old age, or till the last and deadly sicknes. For that is the time to end our running, and not to begin.

The second is, that we are to encrease and profit in all good duties

duties, specially in knowledge, faith, repentance. But we in this age doe otherwise. For either we stand at a stay, or goe backe, and very few of vs doe proceed forward in good duties. And there are two causes of this. One is blindnesse of mind, which makes vs that wee
 5 see not how little our faith and repentance is, and how great is the masse of our corruption: the second is our vnbeleefe in the article of life euermlasting.

The third dutie is, that wee must neither looke to the right or left hand, or look to things behind vs to set our affection on them,
 10 but wee must presse on forward to the price of eternall life, *Phil. 3. 13. Luke 9. 62.* Here comes a common fault to be considered: we in respect of profession go forward: yet we looke back in our course, and mind earthly things.

Lastly, we must not be moued with the speeches of men which
 15 are giuen of vs either to or fro. They are lookers on, and must haue their speeches, and our care must be not to heed them, but to looke to our course.

The second dutie of Christian people is, that they must not onely be runners, but they must runne well. And that is done by be-
 20 leeuing, and by obeying the true religion, or as *Paul* saith, by hauing faith and good conscience. *1. Timoth. 1. 18.* These are as it were the two feet, by which we runne to life euermlasting. Vnder faith we are to comprehend the true acknowledgment of God, affiance in him, and inuocation, &c. Vnder good conscience, is comprised the pur-
 25 pose of not sinning, and the care to obey God in all his commandements. To apply this to our selves: runners we are: but alas, few of vs are good runners: Wee haue one good foot, and that is our faith or religion, which is sound and good: but we halt on the other foot: our care to keepe conscience is not futable to our reli-
 30 gion. And three things cause a lamenesse or feeblenesse in this foot, the lust of the eye, that is couetousnesse; the lust of the flesh, and pride of life.

The third dutie is, that we must runne the race from the begin-
 ning to the end, and finish our course; so as wee may apprehend life
 35 euermlasting, *1. Tim. 6. 11. 2. Tim. 4. 7. 1. Cor. 9. 24.* And for this cause wee must cherish in our hearts a loue and fruent desire of eternall life, and by this meanes we shall be drawne on through all miseries, and ouerpasse them to the end. Secondly, we must hold and main-
 40 taine a constant and daily purpose of not sinning. And where wee are the weakest, there must our resolution bee the strongest. And thus shall we be constant to the death.

8. *It is not the perswasion of him that calleth you.*

The meaning. This opinion of iustification by the workes of the law, is not from God, who hath called you from bondage to liberty.

The scope. *Paul* here meetes with a conceit of the Galatians, which was this: Why dost thou so often and so sharply reprove vs? for we hold nothing against conscience, but are perswaded of the thing which we say. To this *Paul* answers here: *this perswasion is not of God*: because it is against the calling of God, for hee calls you to liberty: and this your opinion drawes you into bondage.

Here we see the cause of mens declining from God and his word, and that is this: Men deny credence to Gods word, and listen to plausible perswasions, and so fall away. Thus *Eve* fell in the estate of innocency by listening to the false perswasions of diuell. The Papists nusse themselves in their superstitions, by a presumption that the Church cannot erre, and that God will not leaue his Church destitute of the assistance of his Spirit. Our common people bouldster themselves in their blind waies, by a presumption that God is all of mercy, and that if they doe their true intent, serue God, say their praiers, deale iustly, and doe as they would be done vnto, they shall certainly be saued. Tradesmen often vse many practises of fraud and iniustice, and that vpon a perswasion, that they haue a charge and family which must be maintained. If men now adaies will not blasphemee, drinke, and riot, as others doe, they shall be charged with precisenes: and that comes vpon a perswasion, that it sufficeth to auoid the outward and notorious crimes which are mentioned and condemned in the law. Thus the whole world is misled by blind perswasions.

Secondly, hence we learne to close vp our eyes (as it were) and absolutely to follow the calling of God, and to subiect all the powers of our soules vnto it. Thus did *Abraham* when he was called to goe he knew not whether, and *Paul* without vsing consultation went and preached in Arabia at the calling of Christ.

Thirdly, *Paul* here sets downe a note to discerne of false doctrines and opinions in religion. If they be sutable to the calling of God, they are good: if they be against the calling of God, they are naught. This is *Pauls* rule. God calls vs to liberty: therefore the doctrine of iustification by the workes of the law is naught: for it drawes vs into bondage. In like sort God calls vs to free iustification: and therefore the doctrine of humane satisfactions and of the merit

merit of workes, is naught. Againe, God calles vs to an vtter deniall of our selues: and therefore the Popish doctrine of preparation, and of freedome of will in the conuersion of a sinner, is naught.

5 Lastly, it is to be obserued, that *Paul* saith in the time present [of him that calleth you:] for hence it appeares, that God continues to call the Galatians, euen after their fall, in which they fell away to another Gospel, and as much as in them lay, abolished themselves from Christ. This shewes Gods patience: and that there is a possi-
10 bilitie of mercy after great and grievous falls.

It may be said, how long doth God continue to call men vnto him? *Answer.* So long as he vouchsafeth them the benefit of the publike Ministry. Thus then more then fourtie yeares hath God called vs in England. And for this cause, it is our part to pray to
15 God for hearing eares to be pearced in our hearts: and we must answer the calling of God, *Psalm. 27. 8.* at the least in the desires and groanes of our hearts. And lastly, we must in life and conuersation be sutable to the calling of God.

10 9 *A little leauen, leaueneth the whole lumpe.*

The sense. As a little leauen, leaueneth and sauoureth the whole lumpe of dow: euen so, one error or point of corrupt doctrine, corrupteth the whole body of Christian religion: because all the
25 points of religion are linked and compounded together, so as if one be corrupt, the rest cannot remaine sound and incorrupt.

The scope. The obiection of the Galatians is: Put case, that we erre in ioyning Circumcision and Christ: yet there is no cause why thou shouldest so sharply reprove vs: for it is no great er-
30 rour to ioyne workes and Christ in the cause of our Iustification. *Paul* answers to this obiection by a Prouerbe, saying, that a little leuen of false doctrine, corrupts the whole body of religion: and one error, though it seeme to bee of small moment at the first, may at length bring with it the corruption and deprauation of many
35 other points.

35 The vse. In the example of the Galatians, we see what is the common fashion of men, namely, to extenuate their faults, and to make small matters of great offences. The Pharisees taught, that sundry of Gods commandements were *small and little commande-*
40 *ments, Matth. 5. 19.* To them that make no conscience of sinne, great sinnes are little sinnes, and little sinnes are no sinnes. Pride is cleanness; couetousnes is nothing but worldlinesse; drunkennes,
Z good

good fellowship; fornication, a trick of youth. Thus men put vi-
zards vpon their vgly sinnes. The politician that is of no religion,
saith, that wee and the Papists differ not in substance, but in small
circumstances: and that if they erre, it is but in small points. But
on the contrary, wee are to esteeme euery sinne for a great sinne, to
humble our selues for the least sinnes, and to bring our selues in
subiection to God in the least of our actions.

Here wee are taught by all meanes to maintaine the puritie of
sound religion, whatsoeuer befall vs. And for this cause we are to re-
sist and withstand euery erroneous opinion that shall bee broched.
For it is the policy of the diuell by foisting in some one error, to
depraue & confound the whole body of truth. It may be said, how
may wee discern error from sound doctrine, considering often-
tmes they are like, as leauen is like dowe? *Ans.* Leauen is discerned
from dowe, not by colour, but by taste: euen so they which are spi-
rituall, and haue the gift of discerning, directed by the analogie of
faith, discern truth from falshood. For whatsoeuer is against one
article of faith, or against any of the commandements of the deca-
logue, is not sound doctrine, but leauen.

Againe, that which is said of false doctrine, may bee said pro-
portionally of bad manners. Heere therefore we must bee put in
minde of three duties. The first, to resist and withstand euery
particular sinne. For euen one sinne is able to defile the whole
life of man. One flie is sufficient to marre a whole boxe of sweet
oyntment. One offence in our first parents, brought corruption
vpon them and all mankind, yea vpon heauen and earth. He that
makes no conscience of some one sinne, is guilty of the whole
law, *James 2.*

Secondly, wee must doe our endeauour to the vttermost, to cut
off euery bad example in the societies of men. For one bad exam-
ple is sufficient to corrupt a whole family, a whole towne, a whole
countrey. The example of one incestuous man, was sufficient to
corrupt all Corinth. Therefore *Paul* saith, *Purge out the old leauen,*
1. Cor. 5. 5. The law of God is, that blasphemers, murderers, adul-
terers, &c. shall be put to death: the reason is, *that euill may be taken*
out of Israel, that is, the euill of wicked example, which being suf-
ficed, spreads abroad, and doth much hurt. The barren fig tree must
be cut downe, lest it make the whole ground barren, *Luke 13. 7.*

Thirdly, wee are to withstand and cut off the first beginnings,
and the occasions of euery sin. We say of arrand theeues, that first
they begin to practise their wickednes in pinnes, and points. For
this cause, idlenesse, fulnesse of bread in excessive eating, drinking,
and

and swelling, riot, and vanitie in apparell, are to be suppressed in every societie, as the breeders of many vices.

On the contrary, as one poynt of euill doctrine brings with it many other: so any one little grace of God, brings many other with it. *The entrance into Gods word giues light, Psalme 119. 130.* In this respect Christ saith, *The kingdome of heauen is like leauen, bidde in three peckes of meale:* because Gods kingdome is set vp in the heart at the first vpon very small beginnings, *Matth. 13. 33.* This must teach vs to vse the meanes of our saluation, and not to bee discouraged, though wee haue in vs but some small beginnings of Gods grace.

10 *I haue an affiance in you in the Lord, that yee will bee no otherwise minded: but he that troubleth you, shall beare his iudgment, who soeuer he bee.*

The sense. *In the Lord*] by the gracious assistance of God, who no doubt will giue a blessing to my Ministery.

No otherwise minded] that is, thinke no otherwise then ye haue done, and ought to thinke; and thinke no otherwise then I haue taught you.

He that troubleth you] the Church is troubled three wayes: 1. by false doctrine. Thus *Ahab troubled Israel, 1. Kings. 18. 18.* and the false apostles trouble Galatia. 2. By wicked example: thus *Achan* 25 *troubled Israel, Iosua. 7. 25.* 3. By force and crueltie: thus tyrants and persecutors trouble the Church.

Shall beare] shall haue his due and deserued punishment, partly in this life, and partly in eternall dearch. See this verified in the end of the booke of English Martyrs, in the desperate, horrible, and stinking ends of persecutors. But yet this threat must bee vnderstood with the exception of repentance.

The scope. The words are an answer to an obiection which may be framed thus: It seemes by your former prouerb of leauen, that you hold vs to bee a people corrupted, and vsauorie vnto God. To this *Paul* answers by a distinction: I hope better things of you: but the false Apostles for troubling the Church shall surely be punished.

The vse. When *Paul* saith, *I haue an affiance in you*, he teacheth in his owne example, that wee are to hope the best of men so long as they are curable. It may be said, they that hope the best, are sometimes deceiued. *Answer.* They are onely deceiued in their iudgement, and that in things wherof they haue no certain knowledge,

and they are not deceiued in paradise. For it is a dutie of loue to hope the best. And they which vse to suspect the worse, are oftner deceiued. Again, it may be said, that wee must iudge of things as they are indeed. *Answer.* Iudgement of things, and iudgement of persons must be distinguished. Of things, vpright iudgement is to iudge of them as they are: and if they be doubtful, to suspend. Now our iudgement of the persons of men, must be to take things in the better part, as much as possibly may be. Lastly, it may be alledged, that *wee must loue our neighbour as our selues*: and that we despaire in respect of our selues. *Answer.* We are to despaire in respect of our selues, because we are priuy to our owne estate: but we are not priuy to the estate of any other man: and therefore we are to hope the best of them. This shewes the fault of our times: if any professing the Gospell fall vpon frailtie, there are numbers of men that will make no bones of it to condemne them to the pit of hell, for hypocrites: but such persons are not carried by the spirit of *Paul*, who hopes the best of them that fall.

Again, here we see how we are to put affiance in men. We are to put affiance in God for all things whatsoever, whether concerning body or soule: but our affiance in men, must be onely for such things as they are able to performe. Secondly, wee must put affiance in God absolutely for himselfe, and therefore wee say, *I beleene in God, &c.* but all our affiance in men whatsoever, must be in the Lord.

When *Paul* saith, that he had *affiance of them in the Lord*, he shewes, that renewed repentance is the gift of God. And there are two graces required vnto it; Helping grace, and Exciting grace. Helping grace preserues and confirms the first and initiall repentance. Exciting grace giues the will and the deed. And without these graces the childe of God, if hee fall, cannot repent, and recover himselfe. They therefore are deceiued, who thinke that they may haue repentance at command, and that they may repeat when they will.

It may be demanded, why *Paul* useth milde tearmes, and doeth not excommunicate the Galatians? *Answer.* So long as men are curable, meanes must be vsed to recover them. The sheepe or ox that goes astray, must be brought home againe, *Exod.* 23. 4. much more thy neighbour. Christ himselfe brings home againe the lost sheepe, and so must every shepheard, *Ezekel* 34. 4. Now the Galatians were in all likelihood persons curable: and therefore not to bee cut off. For the censure of Excommunication pertaines to them alone, of whose recovery there is no hope.

Some

Somethere be that mislike the preaching vsed in these daies, because we vse not seueritie, and personall reproofes, after the maner of *Iohn Baptist*. But these men are deceiued. We haue not the like calling that he had, nor like gifts: neither are we in the like times.

5 For *Iohn the Baptist* was in the very time of the change betweene the old and the new Testament. Christ did not follow him in the samemaner of teaching, neither doeth the Apostle in this place, when hee saith of the Galatians in Apostasie, that *hee hoped better things of them*.

10 In the last place, the commination which the Apostle vseth, is to be obserued, that troublers of the Church shal beare their iudgment. Hence I gather,

1. That God watcheth ouer his Church with a speciall providence. We in England haue found this by experience: and we are 15 to be thankfull for it.

2. That the doctrine of the Apostles is of infallible certaintie: because the oppugners of it are plagued by the iust iudgement of God.

3. On the contrarie, our dutie is, to pray for the good estate of 20 the Church of God, and for the kingdomes where the Church is planted, and for the continuance of the Gospell specially in England. For what will all the things we haue doe vs good, if we bee forth of Gods kingdome, and lose our soules?

25 11 And brethren, if I yet preach Circumcision, why doe I yet suffer persecution? Then is the scandall of the crosse abolished.

12 Would to God they were cut off that trouble you.

The sense. *Yet preach*] now while I am an Apostle. Heere 30 *Paul* takes it for graunted, that when he was a Pharisee, he taught and maintained Circumcision: but he denies that he euer taught it after his Conuersion in his Apostleship. *The crosse*] the Gospell, which is a doctrine teaching deliuerance from hell, and life euclasting, to be obtained by the death and passion of Christ crucified, 35 1. Cor. 1. 18, 23.

More plainly, the words are thus much in effect: It is reported, that I *Paul* an Apostle, preach circumcision: but the truth is, there is no such matter. For if I taught circumcision, the Iewes maintainers of circumcision, would not persecute me as they doe: neither 40 would they take offence at the preaching of Christ crucified, if I ioyned circumcision with Christ.

The drift. *Paul* here answers a new obiection, which is on this manner,

manner. There is no cause, *Paul*, why thou shouldest thus reprove vs for thou thy selfe art a teacher of circumcision. To this *Paul* makes a double answer. First, he denies the report, and proves his denial by a double reason, one is, because the Iewes still persecuted him; the other is, because they tooke offence still at his preaching of Christ crucified. Secondly, *Paul* answers by pronouncing a curse vpon the false apostles.

Thevle. In the words I consider two things, the report given foorth of *Paul*, and his Apologie. The report was, that *Paul* preached Circumcision. In this wee see what is the condition of the Ministers of the word, namely, to be subiect to slander and defamation, not onely in respect of their liues, but also in respect of their ministerie and doctrine, as if they were heretikes. Thus the Papists at this day reproch the Ministerie of the Church of England, charging it with sundry foule heresies. And many among vs spare not to charge it with the heresie of *Puritanisme*. And I doubt not to auouch it, that some are condemned for heretikes in the historie of the Church, who (if all were known) should be found to be good seruants of God.

1. This verifies the saying of *Ecclesiastes*, Chapter 8. verse 14. There are righteous men to whom it befallles according to the worke of the wicked.

2. Ministers must hence be put in minde to vse circumspection both for the matter and the manner of their preaching.

3. Being defamed, and that wrongfully, they must hence take occasion to be more carefull to please God, as *Dauid* did in the like case, *Psal.* 119. 69.

But how came this report of *Paul*? Answer. Sometime he tolle-rated circumcision, as a thing indifferent for a time: and hereupon circumcised *Timothie*. And vpon this occasion a report is raised that *Paul* preached circumcision. In this wee see the fashion of the world, which is to raise fames, reports, and slanders of all persons, specially vpon magistrates and ministers, and that vpon euery light and vniust occasion. But good men will take no such occasions of raising reports, *Psal.* 15. 3.

But how did *Paul* take this report? Answer. Hee did not requite euill for euill (as the manner of men is,) but hee returns loue and goodnesse for euill: and for this cause (no doubt of purpose) he beginnes his speech on this manner, *Brethren, if I yet preach Circumcision.*

The Apologie and defence followes. And first hee denies the report. And this is: because for his preaching he is persecuted of the,

the Jewes. Here obserue, that they which are called to teach, must preach the Gospel, what trouble or danger soeuer follow, as *Paul* did. It may be demanded, whether a Minister may not in teaching conceale any part of the truth at any time without sinne? *Answ.* In the case of confession when a man is called to giue an account
 5 of his faith, no truth, no not the least truth may bee concealed. Againe, when the soules of men are to be releued, and saued, all concealments are damnable. Yet in the planting or in the restoring of the Church, doctrines most necessary may be concealed. *Paul*
 10 was about two yeares at Ephesus, and spake nothing against *Diana*, but in generall tearmes. If he had, he had planted no Church at Ephesus. Againe, when people be vncapable of doctrine, it may bee concealed, till they be prepared for it. Christ told his disciples that
 15 hee had many things to tell them, which they could not then learne. Some beleeuers must haue no strange meat, but milk only. Thirdly, when the teaching of a lesse truth, hinders the teaching of a fundamentall truth, the lesse truth may be concealed, that the fundamentall truth may be taught, and take place.

Here wee see the fidelitie of *Paul*: if he had sought himselfe, his
 10 honour, profit, or pleasure, he would not haue taught any doctrine that should haue caused persecution. The like mind must be in all teachers, nay in all beleeuers, who are to receiue the Gospel for it selfe, without respect to honour, profit, or pleasure.

Paul addes further in way of defence, that the scandall of the
 15 crosse was not abolished. Hence it followes, that the Gospel must be preached, though all men be offended. God must not be displeased, though all men be displeased, *Actes* 5. 29. Indeed Christ pronounceth a woe against them by whom offences come: but that is meant of offences giuen, and not of offences taken: of which
 30 Christ hath an other rule, *Matth.* 15. 14. *Let them alone, they are the blind leaders of the blind.*

Againe, by the offence of the Jewes, we see the mind of men, who cannot bee content with the death and passion of Christ, vnlesse they may adde workes, or something else of their owne,
 35 for their iustification and saluation. Thus doe the Papists at this day: and the like doe many of the ignorant people among vs, that will bee saued by their good dealing, and their good seruing of God.

Touching the imprecation in the 12. verse, three questions are
 40 to be propounded. The first is, whether *Paul* did well thus to curse his enemies? I answer, yea: for first wee must put a difference betweene the priuate cause of man, and the cause of God. Now

Paul accurseth the false Apostles, not in respect of his owne cause, but in respect of the cause of God; and not as his owne enemies, but as the enemies of God. Secondly, we must distinguish the persons of euill men. Some are curable, and some againe are incurable, of whose saluation there is no hope. Now *Paul* directs his imprecation against persons incurable. And he knew them to be incurable by some extraordinary inspiration or instinct, (as the Prophets and the rest of the Apostles did in sundry cases) and hereupon he curseth sometime euen particular persons, as *Alexander the copper-smith*. 2. *Tim.* 4. 14. Thirdly, we must distinguish the affections of men. Some are carnall, as rash anger, hatred, desire of reuenge, &c. some againe are more spirituall and diuine, as a zeale of Gods glory, and of the safety of Gods Church. Now *Paul* in pronouncing the curse, is not carried with a carnall affection, but with a pure zeale of Gods glory, and with the same Spirit by which he penned this Epistle.

The second question is, whether we may not curse our enemies as *Paul* did? *Ans.* No: for we haue not the like Spirit to discerne the persons of men what they are: and our zeale of Gods glory is mixed with many corrupt affections, and therefore to be suspected. We in our ordinary dealings haue another rule to follow. *Matth.* 5. *blesse and curse not.* If we dare goe beyond the limits of this rule, we must heare the speech of Christ, *Ic know not of what Spirit yee are,* *Luk.* 9. 55.

The third question is, how we should vse the imprecations that are in the Psalmes of *Dauid*, as *Psal.* 109. and in other places of Scripture? *Ans.* They are to be directed generally against the kingdome of the diuell: and they are further to be vsed as Prophecies of the holy Ghost comforting his Church, and procuring a finall sentence vpon the enemies of God.

The word which is translated, *disquiet*, is to be considered: for it signifies to put men out of their estate, and to driue them out of house and home, as enemies doe when they sacke and spoile a towne.

By this we see that the doctrine of iustification by workes or by the law, is a doctrine full of danger and perrill, because it puts men out of their estate in Christ, and bereaues them of their saluation in heauen. Therefore let all men flye from the religion of the Papist, as if they would flye from an army of Spaniards or Turkes.

Contrariwise, they that would prouide well for themselves and their posterity, and plant themselves in a good estate, must take this

this course. They must consider that there is a citie of God in heauen, the gates and suburbs wherof be vpon earth in the assemblies of the Church: that this citie hath many roomes and habitations, and many liberties: that the law whereby this citie is ruled, is the
 5 whole word of God, specially the doctrine of the Gospell. In this city there is all happinesse, and out of it there is nothing but woe and misery. Enter therefore into the suburbs of this city of God: as ye professe the Gospel, so subiect your minds and consciences, and all your affections to it, and bee doers of it in the exercise of faith,
 10 repentance, new obedience. Thus shall you haue a good estate in Christ, and ioyfull habitation in heauen.

-13 *For brethren, yee haue beene called to libertie: onely
 15 use not your libertie as an occasion to the flesh: but by loue
 serue one another.*

The first part of the Epistle touching the faith of the Galatians is ended: and here beginnes the second part touching good life, and it continues from this verse to the 11. verse of the 6. chapter.
 20 In it *Paul* doth two things: first, he propounds the summe of his doctrine, and then after makes a particular declaration of it. The summe of all is propounded in this 13. verse: in which *Paul* sets downe the ground of all good duties, and then two maine rules of good life. The ground is in these words, *Brethren, yee haue been
 25 called to libertie.* And it must be noted, that as these words are the foundation of that which followes, so are they also the reason of that which goes before, and therefore *Paul* saith, *For brethren, &c.* The two rules are in the words following: One in these, *use not your
 30 libertie as an occasion to the flesh:* the other in these, *Doe service one to
 another by loue.*

In the ground of all good duties, namely, the calling to liberty, foure things are to be considered. First, who calls. Secondly, who are called. Thirdly, what is the calling of God. Fourthly, why it is here mentioned by *Paul*.

35 To the first, who calles? I answer, God the Father in Christ by the spirit, for he is absolute Lord of all his creatures: and therefore he may call out of the kingdome of darknesse into his owne kingdome whom he will. And it is God alone that *calleth the things that
 are not, as though they were, Rom. 4. 17.*

40 The second is, who are called? *Answer.* All they that any way answer the calling of God, for *Paul* saith indifferently of all the Galatians, that *they were called.* Now men answer the calling of
 God,

God, some in profession, some in heart, and some in both. And all these are said to be called, yet with some difference. The calling of God is directed first of all and principally to the Elect: and then in the second place, it pertaines to them which are not Elect, because they are mixed in society with the Elect. And hence ariseth a distinction of the calling of God, sometime it is operative: because God signifies and withall workes his will in the Elect: sometimes againe in respect of others it is onely significatiue, when God reueales his will to men, but spares to worke it for iust causes knowneto himselfe.

The third point is, what is the calling to liberty? *Ans.* An action of God, translating men from the kingdome of darkenesse to his owne kingdome. It hath two parts, *inuite ment* and *admission*. *Inuite ment* is, when God offers remission of sinnes and life everlasting to them that beleue, outwardly by the preaching of the Gospel, inwardly by the inspiration of heauenly desires. *Admission* is, when men are entred into the kingdome of grace: and it is either outward or inward. Outward admission is made in baptisme. Inward admission is, when men are taken out of old *Adam*, and by faith ingrafted into Christ: for by this insition into Christ, men are made reall members of Gods kingdome.

The last question is, why *Paul* mentions the calling to liberty in this place? *Ans.* It is the ground of all comfort, by it *Paul* comforts the Corinthians, 1. Cor. 1. 9. Againe, it is the ground of good life. Therefore *Peter* saith, *Be ye holy, as he that hath called you is holy*, 1. Pet. 1. 15. And *Paul*, *Walke worthy the calling wherewith he hath called you*. Eph. 4. 1. If the calling of God doe not moue vs to amendment of life, nothing will doe it.

Wee in England haue heard the calling of God more then forty yeares: and yet very few of vs are moued to change and amend our liues. This shewes our Atheisme and ynbeleefe: here is almost nothing but heauing, shouing, and lifting for the world. Some are held captiues of their couetousnesse, some of their pride, some of their damnable and fleshly lulls: and all this shewes that few or none, so much as dreame of a calling to spirituall liberty.

The first Rule followes: *Only use not your liberty, as an occasion to the flesh.*

The sense. *Flesh* hereby the Papists vnderstand Sensuality or carnall appetites: but hereby is meant the corruption of all the powers of the soule, euen of reason and conscience. *Paul* saith, that the wisdom or vnderstanding of the flesh is enmity to God. Rom. 8. 7.

fleshlines

fleshlinesse therefore pertaines to the vnderstanding. Againe, he saith of some that *they are puffed up in the mind of the flesh*, Coloss. 2. 18. and he willes the Ephesians *to be renewed in the spirit of their minds*. Eph. 4. 23.

5 The meaning then of the rule is this, vse not the benefit of spirituall liberty as an occasion to the flesh to liue according to the flesh. Here I consider three things, what is the abuse of liberty? where is this abuse to be found? and what is the right vse thereof?

10 The first question is, what is the abuse of Christian liberty?

Answer. To vse it as an occasion of fleshly and carnall liberty: and that is done 3. waies. The first is, when men make more things indifferent then God euer made. Thus the Corinthians vsed fornication as a thing indifferent. 1. Cor. 6. To many in these dayes drunkenesse and surfeiting is but a thing indifferent. Men vse not to distinguish a thing indifferent, and the vse of it: but they commonly thinke, that if the thing be indifferent in it selfe, then also the vse of it is indifferent. Thus all abuses of meat, drinke, apparell, all rioting and gaming, dicing and carding, &c. are excused by the names
15 of things indifferent.

Secondly, our liberty is abused by an immoderate vse of the gifts of God. The vse of them is immoderate three waies, first in respect of time, as when *Dines fared deliciously, and was araied in rich attire euery day*. Thus many gentlemen and others offend, when they turne
25 recreation into an occupation. Secondly, the gifts of God are immoderately vsed in respect of themselues; as when men exceed in eating and drinking, as the Prophet saith, *Dent. 29. 19. adding drunkennes to thirst*. Thir dly, in respect of the callings and conditions of men: for euery man is to vse the gifts of God according to his place
30 and condition. They then offend, that being but meane persons, and living by trades, yet for their diet and apparel, are as great gentlemen and gentlewomen.

Thir dly, libertie is abused when the blessings of God are made instruments, and (as it were) flags and banners to display our riot,
35 vanity, ostentation, pride: for this cause sundry things, wherof some are indifferent in themselues, are condemned, *Isa. 3. 16*.

The second question is, where is this abuse? *Answer.* Euen among vs in England. It is the fashion of men to take vnto themselves a toileration of sinning, some vpon the patience of God,
40 others vpon the doctrine of the gracious election of God, saying, that they will liue as they list: because, if they be elected to saluation, they shall certainly be saued whatsoeuer they doe. And some there

there be that take occasion to continue in their sinnes, vpon the mercy of God in the death and passion of Christ. A certaine dweller in this towne of Cambridge made away himselfe. In his bosome was found a writing to this effect, that God did shew mercy on great, grieuous, and desperate sinners: and therefore he said that he hoped of mercy though he hanged himselfe. Of this mind are many ignorant persons who perseuering in their sinnes, yet perswade themselues of mercy: because they haue heard that Christ dyed for mankind. And thus the death of Christ is as it were a licence or letters patents to commit sinne. Againe, great is the abuse of meate, drinke, and apparell. To *Elias* there came an Angell and said, *arise and eate.* 1. *King.* 19. 7. but to the men of our dayes, there had need come an Angell and say, Cease to eate, cease to drinke, cease to game.

The third question is, what is the right vse of Christian liberty? *Ans.* It stands in two things: first of all, we our selues must be renewed and sanctified. *To the pure all things are pure.* 1. *Tit.* 1. 15. The person must first please God before the action can please him. The second is, that beside the lawfull vse of the creatures we must haue a spirituall and holy vse of them. The lawfull vse of the creature I call the politicke vse thereof commonly allowed and taken vp among men. The spirituall vse is whereby we receiue and vse the creature as from the hand of God the Father in Christ according to his will and word. And the godly are not to separate the one vse from the other, but are bound by vertue of the third commandment to take vp an holy vse of euery gift of God. When *Noe* came out of the Arke, so soone as he set foote vpon the earth hee built an altar, offered sacrifice, and called on the name of God: not onely for this end to worship God, but also to sanctifie the earth and all the creatures of God vnto his vse. The like did *Abraham* when he came into the land of Canaan. And to this end we must obserue fower rules. The first, that the creatures of God must be sanctified by the word and prayer. 1. *Tim.* 4. the word must shew vs what we may doe: and prayer obtaines the doing of it. The second rule: we must be circumspect lest we sinne in the vse of the creatures. In this respect *Iob* sends for his children after they had feasted together, and he sanctifies them. *Iob.* 1. 5. The third rule: we must vse the gifts of God with thanksgiuing. *Rom.* 14. 6. Commonly in these dayes there is no feasting or reioicing, vnlesse all memory of God be buried: for that is said to breed melancholy. The fourth rule: We must suffer our selues to be limited and moderated in the vse of our liberty, partly by the law of the Magistrate

strate, and partly by the law of charity, in the case of offence. I say in the use: because liberty it selfe is inwardly in the conscience: and the use of it is often in the outward action: and therefore vnder the order of humane law. The 5. rule: Our liberty must be used for
 5 right ends; as namely the glory of God. 1. Cor. 10. 31. the preservation of nature, and not the pampering of the flesh. Rom. 13. 13. and the good of our neighbour. Rom. 12. 13.

Make conscience to obserue this rule: and the rather, because the holy and spirituall use of Christian liberty, is a signe and token
 10 that thou art in the kingdome of God, and a true member thereof: as on the contrary, the abuse of Gods blessings shewes thee to be still in the kingdome of darknes. When men sell things of great worth for a little value, and then afterward glue themselves to rioting and spending, we commonly say that they are theeves, and no
 15 right owners of the goods which they solde. The like may be said of them that abuse spirituall liberty, that they are but vsurpers, and no right owners of it.

Lastly, it must be obserued, that this rule hath two branches. The first is, that we must not minister to the flesh any occasion of sin-
 20 ning. The second is, that we must giue no occasion of sinning by meanes of Christian liberty,

The second maine rule followes, *Serue one another by loue*: For the right conceiuing of it, I will propound three questions. The first is, why is this rule propounded in this place? *Answer.* It sets
 25 downe the end of all Apostolike doctrine, as Paul sheweth, 1. Tim. 1. 5. *The end of the commandment is loue out of a pure heart, good conscience, faith vnfeined.* Here men commonly vnderstand by the commandment, the morall law. That is indeed a truth, but it is not the meaning of the place. In the third verse Paul sets downe a
 30 commaundement or a denunciation vnto Timothy, that hee and the Pastors of Ephesus, teach no other doctrine, but the doctrine of the Apostles: then in the 5. verse he propounds the summe and substance or end of the foresaid commandment: in the 18. verse after a long *amintopodaton*, he inioynes Timothy to obserue it
 35 carefully. So then the end of all sound doctrine is loue out of a pure heart: and all our preaching must tend to this.

The second question is, what is the loue of our neighbour specified in this rule? *Answer.* It is an affection renewed, when by mee are
 40 moued to wish well to our neighbour in the Lord. I say, an affection, to confute Lombard, who saith, that loue is not an habit in vs (as other vertues are,) but the H. Ghost. I say, it is an affection renewed, to confute the Papist, who teacheth that we haue the true loue of God,
 and

and our neighbour by nature, and that we want nothing but the second acte or the exercise of loue, which they say is from grace. Further, I adde that loue *inclines vs to wish well to our neighbour*: for this is the formall and proper effect of loue, and all this is done when we thinke well, speake and doe well, and that in respect 5 not onely of the body, but also in respect of the soule of our neighbour. Lastly I say that loue to our neighbour must be *in the Lord*. Because we are to loue him in respect that he is a creature of God, and beares his image: and not in respect of honour, profit, or pleasure, which we receiue from him. Loue for such ends, 10 is selfeloue.

The third question is, what is the vse of loue? *Ans.* It serues to make vs seruiceable to our neighbour. *Loue seekes not her owne things.* 1. Cor. 13. Christ was seruant to his enemies in bearing their sinnes vpon the crosse. *Paul that was free from all, became a seruant to all, to win some.* 1. Cor. 9. 19. To Christ we are to doe seruice: and he hath put our neighbo: in his stead, so as that which is done to our neighbour, shall be done to him: our neighbour therefore must be serued of vs; and this is not against our liberty. For wee are free inwardly in conscience, yet in the outward vse of our liberty, we must be 20 seruants to men.

The vse. If we examine our liues by this rule, we shall find that there is very little power of religion among men. There are fixe sorts of men that liue in the breach of this rule. The first are vsurers, who lend for aduantage, when they should lend freely to them that 25 are in need; these serue themselves and make a prey of all. The second sort are ingrossers, who gather in commodities to enrich themselves. The third sort are idle persons of what degree soeuer, that spend their time in eating, drinking, sleeping, gaming: such are but vnprofitable burdens of the earth. To this sort I referre beggars 30 and vagabonds. The fourth sort are Riotous persons that vse to go from alehouse to alehouse, from tauerne to tauerne, and mispend that whereby they should maintaine their families, and be seruiceable to their country. The fift sort are Tradesmen, who in their dealings vse lying, dissembeling fraud, iniustice. They seeke nothing 35 but their priuate aduantage. And this kind of men abounds in the world. The last sort are drowisie and carnall Protestants, who onely seeke the things of this world, and neuer so much as giue good example to seruants or children, or any good counsell. Beside all this, it is the common fault of the world, for men to serue themselves, 40 according to the common saying, *Euery man for himselfe, and God for vs all.* And the best men that are, if they examine themselves, shall find

find that they faile many waies, and come short in the duties of loue to men with whom they liue.

This being so, we are to acknowledge before God this maine offence of ours: and to intreat for pardon of it for Christs sake. And euer hereafter to change our liues, and to reforme them according to this rule. And that is done on this manner. Euery man hath, or ought to haue two callings, a generall, and a particular. The generall is, whereby wee are called to bee Christians. In this calling wee are to doe good to all men by teaching, admonishing, exhorting, and by example of good life. A particular calling, whereby men are called to some estate of life in the family, Church or Commonwealth. And according to the seuerall conditions of particular callings, must euery man in his place doe the best good hee can. The Magistrate must vse his office, first for the maintenance of the Gospell, and then for the execution of iustice. The Minister must preach sound religion in loue of the soules of men. The master of the family must cause his household to embrace the Gospell, and frequent the exercises of religion. Lastly, euery man that is in a trade or office, must apply himselfe to the vttermost of his power, to doe all he can for the good of his countrey: and he must so deale, that he may bee helpfull to all with whom he deales, and hurtfull to none. Wee are, or should be, *trees of right conscience*: our fruite must bee meate for others, and our leaues for medicines. We must be as candles, that spend themselues to giue light to others.

14 For all the law is fulfilled in one word, which is this, thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.

30 *Fulfilled*] comprised, Rom. 13.9. *One word*] One precept: for the holy Ghost calls precepts, words. It may bee demaunded, how the whole law should be fulfilled in the loue of our neighbour? *Answer.* The loue of God, and the loue of our neighbour are ioyned together, as the cause and the effect: and the loue of God is practised in the loue of our neighbour. For God that is inuisible, will be loued in the person of our neighbour whom wee see, and with whom wee conuerse. And the first Commandement of the law, must be included in all the Commandements following: and thus the loue of God is presupposed in euery Commandement of the second Table: he therefore that loues his neighbour, loues God also.

Thou shalt loue] vnderstand both the affection, and the duties of loue.

loue. *Thy neighbour*] any one that is neare vnto vs in respect of mans nature. *I/a. 38. 7.* though he be our enemy, yet if by any occasion he be offered vnto vs of God, he is our neighbour.

As thy selfe] these words signifie not the measure of our loue: as though we should loue our selues in the first place; and then our neighbour in the second place, for there are some cases in which we are to loue our neighbour more then our selues. As for example, we are more to loue the soule of our brother, then our temporal life, and a good subiect is more to loue the life of his Prince then his owne life: here then the Holy Ghost signifies, what must be the manner of our loue; the word (*as*) signifies not *quantity*, but *quality*: and that we are as truly and earnestly with loue to imbrace our neighbour, as our selues.

The scope. The words containe a reason of the second Rule, which may be framed thus: to serue our neighbor in duties of loue, is the keeping of the whole law: therefore this seruice must carefully be performed.

The vse. Here we see that the end of a mans life is to serue God in seruing of man, for this is the summe of the whole law. Seruants are commanded in seruing their Masters, to serue God, and to do whatsoeuer they doe, as vnto God. *Col. 3. 23.* And so every man in his place, in dealing with men, must so deale as if he were to deale with God himselfe. Therefore most men prophane their liues, when they make the scope and drift thereof, to be the getting of riches, and honours. And though they haue great charges, that is no excuse, for the principall end of our liuing here is to performe seruice to men, and in this seruice to do homage to God, for which homage God will giue the honour and riches, which he sees conuenient for vs.

Secondly, here we may obserue what is true religion and godlines, namely to loue and serue God in seruing of man. *He that saith hee loues God, and yet hates his brother, is a lyer. 1. Ioh. 4. 20.* And hence it followes, that to liue out of all society of men, though it be in prayer and fasting, (after Monkish fashion) is no state of perfection, but meere superstition: for that is true and perfect loue of God, that is shewed in duties of loue, and in the edification of our neighbour. Againe, the hypocrisie of sundry Protestants is here discovered. If they come to the Church, & heare sermons, and frequent the Lords table, they thinke they may do afterward what they will; and many such are frequenters of tauerns, and alehouses, and are giuen to riot and licentiousnes. But it is not enough for thee to be holy in the Church: thou maiest be a Saint

in the Church, and a diuell at home. True religion is that which shewes it selfe in thy priuate house, priuate dealings, & in the course of thine owne life: such as thou art in thy particular calling. such art thou indeed and trueth, what shewes soeuer thou makest beforemen.

15 *If ye bite and deuoure one another, take heed that ye be not consumed one of another.*

10 The sense. *If yee bite*] Here *Paul* alludes to the fashion of wilde beastes, as lions, wolues, &c. And by *biting* wee are to vnderstand all iniuries in words, as railing, cursing, slander, backbiting, &c. *Deuoure*] Here *Paul* vnderstands all iniuries in deed, or violence, euen to the shedding of blood. *Take heed lest*] Here *Paul* signifies, that contentions and dissensions, breed the destruction and desolation of the Church.

The scope. These words are a second reason of the second rule, drawne from the dangerous effect of the contrary, thus. Contentions breed the desolation of the Church: therefore doe seruice one to another by loue.

The contents. In the words *Paul* deliueres three things. The first is, that there were greuous contentions in the Church of Galatia. The like also were in the Church of Corinth, 1. Cor. 3. The cause of the former contentions were differences in points of religion. 25 Some of the Galatians (no doubt) withstanding circumcision, and the most of them standing for it. For hereupon great were the dissensions of the Churches in Iudea, Act. 15. 2. Obseruethen, that v-nity is not an infallible and an inseparable marke of the Church of God. Vnity may be out of the church, & dissension in the Church, 30 as here wee see. It may be objected, that there is peace in the kingdome of God, and that there the wolfe and the lambe dwell together, Isa. 11. Answer. This is but in part verified in the kingdome of grace vpon earth: and it is fully accomplished in the kingdome of glory in heauen. Againe, it may be alledged, that the Church is 35 the company of them that truly consent in one & the same faith. Answer. That is properly meant of the Catholike Church: but the case is otherwise in particular Churches, where true beleeuers are mixed with hypocrites, whereupon ariseth much dissension. And of true beleeuers, some are more carnall then spirituall: and that is 40 another cause of dissension, 1. Cor. 3. 3.

The second point, concerns the qualitie of these dissensions. When *Paul* saith, *If yee bite and deuoure, &c.* he signifies that they

were fierce, and violent. And such commonly are dissensions for religion, as appeares by the persecution in Queene *Maries* dayes, the heate whereof nothing could slake but mans blood. Againe, he signifies in these very words, that they were brutish, and bealllike, more beleeeming wolues, lions, dogges, then men. This must teach vs to detest railing, cursing, euill speaking, fighting, vnles it be in the case of necessary defence, for by these actions we degenerate to the condition of beasts, and repell from vs the worke of grace : for Christ of lions, wolues, beares, hath made vs his sheepe and lambes. *I. ai. 11.*

The third point is touching the effect of contention, and that is the ruine and desolation of the Church. The diuision of the members among themselves is the dissolution of the whole body. Differences in points of religion, breede doubting : doubting hinders faith and inuocation, and the free course of the Gospel : and where these be hindered, the Church goes to decay. And by reason of the dissensions that be in these last dayes, many liue as Atheists, and will be of no religion.

By this we are to be admonished to study and to vse all meanes to maintaine Christian peace and concord. *Ephesians 4. 3.* To this end we must remember one generall rule. *Rom. 12. 18.* *Have peace with all men.* And withall we must obserue the cautions which *Paul* addes ; one is, *if it may be* with good conscience, for there are some, with whom there is no peace, vnlesse we sooth them in their vices, or deny our religion, either in whole or in part. The second is, *If it lye in you,* for sometime men are accused, and must of necessity defend themselves. These two cautions obserued, *peace must bee had with all men.*

It may then be demanded, why do not the Protestants make a Pacification with the Papists ? *Ans.* We are content so to do in respect of ciuill society, but not in respect of religion. We haue a commandement to the contrary. *Reuel. 18. 4.* *Come out of Babylon my people, and touch no vncleane thing.* where a pacification is made, both the partes must yeeld somewhat : but we may not yeeld in any point of our religion, to the Papists. In an Instrument of musicke, the strings out of tune are set vp, or set downe, to the rest : and the strings that are in tune are not stirred : Euen so the Papists are to turne to vs, we are not to turne to them : our religion being the doctrine of the Prophets, and Apostles.

Peace, is threetold, *Church peace, Ciuill peace, and Household peace.* All these are to be maintained. Touching *Church peace* I giue three rules. The first is, that for the ending of differences in religion there must

See conferences in a free or christian Councell: the spirit of the Prophets, is subject to the Prophet, 1. Cor. 14. 32. When there arose differences in the Churches of Iudea, the Apostles and Elders came together to inquire of the matter, *Actes 15. 6.* And this is a thing much to be desired in these dayes, specially in these Westerne parts of the world. It may be demaunded, why did not the Protestants ioyne with the Papists at the Councell of Trent? *Answer.* From the first Session it was more then sixe yeares before any safe conduct was given to the Protestants: and at their appearing in the Councel, exception was taken against their letters, and they dismissed. And when they appeared the second time vpon new safe conduct, the Councell was the next day reiourned for two yeares. And when safe conduct was given the third time, the Protestant Princes refused to send their Diuines: because they had bin twise mocked. Moreouer, the Councell was not a free Councell: because the Pope himselfe was both partie, and iudge.

The second rule. *There must be a Christian toleration one of another, Ephes. 4. 2.* Heere that wee mistaken not, I propound two questions. One is, in what there must be a toleration? *Answer.* A toleration presupposeth an error or defect in our brother. An error is either in iudgement, or manners. An error in iudgement, is either in the foundation of religion, or beside the foundation, in lighter matters: if the error be in the foundation, there is no toleration of it. If it be in some lesser matter, a toleration is to be vsed according to the rule of the Apostle, *If yee be otherwise minded, God will reueale it, Philip. 3. 15.* When others see not that which wee see, we must not presently condemne them, but tolerate their ignorance, till God reueale his trueth vnto them. Againe, errors in manners be of two sorts, some without offence, as haillinesse, frowardnesse, vaine gloriousnesse, &c. these we must tolerate, *Prou. 19. 11.* and others with open offence, and such admit no toleration, *1. Cor. 5. 11.*

The second question is, to what end we must tolerate the infirmities and ignorances of our brethren? *Answer.* Toleration must tend to the good and edification of men, *Rom. 15. 2.* We must not so tolerate, as that we approoue of the least vice, or betray the least part of Gods truth.

It may here be demanded, whether there may not be a toleration for Popery? *Ans.* No. The toleration of two religions in one kingdome, is the overthrow of peace. Againe, Popery is a religion both heretical and schismaticall. It may be said, that faith and conscience is free. I answer, though faith in the heart, and conscience

in it selfe be free in respect of mans authoritie: yet is not the publishing of faith and the profession of conscience free in like sort, but it stands subiect to the power of the Magistrate.

The third rule. *Euery man in his place, specially teachers must set themselves to build the Church, Iud. 5. 20. Ephes. 4. 12.* Indeed the truth is to be defended: but marke how. The truth must be confessed, when time and occasion serues, without opposition: this done, all contentions laid aside, we must set our selues to build the Church. And the rather Ministers of Gods word in England must remember this: because while wee are struing among our selues in sundry points of difference, the Papist our common enemy, gets ground.

Touching *civill peace*, it must be remembred, that the peace and good estate of Ierusalem stood in this, that it was made the seat of Gods Sanctuary and the throne of iustice, *Psalme. 122.* When the arke was in the house of *Obed-Edom*, all things prospered with him. Now in the New Testament, the preaching of the Gospell, inuocation of Gods name, with the vse of the Sacraments, come in the roome of the Sanctuary. *Civill peace* then is maintained, when men yeld subiection to the Gospel of Christ, which brings peace to all that receiue it.

Touching *household peace*, I giue two rules. One is, that *gubernours of families must urge and compell all under them to admit, (at the least outwardly,) the practise of religion in the exercises of faith, repentance, new obedience.* Thus did *Abraham, Gen. 17.* and *Iosua c. 24.* They that doe not first of al consent in Christ, cannot consent among themselves. Secondly, it must be obserued, that a family is the schoole of God, in which hee will exercise our faith, inuocation, loue, patience, long suffering, &c. And there is more vertue to bee seene in the well ordering of a family, then in the pretended holynesse of Monkish cloisters.

Thus we see how we are to maintaine the vnitie of the spirit in the bond of peace. For the better inforcing of this dutie, *Paul, Eph. 4. 4.* giues seuen reasons: One body, one spirit, one hope of eternall life, one Lord, one faith, one baptism, one Father of all. It may be said, we are at peace, what needs all this adoe? *Answer.* The peace of many, is peace in drunkenness, (called good fellowship,) peace in prephaneness & wickednes. This is the diuels peace, where he beares the sway. The peace of which I now speake, is in the Lord, and in the true worship of God: of which reade *I/a. 2.* where men are said hand in hand to goe vp to the Mountaine of the Lord, that they may heare his will, and ioyntly obey it.

16 Then I say, walke in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfill the lusts of the flesh.

The scope. Here Paul returns to the first rule v. 13. and shewes the way, how it is to be obserued, thus, *If ye walke in the Spirit, ye shall not fulfill the lusts of the flesh*: and when the lusts of the flesh are not fulfilled, there shall no occasion be giuen to the flesh, by the vse of Christian liberty.

The words containe two parts: a Rule, *walke in the Spirit*: and the benefit that comes by the rule, *Ye shall not fulfill the lustes of the flesh*.

In the rule I consider two things, what is the Spirit, and what is walking. *The Spirit is the gift of regeneration, lost by Adam, restored by Christ*. I say it is a gift: and this gift is tearmed by the name of the Spirit: because the Spirit worketh it immediatly in vs, from the Father and the Sonne. Againe, I say it is a gift of regeneration, to make a distinction betweene it, and ciuill vertue. For there is a gift of regeneration, which mortifies corruption, and a gift of restraint, which serues onely to keepe in corruption. Of this second kind, are all ciuill vertues, in naturall and heathen men, and not of the first. *Ioseph* is chaste, and so was *Xenocrates*. *Iosephs* chastity is a part of regeneration, and proceedes from the Spirit here mentioned, but the chastity of *Xenocrates* is not so, proceeding onely from the generall prouidence of God, and not from the Spirit of Sanctification. The like I say of all other ciuill vertues.

More plainely, The Spirit is a Diuine nature, quality, or condition, whereby we are made conformable to Christ, in righteousness, and holines.

The Spirit hath five properties. The first, that it is a rich and liberall grace of God. For it containes in it the seede of all vertues, and all necessary graces of God: because it comes in the roome of originall sinne, which containes in it, the seedes of all vices or sinnes.

The second is the largenes of it, for this Spirit is in all the powers of them that are regenerate, that is, in the mind, conscience, wil, affections, and in the sensuall appetite. 1. *Thef. 5 23*. And he that is sanctified in one part, is sanctified in all. Hence it follows, that they which haue plenty of illumination, without change of affection, and life, are indeed carnall, and not spirituall.

The third property is sincerity, for the grace of God is without falshood or guile. *Psalme. 32 1*. Hence ariseth the difference betweene the godly man, and an hypocrite: betweene the workes

of nature, and the workes of grace. There are men that in distresse desire the assistance and fauour of God: and they do it without the spirit of God: for they do it deceitfully, desiring Gods fauour not for it selfe, but in respect of some euill from which they would be deliuered, as the Mariners in *Ionas*, and *Pharao* did. Againe, there are men, that mourne for their sinnes without the Spirit of God. For there is much falshood in their mourning: because they mourn for sinne in respect of the punishment thereof, and not in respect of the offence of God. Lastly, there are that pretend a loue to God, and yet want the Spirit; for they loue God in respect of his benefits, as *Saul* loued God for a kingdome: such loue is mercenary, and a worke of nature, whereas the loue which is from the Spirit, makes vs loue God for himselfe.

The fourth property is excellency, for the Spirit of grace in Christians is more excellent then the grace of creation, in two respects. First, in respect of the beginning thereof. For the Spirit is from Christ the second *Adam*, both God and man: the grace of creation should haue beene conueyed vnto vs from the first *Adam*, but a meere man, if he had stood. Secondly, in respect of constancy, for God gaue to *Adam* the will to perseuere if he would: he giueth further to beleeuers, both the will to perseuere, and the deed.

The fift property is liueliness, whereby the Spirit is effectual in operation. *Elisha* saith that the Spirit compelled him, and was in him as a vessel of new wine which must haue a vent. *Iob* 32. 19. Of the operation of the Spirit, I deliuer three things. The first, that the Spirit workes in and by the word of God: which therefore is called the *Ministry of the Spirit*. 2. *Corin.* 3. 6. The second, that the Spirit worketh by certaine degrees. The first degree and the very first beginning of his diuine operation, is, to make vs feeble in what great need we stand of Christ, and to desire to be reconciled and turned vnto God. This is the first motion of the Spirit in vs: and they which want this, haue nothing as yet of the grace of God in them. The third, that the whole worke of the Spirit may be reduced to three actions. The first is, to cast downe euery thing in vs, that exalts it selfe against God, 2. *Cor.* 10. as namely, to beate downe erroneous reason, and rebellious affection, and to put a man out of heart with his chiefe delights, and with his owne selfe. The second action is, to kindle in our hearts a care and desire of reconciliation with God in Christ: hence the Spirit is called the Spirit of grace and supplication. *Zach.* 12. The third action is, to write the law in our hearts: and that is done by putting a new light of know-

knowledge into the minde, and new inclinations into the will, and affections.

Thus much of the Spirit. *Walking in the Spirit*, is, to Order our liues according to the direction, and motion of the Spirit. For, as
 5 the Spirit renews our nature within, so it makes vs to change and renew our actions, in three respects. First, it makes vs put a further beginning to our actions, then nature can afford, causing vs to doe them in faith, whereby we beleue, that our persons please God in Christ, that our worke to be done please God, that the defect of
 10 the worke is pardoned. Secondly, the Spirit makes vs doe our actions in a new manner, namely, in obedience to the written word. Thirdly, it makes vs put a new end to our actions, that is, to intend and desire to honour God in the things that we doe. For example. A man is wronged by his neighbour: and nature tells him that he
 15 must requite euill with euill: yet he resolues to doe otherwise: for (saith he) God in Christ hath forgiven me many sinnes: therefore must I forgive my neighbour. And he remembreth that *vengeance is Gods*: and that he is taught *so to aske pardon as he forgiveth others*. And hereupon he sets himselfe to requite euill with goodnesse.
 20 This is to liue in the Spirit.

The vse. By this rule we see that most of vs faile in our duties. For many of vs professing Christ, liue not according to the lawes of nature, in our common dealings. We minde earthly things: and therefore we are carnall. It is a principle with many,
 25 that if we keepe the Church, obserue the Queenes laws (which are indeed to be obserued) and auoid open and grosse sinnes, we doe all that God requires at our hands. Hereupon to walke in the Spirit, is thought to be a worke of precisenes, more then needes. And they which deeme it to be a worke of precisenesse, walke not in the
 30 Spirit. And indeede they which haue receiued the greatest measure of the Spirit, must say with *Paul*, that they are carnall, *sold vnder sinne, Rom. 7. 14.*

Secondly, this rule telleth vs, that we must become spirituall men, such as make conscience of euery sinne, and doe things law-
 35 full in spirituall manner, in faith, and obedience, and not as carnall men doe them carnally. It may be said, that Ministers of the word must be spirituall men. I answer, if thou whatsoeuer thou art, be not spirituall, thou hast no part in Christ. *Rom. 8.* And the rather, thou must be spirituall; because a naturall man may doe the outward
 40 duties of religion in a carnall sort.

Thirdly, we must not iudge any mans estate before God, by any one, or some few actions, either good or badde, but by his

walking, or by the course of his life, which, if it bee carnall, it shewes the partie to be carnall: if it be spirituall, it shewes him to be spirituall.

The benefit that ariseth by the keeping of the rule, followes in these words, *Ye shall not fulfill the lusts of the flesh.*

Flesh] The corruption of nature, the root of all sinnes.

Lusts] Inordinate motions in the mind, wil, and affections. Thus largely is lust taken in the tenth commandment, which condemneth the first motions to euill.

Fulfill] Fulfilling, is not a simple doing of euill, but the accomplishing of lust with loue, pleasure, and full consent of will: as also perseverance in euill, by adding sinne to sinne.

A question. How farre doeth the childe of God proceed in the lust of the flesh? *Answer.* He is assaulted by the lusts of the flesh: but he doth not accomplish them. More plainly: there are five degrees of lust, *Suggestion, delight, consent, the act, perseverance in the act.* *Suggestion*, and *delight*, whereby the mind is drawne away, are incident to the child of God: *Consent* is not, ordinarily: and if at any time the child of God consent to the lusts of his flesh, it is but in part, and against his purpose, because he is ouercarried. Likewise the *act*, or *execution of lust*, is not ordinarily and vsually in the child of God: If at any time hee fall, he may say with *Paul*, *I doe that which I hate.* Lastly, perseverance in euill doth not befall the child of God: because vpon his fall he recouers himselfe by new repentance. In this sense *S. Iohn* saith, *Hee that is borne of God, sinnes not,* 1. *Iohn* 3. 9.

The vse. Hence it followes, that the lust of the flesh is in the childe of God to the death: and consequently they doe not fulfill the law, neither can they bee iustified thereby, as Popish doctrine is.

Secondly, our dutie is not to accomplish the lusts of the flesh, but to resist them to the vttermost, *Rom.* 13. 14.

Thirdly, heere is comfort for the seruants of God. Some man may say, I am vexed and turmoiled with wicked thoughts and desires, so as I feare I am not Gods child. I answer againe, for all this despaire not. For, if thou hate and detest the lusts, that are in thee: if thou resist them, and wage battell against them: if being ouertaken at any time, thou recouer thy selfe by new repentance, they shall neuer be laid to thy charge to condemnation, *Rom.* 8. 1. It is heere made a prerogative of Gods childe, when the lusts of the flesh are in him, not to accomplish them, or to liue in subiection to them.

17 For the flesh lusteth against the spirit, and the spirit against the flesh, and they are contrary one to another, so that ye cannot doe the things which yee would.

5 These words are a reason of the former verse, thus: If ye walke in the spirit, ye shall not fulfill the lusts of the flesh: for the flesh and spirit being contrary, mutually resist and withstand one another, so as ye can neither doe the good, nor the euill, which ye would.

10 Paul here sets forth a spirituall combate, of which sixethings are to be considered. The first is, concerning the parties by whom the combate is made: namely, *the flesh*, and *the spirit*. *The flesh* signifies the corruption of the whole nature of man: and *the spirit* is the gift of regeneration, (as hath bene shewed.) It may be demanded,

15 how these twaine being but qualities, can be said to fight together?

Answer. The flesh and the spirit are mixed together in the whole man regenerate, and in all the powers of the soule of man. Fire and water are said to be mixed in compound bodies: light and darknes are mixed in the aire at the dawning of the day. In a vessell of luke

20 warme water, heate and cold are mixed together, wee cannot say, that the water is in one part hot, and in another cold, but the whole quantity of water is hot in part, and cold in part. Euen so the man regenerate, is not in one part flesh, and in another part spirit, but the whole mind is partly flesh, and partly spirit, and so are the will
25 and affections throughout, partly spirituall, and partly carnall. Now vpon this mixture it comes to passe that the powers of the soule are carried and disposed diuers wayes: and heereupon fol-
lowes the combate.

The second point concernes the meanes whereby this com-
30 bate is made: and that is, a twofold concupiscence, expresse in these words, *the flesh lusteth against the spirit, and the spirit against the flesh*. The lust of the flesh shewes it selfe in two actions. The first is, to defile and repress the good motions of the spirit. In this respect Paul saith, *When I would doe good, euill is present, and the law of the flesh*

35 *rebell's against the law of the mind*, Rom. 7. 21, 23. Hereupon the flesh is fitly resembled by the disease called *Ephialtes*, or *the mare*, in which men in their slumber, thinke they feele a thir as heauy as a mountaine lying on their breasts, which they cannot remooue.

The second action of the flesh, is, to bring forth and to fill the
40 minde with wicked cogitations, and rebellious inclinations. In this respect concupiscence is said to tempt, intice, & draw away the minde of man, James 1. 14. Againe, the lust of the spirit hath two
other

other actions. The first is, to curbe and restrain the flesh. Thus *S. John* saith, that the seed of grace keeps the regenerate that they cannot sin, 1. *John* 3. 9. The second action of the spirit is, to ingender good motions, cogitations, and inclinations, agreeable to the will of God. Thus *David* saith, that his reines did teach him in the night season, *Psal.* 5 16. And the Prophet *Isai* saith, Thine eare shall heare a voice, saying, Heere is the way, walke in it, when thou turnest to the right hand, or to the left, c. 30. v. 21. And this voice, (no doubt) is not onely the voice of such as be teachers, but also the inward voice of the spirit of God in vs. And thus by the concurrence of these contrary actions in 10 one and the same man, is this combate made.

The third point is, concerning the cause of this combate, in these words (*and these are contrary one to another.*) The contrarietie of the flesh and the spirit makes the combate. And the contrarietie is very great, for the spirit is the gift of righteousness: and the flesh stands 15 in a double opposition to it, for it is first of all the want of righteousness, and secondly, a pronenesse to all vnrighteousnes: that is to say, not a single, but a double priuation or want of the grace, or gift of God. Hence I gather, that man hath no freedome of will in good duties, before his conuersion, because hee is then wholly 20 flesh, and wants the spirit of God: and the spirit is flat contrary to the flesh: and one contrary hath no power at all to bring forth the effect of his contrary. And hence it followes, that there are no such workes whereby a man may prepare himselfe to his owne iustification; for though the mind be insightned with a general faith, 25 yet man before he be iustified, is nothing but flesh: and flesh being in nature opposite to the spirit, can make no preparation for the spirit, no more then darkenesse can make preparation for the entrance of light.

The fourth point, is, concerning the persons in whom this combate 30 is to bee found. And they are beleeuers, (not vnbeleeuers or wicked men:) such as the Galatians were, to whom this combat is said to belong. It may be alledged, that naturall men haue a combate in them. For they can say, *I see and approoue that which is good, but I doe that which is naught.* Answer. This combate is betweene the naturall conscience, and rebellious affection: and it is incident to all 35 men, that haue in them any conscience, or light of reason. But the combate of the flesh and the spirit is of an other kinde, for in it the minde is carried against it selfe, the will against it selfe, and the affections against themselues: by reason they are partly spirituall, 40 and partly carnall. Secondly, not all beleeuers haue this combate in them, but onely such as bee of yeares: for infants, though they haue

haue the seed of grace in them, yet doe they want the act or exercise thereof: and therefore they feele not this combate, because it stands in action. Thirdly, this combate is in the godly for the time of this life onely, because in death the flesh is abolished, and consequently the combate it selfe.

The fift poynt is, in what things doeth this combate shew it selfe. *Answer.* In all the actions of men regenerate, which *Paul* signifies, when he saith, *Ye cannot doe the things which ye would.* For example: in prayer, sometime wee feele feruent desires, and sometime againe deadnesse of spirit; sometimes faith, sometimes doubting. This combate is in all the actions of the godly, specially in good actions. Thus much *Paul* teacheth, when hee saith, *I finde by the Law of God, that when I would doe good, euill is present, Rom. 7. 21.* And, *I doe not the good which I would, but the euill which I would not, that doe I,* verse 19. And that we mistake not, it must bee remembred, that *Paul* speakes all this of himselfe, as being regenerate: that hee speakes it not of this or that action, but of the course of his life, in which he willed and indeauoured to do that which was good and acceptable to God. And that appeares by the very words, when he saith, *To will is present with mee.* And, *I would doe good, but I doe it not.* Marke further, while *Paul* willes and indeauours to doe that which is good, if he faile and doe amisse, hee may well say, *It is not I that doe it, but the flesh that dwells in mee.* And vngodly men, for the couering of their wickednesse, if they say (as they doe) that *it is their flesh that sinneth, and not they,* they abuse the holy doctrine and example of *Paul*.

The last point, concernes the effect of the combate, which is to hinder the godly, that they cannot doe that which they would, and that three wayes. First, it makes them that they cannot sinne, that is, liue in practise of any one sinne, 1. *John* 3. 9. Secondly, if at any time they fall, it stayes and keepes them, that they sinne not with full consent of will. For they say when they sinne, *The euill which I hate, that doe I.* Thirdly, though in the ordinarie course of their liues they doe that which is good, yet by reason of this combate, they faile in the doing of it. *Romanes* 7. 18. *To will is present with mee, but I finde no meanes to fulfill or accomplish that which is good.* Euen as a sicke man that is in recouerie, for his affection, thinks hee is able to walke a mile or twaine, and yet by reason of faintnesse and weakenesse, is scarce able to walke once or twice about his chamber. So the regenerate man, for affection inclines to the best things: and yet by reason of the flesh, failes in the doing of them.

Thus

Thus much of the combate, the vse followes. Hence I gather, that concupiscence or lust after baptisme, in the regenerate, is a sinne. For the lust of the Spirit, is the thing that God requi-
 reth and approoueth: now the lust of the flesh is directly contrary
 to it, as a defect or priuation thereof: and therefore the lust
 of the flesh is properly a sinne, whether consent of will goe with
 it, or no.

Againe, hence it followes, that workes of the regenerate, are
 mixed workes, that is, good workes indeed, yet not perfectly
 good, but partly euill: for such as the cause is, such is the effect:
 now the minde and will of man, are the cause of his workes, and
 the mind is partly carnall, and partly spirituall: so also is the will:
 and therefore the workes that proceed from them, are partly spiri-
 tuall, and in part carnall. Vpon this ground it followes, that all the
 workes of regenerate men, are sinfull, and in the rigour of iustice
 deserue damnation. *Obiect.* Sinne is the transgression of the law:
 good workes are no transgression of the law: therefore good workes
 are no sinnes. I answer to the *minor*. The transgression of the law
 is two fold: One, which is directly against the law, both for mat-
 ter, and manner: the second is, when that is done which the law
 requires, but not in that maner it should be done. And thus good
 workes become sinfull. The dutie which the law requires, is done,
 but it is not done perfectly as it ought to be done, by reason of the
 flesh. Secondly, it is alledged that good workes are from the spirit
 of God: and that nothing proceeding from the spirit of God is sin.
Answer. Things proceeding from the spirit of God alone, or from
 the spirit immediatly, are no sinnes: now good workes proceed not
 only from the spirit, but also from the mind and will of man, as in-
 struments of the spirit. And when an effect proceeds from sundry
 causes that are subordinate, it takes vnto it the nature of the second
 cause: hereupon workes are partly spirituall, and partly carnall, as
 the mind and will of the doer is. Thirdly, it is alledged, that good
 workes please God: and that things pleasing God, are no sinnes.
Answer. They please God; because the doer is in Christ, and so plea-
 seth God. Againe, they please not God before, or without pardon:
 for they are accepted, because God approoues his owne work in vs,
 and pardons the defect therof. Lastly, some object on this manner.
 No sinnes are to be done: good workes are sinnes: therefore not
 to be done. *Answer.* They are not simply sinnes, but onely by ac-
 cident. For as God commands them, they are good: and as godly
 men doe them, they are good in part. Now the reason holds one-
 ly thus: That which is sinne, so farre forth as it is a sinne, or if it
 be

be simply a sinne, is not to be done. Now then vpon this doctrine it followes, that there is no iustification by workes, nor no fulfilling of the law, for the time of this life.

Thirdly, hence it followes, that the grace of God for the time of
5 this life, is mixed with his contrary, the corruption of the flesh. This mixture the godly feeble in themselves to the great griefe of their hearts. When they would beleue, their mindes are oppressed with vnbeleefe. They see more ignorance in themselves, then light of knowledge. There are a number amongst vs, that say, they know
10 as much as all the world can teach them, that they doe perfectly beleue in Christ, and euer did, that they loue God with all their hearts, and did neuer so much as doubt of the mercy of God. But these men are void of the grace of God: they are like empty barrels that make a great sound: they neuer knew what is meant by
15 the combate of the flesh, and Spirit.

Fourthly, we are here to be admonished, in all duties of religion to vse industry, and paines, by willing, striving, and indeuouring to the vttermost, to do that which we ought to doe. We must vse
asking, seeking, knocking, *Math. 7. 7.* We must with Paul vse wrestling in
20 our prayers to God, *Rom. 1. 5. 30.* They that would haue knowledge in the booke of God, must doe more then heare a Sermon: they must strue against their ignorance, and blindnesse, and laboriously exercise their senses in the discerning of good and euill. They that would beleue, must strue against their naturall vnbeleefe,
25 and indeauour to beleue. *Blessed (saith Salomon, Prov. 28.) is the man that feareth himselfe, or mures himselfe to feare.* Paul saith of himselfe, that hee laboured and tooke paines to keepe a good conscience. *Act. 24. 16.*

Lastly, by reason of this combate, we are put in minde to vse sobriety, and watchfulness ouer our owne corruptions, with much and
30 instant prayer, lest we fall into temptation. *Math. 26. 41.* We should practise these more then we doe: for beside the enemies without, we haue an enemy within, that seekes our perdition.

35 18 *And if ye be led by the Spirit, ye are not vnder the law.*

In the 13. verse Paul propounds a maine rule of good life, *Giue no occasion to the flesh* and for the better keeping of this, he giues a second rule, v. 16. *Walke in the spirit.* Of this second rule he giues two
40 reasons. The first is taken from the contrariety of the flesh and the spirit, v. 17. The second is in these words: *they that walke according to the spirit, are freed from the curse of the law.*

In these words, *Paul* sets downe three things. The first is, the office of the spirit, which is, first of all, to regenerate and renew all the powers of the soule; and secondly, to guide and conduct them that are regenerate, *Psal. 143. 10.* In this guidance or conduction, there are foure actions of the spirit. The first is, *Preseruation*, whereby the holy Ghost maintains the gift of regeneration in them that are regenerate. The second is, *Cooperation*, whereby the will of God as the first cause, workes together with the regenerate will of man, as the second cause. And without this cooperation, mans will brings forth no good action: no more then the tree which is apt to bring forth fruite, yeeldes fruite indeed, till it haue the prelence and cooperation of the Sunne, and that in the season of the yeare. The third is, *Direction*, whereby the spirit of God ordereth and establisheth the minde, will, and affections in good duties, *2. Thess. 3. 5.* The last is, *Excitation*, whereby the spirit stirres, and still moues the will and minde, after they are regenerate: because for the time of this life, the grace of God is hindred and oppressed by the flesh. Hereupon after regeneration, there must still bee new *inclining*, *Psal. 119. 36.* new *drawing*, *Cant. 1. 3.* new *working* of the will and the deed, *Phil. 2. 13.*

Hence it follows, that beside the antecedent, and first grace, there is necessary a subsequent, or second grace. For we do not that good which we can doe, vnlesse God by a second grace make vs doe it, as he made vs able to doe it by the first grace.

The second thing is, the Office of all true beleeuers: and that is, to resigne themselues in subiection to the worke of Gods spirit. Now Gods spirit workes in and by the word of God. And heereupon this subiection hath two parts. The first is, to make triall, inquirie, and examination, what is the good will of God in every thing, *Romanes 12. 2.* Thus did *Dauid*, *Psal. 119. 94. I am shine, saue me, for I seeke thy commandments.* The second part is, to denie our selues, and to conforme our mindes, consciences, willes, affections in all things to the aforelaid will of God, *Rom. 12. 2.* Let all such as desire to be spirituall, remember and make conscience to practise this.

The third is, the priuiledge of beleeuers, in the last words, *Ye are not vnder the law.* Vnderstand this, in respect of the curse and condemnation of the law: for otherwise wee are all vnder the law, as it is the rule of good life. The priuiledge then is, that God doth not impute the defects of obedience to such as truly beleeeue and repent, but hee accepts their imperfect obedience, as perfect and absolute. This serues to comfort them that grieve, because they feele

feele the want of sanctification in themselves. For if they can and doe will that which is good, & indeauour themselves in the course of their liues according to their will, let them not feare ouermuch, when their obedience is defectiue: because they are not vnder the
 5 rigour of the law: and therefore God accepts the will and indeauour to obey, for obedience. And the consideration of Gods mercifull acceptation, must stir vs vp to an earnest care and conscience of good duties.

10 19 Moreouer, the workes of the flesh are manifest, which are adultery, fornication, uncleannesse, wantonnesse,

20 Idolatrie, witchcraft, hatred, debate, emulations, wrath, contentions, seditions, heresies,

15 21 Enuie, murthers, drunkennesse, gluttony, and such like: whereof I tell you before (as I also haue told you before) that they which doe such things, shall not inherite the kingdome of God.

Paul before deliuered his rule in generall tearmes, Give no occasion to the flesh: and, fulfill not the lusts of the flesh. Now he proceeds
 20 further in way of declaration, to make a Catalogue or rehearfall of the particular workes of the flesh, which were in vse, and knowne to the Galatians. And this hee doeth for weightie cause. For we are full of blindnesse, and see not our corruption: and wee
 25 are full of hypocrisie, and therefore ready to esteeme our selues spirituall, when we are carnall. And therefore this Catalogue serues fitly as a table, or glasse, to discouer the corruption of mans heart, by the fruits thereof.

After Pauls example, euery man shall doe well to make a
 30 catalogue of the sinnes of his whole life. By this meanes shall we better know our selues, and take a manifest view of our sinnefull condition.

In this Catalogue, I consider three things: the condition of the works of the flesh: the kinds of them: and the punishment there-
 35 of. The condition is, that the workes of the flesh are said to be manifest, not onely to God, but euen to men that haue the light of reason, and natural conscience. Hence it followes, that there is matter sufficient for the condemnation of them that neuer knew the Gospell. For though the flesh it selfe be secret and hidden, yet the
 40 works of the flesh are manifest to the naturall man. And this must further admonish vs, neuer to hide or excuse our sinnes, but freely to confesse them before God, and before men also, when need requires.

quires. Whether we confesse them or no, they are manifest : and the ingenuous confessing or vncouering of them, is the way to couer them. *Psal.* 32. 1. 4.

Touching the kinds or sorts of the workes of the flesh, they are in number seuentene : and I may reduce them to foure heads. 5
The first sort, are against chastity; the second, against religion; the third, against charitie; the last, against temperance.

The workes of the flesh against chastitie, are foure; and they are placed in the first ranke, for iust cause: for by them, men are brought to reprobate mindes. *Rom.* 1. 28. and to be without sense or feeling. 10
Eph. 4. 19. and the body which should be the Temple of the Holy Ghost, is made a stable and a stie for the diuell.

Adulterie it is the incontinency of persons married, or of persons whereof one at the least is married, or betrothed. I say betrothed: becaule one and the same punishment is designed to married, and betrothed 15 persons: and therefore the sinne is alike in both.

If adultery, which is the breach of wedlocke, be a worke of the flesh, then damnable is the decretall of Pope *Syriscus*, that marriage it selfe was the pollution of the flesh. It may be objected, that yong widdowes by marrying haue damnation, and breake the faith of bap- 20
tisme. 1. *Timoth.* 5. 12. Answer. They are not said to breake the faith of baptisme, because they marry: but because they waxe wanton against Christ, and so marry: that is, cast off the reines of obedience, by committing fornication, and then to couer their offence, they marry. This I take to be the right sense of that 25 place.

Adultery is named in the first place, and that for speciall cause. For as it is a common, so it is also a great sinne. For it is the breach of the couenant of marriage, made in the presence of God, and vnto God: and therefore it is called the couenant of God. *Pro.* 2. 17. It is the 30 punishment of Idolatry. *Rom.* 1. 24. It is a sinne greater then theft. *Prou.* 6. 30. 32. The committers of this sinne cut off themselves from humane society, and become men of death, and women of death, according to Gods law. And it will neuer be well with humane society, till adulterers be made fellows, their liues taken from them, 35 and their goods confiscate. Lastly, this sinne brings the ruine of the families of adulterous persons: and it sets a fire in them that burnes to destruction.

Fornication it is the incontinencie of single persons. Marke how it is made a manifest worke of the flesh. Hence it followes, that 40
fornication is no light matter, or a thing indifferent, as some haue taught. It may be objected, that it is numbred among things indifferent,

indifferent, *Act. 15. 29.* for with strangled, and blood, is ioyned for-
 mication. *Ans.* The Gentils indeed esteemed it as a thing indifferent:
 and hereupon it may be, it is ioyned with things indifferent. But
 the iudgment of the Church was otherwise: & this opinion of the
 5 Gentiles is confuted by *Paul, 1. Cor. 6.* Againe, it may be objected,
 that the Lord commaunded the Prophet *Ose* to take vnto him an
 harlot, *Ose 1. 2.* *Answer.* It was done in type or figure: and then the
 words of the Lord cary this sense, *Take vnto thee a wife of fornications,*
 that is, prophesie and publish, that thou art like one that takes a wife
 10 of fornication. Againe, if the thing were done indeed, yet did not
 the Prophet take an harlot, to liue in fornication with her, but at
 Gods commandement, to liue with her according to Gods ordi-
 nance, namely, in marriage.

Again, hence I gather, that there is no warrant for the toleration
 15 of fornication. For it is a foule & manifest work of the flesh. Magi-
 strates may not do euill, that good may come therof, *Rom. 3. 8.* Whosoever
 doeth euill, must feare: because the Magistrate beares the sword to
 punish, *Rom. 13. 4.* And the commandement of God was, that there
 must be no whore in Israel, *Dent. 23.* Therefore the permission of the
 20 stewes in Rome is without warrant: & the rather, because there the
 prohibition of marriage (in sundry orders of men) beares sway.

Vncleannesse] The incontinenzie against nature, as incest, the
 sinne of Sodom, and such like. Marke, where these sinnes were
 knowne, there they are named particularly by *Paul*, as among the
 25 Romanes, *Rom. 1. 27, 28.* and to the Corinthians, *1. Cor. 6. 9, 10.* but
 where they were not knowne, as in Galatia, there they are onely
 mentioned generally, lest by the naming of them, he should after a
 sort teach them.

Wantonnesse] That is, the open profession and ostentation of in-
 30 continency, by vnchast words, wanton gestures, and wanton appa-
 rell. Hence it appeares, that wee are to detest all signes of inconti-
 nencie: and that we are to be chaste not only in deed, but also in our
 words, gestures, and behaviours.

The punishment of these sinnes is in v. 21. in these words, *They*
 35 *which doe these things, shall not inherit the kingdome of God.* And it must
 be remembred, that this threat or curse must bee applied to euery
 one of these sinnes particularly.

The vse. There are a number of men that liue secretly in these
 sinnes, adultery, fornication, &c. And because they professe Chri-
 40 stian religion, and sometime come to the Church, and to the Lords
 Table, they thinke all is well, and they suppose there is no dan-
 ger. Thus make they a covenant with hell and death, *Isa. 28.* But

they deceive themselves: for God is vnchangeable, and all his threats shall be accomplished. And no adulterer, no fornicatour, no vncleane person shall enter into the kingdome of God, whatsoeuer men suppose, or dreame.

Secondly, by the consideration of this threat, we are admonished 5 to flye adultery, fornication, wantonnesse, &c. They say, these are but tricks of youth. Belike then it is but a tricke, to lose the kingdome of heaven. *Salomon* saith, *Blessed is the man that feareth, or causeth himselfe to feare. Prou. 28. 14.* Now that shall be done, when we terrifie our selues from these offences by letting Gods iudgements 10 before vs.

Lastly some man may say, what shall they doe that are ouertaken with these sinnes, if the doers thereof cannot enter into the kingdome of God? *Answer.* Their case is dangerous: and there is but one way to helpe them in the world: and that is, to cease from 15 adultery, fornication, vncleannes, wantonnes, and to doe the contrary. *Psal. 34. 14.* And this will doe the deede: for the promise of God is, *he that confesseth his sinnes, and forsaketh them, shall haue mercie. Prou. 28. 14.* And this promise of God is not contrary to his threat. For so long as men are doers of these sinnes, or of any one of them, 20 they are out of Gods kingdome: and when they cease to be doers of them, and contrariwise exercise themselves in the workes of chastity, possessing their vessels, that is, their bodies, in sanctification and honour, the case is altered, and they must no more be reputed doers of these sinnes. For God accepts men not as they haue bin, 25 but as they are.

In that these foure sinnes, *adultery, fornication, &c.* are manifest workes of the flesh, we are taught three things. The first is, that wee must stocke vp the roote of these things, that is, mortifie the passion of concupiscence, *Col. 3. 5. 1. Thess. 4. 5.* which is nothing else but 30 an inordinate inclination to these vices. And it is mortified in vs, if wee learne to feare God in his word, and in the commandement that forbids adulterie. For the feare of God clenseth both heart and life. *Ioseph* tempted by his mistris to folly, by this meanes eschewed the offence, saying, *shall I doe this, and sinne against God?* Further, it 35 must be remembred, that without holinesse, no man can see God, or haue fellowship with him. *Heb. 12. 14* And while the lust of concupiscence beares the sway, there is no holinesse: and therefore no fellowship with God.

The second rule is, that all occasions of these sinnes must bee 40 cut off, two specially, *Idlenesse*, and the *pampering of the bodie*. For *Idlenesse*, consider *Dauid*, who when he was out of ciuill warres, and

and free from banishment, at peace in his owne house, his wandering affection carried him to commit adulterie. And the Israelites, when they were stored and pampered with all the blessings of God, gaue themselues to the committing of these offences, *Ierem. 5. 7. 1. Cor. 10. 7.* and the people of Sodom and Gomorrha, *Ezech. 16. 49.*

The third rule is, that all signes of these vices must bee auoided and detested, that is, any speech or action, that may signifie or giue suspicion of an incontinent disposition, as light talke, wanton behauour, curiousnes and excelsse in trimming of the body, suspected company, or company that may in likelihood be suspected. For it is Gods will, that not only the vice it selfe, but also the appearance of euery vice should be auoided, *1. Thess. 5. 22.*

Idolatrie] The second sort of sins follow, which are against godlineesse: and they are three, *Idolatrie, witchcraft, heresie.* *Idolatrie* is the worship of Idol-gods. An Idol is taken two wayes. First of all, a fiction, or a thing meereley deuised, is an Idol: againe, when we conceiue a thing that is otherwise then it is, it is an Idol. So likewise *Idolatrie* is twofold. One is, when something that is not God, is set vp in the roome of God: and that is done three waies. One is, when the Godhead is ascribed to a creature, as when it was said to *Herod, The voyce of a God, and not of a man.* The second is, when any propertie of the Godhead is ascribed to the creature. The third is, when the affections of our hearts are giuen to the creature. Thus couetousnesse is called idolatrie, *Col. 3. 5.* because it makes men put their affiance in riches. Acts 12. 22.

The second kinde of *Idolatrie*, is to worship the true God with deuised worship, as namely with, in, and at images, set vp to the honour of God. This *Idolatrie* is forbidden in the second commandement, as *Moses* hath expounded the law, *Dent. 4. 16. Thou sawest no image in the day that I appeared in mount Sinai: therefore thou shalt make no image, namely of God.* It is alledged, that the commandement only forbids the making of the images of false gods. I answer, and of the true God also. *Aarons* calfe was an image of the true God, *Exod. 32. 5.* And it must be obserued, that *Iehu* destroyed the idols of *Baal*, *2. Kings 10. 26.* and withall remained still in the sinne of *Ieroboam*, verſe 31. which was to worship the calves in Dan and Bethel, which were images of *Iehouab*. And for this he is discommended.

The vse. By this wee see that the Romish religion is a carnall religion: for it teacheth *Idolatrie* foure wayes. First, it incyneth men to giue to the *Consecrated Hoste*, the name and honour of

God. And thus they set vp vnto themselues a breaden God made with mans hand. An Idol, as abominable as euer was among the Gentiles. Secondly, it teacheth men to inuocate Angels, & Saints departed: and thereby it giues vnto them the searching of the heart, the hearing and helping of all men, at all times, and places according to their feuerall necessities: and these things are the properties of the Godhead: and therefore, whether they call this inuocation, *Latria*, or *Doulia*, it matters not: it is flat idolatry, because the honour of God is giuen to the creature. Thirdly, it teacheth that we may put confidence in workes, so it be done in sobriety. 10 Lastly, it adoreth God in, at, and before Images: and so it binds the presence, grace, and operation of God to them, without his word. Papists alleadge for themselues, that they intend to worship none in images but the true God. I answer, it is nothing that they say. Not mans intention, but Gods will makes Gods worship. Let the 15 shew Gods will, if they can. If they cannot, then they must know that it is but an Idol-god, which they worship. For there is no such God in nature that will be worshipped in Images, but an Idol of their owne braines. They alleadge againe, that God may as well be worshipped in Images, as a Prince in the chaire of Estate. I answer, the reason is not like. The worship of Images is religious, the reuerence to the chaire of Estate, is meere cyuill, and in cyuill respect, and according to the Princes will, and so is not the bowing to Images according to Gods will. Let them prooue it if they can. That God was worshipped before the Arke, we approue of it. 25 For it was his word and will. Let vs heare the like word for Images of God and Christ, and then we are ready to reuoke the charge of Idolatry.

Again, by this we see that many of vs are very carnal. For though we detest outward Idolatry, yet the inward idolatrie of the heart abounds among vs. For looke where the heart is, there is the God. Now the hearts of men are vpon the world, and vpon the riches, and pleasures thereof. For them we take the most care, and in them we place our chiefe delight, whereas God in Christ should haue all the affections of our hearts. 30

Witchcraft] The word *εαυανεία*, properly signifies, poisoning: but here it is fitly translated, *witchcraft*: because all poisoning is comprehended vnder murder which followeth. And the Magicians of Egypt *Exod. 7.* are called *εαυανείας*, in the translation of the Seventie: as also the wise men. *Dan. 2.* Now if they had bin but poisoners, 40 they had not bin fit for *Pharaos* & *Nabuchadnezzars* turne, neither would they haue desired their presence, and helpe.

Witch-

Witchcraft, signifies all curious arts, wrought by the operation of the diuell. For the better conceiuing of it, I will consider two things. *The ground* thereof, and *the kinds* of witchcraft.

The ground, is a league or compact with the diuell. It is twofold, 5 an *Expresse* or *open league*, and a *secret league*. *The open league* is, when men inuocate the diuell in expresse words, or otherwise make any manifest couenant with him. *The secret league* is, when men vse meanes, which they know haue no force, but by the operation of the diuell. And the very vsing of such meanes in earnest, is an im- 10 plicit couenanting with the diuell. If by true faith, we make a couenant with God; then a false faith, in the vse of Satanicall ceremonies makes a couenant with the deuill. And without this, there is no practise of witchcraft.

There are three kindes of witchcraft. The first is, *Supersti-* 15 *tious dinination*, which serues to tell men their fortunes, or to reueale secrets by the flying of foules, by the intrals of beasts, by the obseruation of starres, by consulting with familiar spirits, and such like, *Deuteron.* 18. 11. The second, is *Iugling*, which is to worke wonders, or feates beyond the order of nature, as did the Magi- 20 cians of Egypt. The third is, *Charming*, or *inchanting*, which is by the pronouncing of words, to procure speedie hurt, or speedie helpe.

The vse. By this wee see that wee are a carnall people. For in the time of distresse vpon extremitie, figure-casting, and charming, 25 are overmuch vsed. And yet both of them are full of superstition, and folly. For the reuealing of things to come is Gods: and the starres are vniuersall causes, working vpon all things alike: and therefore it is not possible by them to foretell euent that are contingent, or casuall. And words haue no force in them but to signifye. And therefore when they are aplyed to cure diseases, they are 30 abused to a wrong end, and their operation is from the deuill. And for this cause they are to be auoyded of Chrillian people. It may bee said, how may wee discerne of charmes, that wee may the better auoyd them? *Answer.* Keepe this rule in memory alwaies. 35 Such obseruations, of whose force and efficacie, there is no reason or cause either in the thing done, or in the institution of God, haue their operation, and efficacie, from some compact and societie with the diuel. As for example, scratching of the suspected witch, is said to bee a meanes to cure witchcraft: but indeede it is a 40 charme, and a practise of witchcraft. For it hath no such force from the institution of God, because it is against the sixt commandement: and no naturall reason can bee rendred, why drawing

of blood, should cure witchcraft. The action therefore is a sacrifice to the diuell: and in way of recompence, the cure is done by him.

It may be said, what should we doe in distresse, if such helps may not be vsed? *Ans.* We are to vse approoued and ordinary meanes: 5 and for the rest, namely the euent, to leaue it vnto God, liuing by faith, and casting our care on God, and quieting our hearts in his will, whatsoeuer comes to passe. It is a want of faith thus to *make haste* for the deliuerie before the appointed time. And whereas it is thought that some persons haue a gift of God, by words presently 10 to cure any disease, whereupon they are called *wise, or cunning men & women*, it is false: it is no gift of God, but rather a curse, that leaues them to be deluded dy the diuell, who is the worker of these cures, when Satanical and superstitious meanes, and that in a false faith, are vsed. 15

For the better conceiuing of the sinne, it may be demanded what is a witch? *Ans.* One that wittingly, and willingly, vseth the assistance of the diuell himselfe for the reuealing of secrets, for the working of some mischief, or for the effecting of some strange cure. I say wittingly, to put a difference betweene witches, and some superstitious per- 20 sons, who vse charming, and by it doe many cures, perswading themselves, that the wordes which they vse, haue force in them, or that God hath giuen them a gift, to doe strange things. Such people in a naturall honestie, detest all knowne societie with the diuell; in that respect they are not the witches which the Scripture 25 adiudgeth to death, yet are they at the next dore to them: and therefore they are to bee admonished by Magistrates and Ministers to relinquish their superstitious practises, and that vpon a double ground. I. Nothing hath efficacy but by the Ordinance of God. And this efficacy was either put into the thing in the 30 creation, or since by some new Institution in the word. And the efficacy of things that comes by any other meanes, is by Satanicall operation. II. Charms, enchantments, and spells whatsoever, haue no force vntill wee beleue that they can doe vs good. Now this faith is false faith, and the seruice of the diuell. 35 For wee must beleue nothing, hope nothing, doe nothing, without, or against the word of God. If these two rules bee obserued, not onely charming, but all witchcraft shall be banished out of the world.

Againe, it may be demanded, what are the signes that serue to 40 discouera witch? *Answer.* This discouerie is verie hard. For witches doe their feates in close manner, not onely by foule and open cursing,

curſing, but alſo by faire ſpeaking, and by praiſing of things. And hereupon wee haue a faſhion in England, when wee praiſe any thing, with all to bleſſe it, (as to ſay, *it is a goodly childe, God ſauer*) that our ſpeech may not be ſuſpected of witchcraft. Neuertheleſſe, 5 there are five ſpeciall things that ſerue to diſcouer a witch: One is, the free confeſſion of the accuſed, or ſuſpected witch. The ſecond is, the confeſſion of the aſſociats with the witch. The third is, Inuo- cation of the diuell. For that is to renounce baptiſme, and to make a league with the diuell. The fourth is, Euidence, that the partie 10 hath entertained a familiar ſpirit, in the forme or likenefſe of ſome viſible creature. The fifth is, Euidence of any action or actions, that neceſſarily preſuppoſe a league made with the diuell. As for exam- ple: if the partie ſhew a mans face in a glaſſe: though he proteſſe angelical holineſſe, he is in league with the diuel, by whoſe meanes 15 the ſeate is wrought.

There are beſides theſe, other ſignes, but they are either falſe, or vncertaine. A man is ſicke, hee ſuſpects that he is bewitched: hee takes it on his death, that ſuch a partie hath bewitched him. All this is nothing, but the ſuſpition of one man, and therefore 20 no prooffe. Likewise the teſtimonie of ſome wizzard, is but the teſtimonie of one, and it is the diuels teſtimonie, and therefore not to be receiued. Againe, neighbours fall out, threatnings are vſed in anger: afterward the partie threatned, is either ſicke, or hee dies: heereupon the partie that vſed threatning words, is ac- 25 cuſed of witchcraft. And this is the common courſe. But great circumſpection muſt bee vſed, for tickeneſſe and death may ariſe of any other cauſes. Laſtly, markes in the bodies of men and wo- men, are vncertaine ſignes of witches. All this I note therather: becauſe if a iudgement befall a man in his family: preſently (ac- 30 cording to the common faſhion) hee ſaith he is hurt by euill tongues, and challengeth ſome one or other of witchcraft: whereas his owne ignorance, vnbeliefe, contempt of Gods word and Sacraments, &c. are the onely witches that hurt him, and pull downe Gods iudge- ments vpon him.

35 *Hereſies*] The word hereſie, generally ſignifies any opinion, either good or bad. More eſpecially it ſignifies any error in reli- gion. Thus Eccleſiaſticall writers take it. For they condemne for heretikes ſuch as erred in ſmaller points, holding the foundation, as *Vigilantius, Novatus, &c.* And the very opinion that there are 40 *Antipodes*, was condemned for hereſie, though it bee a matter of ſmall moment. Yet moſt properly, Hereſie may be thus defined: *It is an error in the foundation of Chriſtian religion, taught and defended*

with obstinacy. Thus Paul saith, Tit. 3. 11. that an hereticke is perverted, that is, put beside the foundation: and condemned of himselfe in his sinne, that is to say, he erres obstinately euen against his owne conscience.

I say that heresie is an *error in religion*, to put a difference betweene an error in Diuinity, and an error in Philosophy, which is not tearmed heresie: and againe, to put a difference betweene schisme, and heresie: for heresie is in doctrine, schisme in manners, order, regiment. Again, I say heresie is an *error, in the foundation of religion*, to distinguish it from errors that are in smaller points of Diuinity. Some teach that Abraham was borne the 70. of Terah, some the 130. of Terah. Both cannot be true: yet neither of them are heresie. Some teach that Daniels weekes begin straight after the returne out of captivity: others teach that they must begin 80. yeares after: both cannot be true: yet neither opinion is heresie. So there are sundry opinions touching Ophir, Tarshish, (to which Ionah fled) and Decapolis in the Gospel: and all cannot be true: yet they are not heresies, because they concerne onely times, and places, and other circumstances of the Bible. Lastly, I say that heresie is *maintained with obstinacy*, to distinguish heresie, and a single error. For there are three things in heresie, an error in the maine doctrine, *conuiction* of the party touching his error, and *obstinacy* after conuiction.

The use. In that heresie, an error in the minde or vnderstanding, is made a worke of the flesh: hence it followes, that the word *flesh*, signifies more then *sensuality*: namely, the corruption of the higher powers, euen of the minde and conscience: though Papists teach otherwise.

Again, if heresie be a worke of the flesh, our duty is, to detest and eschew heresies. And that we may for euer preserue our selues from them, three rules must be obserued.

1. We must propound vnto our selues the right Principles of religion. For as every Art hath his confessed principles, so hath Diuinity. The head and chiefe Principle whereof, is this. *All Scripture of the Prophets, and Apostles, is giuen by inspiration of God.* This is the foundation of all true faith: here is the highest stay and stop. This principle is the demonstration of all doctrines, and conclusions: and it hath no principle aboue it selfe, whereby it is to be confirmed. As for humane reason, it is no principle of religion. For it is imperfect and erroneous, and serues onely to make men without excuse. Indeede in the minde of man, there are certaine naturall conclusions, that there is a God, and that he is

to be worshipped, &c. but the certentie of these is in the written word. We can by reason dispute of the creation of the world, but a full certentie we haue not by reason, but by faith in the world. *Hebrewes. 11. 3.* Againe, the Papists makes the authoritie of the Church, a principle. For that is the first ground which they lay downe, that we must captivate our senses, to the authoritie of the Church. But this is no principle in religion. For we cannot imagine a Church without faith: and faith cannot be without the word of God. It may be saide, that Scripture is the sense of the written word: and this sense must be from the Church. *Ans.* Scripture it selfe is both *the glosse, and the text.* Scripture is the best interpreter of it selfe. And the sense which is agreeable to the words of the text, to the scope of the place, to other circumstances, and to the analogy of faith: in the plainer places of Scripture, is the proper and infallible sense of Scripture. Thus fetching the sense of Scripture from it selfe, we shall keepe our selues within the limits of Scripture, and in the matter of our saluation haue certentie of faith, which we shall neuer haue, if we listen to reason, tradition, and the authority of men.

11. Reade the Scriptures: and be a doer of them in the exercises of inuocation, faith, repentance; then shalt thou neuer be a heretike. It is Gods promise. *Ioh. 7. 17.* *If ye will obey, ye shall know whether my doctrine be of God or no.* *Psal. 25. 14.* *The secret of the Lord is revealed to them, that feare him.* Marke them, that make Apostasie, and become Papists: they are such as neuer had a mind to loue and obey the religion, in which they haue beene baptized, and brought vp.

III. *Col. 2. 8.* *Let no man spoile you through Philosophie.* Paul doth not condemne the Philosophie of the Gentiles, but he puts a caveat, that it be vsed with circumspection, as Merchants vse the sea, to wit, in eschewing rockes, and sands, and Pirates. So students may vse the Philosophy of the Gentiles, but they must take heede, lest their mindes be corrupted with the errors thereof, which are to be considered. Naturall Philosophy gives too much to nature, or to second causes; and too little to God. It puts downe principles flat against the word, as the eternity of the world, and the mortality of the soule. Morall Philosophy, placeth happines in ciuill vertue, out of Christ: it teacheth, that vertue is a meane or mediocrity of affection, whereas in true vertue there is not onely a restraint or moderation of affections, but also the renouation of them by regeneration. It teacheth that Urbanity in iesting and scurping, is a vertue: Paul saith no, *Eph. 5. 4.* It teacheth that

Magnani.

Magnanimitie, whereby a man thinkes himselfe worthy of great honour, is a vertue: but it is contrary to Christian humilitie, *Psalms*. 131. 1, 2. Lastly, it teacheth that man hath a freedome of will in good actions: which doctrine applied by the Schoolemen to matters of religion, is false and erroneous. 5

The third head of sinnes, are such as are against *Charity*, and they are in number eight.

The first is, *Enmitie*: of it I consider three things. The first is, whether it be a sinne, or no? for somewhat may be objected to the contrary. 10

Obiect. I. Psalm. 139. 21. *Doe I not hate them that hate thee?* *Answer.* *Dauid* here speakes of the hatred, whereby he hated Gods enemies, not in respect of their persons, but in respect of their sinnes, whereby they were enemies of God. And this hatred is commendable, and not here to be vnderstood. 15

Obiect. II. Luke 14. 26. *Hee that will bee a disciple of Christ, must hate father, and mother, and his owne soule.* *Answer.* This hatred is not simply commanded, but onely in a certaine respect, namely, as father, and mother, and a mans owne soule, are in comparison opposed to God, and Christ, in regard of whom they are viterly to be despised. 20

Obiect. III. Romanes 9. *God chose Iacob, and hated Esau:* and wee must belike vnto God. *Answer.* We are to be like vnto God in holinesse, and the duties thereof, and not in the soueraigntie and Lordship ouer the creatures, whereby he either loues or hates them. 25

Obiect. IV. It is the vniuersall nature of all creatures to flie their contrary: therefore men may hate their enemies. *Answer.* Man and man are not contrary in nature, or naturall properties: but are all one flesh: the contrarietie that is, is by reason of the corruption of nature. 30

The second point is, what is this *Enmitie*? *Ans.* It is a peruerse disposition of minde, whereby men remember iniuries, discourtesies, and vnkindnesses, and carry about them a purpose, and desire to requite like for like, when time and place shall serue. Thus did *Esau* hate *Iacob*, *Genes*. 27. 41. and *Abolom* his brother *Amnon*, 2. *Samuel* 13. 35

The third point, where is this *Enmitie*? *Answer.* Euery where among vs. For wee daily see person diuided against person, family against family, and corporation against corporation. This shewes that wee are carnell: and that Gods kingdom takes no place among vs as it should. For in it the lambe and the wolfe quietly dwell 40

dwell together, *Isa. 11.* The remedy of this enmity is, That all be of one minde, desire, and affection, in the receiuing and furthering of the Gospel of Christ, *1. Cor. 1. 11.* If in the maine point there be a concord, in lesser matters the agreement will be easie.

5 *Debate*] It is a contention in words, whereby men strue, who shall shew most courage, who shall get the victorie, and who shall carry away the last word, no respect had of equitie, or trueth. In this respect, crying, or lifting up the voyce in reasoning, is condemned, *Ephes. 4. 31.*

10 *Emulations*] There is a good emulation, and that is when men strue to be like to them that excell in vertue, or to goe beyond them. And it is commaunded by the holy Ghost, *1. Corinth. 14. 12.* Beside this, there is a carnall emulation, whereby men that excell in any thing, grieve that any should be equall to them, or goe beyond them.

15 The vse. If to grieve at another mans Excellencie, bee a worke of the flesh, then it is our duetie to reioyce in the excellencie of others. Thus did *Moses*, when *Eldad and Medad* prophesied, *Numbers 11. 29.* And *Iohn the Baptist*, when Christ increased, and hee decreased, *Iohn 3. 29, 30.* And *Paul* gaue thanks as well for the graces bestowed on the Churches, as for gifts bestowed on himselie.

25 *Anger*] Of it I consider three points. The first is, whether there be any lawfull anger? *Answer.* Yea. Christ (in whom was no sinne) was angry, *Marke 3. 5.* When there is a iust cause of anger, then is anger iust. When there is a manifest offence of God, there is a iust cause of anger: therefore anger is then iust.

30 The second is, when is anger a sinne? *Answer.* When men are hasty to bee angry, *Eccles. 7. 11.* and are offended at every thing that goes against their minds. Or againe, hauing a iust cause to be angry, yet they keepe no measure in their anger.

35 The third poynt, is the remedie. And that is here set downe. Hastinesse is a worke of the flesh, or of corrupt nature, and it barres men from the kingdome of heauen: and therefore it is to be auoyded.

40 *Contention*] There are sundry kindes of lawfull contention: as contention with the enimie in iust warre: contention at the barre with an aduersary in a iust cause: contention in disputation with an heretike: contention in Schoole-disputation for exercise, and triall sake.

Contention is carnall, and sinnefull. in respect of matter, and manner. In matter, when men contend for things for which they should

should not contend, as the disciples for primacie, *Luke 22.* or when contention is without forgiuing, forbearing or suffering; and that in trifling matters, *1. Cor. 6. 7.* Contention likewise is faultie, in respect of maner, when men wilfully defend their owne priuate causes, no regard had, whether they bee right or wrong, true or false: 5 and by this meanes they often oppugne truth, or iustice, or both. Of this kinde are the warres of the rebell in Ireland: the warres of the Spanyard in the low Countries: and the suits of many quarrelsome and contentious persons among vs.

The vsē. *Doe nothing by contention, Philip. 2. 2.* And therefore 10 wee must forgiue, put vp, as much as may bee, and yeeld of our right.

disputatio.

Seditions] The originall word signifies such dissentions in which men separate one from another: and that is done two waies, either by schisme in the Church, or by faction in the Com- 15 monwealth.

Question. Why are not we Schismatikes in England, Scotland, Germanie: considering wee haue dissented and separated our selues, from the Church of Rome? *Answer.* We indeed haue separated our selues, but they of the Church of Rome are schismatikes: 20 because the cause of our separation is in them: namely, their Idolatry, and their manifold heresies. The case is the like: A man threatens death to his wife: hereupon she separates. Yet not she, but he makes the separation: because the cause of separation, and the fault is in him. 25

For the auoiding of schisme, and sedition, remember two rules. I. So long as a Church, or people doe not separate from Christ, wee may not separate from them. II. *Prou. 24. 21. Feare the King, and meddle not with them that vary,* that is, make alterations against the lawes of God, and the King. Indeed, subiects may signifie what 30 is good for the State, and what is amisse: but to make any alteration in the estate, either Ciuill, or Ecclesiasticall, belongs to the supreme Magistrate.

Enuy] It is a compound of carnall grieue and hatred. For it makes men grieue and repine at the good things of others, and to 35 hate the good things themselves. Thus the high Priests of enuy hated Christ, and all his most excellent sayings, and doings, *Matthew 27. 18.* At this day, they which haue any good things in them, are commonly condemned for hypocrites, and their Religion for hypocrisie. All this is but the censure of 40 Ennie.

The vsē. That we may depart from Enuy, wee must loue them that

that feare God: and loue the gifts and graces of God wherefoeuer they be: euen in our enemies.

Murthers.] Obiect. I. A plant liues, a beast liues, and man liues: the cropping of a plant, and the killing of a beast, is no sinne: why is it
 5 then a sinne to kill a man? *Ans.* God hath giuen liberty for the two first, and hath restrained vs in the latter. Againe, the life of a plant is but the vigour in the iuice, and the life of a beast is but the vigour in the blood. *Gen. 9. 4.* but the life of man is a spirit and spirituall substance. Thirdly, man is of the same flesh with man, and so is neither
 10 plant, nor beast.

Obiect. II. The Magistrate kills without sinne. *Answer.* The killing which is in the name of God, by publike reuenge, is not murder. And *Paul* onely condemnes that killing, when men take the sword, and vpon their owne wills slay and kill by priuate reuenge.
 15

Obiect. III. *Sampson* is saide to kill himselfe, *Iudg. 16. 13.* and he sinned not in so doing. *Ans.* *Sampson* was a Iudge in *Israel*, and tooke publike reuenge of his enemies: and in this reuenge he hazarded his life, and lost his life. Though he died in the execution, yet his intent was not to kill himselfe, but onely to take reuenge.
 20 Secondly, his example is speciall. For he was in his death a figure of Christ. The words, *Mat. 2. he shall be called a Nazarite*, are first spoken of *Sampson*, and then applied to Christ, in whom was verified that which *Sampson* figured. For as *Sampson* conquered
 25 his enemies more in his death, then in his life: euen so did Christ.

Obiect. IV. For the auoiding of some great danger, or some great sinne, as the deniall of Christ in persecution, men may make away themselves: so said the Donatists. *Answer.* Death is no remedie in this case, but faith in the promise of God: which is, that he wil giue
 30 an issue in euery temptation, *1. Cor. 10. 13.*

The vse. Seeing murder is a worke of the flesh: our dutie is by all meanes to preferue both our owne, and our neighbours liues. Life is a treasure. For by it wee haue time and libertie to
 35 glorifie God, to doe good to our neighbours, and to saue our owne soules.

The sinnes of the fourth sort, are against *Temperance*: and they are two: *drunkenesse, gluttony*. For the better conceiuing of the nature of these sinnes, we are first of all to consider the right manner and measure of eating and drinking, of which I deliuer two
 40 rules. I. Wee may vse meat and drinke, not onely for necessitie, but also for delight, *Psal. 104. 15.* II. That measure of meat and
 drinke,

drinke, which in our experience makes vs fit both in body and mind for the seruice of God, and for the duties of our callings, that measure (I say) is fit, conuenient, and lawfull. This is a confessed principle in the light of nature.

Drunkennesse then is, when men drinke, either in wine, or strong drinke, beyond this measure: so as there follows an intoxication of the powers of the soule. And in the sinne there are two things: excessiue drinking, and the distempering of the powers of the soule.

Gluttonie, is, when men in eating, goe beyond the measure before prescribed. This gluttony, is that which now adayes is called *reuelling*, *rioting*, *swaggering*. And it is fitly ioyned with drunkenness. For there are men that vse to drinke exceedingly, and will not be drunke: and for all this, they are not free from blame: because they drinke out of measure. To bee giuen to drinking, and to loue to sit by the cup, when there is no drunkenness, is a sinne, *1.Tim. 3. 3.*

These sinnes are said to be rife among vs. The maner of many is, to meet together, and to fill themselves with wine or strong drink, while their skinnies will hold. Afterward, they giue themselves to dicing, carding, dancing, singing of ribauld songs: and thus they passe the day, the night, the weeke, the yeare.

But we must be put in mind, to detest, and to flie these vices. Inducements to this dutie are many.

I. Gods commandement. *Keepe not company with drunkards, and gluttonous persons, Proverb. 23. 20. Bee not drunke with wine, in which is excessse, Ephes. 5. 18.*

II. The punishment of drunkenness, is plague, pestilence, famine, captiuitie, *Isai. 5. 11, 12, 13.*

III. The example of the brute beast, that in eating and drinking, keepes measure, and takes no more then will suffice nature. The horse and the asse may bee schoolemasters to many of vs.

IV. If wee cannot forsake a cup of wine, or beere, which is not needfull for vs, wee shall neuer bee able to forsake wife, and children, house, and land for Christs sake. If we haue not the command of our selues in a trifle, we may neuer hope for it in weightie matters.

V. There are dangerous effects of drunkenness. First, it destroies the body. For it inflames the blood with an vnnatural heat: and this vnnaturall heat, ingenders vnnaturall thirst, which ingenders immoderate drinking, whence comes dropies, consumptions,

all cold diseases, and death. Secondly, it hurts the minde: for the spirits of the heart and braine (being the immediate instruments of the soule) are by drinking disordered and inflamed: and hereupon arise wicked imaginations, and disordered affections. And thus the diuel in the roome of Gods image, sets vp his own image: and makes the minde a shop of all wickednesse. Thirdly, the vile imaginations and affections that are in men when they are drunk, remaine still in men when they are sober: so as being sober they are drunke in affection.

10 In fauour of drunkenesse, it is alleadged that *Noahs* drunkenesse is remembred in Scripture, but no where condemned. *Answer.* While *Moses* sets downe the foule effects that followed *Noahs* drunkenesse, he doeth indeed condemne it. Secondly, his example is noted in Scripture, as a warning to all ages following. Thirdly, his sinne may be lessened, though not excused, because hee had
15 no experience of wine.

Obiect. II. *Ioseph* and his brethren did drinke and were drunke together, *Genesis* 43. ver. last. *Answer.* The meaning of the text is, that they dranke liberally, or that they dranke of the best together. For the word (*shakar*) signifies not only to be drunke in drinking, but also to drinke liberally, or to drinke of the best drinke, *Hag.* 1. 6.

Obiect. III. Learned Philistians, as *Rasis*, *Auicenna*, and others teach, that it is greatly for health, to bee drunke once or twice in a
25 moneth. *Answer.* As learned as they teach the contrary. And we may not doe any euill, or sinne against God, for any good to our selues.

Obiect. IV. It is said to be neighbourhood and good fellowship. *Answer.* It is drunken fellowship. The right fellowship is in the
30 doctrine of the Apostles, Prayer, Sacraments, and the workes of mercie.

Thus much of the workes of the flesh. Now followes the punishment of them, of which I consider three things. First, a Premonition in these words, *whereof I tell you before, as I also haue*
35 *told you before.* Secondly, the designement of the punishment in these words, *shall not inherite the kingdome of God.* Thirdly, the designement of the persons, in these words, *They which doe such things.*

In the Premonition, is set downe the office of all Ministers: and
40 that is, often to forewarne the people of the future iudgements of God for their sinnes, *Mich.* 3. 8. *Isa.* 58. 1. And this may easily bee done. For they may know the sinnes of men by experience, and the

the iudgements of God due to euery sinne, they may finde in the word of God.

Againe, all people are warned by this, often to meditate of the future iudgements of God. Thus did *Dauid*, *Psal.* 119. 120. and *Paul*, who knowing the terrour of the Lord, was moued to doe his dutie, *2. Cor.* 5. 11. The old world neuer so much as dreamed of Gods iudgements, before they came vpon them, and so they perished, *Matt.* 24. 39.

The punishment of these sinnes is, *not to inherite Gods kingdome*. Gods kingdome sometime signifies the regiment of God, whereby he rules all things in heaven and earth. More specially, it signifies a state or condition in heaven, whereby God and Christ is all things to all the Elect, *1. Cor.* 15. 28. And thus it is taken in this place. And an entrance or beginning to this happy estate, is in this life, when men in their consciences and liues are ruled by Gods word, and spirit. It must here further be obserued, that not to inioy the kingdome of God, is to be in torment in hel: because there are no more but two estates after this life: and therefore to be out of heauen, is to be in hell.

The vse. I. This must teach vs about all things to seeke Gods kingdome, and to establiish it in our hearts: and that we shall doe, if we know the will of God, and yeeld subiection to it, in the duties of repentance, new obedience, &c.

II. The kingdome of God comes by inheritance: therefore there is no merit of good works.

The persons which are punished, are such as are doers and practisers of the works of the flesh. Marke the words, not such as haue bin doers, but such as are doers. The word signifies a present and a continued act of doing amisse.

The vse. Hence is the difference betweene the godly man, and the vngodly. The godly man falls into the works of the flesh, and being admonished thereof, he repents and recouers himselfe: hee doth not stand in the way of sinners, though sometime he enter into it, *Psal.* 1. 1. The vngodly man, when he falls, he lies still in his sin, and heaps sinne vpon sinne, and makes a practise of euill.

I. *Warning*. They which are priuy to themselues of any of the former works of the flesh, must bewaile their offences, and vtterly forsake them. For if we be found doers of any one worke of the flesh, there is no hope of saluation.

II. *Warning*. They which haue turned vnto God from the works of the flesh must bee constant, and take heede of going backe, lest they lose the kingdome of God.

22 But the fruite of the spirit, is loue, joy, peace, long suffering, gentlenesse, goodnesse, loue.

23 Meeknesse, temperance : against such there is no law.

5 For the better obseruing, and the more easie vnderstanding of the rule in the 16. verse: *Walke in the spirit*, Paul here sets downe a Catalogue of the workes of the spirit. In the Catalogue I consider three things, the propertie of the works of the spirit, in these
10 words, *The fruite of the spirit*: the kindes of works, and they are nine: the benefit that comes by them, in these words, *Against such there is no law*.

The fruite of the spirit] It is the propertie of the works of Gods Spirit in vs, to be called *the fruites of the Spirit*. And by this, much is
15 signified: namely, that the Church is the garden of God, *Cant. 4. 16.* that teachers are planters and setters, *1. Cor. 3. 9.* that beleeuers are trees of righteousness, *Isai. 61. 3.* that the Spirit of God is the sappe and life of them: and good works and vertues are the fruits which they beare.

20 In that the workes of the spirit, are called *fruites* thereof, hence it followes, that there are no true vertues, and good affections, without the grace of regeneration. The vertues of the heathen, how excellent soeuer they seemed to bee, were but shadowes of vertue, and serued onely to rellaine the outward man, and no
25 further.

Againe, here we see the efficacy of the Spirit, which makes men fruitfull, or bearing trees of righteousness, *Psal. 1. 3.* yea, trees that beare fruite in their old age, *Psal. 92. 14.* Here we haue cause to cast
30 downe our selues. For the most of vs are barren trees, that beare no fruite, but the bad fruits of the flesh: and therefore wee may iustly feare the curse that God laid vpon the figtree, *Luke 13. 7.* and looke every day to be stocked vp, *Matt. 3. 16.*

Againe, good workes are made acceptable to God even by his grace; and therefore they are called *the fruits of the spirit*: and hence
35 it is that they are acceptable to God, *Rom. 15. 16.* Wee that are by nature wild branches, must be taken out of old Adam, and set into Christ: and after our insition draw a new sappe and life from Christ, namely, his spirit, and then our actions shall be fruits of the spirit, and consequently acceptable to God.

40 Lastly, hence it followes, that free will of it selfe, is like a dead or rotten piece of wood, and that it beares no fruit, but as it is quickened by the Spirit, *Iohn 15. 5.*

Thus much of the property: now follow the kinds of the works of the spirit.

Loue] It may be demanded, how it is a fruit of the spirit? *Answer.* First, the Spirit of God workes faith, then regeneration, then loue, *1. Tim. 1. 5.* Loue followes faith: because we must know first that we are loued of God, before that we loue God, *1. Iohn 4. 19.* And loue followes regeneration: because till the will and the affections be changed, there is no place for loue. The Papists then erre, who teach, that the first act of loue, that is, the inclination to loue God and man aright, is in nature; and that the second act, namely, the exercise of loue, is from the Spirit. Againe, they erre in that they teach, that charitie or loue, is the formall righteousness of a Christian. For it is a fruit that followes regeneration.

The loue here mentioned, is either of God, or of man. The loue of God, is an holy affection, whereby wee loue God in Christ for himselfe. There are three speciall signes whereby it is discerned, I. A desire of fellowship with God, and Christ, and the holy Spirit: and therefore to be much and frequent in the vse of the word, and prayer: because in the word, God speaks to vs, and in prayer, wee speake to him. II. To loue the word of God aboue all earthly treasure: and to tread our owne wills vnder foot, and to desire that Gods will may be preferred in all things, *1. Iohn 2. 5.* There are many houses among vs, where the cards and tables are walking, but the Bible is seldome or neuer scene. And this argues the want of loue. III. The loue of them that loue God and Christ.

The loue of our neighbour, is to loue him simply, in, and for the Lord, and for no other by-respect. The signe of this loue is, to loue, *not in word, but indeed.* And this is to loue indeed, to shew loue, and to do good (when we are wronged and abused) to them that wrong vs and abuse vs.

Ioy] Ioy is twofold; ioy of glory after this life, and the ioy of grace in this life: and it stands in three things. The first is, to reioyce in the true acknowledgement of God, that he is our God, and reconciled to vs in Christ. The second is, to reioyce in the worke of our regeneration. The third is, to reioyce in the hope of eternall glory.

This ioy of grace hath a double fruite. First, it moderates all our sorrowes, which makes vs reioyce in the midst of our afflictions, *1. Thess. 5. 16.* Secondly, it causeth men to reioyce at the good of their neighbours, *Romanes 12. 15.* And this ioy is heere meant specially. For ioy is heere opposed to enuie, and emulation.

This

This fruite shewes, that wee are most of vs bad trees. For the ioyes of the world befor the most part in iniquitie, and in the workes of the flesh. And it is our common sinne not to reioyce, but to pine away with grieffe, as *Cain* did, when we see Gods blessing vpon our brother.

Peace] It is a care and desire to mainetaine concord, as much as may be, if it lie in vs. *Rom. 12. 18.* It is an excellent vertue. For the kingdome of God stands partly in peace. *Rom. 14. 17.* For the maintenance of peace, obserue two rules. I. Neither take offence, nor giue offence. *Abraham* chose rather to lose his right, then to offend *Lot. Gen. 13.* and so did *Christ. Matth. 17. 27.* Seek to edifie one another, either doe good, or take good. *Rom. 14. 19.*

Long-suffering] is to moderate our anger, and desire of reuenge, when many and great wrongs are done to vs. It is an excellent fruit, but it takes very hardly in these parts. For our manner is, a word and a blow: a word and a stab: a word and a writte.

Set and sow this plant in the furrowes of your hearts, and that the weede of reuenge ouergrow it not, vse these remedies. I. Gods commandement forbids rash anger, *Iam. 1. 19.* for it is a degree of murder. II. The example of God, who is slow to anger, and of *Christ*, who is meeke and lowly, *Matth. 11.* III. All wrongs done to vs by men, come by Gods prouidence, to which we are to subiect our selues. IV. The goodnesse of God, who forgives more to vs, then wee can forgive. V. There is daunger of Gods anger. VI. For vnlesse wee forgive, wee are not forgiven. And wee craue forgivenesse, as wee forgive. VII. It is the dutie of loue to suffer and beare, *1. Corin. 13.* VIII. It is a point of iniustice to reuenge our selues, for then we take to our selues the honour of God, and against all equitie, we are both the parties, and iudge, and witnesse and all. IX. Wee are often ignorant of the minds of men, in their actions, and of the true circumstances thereof: and so may easily be deceiued.

Obiect. I. Anger is a sudden affection: therefore it cannot bee ruled. *Answer.* Meanes are to be vsed before hand, when wee are quiet: then shall we better restraine it.

Obiect. II. It is hard for flesh and blood to doe this. *Answer.* We are more then flesh and blood. For we haue the Spirit of God, else we are but hypocrites.

Gentlenesse] Gentlenesse, is to giue good speach, and to shew good countenances, euen to them that wrong vs, and abuse vs, without any minde, or desire to reuenge, *Romanes 12. 14. Ephes. 4. 32.*

The curtesie of the world, in the cappe and the knee, and all the complements of humanity, is commonly seuered from good affection : and it is often the maske of enmity : and therefore it is but a worke of the flesh. Right curtesie is with an honest heart, to blesse when we are wronged.

Goodness. It is vertue, whereby we communicate to others, the good things that are in vs, for their good and benefit. It is prescribed by *Paul* in other tearmes, when he saith, *Communicating to the necessitie of the Saints, Rom. 12. 13.*

Question. I. What are we to communicate? *Ans.* The gifts of our minde, our temporall goods, yea our liues too, if neede be, *1. Ioh. 3. 16.*

Question. II. Why are we so to doe? *Ans.* We are members all of one body; and we are members one of another, *Eph. 4. 25.* And it is Gods pleasure, that men shall be instruments of good mutually one to another.

Goodnesse, respects either the body, or the minde. Goodnesse concerning the body, hath many actions : as to feede the hungry, to giue drinke to the thirsty, to harbour the harbourlesse, to cloath the naked, to visit the sicke, and them that are in prison, *Matth. 25. 20 35, 36.* to bury the dead, *2. Samuel 2. 5.* Lastly, to lend freely and liberally, to such as be decayed and impouerished. *Deuteronomy 15. 7.*

Goodnesse concerning the soule, is to indeuour, partly by counsell, and partly by example, to gaine the soule of our neighbour to God : and it stands in foure actions : to admonish the vnruly, to comfort the distressed, to beare with them that are weake, and to be patient towards all, *1. Thess. 5. 14.*

Goodnesse is hard to be found in these dayes among men. The common practise is according to the common prouerbe, *30 Euery man for himselfe, and God for vs all.* The study of men is, how to gather goods, honours, riches, for themselves, and for their children : and the common good is not aymed at. Good orders hardly take place, as namely, the order for the poore ; and the reason is, the want of goodnesse in vs. If any professe any shew of goodnesse more then the rest, they are sure to be despised and reproched at euery hand : and this shewes that there is little goodnesse among men.

Faith First, we are here to vnderstand faith towards God, which is to beleue the remission of our sinnes, and our reconciliation with God in Christ. *40*

This faith is common to all among vs : yet is it but a false, dead,

dead, & ceremoniall faith, in many men. Reason. I. Faith comes by the hearing of the word of God preached, *Rom. 10. 14.* but this faith in many is conceived without preaching: for they say, they beleue their saluation by Christ, and withall they liue in the perpetuall neglect or contempt of the publike Ministry. II. True faith is ioyned alwaies with the exercises of inuocation, and repentance: yet in many among vs, this faith is without any conuersion or change of heart and life: and therefore it is but a dead faith. III. True faith is mixed with contrary vnbeleefe, so as they that beleue, fee in themselves a want of faith, and much vnbeleefe. But there are many among vs that say, they perfectly beleue, and that they neuer so much as doubted in all their liues. Now such a faith, is a vaine persuasion. IV. Many that boast of their faith in Christ, want faith in the providence of God, touching food and raiment. And that is manifest, because they vse any lawfull meanes to helpe themselves: now if their faith faile them in a smaller point, it cannot be found in the greatest of all.

Secondly, by faith is meant faith towards men, and that stands in two things. One is, to speake the trueth from the heart: the other is, to be faithfull and iust in the keeping of our honest promise, and word.

This faith is a rare vertue in these dayes. For the common fashion of them that liue by bargaining, is, to vse glosing, facing, soothing, lying, dissembling, and all manner of shifts. And with many it is a confessed principle, that *there is no liuing in the world, vnlesse we lie and dissemble.* They that deale with chapmen, shal hardly know what is trueth, they haue so many words, and so many shifts. In this respect, Christians come short of the Turks, who are said to be equall, open, and plaine dealing men, without fraud, or deceit.

Our care therefore must bee to cherish, and maintaine among vs, the vertue of faith, and truth. Reasons. I. Gods commandment, *Put away lying, and let euery man speake the truth to his neighbour. Ephes. 4. 15.* II. By truth wee are like to God, whose waies are all truth: who hates a lying tongue, *Prou. 6. 17.* whose spirit is the spirit of truth. III. Lyars beare the image of the diuell. Hee is the father of lies, *Iohn 8. 44.* So oft then as thou liest, thou makest thy tongue the instrument of the diuell. IV. Eternall punishment in the lake that burnes with fire and brimstone, *Reuel. 22. 15.* Here marke, that liars are entertained at the same table with murderers and theeues: and the liar neuer goes unpunished, *Prou. 19. 5.* V. To speake the trueth from the heart, is a marke of Gods

child, *Psal.* 15. 2. And he whose faith failes towards men, shal much more faile towards God.

Meeknesse] The same in effect with long suffering. The difference is, that *meeknesse* is more generall, and *long suffering* is the highest degree of meeknesse.

Temperance] It is the moderation of lust and appetite, in the vse of the gifts and creatures of God. For the better practising of this vertue, remember these foure rules.

I. We must vse moderation in meats and drinks. This moderation is to eat and drink with perpetual abstinence. And abstinence is to take lesse then that which nature desires, and not more. And that measure of meat and drinke, which serues to refresh nature, and to make vs fit for the seruice of God and man, is allowed vs of God, and no more.

II. We must vse moderation in our apparell. And that is, to apparell our selues according to our sexe, according to the receiued fashion of our countrey, according to our place and degree, and according to our abilitie. Here the common fault is, to be out of all order: for none almost know any measure. Euery meane person now adayes will be a gentleman, or gentlewoman.

III. We must vse moderation in getting of goods: and that is, to rest content if we haue food & raiment for our selues, and them that belong vnto vs, *1. Tim.* 6. 8. Here is our hint; we may not desire to be rich, verse 9. The King himselfe must not multiply his golde and silver, *Deut.* 17. 17. and yet hath he more need of gold and silver, then any priuate man.

IV. There must bee a moderation in the spending of our goods: contrary to the fashion of many, that spend their substance in feasting, and company, and keepe their wiues and children bare at home.

Against such there is no law] Heere *Paul* sets downe the benefite that comes by the former vertues. The words carrie this sense: Against such vertues, and against persons indued with such vertues there is no law. And that for two causes. One, there is no law to condemne such. Secondly, there is no law to compell them to obey: because they freely obey God, as if there were no law.

Markethen the condition of spirituall men. They are a voluntary and free people, seruing God freely without contraint. So as if Christ would not giue vnto them life euermore, yet would they loue him, and desire the aduancement of his kingdome. On the contrary, if there were no hel, and God would not punish adultery, drunken-

drunkennesse, blasphemy, &c. with eternall death, yet would a Christian man abstaine from these things: because he knowes that they displease Christ, and hee is gouerned with another spirit, to which they are contrary.

5 Also these words are a reason of verse 15. *There is no law against them that doe these things: therefore walke in the spirit.*

24 *For they that are Christs, haue crucified the flesh, with the affections, and lusts.*

10 The scope. In these words, *Paul* prooues that which he said immediatly before, namely, that there is no law against spiritual men. And of this he giues a double reason. One is, spirituall men are Christs: therefore there is no law against them. The second is this:
15 That is crucified in spirituall men, which the law condemneth, namely, the flesh, with the affections and lusts: therefore there is no law to condemne the spirituall man.

In the words, I consider three poynts. The first is, What is a Christian? *Answ.* A Christian is one that is Christs, (saith *Paul*.)
20 And he is Christs five wayes. I. By the right of creation. And so are all men. II. By right of redemption, 1. *Cor.* 6. 19. III. By the free gift and donation of God the Father, *Iohn* 17. 11. This donation is begun in the eternall Election of God, and it is accomplished in our effectuell vocation. IV. By propagation. For all true
25 beleeuers spring out of the blood of Christ: and are of his bone, and of his flesh, as *Eue* was of the bone and flesh of *Adam*. V. By our donation in Baptisme, in which wee consecrate our selues to God, and to Christ.

The vse. This must teach vs to resigne our selues to Christ, and to suffer him to reigne in our hearts: and to take the yoke of the Gospel vpon vs. But alas, it is farre otherwise with many of vs. For
30 some liue in the transgression of the very law of nature, so farre are they from observing the Gospel. Others thinke it sufficient to follow the teaching of nature. If they worship God in some generall
35 maner, if they liue peaceably, and hurt no man, and meane well (as they say) then all is wel: and the doing of further duties, is reputed curious precisenesse. And such persons vsually reduce religion to the practise of nature. They will be sau'd by faith: but their faith is nothing else but fidelity. They say they worship God, but this wor-
40 ship is nothing else but their good meaning, and their good dealing. These men are content that Christ shall bee theirs: but they will not be Christs, and suffer him to haue a lordship over them.

II. If thou be Christs, then commend thy soule, and life, and all that thou hast into the hands of Christ. This was the practise of *Dauid*, *Psal.* 22. of Christ vpon the crosse: of *Paul*, *2. Tim.* 1. 12. And this practise is the only way to obtaine safetie and protection. For Christ no doubt will keepe his owne.

III. Comfort. If thou be Christs, he will care for thee, and nothing shall be wanting vnto thee that is for thy good, *Iohn* 17. 24. *Rom.* 8. 33. Therefore remember this lesſon, Neuer grieue ouermuch, neuer care ouermuch, neuer reioyce ouermuch in the things of this world. If thou werest at thine owne disposing and finding, it were somewhat: but there is one that cares for thee, namely Christ.

The second poynt to be considered, is, what is the flesh? *Answer.* It is the corruption of the whole nature of man. For the right conceiuing of this, wee must make a distinction of three things, Mans nature, the faculties of nature, and the corruption of both, which corruption hath two parts: the losse of the image of God, and a pronenesse to all wickednes. Moreouer, this distinction must be without separation of nature from faculties, or of corruption from either: so as wee may say truly, that the nature, and the powers of the soule of man, are corrupted.

In the flesh are two things: *Affections*, and *Lusters*. By *affections* vnderstand inordinate affections, which shew themselves, and beare sway in carnall men, as anger in *Cain*, loue of pleasures more then of God, in the men of the last times, *2. Tim.* 3. 3. immoderate sorrow in *Abab*, when hee could not obtaine *Naboths* vineyard, *1. Kings* 21. 4.

Lusters, are inordinate and insatiable desires after the things of this world, as riches, honors, pleasures, &c. of this sort are couetousnes, gluttony, pride, the lust of the flesh, &c.

The vse. By this we see what a carnall man is, namely, one that is carried away with some inordinate affection, or some inordinate lust. *Herod* did many good things at the aduice and motion of *Iohn Baptist*, whom he reuerenced: yet was hee a carnall man. For hee was possessed with an inordinate loue of his brothers wife. *Iudas* a disciple of Christ, yet a carnall man: because hee was carried away with the inordinate lust of couetousnesse.

The third point, is touching the office of a Christian man. And that is, to crucifie the flesh, with the affections and lusts. For the better conceiuing of this, Crucifying must be distinguished. It is either the action of Christ, or our action. Crucifying, which is the action of Christ, is threefold. The first is, vpon the crosse, where

where Christ stood in our roome, and bare the burden of our sins, and made an expiation of them. In this respect we are said to be crucified with him, *Gal. 2. 19.* The second is in vs, when Christ conveys the vertue of his death into the hearts of them that are ioined to him, for the causing and effecting of the death of sin. The third is, in baptisme, whereby Christ seales the two former to them that beleewe, *Rom. 6. 6.*

The crucitying, which is our action, is nothing else but the imitation of Christ crucified, on this manner. He was first attached: so must we bring our selues into the presence of God. He was arraigned: so must we set our selues at the barre of Gods iudgement. He was accused: so must wee indite and accuse our selues of our owne sinnes at the barre of Gods iudgement. He was condemned: and so must we iudge our selues, that wee bee not iudged of the Lord. After iudgement, we must proceed to execution of the flesh: and that is, to vse meanes to crucifie it: and they are three. The first is, by faith to apply to our selues Christ crucified: and that is to beleewe, not onely that Christ was crucified for vs, but that wee also were crucified with him. Where this faith is, sinne shall no more haue dominion. The second is, to beat down the flesh by the sword of the spirit: and that is done by a serious application of the commandements, and the threatnings of God, to our seuerall affections and lusts. The third is, to flie the occasions of every sinne, and to cut off the first beginnings of euill.

The vse. This doctrine serues to condemne the drowisie Protestants of our time, who professe Christ without making any change in life and conuersation. For they are Saints in the Church, but in their common dealings they are as worldlings.

I I. Secondly, they are heere reproofed, that haue many good gifts of God in them, and yet neuer proceed to a through reformation. For they vse to cherish in themselves naughtie affections, and damnable lusts. There is some one sweet sinne or other, that they cannot abide to crucifie.

I II. They also are to be blamed, that cannot abide to heare their owne particular sinnes to be noted, and reproofed. They are vncrucified and vnmortified persons. And the word of God is the sword of the spirit, that serues to kill and destroy the flesh.

I V. In afflictions be content and quiet. For we ought to crucifie the affections and lusts of our flesh: and because we faile in this dutie, therefore God himselfe takes the worke in hand: and he will crucifie our corruption by his chastisements.

Further, of this duty of crucifying the flesh, there are three points to

to be considered. I. The time when this action must begin; namely, in our baptisme, or first conuersion. Therefore *Paul* saith, they that are Christs, *haue crucified, &c.* II. What must be crucified? *Ans.* The whole flesh, with euery inordinate affection and lust. This makes against them that fly and detest some fewe sinnes, 5 and runne headlong into others. III. What is crucifying? *Ans.* In it are two things, the restraint of the exercise of sinne, (which is in part in ciuill men,) and the killing of Originall corruption, in al the parts and branches thereof. And that is done, when we doe not only mourne for our corruptions, but also hate and detest them in our 10 selues.

25. If we liue in the Spirit, let vs also walke in the Spirit.

In these words is contained, the last reason of the rule of good 15 life before mentioned, in the 16. verse. For the vnderstanding whereof, two things are to be considered, what it is to liue in the Spirit; and what to walke in the Spirit; Touching the first. Life is twofold: created, or vncreated. Vncreated life, is the life of God. Created is that which pertaineth to the creature. And this is either 20 naturall, or spirituall. Naturall life, is led by naturall causes and means, as by meat, drinke, cloathing, breathing, &c. Spirituall life, is by, and from the Spirit. Of this there be two degrees. The first is, when the Spirit of God takes vp his habitation in man, and withall gouerneth all the powers of his soule, by putting into the minde, a 25 new light of knowledge, into the will and affections, new motions, and inclinations, whereby they are made conformable to the will of God. The second degree of spirituall life is, when the Spirit dwelleth in man, and gouerneth the powers of the soule, and further doth sustaine the body, immediatly without naturall means. 1. *Cor.* 30 15. 44. *It riseth againe a spirituall body, that is, a body liuing in the second degree of spirituall life, not being sustained by meanes, but immediately by the eternall sustentation of the Spirit.* The first of these degrees is in this life, the second after this life, in, and after the last iudgement, when body and soule shall be reunited. And of the 35 former, this place is to be vnderstood.

To walke in the Spirit, is, first to fauour the things of the Spirit, *Rom.* 8. 5. 7. And that is, to minde, with like, desire, and affect them; or in a word, to subiect a mans selfe to the law of God, in all the powers and faculties of the soule. For the things reuea- 40 led in the Law, are the things of the Spirit, which Spirit must at no hand be seuered from the word. Secondly, to walke in the path of righteous-

righteousnesse, without offence either of God or man, *Psal.* 143. 10.

Thirdly, to walke not stragglingly, but orderly by rule, by line, and by measure. For so much the word [*walke*] importeth, in the original; as if *Paul* should haue said, Let vs, (whilst we liue in this world)

572/200.

5 not onely indeauour to doe some one, or some few good actions, but in the course of our liues and callings, order our selues according to the rule and line of the word of God.

Theyse. This text in the first place, cut off the shiftes and excuses of sundry persons in these daies, who professe themselves to
10 be the children of God, and yet for their liues, are much to be blamed, because they leade them not according to the Spirit, but according to the flesh. And these persons, whatsoever they say, doe indeed and in truth, deceiue themselves, and are quite destitute of Gods Spirit. For if they liued in the Spirit, they would also walke in
15 the Spirit; It is not an idle spirit in any; but it will shew and manifest it selfe, in a holy and orderly conuersation. You will say; If such persons haue not the Spirit of God, what other Spirit haue they? *Ans.* If their life be naught, they haue an vncleane Spirit dwelling in them: and the god of this world hath blinded their
20 eies, and makes them that they cannot see the right way wherein they should walke, *1. Cor.* 4. 4.

Againe, we learne from hence, a true and pregnant signe, whereby to discern, whether any man hath in his heart the Spirit of God or no? The life of a man will discover and proclaime to all
25 the world, before God, men, and Angels, what himselfe is. If a man in the course of his life and calling be godly and vertuous, leading his life according to the will & word of God, in an honest and carefull indeauour, though he faile in some particulars: what euer the world thinkes of him, he is the man that is indued with the
30 Spirit of God.

Lastly, this teacheth, what is the office of all Christian people, namely, *to walke in the spirit*, that is, to frame and order the whole course and tenour of their liues, according to the line and square of Gods word and Spirit. A motiue to which dutie, may be that fearefull threat pronounced vpon those that turne aside, and walke in
35 their owne crooked wayes, *Psal.* 125. 5.

26 Let vs not be desirous of vaine glorie, prouoking one another, envying one another.

40 The scope. From this 26. verse, to the 11. verse of the chapter following, S. *Paul* handles the second Rule, which he had propoun-

pounded in the 13. verse of this chapter: *By loue serue one another.* In the handling whereof, he first laboureth to take away the impediments of Loue: and then he sets downe the manner, how the rule is to be obserued. This 26. verse is a rule, the ende whereof, is to remoue the impediments of loue.

In this verse foure points are especially to be considered. First, what the desire of vaine glory is? *Ans.* It is a branch of pride, which makes men to referre all they haue, or can do, to their owne priuate glory, and aduancement. For better vnderstanding whereof, consider a little the excuses that men haue, for the defence, or excuse of this sinne.

I. Excuse. Vaine glory in effect is no more, but the seeking of mens approbation, which may lawfully be done. *Ans.* To seeke the approbation of men, is no fault, so that it be sought in a good manner. The right manner of seeking the praise of men, is this: 15 A man must in this life passe through three iudgements; the iudgement of God, of his owne conscience, and of his neighbour: and the order of going through them, is; in the first place, he must seeke for the iudgement and approbation of God: in the next, his owne: and in the last, his neighbours. Now the vaine-glorious man takes another course, first and principally ayming at the glory and good liking of man, hauing small or no regard of the two other. 20

II. Excuse. There is a good boasting, which *Dauid* vsed, and that we may lawfully vse. *Psal. 7. 8.* *Ans.* Boasting is either lawfull, 25 or vnlawfull. Lawfull boasting is in the Lord, when, beeing vrged and compelled, we confesse the good things that are in vs, to Gods glory. Of this read at large, 2. *Cor. 11.* Vnlawfull is, when men ascribe the gifts that they haue of God, vnto themselves: or hauing gifts, do arrogate more vnto themselves, then indeed they haue: or in a 30 word, doe so esteeme of their gifts as if they had not receiued them from God. And this is a damnable boasting.

III. Excuse. Gods blessings we may seeke for: and what are glory and honour, but the blessings and gifts of God? *Answer.* There are two degrees of honour. The first is, the honour that e- 35 uery man hath in his place and calling. For euery calling ordained by God, hath a glory annexed vnto it: which beeing the gift of God, it may be both sought for, and enioyed. The other degree, is that which is aboue a mans place and calling, and that ought not to be sought for. Euery person must content himselfe with the ho- 40 nour which is sorted vnto his calling. Neuerthelesse, if God giue greater honour, he may accept it, but where God giues it not, there

there it must not bee desired. It remaineth therefore, that vaine-glory is a branch of pride, wherein men principally referre all their studies, counsels, indeavours, and gifts, to the honouring and advancing of themselves.

5 The next point to bee considered, is, why hee admonisheth the Galatians of vaine glory? *Answer.* The Galatians were men of vnderstanding and knowledge, and were adorned with many excellent gifts. Now, they that haue receiued good gifts of God, many times are most vaine-glorious, 2. Cor. 12. 7. Matt. 6. 5. And whereas
10 all other vices feed vpon that which is euill, this vice of vaine glory feeds vpon good things. For a man sometimes will be proud, euen because he is not proud.

A third point to be considered, is, where vaine glorie is to bee found? *Answer.* It is no rare matter, but it is a common vice, and
15 spreads it selfe farre and wide. Some there are, which neuer lift vp heart nor hand vnto God at home, and yet the same persons in the publike assemblies, will make as though they prayed with great deuotion. And what is the reason hereof, but this, that they are carried with a spirit of pride & arrogancy, seeking the commendation
20 of men that behold them, rather then to approoue their hearts and consciences vnto God. Of another sort are those, that haue bin old and ancient hearers of the word, who notwithstanding, do little, or not at all profit, either in knowledge or good life: and the cause is not in the Gospel, or in the dispensers of it, but in themselves: be-
25 cause they receiue not the Gospel for it selfe, but for the praise and commendation of men, and for the credit and account they are in, by reason of Christian profession.

The last thing is, the remedy of pride and vaine glory; which is the rather to be thought vpon, because it is a great impediment
30 of Christian loue. This remedie consists partly in *meditation*, and partly in *practise*.

Remedies in *meditation*, are these. 1. God resisteth all proud persons, and giues grace to the humble, 1. Pet. 5. 5. the reason is, because the vaine-glorious man, seeking himselfe and not God, robs
35 God of his honour. Thus the proud Pharisee exalting himselfe aboue the poore Publican, went away lesse iustified, that is, not approoued of God, as the Publican was. 2. It is the worke of the diuell, to puffe vp the minde with selfe-liking, and conceit, that therby he may worke mans perdition, Gen. 3. 5. But God worketh
40 contrarily: for he therfore abaileth men, that he might in his good time the more exalt them. 3. There is no religion in that heart, that is wholly bent to seek the praise of men, Iohn 5. 44. And the
man

man that desires to be talked of, and admired by others, doth thereby in effect give notice vnto all the world, that his heart is not found in the sight of God.

Remedies consisting in *practise*, are : first, an indeauour to acknowledge the great Maiestie of God, and withall our owne baseness, and vilenesse before him. 2. Wee ought to ascribe all good things we haue, or can do, to God alone, and nothing to our selues. For in all that befall vs, God is the principall agent, our selues are but tooles and instruments in his hand; by right therefore the commendation belongs vnto him, and not to vs. 3. In all actions and duties of religion, first we must endeauour to approoue our selues to God, and the next place is to be giuen to man, not contrariwise. 4. When we are reuiled we must rest content; when wee are praised to our faces, or otherwise we must take heed. For then Satan stands at our right hand to puffed vs vp, and consequently to overthrow vs. It is a true saying, that temptations on the right hand, are far more dangerous, then those on the left. In the fift place, *Pauls* reason to dissuade from this sinne, is taken from two euill fruits of it, *Contention*, and *Enuy*, *pruoking one another, enuying one another*. Men that are ambitious, if they bee croised in their courses, grow contentious, if they prosper in the world, then are they enuied by others. Reade for this purpose the history of *Samuel* and *Saul*, 1.

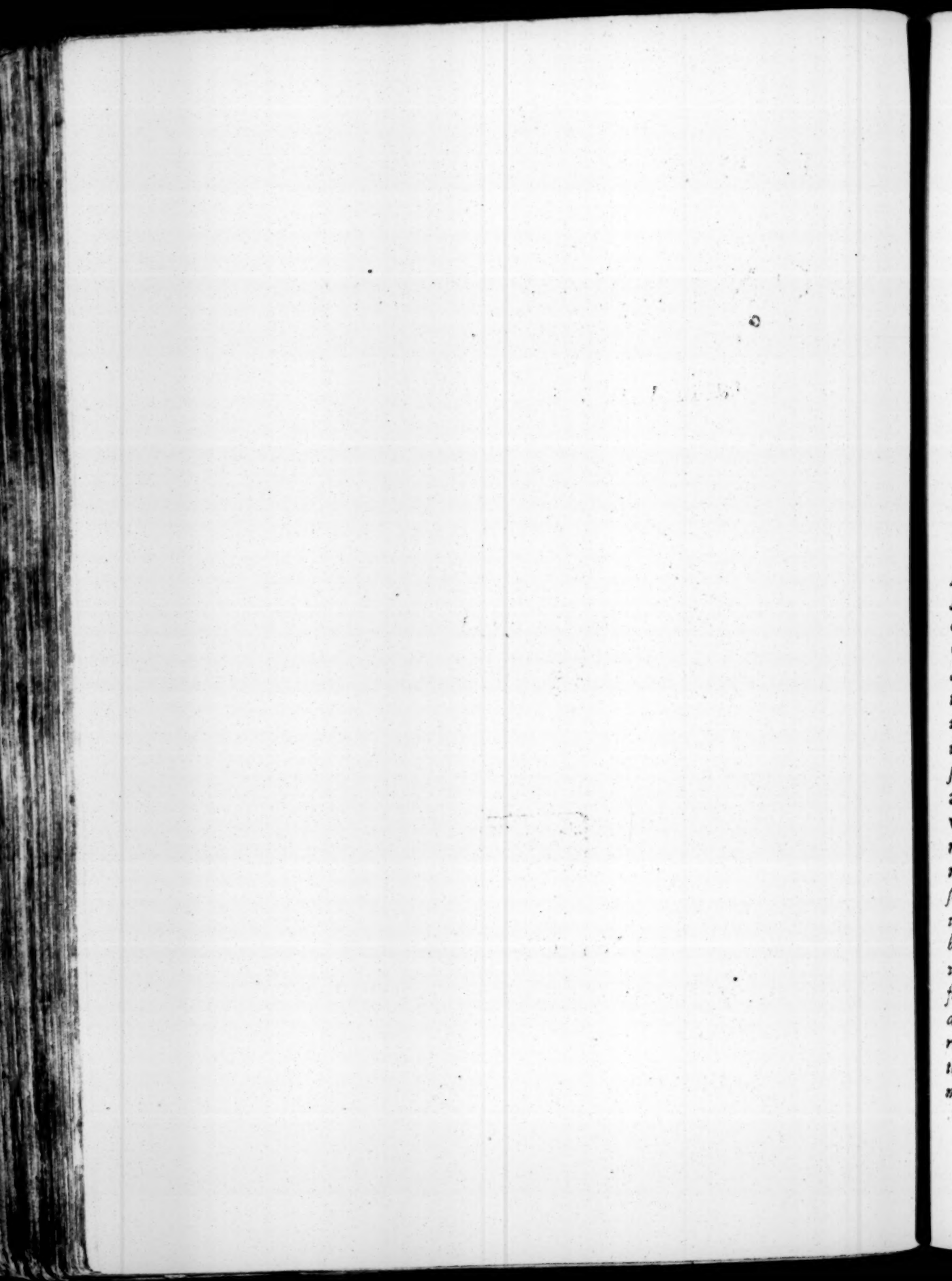
Sam. 15. Seeing then vaine glory hath so bad fruits issuing from it, it must teach vs to abhorre and detest it with all our hearts, and on the contrary to seeke by all meanes possible to preferue and maintaine loue in the whole course of our liues.

FINIS.

THE
SUPPLEMENT,
OR,
CONTINUATION
OF THE COMMENTARIE
vpon the sixth
Chapter.



LONDON,
Printed by I O H N L E G A T T, Prin-
ter to the Vniuersitie of CAM-
BRIDGE. 1 6 1 7.





TO THE RIGHT WOR- shipfull Sir BASSINGBURNE CAVDY, Knight.

Right Worshipfull, having beene licenced some
yeare agoe, (according to the ancient laudable
custome of the Vniuersitie) to interpret S Pauls
Epistles: and then earnestly intreated by M.
Perkins his Executour, and others his friends,
(which had some interest in me) to supply that
which was defectiue in his Commentary vpon
the Galatians: ouercome at the last by their im-
portunitie, I undertooke the businesse, making triall of my simple facultie
in this short Chapter, which I haue here according to my poore talent, fini-
shed: Yet not daring to publish it to the view of the world, without premi-
sing somewhat in way of excuse for my boldnesse. For if Hirtius, or (as
others thinke) Oppius, being importuned by his friend, to continue the
Commentaries which Cæsar left vnfinisbed, durst not presume to make a
Supplie, without making first an Apologie for himselfe, for attempting to
take in hand so great a taske, seeming therein to compare with him, who was
incomparable: Iust cause haue I to excuse my selfe for this my bold attempt,
in undertaking to equall him, who in the iudgement of all, (saue such as e-
steeme of Writers by tale, and not by touch) is so substantiall, concise, ex-
act, methodicall, that (as it is said of Cæsar) hee hath discouraged
wise men from writing. But seeing I doe not in the vaine confidence of
mine owne sufficiencie, or exactnesse of the worke, proclame a challenge to all
mens censures: nor yet take vpon me (as * some haue done in other writers)
so to carry the Authour along, that the Reader shall not perceiue but that he
is still reading him, nor know where he endeth, or where I beginne (for that
being impossible to attaine, were folly to attempt:) but onely to finish that
which otherwise should haue beene imperfect, to satisfie the request of my
friends, and to help forward the Lords building, though not as a master buil-
der with hewen stones, or polished Saphirs: yet as a mauer, and underlabou-
rer, as it were with a handfull of rubbish. I hope I shall obtaine (at least)
this fauourable construction, to bee thought as farre from vauitie herein, as
my conscience doth witnesse with me, I did it in simplicitie, and without af-

Præf. lib. 8. de
bello Gall.

Sanos homi-
nes à scriben-
do deterruit.
Cic. ad Brut.
Suet. in Cæf.
cap. 56.
* Michael de
Montaign. in
his Essayes.

The Epistle Dedicatorie.

*Affertation of singularitye. And if it were no presumption in Gillebertus to finish Bernard's Sermons upon the Canticles, nor in Clichtoueus to supply the 5, 6, 7, 8. * foure booke which were wanting in Cyrils Commentaries upon Iohn, nor in Wolfius, Reuterus, and other moderne writers to continue the Commentaries of Martyr, Zanchius, &c. but rather worke worthy great commendation, and deserving well of the Church of God: I trust it will not be imputed to me as a vice, which in others is accounted as a vertue. Further, if I shall seeme to any with the unskilfull limmer to haue toynd humano capiti, ceruicem equinam, in that I exceed as much the other part in prolixitie, as I come short of it in dexteritie, I hope I shall the more easily obtaine pardon, considering it was my first draught, not having taken pen in hand before: and seeing the worke which I was to finish, was caput Veneris, the faire face of Venus, I chose rather (because I could not hit of the iust proportion which I aimed at) to exceed measure a little, then to be defectiue: thinking thereby to satisfie them the better, seeing beauty or faireness (to speake more properly) consists onely in greatnesse, as the Philosopher saith. And some perhaps may thinke that it falleth out well, in that I haue giuen it more body, because it had lesse spirit. But what others thinke or say (for as in other things, so in this, lookers on will haue their wordes) it skillett not, so I may haue the approbation of the godly and well affected Reader: especially your Worshipful Patronage, to whom I humbly commend it, as the first fruits of my labours, a simple floure growing in a Schollers garden: desiring it may be suffered to grow either in the shadow, or Sunne shine of your protection, that so of the godly it may be better accepted, and of the caterpillar the lesse touched: (those I meane which will correct the Verbe before they understand the Nowne, condemning that which they ought rather to commend, at least which they cannot amend.) Vouchsafe therefore Right Worshipfull, to receiue this poore present, as a pledge of my vnsained loue, & humble dutie: and a testimony of my thankfulness to God for his manifold graces of prudence, iustice, sobrietie, meeknesse, humilitie, liberalitie bestowed vpon you, especially, your loue of his trueth, and continuall meditation in his word: which was the thing that moued mee, (all by-respects set aside) to offer this Commentary to your view, & to haue it graced with your countenance: that by this meanes I might the more stirre up and kindle (if it be possible) your loue and liking of the word, by adding fewel to the fire, and oyle to the flame. It is recorded of Theodosius the second, that he writ the New Testament ouer with his owne hand: and of Alphonfus King of Spaine and Naples, that hee read the Bible 14. times ouer with the ordinarie Glasse. (the best helpe that he had in those dayes.) And I doubt not but that you will peruse this Exposition at your leasure, and still continue to read the holy Scripture as hitherto you haue done, and so bee answerable to that which is voiced of you, and to that extraordinary commendation which your faithfull Pastor*
hath

Ethic lib. 4.
cap. 3.

The Epistle Dedicatorie.

hath oftenginen of your diligence and dexteritie in that behalfe. Now let mee adde this one thing, that though there bee not the like efficacie in a dead letter, that is in a lively voice, yet the bare reading of the Scripture is of great and singular use, which may appeare by this, that it is so often commanded by precept, and so highly commended by the practise of the Saints: and so straightly forbidden, as by cruell Antiochus, so by the Romane Antichrist: neither dare I deny but that God hath and doeth use it, not onely as a meanes of edification, but also of working the conversion of many of his seruants, as Augustine confesseth of himselfe, that he was converted by reading that place in Paul, Rom. 13. 14. converted (I say) not as an heretike only which is reclaimed from his erroneous opinions, but as a lost sheepe which is reduced and brought home from the error of his way. Notwithstanding, in reading the Scripture, to goe alone is not so safe: a guide therefore is necessary (as the Eunuch confesseth) which may be as the Mercurialis statua, to point a man to the right way. And this guide is either the outward, or the inward guide: the outward guide (I speake of reading onely) is a Commentarie, especially such a one as a sanctified spirit hath much breathed vpon: seeing it is the best learning the Theorick of him which is skilfull in the Practicke. The inward guide, is the spirit of Revelation, which dwelleth only in an humble, docible, & obedient heart, which who soeuer bringeth, hath a promise that he shall know the truth, Iohn 7. 17. and vnderstand the secrets of God, Psal. 25. 14. and without which the Scriptures are but as a riddle, or clasped booke. For the full and perfect knowledge of the word consisteth (as Epiphanius saith) in vnderstanding, and feeling, that is, not in bare speculation onely swimming in the braine, but in a sensible saining knowledge sinking into the affections of the heart: and by this latter, the comfortable meaning of the Scripture is better vnderstood, then by all the speculations of the most curious Skeptikes: as the sweetnesse of hony is better knowne in a moment by him that tasteth it, then by those that spend many houres in the contemplation and discourse of it.

1. Macc. 1. 60.

Confess. lib 8. cap. 12.

Acts 8. 31.

in Anchorat.

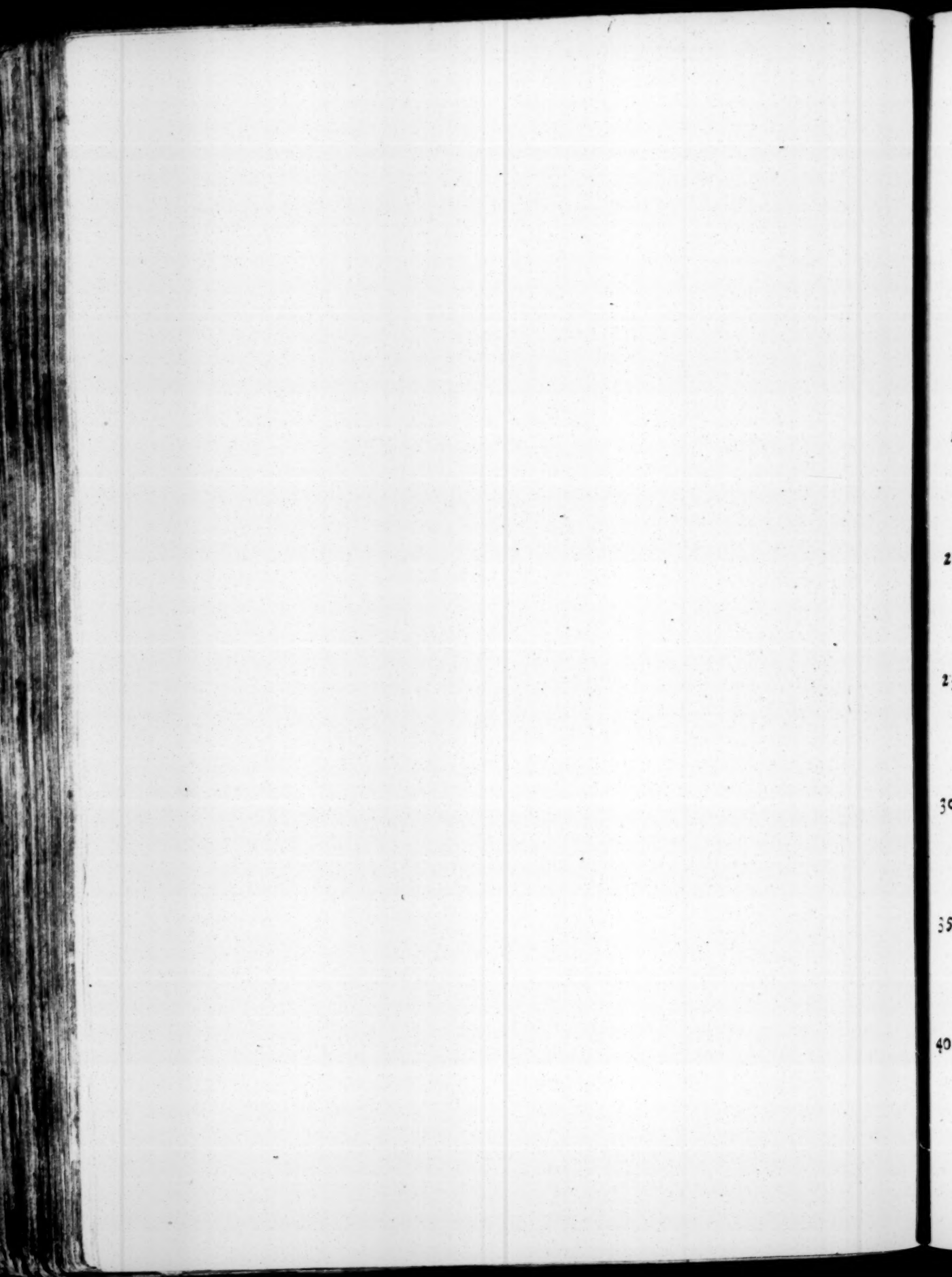
But I forget my selfe very much, in taking vpon me to read a lecture to such an exercised scholler in the booke of God. Therefore without further insinuation, either for pardon of my boldnes, or acceptance of my paines, I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace, which is able to build you further, and giue you an inheritance among all them, which are sanctified. From Emmanuel Colledge, August. 13. 1604.

A louer of your Worships vertues

in all duties to command,

RALFE CVDVORTH.

D d 3





CHAP. VI.

I Brethren, if a man be fallen by occasion into any fault, yee which are spirituall, restore such a one with the spirit of meekenes, considering thy selfe, lest thou also be tempted.

10

15



THE Apostle hauing finished the first part of the *Instruction*, touching the faith of the Galatians in the 12. verse of the 5. Chapter. In the 13. verse hee comes to the second part, touching good life, which continues to the 17. verse of the 6. Chap. in which he first propounds the summe of his doctrine, verse 13. Secondly, hee makes particular declaration thereof. In the summe of his doctrine, first, he sets downe the ground
20 of all good duties, which is, *their calling to Christian libertie*. Secondly, two rules of good life. The first, that *we must not use our libertie as an occasion to the flesh*; which is illustrated and handled in particular, from the 16. verse to the 26. The second, that *wee must serue one another in loue*, which is amplified from the 25. to the 11 verse of this
25 Chap. In handling whereof, he first remooues the impediments of loue, as vaine-glory, enuy, &c. verse 26. Secondly, he prescribes the manner, how it is to be obserued, and practised by sundry speciall rules: the first wherof is contained in this first verse: where wee may obserue the set two generall points. First, the dutie prescribed. Se-
30 condly, the reasons to vrge the performance thereof. The dutie is, the restoring of our brethren: where wee are to consider foure things. First, the dutie it selfe, *restore*. Secondly, the persons who are to be restored, *they that are ouertaken by any offence*. Thirdly, the persons that must restore, *those that are spirituall*. Fourthly, the manner
35 how, *in the spirit of meeknesse*.

For the first, the dutie is set downe in the word, *restore*, which in the originall signifies, to set a ioynt, or bone that is broken; so as it may become as strong and sound, as euer it was: so the word is v-
sed, *Matth. 21. 16.*

40 By this wee learne sundry things. First, that it is the nature of sinne, to set all things out of order. It was the sinne of *Achan* that troubled the *Iewes*, *Ios. 7. 25*. It was the sinne of *Abab* that troubled

Israel. 1. King. 18. 18. the sinne of false Apostles that troubled the *Galatians. Gal. 5. 10.* Nay, it drives men beidethemselues, as appears in the example of the prodigall sonne, who repenting of his sinnes, is said to *haue come to himselfe. Luk. 15. 17.* Small sins are like to slips and slidings, whereby men fall and hurt themselves, but great sinnes are like downefalls: for as they wound, lame, disioynt, or breake some member of the body; so these doe wound and waste the conscience. Therefore as we are carefull for our bodies, to auoid downefalls; so ought we to be as carefull, nay a thousand times more carefull for our soules, to take heed of the downefall of sinne, or falling away from grace. And as we shunne anyce or slippery place, for feare of sliding and falling: so ought we to shunne the smallest sinnes, and the least occasions of sinne, for feare of making a breach in conscience. Secondly, I gather hence, that sinners are not to deferre their repentance: nor those that are to admonish, their reproofes: for sinning, is the breaking of a bone, or disioyning of a member: and reproofe is the setting of it in order againe. Now the sooner a bone newly broken, or out of ioynt, is set, the sooner it is restored to his right frame, and cured: So, the sooner a man after his fall is admonished, the sooner and more easily shal he be able to recouer himselfe. Thirdly, this shews, that it is a point of great skill, to bring a soule in order and frame againe. There is great dexterity required in setting of a bone, and Chirurgicalians finde it a matter of great difficulty, to set a ioynt; much more difficulty is there in the soule: and therefore as it is not for every horseleach to meddle with setting of bones: no more it is for vnskillfull workmen to temper with mens soules. This is one speciall reason why *Paul* saith, *they that are spirituall ought to restore them that are fallen.* Fourthly, hence we are taught, not to wonder, though sinners be so loath to be reproued, and account it so painefull a thing to be restored, and thinke those offensive vnto them, and like their friends, which labour to reclaime them: considering the same is to be seene in the body: for he that hath a bone broken, or out of ioynt, can hardly endure to have it touched, or pointed at. Lastly, in that *S. Paul* commands those that are spirituall to restore them that are fallen, and prescribes not how often, but speaks indefinitely: we learne, that as often, as our brother falleth, we must restore him: for as we are not to forgive our brother once or twice, or seauen times (which *Peter* thought very much) but *euery time he sinneth*, that is, as often as he sinneth against vs. *Matthew 18.* so we may not restore our brother, wile or thrise onely, but *euery time*: as often as he shall sinne against vs.

L. Smith.

Matth. 18. If he sinne against thee, goe and tell him of his fault, &c. Therefore it were to be wished, that as men have a care to restore their decayed limmes, so they would restore their brethren being fallen into any sinne, even because they are fellow members of the
 5 same my sticall body.

The second thing to be considered, is the person to be restored, and that is, every one that is prevented and overtaken, either by the sleight of Sathan, or allurements of the world, or suggestions of his owne flesh: (so he sinne not against the holy Ghost, nor
 10 openly skorne religion, and discipline.) as *Peter* who fell being overtaken with overmuch feare, and *David* with overmuch pleasure. Hence we see the subtilty of Sathan, who is alwaies tripping at the heele, labouring to supplant vs; as also the deceitfulness of sinne, preventing and overtaking vs, before we be aware. We are
 15 therefore to be circumspect and carefull, lest we be supplanted. The Apostle admonisheth vs to take heed lest we be hardened through the deceitfulness of sinne. *Hebr. 3. 3.* and, that we walke circumspectly, not as fooles, but as wise. *Eph. 5. 15.* that we walke with a right foote. *Gal. 2. 14.* and, make straight steppes unto our feete, lest thou which is halting be turned out of the way. *Hebr. 12. 13.* For as those that wrastle and try masteries, looke warily to themselves, lest they be supplanted by their aduersaries: so ought we much more, considering, we
 20 wrastle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities and powers. *Eph. 6. 22.*

25 Again, whereas it is said, if a man be overtaken by any sin, he teacheth, that no man is exempted from falling, or being overtaken and supplanted by sinne: for he speakes indefinitely, if a man, as *S. Iohn* doth: if any man sinne, we haue an aduocate. *1. Ioh. 2. 1.* This makes against the *Catharists* or *Puritanes*, who avouch, they neither haue
 30 sinne, nor can sinne: because they be trees of righteousness; and a good tree cannot bring forth euill fruite.

Further, hence I gather, that pardon and restitution, is not to be denied to them that fall, after their conuersion, as though there were no place for repentance, or hope of saluation. For *Paul*
 35 would haue such to be restored, as are overtaken by any sinne, except they be incorrigible, and incurable. Therefore the *Nouatians* doe erre, in teaching, that sinnes committed after a mans conuersion, are unpardonable, considering there is hope in store, for great and hainous sinners. For though a man in persecution deny
 40 Christ, and renounce his religion, yet he may be restored, and repent as *Peter* did. *Luk. 22. 32.* (for that saying of Christ, *Who soeuer shall deny me before men, him will I deny before my father which is in hea-*
 ken

men, *Mat. 10. 33.* is meant only of a totall, and finall deniall.) Though a man be a grieuous Idolater, a forcerer, and giuen to witchcraft, yet he may be restored and find mercy, as *Manasses* did, *2. Chron. 33.* Though a man be defiled and polluted with sinnes against nature, yet he may be clesed and washed from them. Some among the *Corinthians* were fornicators, adulterers, wantons, buggerers; but yet were washed, sanctified, iustified. *1. Cor. 6. 9. 11.* It may be saide, that it is impossible, that they which haue beene once enlightened, and tasted of the heauenly gift, &c. if they fall away, should be renewed againe by repentance, *Heb. 6. 4, 5, 6.* Ans. That text is to be vnderstood of a vniuersall, totall, and finall Apostasie. And that text, *Heb. 10. 26.* If we sinne willingly, after that we haue receiued the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sinne, is to be vnderstood, of a wilfull, and malicious renouncing of the knowne truth, as the circumstances of the place, and collation of it with others, doe manifestly euict. Againe, if all sinne committed voluntarily, and willingly, were simply inextinguishable, euery mans case were damnable. And though the word *ἐκούσιως*, signifie willingly, as *Aristotle* takes it, *Eth. 1. 3. c. 2.* yet sometime it signifieth, spitefully, and maliciously, as it is vsed by the *Seuentie*, *Exod. 21. 13. 14.* Obiect. *ἁμαρτία*, or *delicta*, may be restored, not *ἀναμάρτια*, or *peccata*. An. w. They are vsed indifferently one for the other, as might be shewed, if it were needfull. But it is a confessed truth, auouched by *Anselme*, and others, vpon this text. Lastly, whereas the Apostle speaketh indefinitely; if any man be overtaken, restore him, I gather, that the gifts and graces of God bestowed vpon vs, ought to be vsed in restoring those that are fallen, without respect of persons: for herein spiritual men are debtors, to the wise, & foolish, as the Apostle saith of himselfe, *Rom. 1. 14.*

The third thing to be considered, is, the persons that are to restore their brethren, laid downe in these words, *ye that are spirituall.*

Spirituall men are opposed to carnall, as *1. Cor. 3. 1.* I could not speake vnto you brethren, as vnto spirituall men, but as vnto carnall: and to naturall men. *1. Cor. 2. 14. 15.* The naturall man perceiueth not the things of the Spirit of God: but he that is spirituall discerneth all things. Now carnall and naturall men, are of two sorts: either they are such as are altogether fleshly, destitute of grace and godlines, beeing in their pure (or rather corrupt) naturalls; of whome *S. Paul* saith, *They that are of the flesh, saue the things of the flesh*, *Rom. 8. 5.* and verse the 8. *They that are in the flesh, cannot please God.* or such as are regenerate, yet are weak, as being but babes in Christ; the flesh being far stronger in them, then the spirit: such were most

in the Church of Corinth: for Paul saith, he could not speake vnto the, as vnto spirituall men, but as vnto carnall. 1. Cor. 3. 1. for yet ye are carnal; for when there is among you enuying, are ye not carnall? vers. 40. So spirituall men, opposed to carnall, are of two sorts. First, those that
5 have received the spirit of regeneration, and doe begin to saue the things of the spirit, Rom. 8. Secondly, those that haue received a greater portion of the spirit, and greater measure of spiritual graces. of whom Paul speakes, 1. Cor. 14. 37. *If any man thinke himselfe to be a prophet or spirituall*—, Of the latter, the words are to
10 be vnderstood, and by them he meaneth those, whome he called perfect men, Philip. 3. 13. Ebr. 5. 4. Now spirituall men are more fit to restore those that are false, then any other, first, because they are less tainted with sinne, then others, and so may more freely reprove. Secondly, because they haue more knowledge & loue, both know-
15 ing how to restore, and willing to doe it with greater compassion, and fellowfeeling. He that must speake in season a word to the wearie, must haue a tongue of the learned, Isay. 50. 4. When Peter is converted, he must strengthen his brethren, Luke 32. 22. Hence it fol-
20 lowes, the more excellent gifts any man hath receiued, the more he is bound to be seruiceable vnto others. For if spirituall men must restore them that are fallen, the more a man is indued with spirituall graces, the more he ought to restore. For the Apostle saith, *As euery man hath receiued a gift, so let him minister it vnto others*, 1. Pet. 4.
10. This dutie was practised by our Saviour Christ, Ioh. 13. 12. And
25 it meetes with the sinne of many, who hauing receiued great gifts and graces of the spirit, are so far from restoring those that sinne against them, that they scorne and disdain to speake vnto them: for if they be at variance with any, the common saying is, *I am as good a man as he, why should I go to him? let him come to me, &c.* These men
30 are farre vnlike Abraham, who though hee exceeded Lot as well in outward gifts, as inward graces, yet stood not vpon his priuiledge, but was the first man in making the league of vnitie; Gen. 14. 8. Further, in that spirituall men must restore their brethren, wee learne, that we haue not the gifts of God bestowed vpon vs for our selues
35 alone, but for the good of others: the possession of them belongs to vs, the vse of them to others. Lastly, in that spirituall men, especially the holy men of God, and ministers of his word, are the Lords surgeons, to bind vp the broken, and raise vp those that are fallen: as also his physitians, to restore those that are in a spiritual cōsump-
40 tion of grace: wee ought to make great account of them, and haue them in singular loue for their works sake, 1. Thess. 5. 19. For if we must honor the bodily physician (as Syradices saith) Eccles. 38. 1. who cu-
reth

men, *Mat. 10. 33.* is meant only of a totall, and finall deniall.) Though a man be a grieuous Idolater, a forcerer, and giuen to witchcraft, yet he may be restored and find mercy, as *Manasses* did, *2. Chron. 33.* Though a man be defiled and polluted with sinnes against nature, yet he may be clesed and washed from them. Some among the *Corinthians* were fornicators, adulterers, wantons, buggerers; but yet were washed, sanctified, iustified. *1. Cor. 6. 9. 11.* It may be saide, that it is impossible, that they which haue beene once inlightned, and tasted of the heauenly gift, &c. if they fall away, should be renued againe by repentance, *Heb. 6. 4, 5, 6.* Ans. That text is to be vnderstood of a vniuersall, totall, and finall Apostasie. And that text, *Heb. 10. 26.* If we sinne willingly, after that we haue receiued the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sinne, is to be vnderstood, of a wilfull, and malicious renouncing of the knowne truth, as the circumstances of the place, and collation of it with others, doe manifestly euict. Againe, if all sinne committed voluntarily, and willingly, were simply inextinguishable, euery mans case were damnable. And though the word *ἐκούσιως*, signifie willingly, as *Aristotle* takes it, *Eth. 1. 3. c. 2.* yet sometime it signifieth, spitefully, and maliciously, as it is vsed by the *Seuentie*, *Exod. 21. 13. 14.* *Obiect. 2a.* *ἁμαρτία*, or *delicta*, may be restored, not *ἀμαρτία*, or *peccata.* Ans. They are vsed indifferently one for the other, as might be shewed, if it were needfull. But it is a confessed truth, auouched by *Anselme*, and others, vpon this text. Lattly, whereas the Apostle speaketh indefinitely; if any man be overtaken, restore him, I gather, that the gifts and graces of God bestowed vpon vs, ought to be vsed in restoring those that are fallen, without respect of persons: for herein spiritual men are debtors, to the wise, & foolish, as the Apostle saith of himselfe, *Rom. 1. 14.*

The third thing to be considered, is, the persons that are to restore their brethren, laid downe in these words, *ye that are spirituall.*

Spirituall men are opposed to *carnall*, as *1. Cor. 3. 1.* I could not speake vnto you brethren, as vnto spirituall men, but as vnto carnall: and to naturall men. *1. Cor. 2. 14. 15.* The naturall man perceiueth not the things of the Spirit of God: but he that is spirituall discerneth all things. Now carnall and naturall men, are of two sorts: either they are such as are altogether fleshly, destitute of grace and godlines, beeing in their pure (or rather corrupt) naturalls, of whome *S. Paul* saith, *They that are of the flesh, saue the things of the flesh,* *Rom. 8. 5.* and verse the 8. *They that are in the flesh, cannot please God.* or such as are regenerate, yet are weak, as being but babes in Christ; the flesh being far stronger in them, then the spirit: such were most

in the Church of Corinth: for Paul saith, he could not speake vnto the,
as vnto spirituall men, but as vnto carnall. 1. Cor. 3. 1. for yet ye are carnall;
for when there is among you enuying, are ye not carnall? vers. 40. So
spirituall men, opposed to carnall, are of two sorts. First, those that
5 haue receiued the spirit of regeneration, and doe begin to sauour
the things of the spirit, Rom. 8. Secondly, those that haue receiued
a greater portion of the spirit, and greater measure of spiritual gra-
ces. of whom Paul speakes, 1. Cor. 14. 37. *If any man thinke*
himselfe to be a prophet or spirituall —, Of the latter, the words are to
10 be vnderstood, and by them he meaneth those, whome he called
perfect men, Philip. 3. 13. *Ebr. 5. 4.* Now spirituall men are more fit to
restore those that are false, then any other, first, because they are les
tainted with sinne; then others, and so may more freely reprove.
Secondly, because they haue more knowledge & loue, both know-
15 ing how to restore, and willing to doe it with greater compassion,
and fellowfeeling. He that must speake in season a word to the
wearie, must haue a tongue of the learned, *Isay. 50. 4.* When Peter is con-
verted, he must strengthen his brethren, *Luke 32. 22.* Hence it fol-
lowes, the more excellent gifts any man hath receiued, the more he
20 is bound to be seruiceable vnto others. For if spirituall men must
restore them that are fallen, the more a man is indued with spiritu-
all graces, the more he ought to restore. For the Apostle saith, *As*
euery man hath receiued a gift, so let him minister it vnto others, 1. Pet. 4.
10. This dutie was practised by our Saviour Christ, *Ioh. 13. 12.* And
25 it meeets with the sinne of many, who hauing receiued great gifts
and graces of the spirit, are so far from restoring those that sinne a-
gainst them, that they scorne and disdaine to speake vnto them: for
if they be at variance with any, the common saying is, *I am as good*
a man as he, why should I go to him? let him come to me, &c. These men
30 are farre vnlike Abraham, who though hee exceeded Lot as well in
outward gifts, as inward graces, yet stood not vpon his priuiledge,
but was the first man in making the league of vnitie, *Gen. 14. 8.* Fur-
ther, in that spirituall men must restore their brethren, wee learne,
that we haue not the gifts of God bestowed vpon vs for our selues
35 alone, but for the good of others: the possession of them belongs
to vs, the vse of them to others. Lastly, in that spirituall men, especi-
ally the holy men of God, and ministers of his word, are the Lords
surgeons, to bind vp the broken, and raise vp those that are fallen:
as also his physicians, to restore those that are in a spiritual cōsump-
40 tion of grace: wee ought to make great account of them, and haue
them in singular loue for their works sake, 1. Thess. 5. 19. For if we must
honor the bodily physician (as Syradices saith) *Eccles. 38. 1.* who cu-
reth

reth but the diseases of the bodie: how much more ought wee to honour spirituall Physicians, which cure the spirituall maladies of our soules?

The fourth and last point, is, the manner how wee must restore, laid downe in these words, *in the spirit of meeknesse*.

Arist Rhet. ad
Theod. lib. 2.
cap. 3.

Meeknesse is, the setting or quieting of the mind, freeing it from perturbation, especially in repressing the reuengefull affection. A mecke and quiet spirit are ioyned together, 1. Pet. 3. 4. A notable example heereof we haue in *Moses*, who being prouoked, in stead of anger, shewed meeknesse. It further makes a man to yeeld of his right, and not to prolecute the matter in rigour and extremity, and so it is opposed to *seueritie*, 1. Corinth. 4. 21. *Shall I come vnto you with a rodde, or in loue, and the spirit of meeknesse?* Hence ariseth another propertie; it bridleth the tongue, and the outward man, either by silence, as Christ beeing prouoked, was dumbe, and opened not his mouth, *Isai. 53. 7.* was silent, and answered not a word, *Luke 23. 9.* or by a soft and gentle answer, which asswageth wrath, *Prou. 15. 1.* There is great reason why men should restore their brethren in all meeknesse: for without it there is nothing but swelling, and faction, but troubles and tragedies. Againe, as meeknesse is necessary for euery Christian, *Coloss. 2. 12.* *Titus 3. 2.* so is it most necessary for him that would fruitfully, and effectually reprove. Hence it is that the Apostle commaunds vs, to instruct them in meeknesse, that are contrary minded, *2. Tim. 2. 25.*

Motives to inforce this dutie, are these.

First, the exhortation and example of Christ, to bee followers of him, *1. Cor. 11. 1.* who was lowly and meeke, *Matt. 11. 29.* for he was led as a sheepe to the slaughter, and like a lambe dumbe before his shearer; so opened he not his mouth, *Isa. 53. 7.* When he was reuiled, reuiled not againe; when he suffered, he threatned not, *1. Pet. 2. 23.* as it may appeare by that mecke answer, *If I haue euill spoken, beare witnesse of the euill: but if I haue well spoken, why smitest thou me?* *Iohn 18. 23.* Paul hath no stronger argument to exhort the Corinthians, then by meeknesse and gentlenesse of Christ, *2. Cor. 10. 1.*

Secondly, it is a vertue which God doeth make great account of, *1. Peter 3. 4.* A mecke and quiet spirit, is before God, a thing much set by.

Thirdly, God hath made excellent promises to them that are of a meeke and humble spirit, that he will guide them in iudgement, and teach them in his wayes, *Psal. 25. 9.* That they shall bee hid in the day of the Lords wrath, *Zeph. 2. 3.* That they shall inherue the earth, *Matth. 5. 5.*

Fourthly,

there be no strife betweene thee and me, for we are brethren, *Gen. 13. 8.* Moses vsed it as a motiue to accord two Ebrewes: *Sirs, ye are brethren; why doe you wrong one to another? Act. 7. 26.* For it is a shame that those whom nature hath so neerely conioyned, should be so farre disioyned in affection. But the reason beeing taken from spirituall brethren, such as are not onely brethren in the flesh but also in the Lord, hauing the same God for their Father, the same Church for their mother, Christ for their elder brother, being begotten by the same immortal seed, washed by the lauer of one new birth, conglutinate by the sinewes of the same faith, nourished by the milke of the same word; is so much the stronger, by how much grace is a straiter bond, then nature: therefore *Paul* would haue vs restore one another in the spirit of meekenes, because we are brethren. Nay, persons excommunicate, are not to be accounted as enemies, but to be admonished as brethren, *2. Thess. 3. 15.* The reason why men vse no more mildnesse in their reproofes, is, because they forgette themselues to be brethren, or consider not that they haue to deale with their brethren: as *Iosephs* brethren, who considering him as an enemy, said one to another, *Behold, this dreamer commeth, come therefore, let vs kill him, Gen. 37. v. 19. 20.* But when they consider him as their brother, they say, *Come, and let vs sell him vnto the Ishmaelites, and let not our hands be vpon him: for he is our brother, and our flesh. v. 27.*

The second reason, is in these words, *Considering thy selfe, lest thou also be tempted.* And it is taken from the consideration of our owne estate, that we are subiect to fall, and to fall into temptation, as well as others: and therefore we ought to deale with them in all meekenes, as we would be dealt withall in the like case. The words are laide downe by way of admonition or aduise, and they carrie a double sense: either thus, *Considering thy selfe*, that is, looking to thy selfe: *lest thou also be tempted*, that is, lest thou offend, and sin in beeing too seuerely a censurer of thy brother, in reproouing sinne with sinne. Or thus, *Consider thy selfe*, that is, thine owne frailtie, how thou maiest easily be ouertaken with the same, the like, or a greater sinne, seeing thou maiest be taken in the diuels snare, and deceiued with his pleasant baits, as well as he was: therefore deale as mildly with him, as thou wouldest other should deale mercifully with thee. Here *Paul* forbiddeth vs not to consider the actions of our brethren, for we are to consider one another; First, that we may auoid the contagion of euill example, *Marke them diligently which cause diuision and offences, and auoid them. Rom. 16. 17.* Secondly, that we may be able to reprove and censure them. *Consider the matter, consult, and giue sentence. Iudg. 19. 30.* Thirdly, that we may follow their

their good example. *Looke on them which walke so, as yee haue vs for example, Philip. 3. 17. Let vs consider one another, to prouoke vnto loue, and to good workes, Hebr. 10. 24.* But he would haue vs, etpecially, consider our selues, that by the consideration of our owne weaknesse, wee might learne more mildnesse towards others in our reproofes: for seeing we stand in need of mercy, we ought to deale mercifully: and seeing God forgiveth vs innumerable sinnes, wee ought to forgive seuen times, yea, seuentie times seuen times: seeing he forgiveth vs ten thousand talents, wee ought to forgive an hundred pence, *Matth. 18. 32, 33.* *Obiect.* The Pharitie considered himselfe, when as hee said, *Lord, I thanke thee, but I am not as other men, thus and thus, or like this Publican, Luke 18. 11.* and yet he is reprooved by our Sauour Christ. *Answer.* True it is: for he onely considered his owne supposed vertues, which hee should not haue considered, but forgotten, though they had bene true vertues indeed, according to Christs precept, *Matth. 6. 3. Let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth:* and Pauls practise, *Philip. 3. 13. I forget that which is behind:* and neuer so much as lightly considered his owne sinnes, which Paul would haue vs to consider, and therefore he is reprooved.

Paul would haue vs consider our selues, because the serious consideration of our owne weakenes, wil mooue vs to practise this duty of meekenes: for as we helpe vp those that are fallen, releue the distressed, pitie the afflicted, burie the dead, &c. because we consider our selues in them, that their case may be ours: So we ought to restore those that are fallen, in all meeknes; because we may fall, and be overtaken as well as they: the rather, because God himselfe in correcting and reproouing vs, doth descend to our weakenes, and consider that we are but flesh, and a winde that passeth, and commeth not againe, *Psalme. 78. 39.* and Christ became like vnto vs in all things, and was tempted in like sort (yet without sinne) that he might be a mercifull, and a faithfull high Priest, and might be touched with a sense of our infirmities, *Hebr. 2. 17, 18.* and 4. 15. *Obiect.* He therefore that knowes assuredly he cannot be overcome by temptation, is not to reprove in the spirit of meekenes. *Ans.* No man is sure, and therefore no man can be secure. Againe, though a man know he cannot totally nor finally fall away, yet seeing he doth finde by experience, that he cannot overcome without much adoe, without much striving and wrastring, nay oftentimes not without resisting vnto blood: he ought to vse more meekenes and mildnesse, considering with what difficultie he overcame: Our Sauour Christ learned by experience how hard a thing it was to overcome temptations,

tations, that he might haue a fellow-feeling of our infirmities. Therefore spirituall men must remember, that they were once carnall, euen babes in Christ: those that are strong must consider that they were once weake: old men that are graue and staied, must call to mind that once they were in the beate of their youth, and what difficulties encountred them, and with that contention they passed the vanitie of that age: and so they shall the better reprove others in the spirit of meekenes, if they looke themselues in the glasse of their example: this is *Pauls* reason, why we should shew all meekenes to all men, because we our selues were in times past, vnwise, disobedient, &c. *10*
Tit. 3. 1. 3.

Hierom in
hunc locum.

Lastly, marke here how *Paul* changes the number: for hauing said, *Ye that are spirituall, restore &c.* in the plurall number, here he saith, *considering thy selfe*, in the singular, and not *your selues*: lest thou also be tempted, and not you: which he doth not through rudenesse of speech, as some of the ancient Diuines haue thought: but with great iudgment he vseth a familiar Hebraisme, changing the number. First to giue the greater force, and to set the sharper edge vpon his admonition. For that which is spoken to all, is spoken to none. Secondly, to shew how hard a thing it is for a man to consider him selfe. It is naturall for men to spie mores in other mens eyes, and not to perceiue beames in their owne, *Mat. 7. 3.* to looke outward at others, not inward at themselues. Like *Plutarchs Lamia*, or fayries which carried their eies in their heads when they went abroad, but when they came home put them vp in a boxe. In doing good and being beneficial, we must not so much, consider our selues, *Phil. 2. 4.* but in iudgeing and reproofing, we ought to begin with our selues.

For the better vnderstanding of the doctrine of brotherly correction, and christian reproofe, I will handle these foure questions: *30*
 I. who are to be reproofed? II. for what? III. by whome? IIII. in what manner?

I. Who are to be reproofed?

Ans. All that are brethren: for so our Sauour Christ saith, *If thy brother sinne against thee, reprove him betweene thee and him, Math. 18. 16.* *35*
 And *S. Paul* saith. *Brethren of any man &c.* The name *Brethren* is taken foure waies in Scripture, as *Ierome* hath well obserued against *Heluidius*. I. for those that are brethren by nature, as *Iacob* and *Esau*; the 12. Patriarkes; *Andrew* & *Peter*; *Iames* and *John*. II. for those that are of affinity. Thus the kinsmen of Christ, are called *his brethren*: *40*
 which the *Heluidians* not obseruing, thought they had beene his naturall brethren, by the virgin *Mary*: Thus *Abraham* and *Lot* are cal-

called *brethren*, Gen. 13. v. 8. 14. though *Lot* was but his brothers
 sonne, Gen. 14. 12. Thus *Iacob* the nephew of *Laban*, calleth him-
 selfe his brother, Gen. 29. 12. and so *Laban* calleth him, verse. 15. I I I.
 for men of the same countrey. Thus all the Iewes are called bre-
 thren one to another. Dent. 17. verse 15. From among thy brethren
 shalt thou make a king ouer thee: and, Dent. 23. 19. Thou shalt not giue to
 usury to thy brother, and, Rom. 9. 1. Paul saith, he could wish him-
 selfe anathema, or accursed, for his brethren, that is, the Iewes. I I I I.
 for those of the same religion. 1. Ioh. 3. 16. We must lay downe our
 liues for our brethren, Math. 23. 8. One is your Doctor, to wit Christ,
 and all ye are brethren. 1. Cor. 5. 11. If any that is called a brother be a for-
 nicatour, with such a one eate not. To these we may adde a fift accep-
 tion: for all those that are confederate, or otherwise ioyned toge-
 ther by the bond of nature, humanitie, societie, or friendship. Thus
 15 *Ahab* calleth *Benhadad* his brother, that is, his friend, 1. Kings 20. 32,
 33. Thus *Simeon* and *Leui* are called brethren in wickednesse, that is, Gen. 49. 5.
 confederate in euil. Thus all men are called brethren one to another
 by reason of the bond of nature, Genes. 9. 5. at the hand of a mans bro-
 ther, will I require the life of man. In all countries those that associate
 20 themselues together in warre, after a speciall manner are called
 sworne brethren. Now wee must not restrain the word brethren, to
 those that are brethren by nature, or by affinitie, or by countrey:
 neither inlarge it to all those that are brethren by the bond of na-
 ture; but onely to those that are brethren in the fourth acception,
 25 that is to say, brethren in religion, or brethren in the Lord, (though they
 be false brethren) if they be brethren at least in outward profession:
 for reproofe being a part of Ecclesiasticall discipline, belongeth not
 to those that are out of the visible Church, as to Iewes, Turkes,
 Pagans: because our Sauour Christ saith, If hee heare them, not,
 30 tell the Church: and if hee will not heare the Church, let him bee unto
 thee as an heathen man, and a Publican. Which cannot be vnderstood
 of him that is a heathen or Pagan already. And Paul saith, 1. Cor.
 5. 11. If any that is called a brother, that is, a Christian, bee a fornica-
 tor, &c. and then he addes in the next verse, what haue I to doe to iudge
 35 them that are without? that is, such as are no members of the church,
 to whom Ecclesiasticall Discipline reacheth not; Doe not ye iudge them
 that are within? that is, such as are of the visible Church, such as doe
 subiect themselues to the censure and discipline of the Church.
 It belongs therefore to those that are of the Church, at least in shew;
 40 but specially to those that are of the same particular Church,
 living vnder the same particular gouernement. Albeit the case
 may so fall out, that those of another Church, professing the
 same

same religion with vs, may bee reproofed, and censured: yea one Church may admonish another, for they being members one of another, are to procure the good one of another, as *Paul* teacheth by the similitude of *the head* and *the members* of the same bodie, *1. Cor. 12.* Therefore all that are in the bosome of the Church, even the mightie Princes and Potentates of the earth, are subiect to reproofe, if they offend: thus *Nathan* the Prophet, reproofed *Dauid*, *2. Sam. 12.* and *Azarias* the Priest rebuked *Izziah*, *2. Chron. 26. 18.* and *Paul* reproofed *Peter* to his face, *Gal. 2. 11.* Therefore those men, yea, those Magistrates, or Monarchs, that cannot endure the least reproofe, and wil not yeeld their necks to *Christ* his yoke, and their backs to the rod of *Ecclesiasticall* censure, are greatly to be censured: for herein they contemne the ordinance of God. Let them consider, that they are not better then King *Dauid*, who hauing sinned, patiently endured reproofe by *Nathan*. Let them remember how king *Izziah* was stricken with leprosie for resisting God in the ministry. And heere the Popish sort come to be taxed, who exempt their cleargy men (as they call them) from reproofes, and Ecclesiasticall proceedings, in thrusting them into some one monastery or other, lest their exemplary punishment should be a blemish or disparagement to their order and profession: whereas *Paul* would haue the Ministers and Elders, yea all superiours, to be reproofed as well as others; so it be done in order, and with due respect (as after I will shew.) Thus *Paul* biddeth the *Colossians*, that they should say to *Archippus*, *Take heed to thy ministry, that thou hast receiued in the Lord, that thou fulfill it, Col. 4. 17.*

II. Wee are bound to reproofe all that are in the Church, to whom we owe dutie of loue: but we are to loue our superiours, as much, if not more then others: therefore we are bound to reproofe them as well as others. III. There is greater reason wee should reproofe them then others. 1. Because they being in higher place, are in greater danger of falling then others, and therefore haue more need of admonitions and reproofes. 2. Because they haue many that will flatter them, but few or none that will, or dare reproofe them.

It will be said, all are not to bee reproofed which liue in the Church; for some be scorers, who (as *Salomon* saith) must not bee reproofed. And our Sauour *Christ* forbiddeth vs; *to cast pearles before swine, Matth. 7. 6.* I answer, that onely open scorers, contemners, persecuters of the word, are to be excepted: otherwise all wicked men are to bee censured and rebuked. For first, *Christ* speaketh of manifest contemners of religion, when he saith that they

they are like swine, which trample precious pearles under their feet: and of persecutours, when he saith, that like dogges they returne againe, and all to rend them. Secondly, Christ being here vpon earth, did not hinder the Pharisees, Sadducees, Publicanes, and harlots, from
 5 coming to his Sermons: much lesse would he debarre them of this censure of the Church. Thirdly, the woman of Syrophe-
 nissa (though called a dog) yet eateth of the crummes that fall from the
 childrens table, *Matth. 15. 27.* Fourthly, *Paul* did often admonish
 and rebuke the Corinthians, though they were carnall and fleshly
 10 minded: therefore all men, though neuer so publike and notorious
 offenders, (if they bee not open scorers, or persecutours of the
 knowne truth) are to be reprooued.

Obiect. Profane men, which notoriously offend and scandalize
 the Church by their wicked liues, haue no fellowship with Christ,
 15 but are to be accounted as dogs out of the Church.

I answer, 1. They are not to be accounted dogs, which doe ac-
 knowledgetheir faults, the greatnesse of their sinne, and the merit
 of Christ: for such a dog was the Canaanitish woman, who was a
 true beleueer. 2. This is agreeable to *S. Pauls* practise, who did
 20 admonish those among the Corinthians, that were carnall, and did
 not at the very first excommunicate them, or yet suspend them:
 and so answerably he commands *Titus*, that he should rebuke the
Cretians sharply, or precisely, for their notable lying and idlenesse,
Titus 1. 12. 3. Christ denieth not pardon to them that fall by *reci-*
 25 *dination*, but would haue them forgiven, not onely till seuen times,
 but till seuentie times seuen times; and *Paul* speakes indefinitely
 in this place, that we should restore him that falleth by occasion into any
 offence, not specifying how often we should forgive. 4. We must
 distinguish betwixt the Magistrates sword, and the keyes of the
 30 Church: notorious offendours when they repent, are to be recei-
 ued into the bosome of the Church, as sonnes of the Church: yet
 for all that they may, nay they ought to be punished by the magi-
 strate: as the good thiefe (albeit a member of Christ) yet iustly pu-
 nished for his offence.

35 I I. For what faults are men to be reproved?

Men are to be reprooued for every knowne sinne: This is ma-
 nifest from the end of reproofes, which is the gaining of our bro-
 ther, that he perish not in his sinne: but every sinne is of this nature
 and quality, that it bringeth death, being not repented of: therefore
 40 for every sinne a man is to bee reprooued. Secondly, our Sauiour
 doeth not restraints this precept to priuate iniuries, because in that
 case, we are to follow another rule. *Resist not euill. Blesse, and curse*
not.

not. Doe good to them, that hate you, &c. Thirdly, it is extended to every sinne, because hee which sinneth against God, or the whole Church, sinneth also against thee, and every particular member of the Church. For every Christian ought more to be affected for the sinnes committed against God, or the body of the Church, then for those that are personally, and directly intended or done against himselfe: therefore Christ speaketh not onely of sinnes, as they are private wrongs, iniuries, or damages; but as they are dishonorable to the maiestie of God, scandalous to the Church, pernicious to him that committed them; not onely as they offend him against whom they are committed. It will be objected, that Christs commandement is to be vnderstood of those that wrong vs, when he saith, *If thy brother sin against thee.* I answer, that phrase and forme of speech (*against thee*) is not meant only of private wrongs offered vs, (as I haue said) but of any sinne committed against God: for in every knowne sin, we are in a sort wronged: 1. Because we ought to be so zealous of the glory of God, that wee ought to be more grieved when men sinne against God, then when they sin against vs: yea, we must make Gods quarell, our owne quarell. 2. Because he which sinnes in our presence, doth, or at least ought to offend vs. As *Hezekiah* was offended when he heard the blasphemies of *Rabshekah*, 2. King. 19. 1. and *Dauid*, whose eyes powred out riuers of waters, because men kept not Gods law, *Psal.* 119. verse 136. and *Lot*, who vexed his righteous soule, in seeing and hearing the abominations of the Sodomites, 2. Pet. 2. 8. For to expound these words [*against thee*] thou being priuie to it, is farre from the meaning of the text, neither can the phrase be shewed in that sense.

Now that men are to be reprovued for knowne sinnes committed against God, of what nature, quality, and condition soeuer they be, besides the former reasons, it is manifest *Leuiticus* 19. 17. *Thou shalt not hate thy brother in thine heart, but thou shalt plainly rebuke him, and shalt not suffer sinne to rest upon him.* Therefore a man is to bee rebuked for euery sinne. The Apostle wheresoeuer hee speaketh of reproofes, neuer restraines it to one kinde, but extends it to all knowne sinnes. 1. Cor. 5. he reprovues the incestuous person for his incest, and excommunicateth him being impenitent. So in this place, if a man be fallen by occasion into any offence, he saith not, this or that offence, but in generall, into any offence, whether in life or doctrine, by euill example, or otherwise, against the first, or second Table. Yet this is so to bee vnderstood, as that iniuries and wrongs offered vs, are not to be excluded: for euen for them also, are men

men to be reproofed. I. It is the purpose of our Saviour Christ, *Matthew 18.* to teach this very point, *ter hauing taught, Matt. 18.* verse 6. that none should offend or scandalize his brother; in the 10. verse, he shewes what is to be done, if any man did offend his brother, by iniuring or wronging him: to wit, that hee is to re-
 5 prooue him. II. Hee maketh him that suffered the wrong, a wit-
 nesse, not an accuser, when he saith, *If hee heare thee not, take yet with thee one or two, that by the mouth of two or three witnesses, euery word may be confirmed, Maith. 18. 16.* He biddeth him take one or
 10 two, that so it may bee confirmed by the testimonie, not of one or two, but of two or three: therefore the partie offended is one of the witnesses. III. If it were lawfull to reproofe men for iniuries offered vs, what course should hee take that is secretly wronged, none being priuie to the wrong but himselfe, and the partie offen-
 15 ding? Thus men would be imboldned to sinne, seeing they could by no meanes be controlled, and so men might frustrate the com-
 mandement of Christ. I adde further, that he which is iniured, is fitter to reprove him that offered the iniury then any other. I. Be-
 20 cause the offence, both for substance and circumstance, is better knowne vnto him, then to any other. II. Because the reproofe (in all likelihood) will take the better place, when as the offender shall haue coales of fire heaped vpon his head, when he shal see, that the partie wronged, is desirous of his good, and ready to requite
 25 good for euil, in seeking his amendment, whereas hee sought his hurt. And whereas it might seeme, that it sauoureth of reuenge, to reprove those that wrong vs, I answer, though many in reproofing reuenge themselues, yet the one may bee done without the other; and the right vse of a thing is not to be neglected, because of the abuse thereof.

30 *Obiect.* Authors of heresies, schismes, dissensions are to be auoided *Rom. 16. 17.* therefore not to be reproofed, *Ans.* Generall places of Scripture, are to be expounded, according to particular limitation in other places: now that general text, *Rom. 16. 15* is restrained and limited, *Tit. 3. 10. Auoid an heretike after once or twice admonition.*

35 *Obiect.* Paul commands the *Corinthians*, that without any more adoe, they should proceede forthwith to the publike censure of excommunication against the incestuous person: and as it may seeme, without any former reproofe, *1. Cor. 5.* Besides, hee com-
 40 maunds that wee should not eat, that is, familiarly conuerse with notorious persons of scandalous life, *1. Cor. 5. 11.* and that wee should withdraw our selues from euery brother that walketh inordinately,

2. *Theſſ* 3. 6. *Answer.* Pauls practise is not contrary to Christs precept. He purposed indeed to excommunicate the incestuous person, if he persisted in his sinne, yet marke how; *in the name, and by the power of our Lord Iesus Christ*. 1. *Cor.* 5. 4. in which words the forme of proceeding against him is limited, and that according to Christs institution, *Matth.* 18. *the name and power of Christ*, signifying the word and institution of Christ. 2. *Paul* doeth plainly expound himselfe in other places, what his practise was in that behalfe, as 2. *Corinth.* 13. 1, 2. where hee signifieth, that hee did not excommunicate vncleane persons, fornicatours, wantons (mentioned chap. 12. 21.) before the third admonition; making his third coming vnto them, in stead of three admonitions, or witnesses against them.

It will be said, that *Paul* threatneth, when hee commeth he will not spare *the rest*. 2. *Cor.* 13. 2. therefore it seemeth hee was resolved to excommunicate them without any former proceeding against them. *Answer.* When *Paul* saith, *I write to them which haue sinned, and to all others, that if I come againe, I will not spare.* By all others, he meaneth not some which he purposed to excommunicate without former admonition, (for in writing this Epistle to them, hee admonisheth them all to repent, lest when he came he should vse seueritie) but those which liued securely in the open breach of the law, to whom he threatned to come with a rod if they did not amend, 1. *Cor.* 4. 21. and when hee now againe admonisheth, threatning that it he come the third time, he will not spare. Besides this, *Paul* should be vnconstant and vnlike himselfe, if he should admonish vncleane persons, fornicatours, wantons, and that three times before excommunication: and should at the first excommunicate certain others without any precedent admonition.

3. The word there vsed, signifieth reproofe in word, as it is taken, *Luke* 17. *If thy brother sinne against thee, rebuke him:* therefore the reproofe by many, or of many mentioned, 2. *Cor.* 2. 6. may signifie as well the graue, serious, and effectuell reproofe of the Church, by which the incestuous person was reclaimed from his sinne, and so prevented the thunderbolt of excommunication; as the reall ejection out of the Church: and those words, verse 10. *if you forgive any thing,* may as well signifie receiuing into fauour and familiaritie before excommunication, vpon his repentance, as restitution after excommunication.

4. Be it granted, hee were indeed excommunicate (as it is most probable he was) yet hence it cannot be inferred, that they did proceed against him without precedent admonition. The Scripture is silent

silent in this point. Therefore the reason is not good; it is not recorded, therefore it was not practised.

5. Though the Apostle command that we should haue no familiaritie with inordinate liuers, *2. Thess. 3. 6.* but that wee withdraw our selues from them, yet hee addes withall, that if there were any amongst them that would not obey his sayings, they should note him by a letter, verse 14. and he expressely commandeth that they should *admonish the inordinate, 1. Thess. 5. 14.* for that was his practise, as it may appeare, *2. Thess. 3. Those that are such,* that is, inordinate liuers, *wee exhort and command by our Lord Iesus Christ, that they worke with quietnesse, and eat their owne bread.*

III. Who are to reprove?

It is a dutie which concerneth all men; our Sauour Christ saith, *If thy brother sinne against thee, reprove him:* and the commandement is generall, *Lewit. 19. 17. Thou shalt not hate thy brother in thy heart, but shalt rebuke him plainly:* now all Christians are brethren, (as I haue shewed,) therefore all men are bound to reprove their brethren, as occasion shall serue. Secondly, all Christians are members of the same bodie whereof Christ is the head, therefore they are to helpe and further one another, as members of the naturall body do: and this is done by admonition and reprehension. Thirdly, the bond of charitie tieth all men to help their brethren, in what they can for their good, and therefore (if need be) to reprove them. And albeit some may seeme to bee vnfit or vnworthy reproouers of others, being tainted with as great, or greater sinnes themselves, and so cannot cast out moles out of other mens eyes, they hauing beames in their owne; yet wee must know, that sinne freeth none from this dutie: Indeed none ought to reprove, either with scandall to others, or with hurt and hinderance of him that is reprovued; yet no man is exempted from this dutie. For euery man ought to be cleare and blamelesse, specially of open crimes, that so hee may more freely and fruitfully reprove his neighbour; but though he be not, yet he remaineth still bound to the performance of this dutie. Our Sauour saith not, that hee which hath a beame in his eye, is therefore freed from pulling foorth the mote out of his brothers eye; but, *first cast out the beame out of thine owne eye, and then shalt thou see to pull out the mote out of thy brothers eye.* They therefore are seuerely to bee censured, nay deeply to bee condemned, who say with Cain, *Am I my brothers keeper?* as though it concerned them not a whit whether hee sinke or swim; as though euery man were to looke to himselfe alone, for his owne behoofe and benefit, and not vpon the things of his brethren, for their good?

Genes. 4. 9.

Philip. 2. 4.

good? or as though God had not made euery man a guardian to his brother? The dimme candle light of corrupt nature, condemneth these men, which reacheth that he which may saue, and doth not, doeth in effect as much as kill, or destroy. The dutie therefore lieth vpon all, but chiefly vpon the Pastours and Ministers of the word: for they are to inquire into the liues of men, specially of those that are committed and commended to their charge: for which cause they are called the Lords ouerseers, or watchmen, *Ezech. 33. and 34.* And if they doe not strengthen the weak, heale the sicke, binde vp the broken, bring againe that which was driuen away, nor seeke that which is lost, &c. he will require his sheepe at their hands; *Ezech. 34. verse 4. 10.* Paul inioynes the Pastours of the Church of Ephesus, that they should take heed to themselves, and to the flocke whereof the holy Ghost had made them ouerseers, *Actes 20. 28.* and hee commaundeth *Timothie*, that hee should bee instant in season, and out of season; that hee should improoue, rebuke, exhort with all long suffering and doctrine, *2. Tim. 4. 2.* and *Titus*, that hee rebuke and exhort with all authoritie, *Titus 2. 15.*

Further, it is to be obserued, that though all men are bound to reprove their neighbours if they offend, yet in five cases they are not bound.

I. If a man be ignorant of the offence. For a man that reproveth another, must be certaine of the fault, otherwise he doth purchase to himselfe a blot: and priuate persons are not to prie into other mens actions, that so they may haue matter to reprove, *Prou. 25. 24. 15.* For wee are bound to reprove, as wee are bound to giue almes: now wee are not bound in giuing almes, to seeke some, to whom we may giue; if we giue to those whom we meet, that stand in need of our almes, wee haue done our dutie. The like is in reproofes. And although reproofe bee a debt which wee owe our neighbour; yet it is no debt due to any priuate person (for then we were bound to search out the partie, and discharge the debt) but it is a publike debt which we owe to all: and therefore it is not necessary we should seeke them out. If we discharge it to those we meet withall, it is sufficient. *S. Augustine* saith well, *Admonet Dominus non negligere inuicem peccata nostra, non querendo quod reprehendas, sed videndo quod corrigas.*

II. If hee haue repented of his fact, he is not to be reprovved, for the end of reproofe, is to reclaime him; therefore if he be reclaimed already, there is no place left for reproofe: although the Magistrate may punish and correct him in regard of the common good.

De verb.
Dom. Sermon.
16.

III. A man is not to reprove, if hee be certaine his reproofe will doe no good: for when the end ceaseth, all things tending to the end, doe likewise cease; therefore if there be no hope of amendment (which is the end of reproofe) reproofe is to be omitted; specially if it bee so farre from bettering the partie, that it make him
 5 much worse. *Salomon saith, Hee which instructeth a scorner, getteth himselfe reproach, and he that reproveth a wicked man, purchaseth to himselfe a blot, Prov. 9 7.* And then he addes in the next verse, *Rebuke not a scorner, lest he hate thee; rebuke a wise man, and hee will love thee.* And
 10 verily it were great folly to spend labour in vaine, in telling them of their faults, when our schooling wil not better them, but incense them more and more: It were better to bee silent, or to separate from them, then to stirre vp hornets, or to thrust our hands into a waspes nest. It is well said of one, that he which shall bestow the
 15 seeds of wholesome admonitions on such cursed and vnprofitable ground, shall reap nothing for his paines, but the thornes of mocks and reproaches.

It will bee said, the Iudge ceaseth not to punish malefactors, though they bee not bettered by their punishment; therefore seeing
 20 brotherly correction is commaunded, it must not be omitted, though the partie reprooved be not bettered, but offended therby, and made worse. I answer. The reason is nothing alike; for the Iudge in punishing, doth principally intend the good of the Common wealth, which commeth by chastising, or by cutting off ma-
 25 lefactors, though they themselues be nothing bettered: but the end of reproofe is the amendment, and good of him that is reprooved: therefore a man may not be reprooved, except it be for his private good, though the Magistrate may punish him in regard of the common good.

30 IV. Reproofe may be omitted, if it be certaine that the partie will either presently redresse his fault without reproofe: or that some others wil admonish him therof, whom it doth more neerely concerne. As the giuing of almes may be omitted, if it bee certaine that the partie that is in want, will provide for himselfe, or that he
 35 will be sufficiently relieued by others.

V. If it may bee done more conueniently and profitably another time, it may be omitted for the time. Except in these five cases, he that doeth not reprove his brother, is guilty of his sinne,
Leuit. 5. 1.

40 IIII. Point. *In what manner are men to be reprooved?*

The manner to be obserued in reproouing, I will lay downe in ten rules.

I. A

I. A man must so reprove his brother, as that it may be most for the advancement of Gods glory, best for the winning of him to God, and least to the defaming of him abroad in the world: and that it may appeare vnto him, that he doth it of loue (aiming at nothing but his good) not of any malicious humour, or siniller affection of reuenge, or vaine glory, &c. and that this may be done, two things must be practised. First, he that reproveth another, must pray that God would so guide his tongue, and mooue the others heart, that his reproofe may be profitable vnto him: for without Gods blessing our admonitions are but words spoken in the wind, *1. Iohn, 5. v. 16. If any see his brother sin a sin that is not unto death, let him pray, &c.* Secondly, we may not traduce him to others, either before or after our reproofe, *1. Pet. 4. 8.* This rule is generall: the rest following are more speciall.

II. Euery reproofe must be grounded vpon a certaine knowledge of the fault committed. For we may not goe vpon priuate surmises and supposes, or flying reports and rumours blazed abroad: nor vpon vehement suspitions, or strong presumptions, *Deut. 13. v. 14.* for in so doing, we shall but offend the party, who knowes himselfe to be innocent of the crime objected, & purchase to our selues a blot of indiscretiō, in being zealous without knowledge. Therefore for secret sinnes, men are not to be reprovued. *Secret* I call those that are knowne onely to God, and the conscience of the doer: or onely to others, but not to vs. This was practised by *S. Paul, Gal. 2. 14.* who reprovued not *Peter*, till he was thoroughly informed of his offence: which condemnes the common practise of the multitude, who censure and reprove others, specially publike persons, as Magistrates and Ministers, vpon false reports, or wicked surmises, when as no accusation may be admitted against such, vnder two or three witnesses, *1. Tim. 5. 20.* Yet a man may reprove vpon credible informatiō, as *Paul* did the *Corinthians* for their contentions, grounding his reproofe vpon the report of the house of *Cloe*, *1. Cor. 1. 11.* which he beleued to be in part true, *1. Cor. 11. 18.* If the report be not certaine, we must onely reprove hypothetically, and not peremptorily.

III. In reprovuing others, we must consider our selues specially our owne weakenes, and beginne the reproofe in our selues, if not for the same fault we reprove in our neighbour, yet for as great as that (if not a greater) in another kind: this maner of reprovuing is inioyned by *S. Paul*, when he saith, *considering thy selfe, lest thou also be tempted:* and a man is to consider himselfe in three respects: in regard of the time past, present, and to come: in regard of the time past, that

that he was as wicked, prophane, & gracelesse as another: yea that he was (as the Apostle speaketh) *darkenſſe, and the child of wrath as wel as others: Paul ſhewes the force of this conſideration,* when he perſwades men to be ſoft and gentle, ſhewing all meekenes to all
 5 men: a reaſon taken from the conſideration of our owne frailties and ſins in time paſt: *for (ſaith he) we our ſelues alſo were in times paſt vnwiſe, diſobedient, deſciued, ſeruing the luſts and diuers pleasures, liuing in maliciousneſſe and enuy, hatefull and hating one another, Tit. 3. v. 2. 3.* In regard of the time preſent, that he is but a fraile man, ready to fall euery
 10 moment, that he is not able of himſelfe to thinke the leaſt good thought, much leſſe to reſiſt the leaſt temptation, and that whatſoeuer he is, he is it out of himſelfe, by grace in Chriſt, as Paul ſaith, *By the grace of God I am that I am.* So that were it not for this preuen-
 15 ting and cooperating grace, he would fall into as great enormities as other men. In regard of the time to come, *Conſider thy ſelfe, leſt thou alſo be tempted: remember Pauls Item, 1. Cor. 10. v. 12. Let him that thinketh he ſtandeth, take heed leſt he fall: for if thou haſt not bin ouer-*
 taken with the like ſinne, yet thou maielt be hereafter: therefore as thou wouldeſt haue others to be compaſſionate towards thee, if
 20 thou were in the like caſe, ſo be thou to them. The not obſeruance of this rule, is the cauſe that there are ſo many cenſorious *Catoes*, ſo many ſeuere *Ariſtarchi* of others mens actions, ſo many that are ſharpe ſighted and Eagle eyed, in ſpying moles in other mens eies: and as blind as moles or beetles, in diſcerning the great beams that
 25 are in their owne eies.

III. It is very requiſite and expedient, that the reproouer be not tainted with the ſame, or the like fault which he reſproueth in an other, leaſt it be ſaid vnto him, *Phyſitian cure thy ſelfe. Luk. 4. 13.* In that thou iudgeſt another, thou condemneſt thy ſelfe, *Rom. 2. v. 1.* Therefore *Dauid* ſaith not, Let the wicked ſmite me, or let him that is as deep in fault as my ſelfe reſproue me: but *Let the righteous ſmite me, for that is a benefite, and let him reſproue mee, that ſhall be as pretious oile: that ſhall not be wanting to my head, Pſal. 141. v. 5.* For albeit in regard of the reſproue it ſelfe, it be not greatly materiall, yet it is not ſo
 35 expedient, nor ſo profitable in regard of the reproouer, 1. becauſe he ſeemeth vnworthy to reſproue another, who is to be reſproued himſelfe, beeing as deepe in fault as any: 2. becauſe it will be thought, that he which maketh no conſcience to redreſſe himſelfe, will not be ſo ready to reclaime others, of loue to their per-
 40 ſons, or barred of their ſinnes, or zeale of Gods glory; but for pride, or buſineſſe in other mens matters, or vanity, or ſome ſuch ſiniller ends.

Aut ſumus,
 aut fuimus,
 vel poſtumus
 eſſe quod hic
 eſt.

V. All reproofes must be so ministred, as that the party reproofed may be brought to a true sight of his sinne: as also to a lively sense and feeling thereof, and so to a compunction of heart, by reason of it, and of the wrath of God, which attendeth vpon him for his sinne; For the performance of this rule, we haue the example of God himselfe, *Psal. 50. v. 21. I will reprove thee, and set thy sinnes in order before thee*; as also the Prophet *Nathan*, who by the parable conuicted *Dauids* conscience, and so made him condemne himself, *2. Sam. 12*. And the precept of Saint *Paul*, commanding *Timothy*, that he should so reprove, as that he conuict the conscience of the sinne, when he saith, *Reprove, rebuke, exhort with all long suffering &*

2. Tim 4. 2.

DOCTRINE: now this is done by shewing the true meaning of the law, and the curse of God annexed to every breach thereof, and so by vnfolding the horrible greatnesse of sinne, to the conscience of him whom we doe reprove. For reproofes which are not thus qualified, are but cold and perfunctory, such as was that of *Elie*, in reproouing his lewd sonnes, *Why doe ye such things? for of all this people, I heare euill reports of you: doe noe more my sonnes, for it is no good report that I heare*, *1. Sam. 2. v. 23. 24*. beeing a meanes rather to cherish sinne in them, then to reclaime them from it. These kinds of reproofes, not vnfitly may be compared to hot or halty healing salues, which draw a faire skin one a fowle wound; which because it is not soundly cured from the bottome, but ouerly healed vp, doth afterward apostemate or fistulate, and becometh more dangerous and desperate then euer before.

VI. The vineger of sharpe reprehension, must be allaiied and tempered with the oyle of milde and gentle exhortation; we may not onely vse the *corrasines of the law*, but withall we must apply the *cordials of the Gospell*: bitter pilles of reproofe, must bee sugered ouer with louing & affectionate perswasion: lest the patient abhor the physicke: euery man in this case is to follow the skilfull Chirurgeon, who doth not alway vse *section* and *vstion* in launcing the wound with sharp instrumētts, but mollifying ointments, mundifying waters, to cleanse and supple the wound, and heale the fore. *Paul* saith that the seruant of the Lord must be gentle toward all men: and that he must instruct with meekenes them that are contrary minded. *2. Tim. 2. 25. 26* & in this place he commands the Galatians that they shold restore their brethren with the Spirit of meekenes. The word translated [*restore*] is very emphaticall: for it signifieth to set a bone that is broken, or any member of the body that is out of ioynt: and therefore we are to deale with a man that is fallen, and by his fall hath disioyned some member of the new man, as the Chirurgeon doth with an

an arme or a leg that is broken, or out of ioynt, to handle it tenderly, and gently, so as it may bee most for his good, and least for his paine. More particularly, this may be done foure wayes.

1. When a man doeth propound the reproofe in his owne person, as *Paul* did, *1. Corin. 4. 6.* Now these things, brethren, I haue figuratiuely applied vnto mine owne selfe and *Apollos*, for your sakes, that yee might learne by vs, that no man presume aboue that which is written, &c.

2. When a man doeth not directly reproofe another in plaine tearmes, but closely shewes a mislike of the fact, and conuayeth a reproofe in an exhortation, and solappeth vp pils (as it were) in sugar: as when a man sweares; not alwaies to say, *thou, &c.* but *yea and nay shall serue betwixt vs: what needs this vehemency betwixt vs two? I will as soone take your word, as your oath, &c.*

3. When the reproofe is propounded in a parable: as *Nathan* dealt with *Dauid*, *2. Samuel 12.* and as our Saviour *Christ* by the parable of the two sonnes reprooued the Pharisees, *Matthew 21. 28.*

4. When we reproofe a man directly (as at the length *Nathan* did *Dauid*, *Thou art the man, 2. Sam. 12. 7.*) wee must so carrie our selues, as that the partie may see himselfe rather reproued by God, then by vs: and not to proceed bluntly to worke, to rebuke and censure at the very first: but to vse some preface before hand; as, that we doe that which we doe in loue of his person, for his good, wishing him well, both temporally, the reputation of his name, and eternally the saluation of his soule; and that wee consider our selues heerein, how that we may easily be ouertaken, as he was. These cautions obserued, the inferiour may reprove his superiour, as *2. Kings 5. 13.*

VII. Euery reproofe must bee fitted to the qualitie and condition of him whom we reproofe; and to the nature of the offence for which he is reprooued; we shall fit the reproofe to the person reprooued, if wee consider that a man may reproofe another foure waies. First, by friendly admonition: and thus one equall is to reprove another. Secondly, by reuerent and submisse exhortation: thus the yonger must reprove the elder, the inferiour their superiours. It is Gods commandement that wee should not rebuke an Elder, but exhort him as a father, *1. Tim. 5. 1.* And thus Kings and great Potentates are to bee reprooued, they being *Patres Patrie*. That saying of the Philosopher, *ἡ ἡμετέρα, ἡ ἡμετέρα*; hath place in this case. Thirdly, by sharpe reprehension: thus Elders or superiours are to reprove their inferiours, specially, if the fact bee notorious, scandalous,

or dangerous. *Paul* commandeth *Titus* that he should rebuke the *Cretians*, ἀποτόμως, sharply, that they might be found in the faith. *Tit.* 1. 13. Fourthly, by due chastisement and correction: thus the superiours must reprove their inferiours over whom they are set, as the father the child, the master the servant, the Magistrate the subject, &c. and thus the inferiour cannot reprove his superiour, nor one equall another, though he doe it with neuer so great mildnes.

Secondly, we shall fit our reproofe to the offence committed, if in spirituall wisdom and discretion we put a difference betwixt sinne and sinne, as the Apostle teacheth vs, *Iud.* v. 22, 23. *Have compassion on some putting difference: and other saue with feare, pulling them out of the fire.* Sinnes committed of humane frailty, or through ignorance, must be distinguished from those of malice, of pride, and presumption; both must be reproved, yet after a different manner: for the one must be wonne with gentlenesse, the other with sharpnesse: the one with lenity, the other with severity; to the one we must come with the pleasant pipe of *Christ*, to the other with the lamentation of *John Baptist*. To the one in the Spirit of *Elias*: to the other in the Spirit of *Moses*. When gentle admonition would take no place, *Christ* thundreth out threats against *Corazin* and *Bethsaida*. And *Paul* threatens severity, when lenity will doe no good. *2. Cor.* 13.

VIII. Every reproofe must be administred in fitte time when we may doe the most good: therefore if in wisdom we shall foresee fitter opportunity to winne our brother, we are to take that time, and to omit the present: not to tell him of his fault beeing drunke, or in the heate of his passion, but after, when he commeth to himselfe, as *Abigail* dealt with *Nabal*. *1. Sam.* 25. For the commandement of God touching reproofe, being affirmatiue, bindeth not to all times, but onely to that which in spirituall discretion we shall iudge the fittest, both to reclaime him, and saue his credit. *Salomon* saith, that a word spoken in due time, is like apples of gold, with pictures of silver. *Prou.* 25. 11. Now if this be true of a word spoken in due time, it is much more true of a reproofe deliuered in due season. *There is a time for all things. Ecclesiast.* 3. 1. And surely if every thing that commeth to passe in the world, haue his set time, and opportunity, reproofe must needs haue his time and season.

IX. Secret sinnes knowne onely to thee or to a few, must bee reproved secretly, betwixt thee and the party alone: they must not be divulged, but concealed in loue, which couereth a multitude of

- of finnes. For if thou hast offended, or if thy brother hath ought against thee, goe thy way, and be reconciled to thy brother. *Math. 5. 23, 24.* If he haue trespassed against thee, or thou hast ought against him, goe and tell him his fault betwene him and thee alone. *Math. 18. 15.* And albeit
- 5 *Salomon say, That open rebuke is better then secret loue, Prou. 27. 5.* yet it makes nothing against this rule: for hee vnderstandeth not that reproofe which is vttered before witnesse, but that priuate reproofe which is giuen to his face, and not behind his backe, betwixt them two alone. But open finnes are reprooued openly. 1.
- 10 *Tim. 5. 20. Them that sinne, rebuke openly, that the rest also may feare.* Which text of Scripture must rightly be conceiued: for it is not a generall commandement giuen to all, (as some haue thought, in alleadging it to prooue that they may lawfully reprove open swearers, and offenders, and that openly:) but it is a speciall com-
- 15 mandement giuen to the Pastours, or gouernours of the Church, that they should reprove those elders, and so consequently all such as were conuicted of any crime, by witnesse, and that before all men, that is, before the whole Church, and not before all men, in euery place and assembly, where they offend. For we haue no
- 20 warrant in Scripture so to doe. Secondly, this open disgracefull rebuking of men will rather harden them in their finnes, then any way reclaime them from sinne. *Augustine* saith well, *Pro* ^{De verb.¹} ^{Dom. senu.} *pudore incipiet defendere peccatum suum, & quem vis correctiorem,* 16. *facis priorem.* Thirdly, they might as well say, a man is to be re-
- 25 prooued for euery sinne, and that openly before all men, as for open finnes, because *Paul* saith not, *Them that sinne openly, rebuke before all men,* but *them that sinne, rebuke openly.* Fourthly, the wordes depend vpon the former verse, where it is said, *Receive not an accusation against an Elder, vnder two or three witnesse:* and then
- 30 it followes, *Those that sinne, rebuke openly:* that is, those elders that sinne, and haue been first priuately admonished, and after that before witnesse, if they be accused by two or three witnesse; then reprove them openly before all men: that is, before the whole Church.
- 35 X. We must carefully obserue the order set downe by our Sauiour Christ, *Math. 18. 15.* First, we must trie, whether by priuate reproofe our brother will be reclaimed, or not; if he be, wee must proceed no further, for then we haue attained the maine end of all reproofes, *If hee heare thee, thou hast wonne thy brother:* If not,
- 40 we must take one or two, which may witnesse the fact, and that for sundry causes: the first is giuen by Saint *Hieron.*, vpon the place, That they may witnesse that to be a sinne, for which hee
- is

is reprovued, and that he is worthily reprovued for the same. The second is laid downe by Saint *August. Epist. 109.* to conuince the party offending, of the act committed, if he should iterate the same again. The third, by *Chrysostome. Hom. 6. in Matth.* to witnesse that he which reprovues, hath discharged his duty, and done what in him lay to win his brother. If he be reclaimed at the second reproofe before witnesses, we must proceede no further, but rest there, as before: if not, we must relate it to the Church: if he heare the Church, there is no further proceedings to be vsed: if he heare not the Church, he is to be excommunicated, and holden as a heathen. Offenders therefore are not to be excommunicated at the very first, but orderly to be proceeded against, and louingly to be dealt withall, and patiently to be endured, according as the Apostle commandeth. *2. Tim. 4. 2. reprove with all long suffering.* It may be objected that *Paul* biddeth *Titus* he should avoid an hereticke after once or twice admonition. *Tit. 3. 10.* Therefore we are not to proceed against offenders according to Christs commandement. *Ans.* That Text makes nothing against this orderly proceeding commended vnto vs by our Sauour Christ. For first this commandement is not given to all, but only to the Pastors (as here to *Titus*) or Bishops, who representing the whole Church, are to giue sentence of excommunication. Secondly, it is to be vnderstood of publike admonition in the face of the Church, after that the partie hath bene priuately dealt withall; and if after this admonition, he doe no recant his errours, and reforme himselfe, then is he to be reiected as an hereticke, that is, *αὐτοῦ καὶ τῶν πρὸς αὐτὸν, condemned of his owne selfe, Tit. 3. 11.*

Neuerthelesse, there be certaine cases, in which we are not bound to follow this order or manner of proceeding in our reproofes, and they are principally three.

Melius est vt
pereat vnus
quam vnitatis.
Hieron.

I. When the sin committed tendeth to the hurt of the Church, or common wealth, and there be danger in delay, as also danger to the partie that is priue to it, and doth not detect it; and small hope of hindering of it, (as when a man doth plot treason, or intermedleth in treasonable practises;) in this case the partie offending is not first priuately to be reprovued, but publicly to be detected, and so to be dealt withall of the Magistrate, according to the nature and quality of his offence: for the common good is to be preferred before any one mans priuate good: better it is that one man perishe, then that the bond of unity should be broken.

II. When the fault is greater if it be committed, then the losse of his credit that committed it, though it be published. For example, if one intend to slay another, and lie in wait for him; in this case

case, we are not bound priuately to admonish the party intending murther, or blood shed, but to detect him to the Magistrate: for his life is to be preferred before the mans credit that sought his life. When *Pauls* kinsman (to wit his sisters sonne) heard that aboue 40. *Act. 24. 19. 17.*
 5 men, had conspired together, and bound themselues with an oath, that they would neither eate nor drinke, till they had killed *Paul*, he doeth not goe and reprove them for this fact, but relates it to *Paul*: and *Paul* bearing of it, doth not counsell him to goe and reprove them first, and if they would harken to him, to take
 10 two or three witnesses, &c. but sent him straight, to the chiefe captaine, that he might take order to preuent their bloody attempt.

III. When a man is assured private reproofe will doe no good; and that the party offending will not brooke it, nor take reproofe
 15 at his hand, he is not to follow that order, and manner of reproofe, but to acquaint them with it, that can and will redresse it. Thus *Ioseph* (as it may seeme,) did not reprove his brethren, because he knew well they would not be bettered by him, (seeing they hated
 20 him) but he brought unto his father their euill sayings, *Gen. 38. 2.* Albeit others say, that their sinne was publike, and therefore needed no priuate admonition: and others, that he did admonish them secretly, before he did relate it to his father; (although it be not expressly set downe in the text.) Howsoeuer this example be vnderstood, the
 25 rule is certaine, that private reproofe is to be omitted, when it will either doe hurt, or no good.

2. Beare ye one anothers burdens, and so fulfill the lawe of Christ.

30 In this verse, the Apostle propounds another rule, touching brotherly loue, and it dependeth vpon the former, as an answer, to a secret obiection, which might be made vpon the former doctrine, in the 1. verse, in this manner: Thou enioynest vs we should restore our brother, if he fall by occasion into any sinne, in the Spirit of
 35 meekenesse: but there are some infirmities in our brethren which cannot be amended nor redressed by brotherly correction: what is to be done in such a case? The Apostle answereth, such infirmities must be borne and tollerated, in these words, *Beare ye one anothers burdens*: And this rule is enforced by an argument taken
 40 from the excellency thereof, in that the practising of it, is the keeping and fulfilling of the whole law, in these words, *And so fulfill the Lawe of Christ.*

First, for the rule: The Apostle calleth slippes, infirmities, and sinnes, by the name of *burdens*, taking his metaphor from trauel-
 lers, who vse to ease one another, by carrying one anothers bur-
 den, either wholly, or in part: that so they may more cheerefully,
 and speedily goe on in their iourney. Mens burdens are of two
 sorts: either such as euery man is to beare by himselfe alone, with-
 out shifting them off his owne shoulder, and laying them vpon o-
 ther men (Of which we are to intreate, when we come to the fift
 verse.) Or such as may be borne of others, as well as of our selues:
 of these the Apostle speaketh in this place, when he saith, *Bear ye* 10
one anothers burdens: and there are foure sorts of them: First, those
 whereof our brethren may either be wholly disburdened, or in part
 eased, such is the heauy burden of pouertie, sickenesse, nakednesse,
 hunger, thirst, banishment, imprisonment, &c. Secondly, the out-
 ward and bodily wants, that are in sundrie persons, as blindnesse, 15
 deafenesse, maimednesse, lamenesse, &c. Thirdly, personall or actu-
 all sins of men, as anger, hatred, ieaousie, enuie, &c. Lastly, outward
 frailties, in the actions of mens liues, (which are not felt oftentimes
 of those that are subiect vnto them, but are heauie burdens to o-
 thers with whom they conuerse) as curiouse, nicenesse, slow- 20
 nesse, selfe conceitednesse, frowardnesse, hastinesse, and such like:
 The two first sorts, are to be borne three waies. First, by hauing a
 holy sympathie, and fellow feeling of them, *in weeping with those*
that weepe: and *in remembring those that are in bonds, as though we were*
bound with them; *those that are in affliction, as if we were also afflicted* 25
in the body, *Ebr. 13. v. 3.* This was Pauls practise, *2. Cor. 11. 29. Who*
is weake, and I am not weake? who is offended and I burne not? Second-
 ly, by bearing with them in their wants and infirmities, according
 to that of the Apostle. *Bear with the weake*, *1. Thess. 5. 14.* Third-
 ly, by putting vnder our shoulders, and bearing part of the bur- 30
 den with them; in helping and easing of them in their necessities.
Rom. 12 v. 13. Distributing vnto the necessities of the Saints. The two
 latter sorts (beeing principally meant in this place) are not to be
 borne by dissembling of them, or yeelding to them, much lesse by
 bolstering men vp in them, or by partaking with them; For albeit 35
 the adulterer and vncleane person would gladly make Christ a
 baud, the thiefe would make him his receiuer: and many there
 are who would be content to shift off their sinnes, in whole, or in
 part, and lay them vpon the shoulders of others: yet in Gods cause
 and quarrell, in matters of faith, we are not to yeeld a haire bredth; 40
Moses told Pharaao, that he would not leaue so much as a hoofe behind
him, *Exod. 10. 26.* And Paul would not giue place to Peter and them that
 were

were with him, no not for a moment, that the truth of the Gospel might continue with them, Gal. 2. 5. They must therefore be borne by disburdening them of them, by gentle and mild admonition, or if they cannot be redressed, by bearing and tollerating of them, in passing
 5 by them, as though we did not perceiue them, for as Salomon saith, *It is the glory of man to passe by infirmities* : or Lastly, by praying for them. For if we shall breake the bond of brotherly loue, and Christian societie, by reason of these or such like infirmities, which we see to be in our brethren : we walke not in loue, in that we
 10 beare not their *burdens*, as the Apostle commandeth in this place, and Ephesians 4. verse 4. *Support one another, through loue*. And surely, this is a most necessarie precept, of great vse and consequence, in the life of man : for except we beare and tolerate the frailties of men, in passing by them in such sort, as I haue said, it is impossible
 15 we should lead a quiet, or comfortable life in any societie. We must seeke for a new world, or leauing the fellowship of men, betake our selues to some solitarie desert, as sundry *Eremites*, and *Anchorites* haue done, because they could not (by reason of their froward and wayward natures) digest the manifold inconueniences which they
 20 saw to be amongst men in publike societies.

This dutie therefore of bearing one anothers burdens, albeit it be difficult, yet it must be practised, specially of those that are strong men in Christ : for as in architecture, all stones are not fit to be laid in euery place of the building, but some below, as the
 25 fundamentall and chiefe corner stones, to beare vp the weight and burden of the building ; others aboue in the wall, that so the whole building may be firme and compact in it selfe : So in the Church, which is the house of God, (where all beleeuers are liuely stones, built vpon Christ Iesus the chiefe corner stone, bearing
 30 vp the whole burden, even all the infirmities of the Church:) those that are strong must support the infirmities of the weake, that so the whole building beeing compact and knit together, may grow vp to a holy Temple in the Lord. For otherwise the whole frame of the building must needs be dissolved, and come to ruine. It is a
 35 common prouerbe among the Italians, that *Hard with hard, neuer makes a good wall*. By which is signified, that as stones cobbled vp one vpon another, without mortar to combine the, make but a tottering wall, that may easily be shaken ; but if there be mortar bewixt them, yeelding to the hardnes of the stones, it makes the
 40 whole like a solide continued body, strong and stable; able to endure the shocke of the ramme, or the shot of the cannon : So that society, where all are as stiffe as stones, which wil not yeeld a haire,

Rom. 14. 1.
and 15. 1.

Prou. 19. 21.

1. Pet. 2. 5.

Duro con duro
non fa bon
muro.

one vnto another, one being as fast, as froward, as hastie, as another; cannot be firme and durable. But where men are of a soft, ayeelding, and relenting nature, giuing place to the stiffnesse of others, and yeelding to the tempest for a time, that societie is compact in it selfe, and so cannot but continue, because one doth 5
 beare the infirmities of another. Dost thou therefore seethy brother to be ouertaken with some sinne, or to be ouer curious, very froward, too selfe-conceited, abounding in his owne sense, exceeding hastie, &c. beare this his infirmitie now; and so he (perhaps) may beare with thee in the like case, another time: or beareth thou 10
 with his curiousnesse, he will beare with thy dulnesse: beare with his ficklenesse, hee will beare with thy frowardnesse: beare with his hastinesse, hee will beare with thy selfe-conceitednesse. For it is to bee obserued, that the Apostle saith not, that those onely which are strong, should beare the fraileties of the weake, but 15
 that both strong and weake, should beare one anothers burdens, it being a mutuall and reciprocall dutie imposed vpon all, because there is none so strong, but onetime or other hee may slippe, and fall, and so may stand in need to bee supported euen of the weake: the pallee man being sicke, had his burthen 20
 (to wit, his bedde) borne, but being restored, could helpe to beare another mans burthen: so if thou beare another mans burthen that is weake, when hee is strong, hee will be ready to beare thine, if need require. God commands, that if we find our neighbours beaſt lying vnder his burthen, wee must lift him vp: how 25
 much more ought we to helpe our brethren, lying vnder the burden of sinne? Therefore the strong, are to support the weake, and the weake must (vpon occasion) support the strong: as in the arch of a building, one stone doeth beare mutually, though not equally, the burthen of the rest: or as harts swimming ouer a great 30
 water, doe ease one another, in laying their heads one vpon the backe of another: the foremost that hath none to support him, changing his place, and resting his head vpon the hindermost. Thus in a family, the husband must beare with the nicenesse, and frowardnesse of his wife: the wife with the fastnesse or hastinesse 35
 of her husband. Those Magistrates, and Ministers, which are too colde and backward in good things, must beare with the ouer great heat and forwardnesse of their fellow-Magistrates, or fellow-Ministers: and those must beare with them againe, seeing both aime at the same end, the edification of the Church, and the 40
 good of the Commonwealth. Thus in Gods prouidence, *Luther* and *Melanchthon* were happily ioyned together, and did beare
 with

August. Ser.
 2. de verbis
 Apost. Beda
 in hunc locū
 ex August.

with one another, *Luther* with his softnesse, *Melancthon* with his hastinesse; he with his boldnesse, he with his timorousnesse: *Melancthon* did wel temper the heat and zeale of *Luther* with his mildnesse, beeing as oyle to his vinegar; and *Luther* on the other side, did warme his coldnesse, being as a fire to his frozennesse. Thus the Apostle commaundeth, that we should beare with the infirmities of those that are weake, and not sufficiently catechized in the doctrine of our spirituall libertie purchased vnto vs by Christ, and not to please our selues too much, but rather to please our neighbour in that which is good to edification, *Rom. 15. ver. 1, 2.* For amongst other properties of loue reckned vp by *S. Paul*, *1. Cor. 13.* this is not the least, that it suffereth all things, verse 7. that is, all such things as may be borne and suffered with good conscience, for the good of our brother. For looke as a lover doth suffer all things in regard of his loue, in three respects. First, in vndergoing any labour that may be for her good, as *Hercules* did for the loue of *Omphale*. Secondly, in bearing patiently all hard measure that is offered him for her sake, as *Iacob* did for the loue of *Rachel*. Thirdly, in induring any thing that is imposed vpon him, and putting vp what wrong soeuer is done vnto him by her, as *Sampson* did for the loue of *Dalilah*. So Christian charity causeth vs to suffer all things. First, *pro fratribus*, to indure any labour, cost, or travell, for their good. Secondly, *propter fratres*, to beare all afflictions for their sakes, as *Paul* saith he did for the Church. *2. Tim. 2. 10.* Thirdly, *a fratribus*, to beare wrongs, and put vp iniuries at their hands, as he did, being shamefully entreated at *Philippi*, stoned, scourged, &c. This must be considered of vs all, but specially of such as will giue a man as good as he bringeth, who are but a word and a blow: a lie, and a stab: a word, and a writ: such as cannot beare coales, (as they say) nor brooke any little wrong, nor indure any small frailtie in their brethren. These men must remember, that in bearing coales, that is, in suffering and forbearing, they heape vp coales of fire vpon their heads, (as *Paul* speaketh, *Rom. 12. 20.*) as also that God doeth beare with them in greater matters, euen when they wound him with their oathes, *Leuit. 24. 11.* and giue him the lie through vnbeleefe, *1. Iohn 5. 10.* as hee bare the manners of the *Israelites* in the wilderness. That Christ, whose example wee are to follow, hath borne our infirmities, *Es. 53.* and doeth ease them, that trauell, and are beauieladen, *Matthew 11. 28* and therefore wee treading in his steppes, must forbear one another, and forgive one another, if any man haue a quarrell against another, euen as Christ forgane vs, *Coloss. 3. 13.* Thus, if when wee see any sinne in our brother, wee reclaime him from it by reproofes,

exhortations, admonitions, we are Gods instruments, to *save a soule from death, and so doe couer a multitude of sinnes*, euen before God. *Iam. 5 20.* And if, when we perceiue common frailties in our brethren, we shall not stand too much vpon our right, but shall yeeld vnto them in bearing, forbearing, and forgiuing, we *shal couer a multitude of sinnes* before men. *1. Pet. 4. 8.*

Thus much touching the rule. Now I proceede to the reason, whereby the Apostle vrgeth the practise of this precept, in these words, *And so fulfill the law of Christ.* The reason standeth thus. That which is the fulfilling of the law of Christ, must be practised of vs: but the bearing of one anothers burdens, is the fulfilling of the law of Christ: therefore we ought to beare one anothers burdens. For the clearing of this Text, sundry things are to be considered.

I. It may be demanded, what the Apostle vnderstandeth by *the law of Christ*? *Answer.* Nothing els but the doctrine, precept, or commandement of Christ, enioyning the loue of our brethren. *Iob. 13. 34. 35.* *A new commandment giue I vnto you, that ye loue one another, as I haue loued you, &c.* And it is all one, as if he had saide, Beare ye one anothers burdens, and so fulfill the *commandment* of Christ, who hath after a speciall manner commanded the loue of your brethren. Now the Apostle rather vseth the word *Law*, then *Commandement*, because he would make a clearer *Antithesis* betwixt the *Law of Christ*, & the *Law of Moses*, so vehemently vrged by the false Apostles: as if he should haue said, You Galatians are taught to obserue the *Law of Moses*, circumcision, daies, and times, moneths, and yeares, and so yedoe indeede. Well, if ye will needs be obseruing of Lawes, here is a Law for you to obserue, beare with the frailties one of another, & so you shal fulfill the most excellent law that euer was, the law of Christ, which is necessary to be kept, whereas the keeping of the Ceremoniall law is but in vaine.

II. *Question.* Why doth Paul call the loue of our brethren, the Law of Christ, rather then the law of nature, or the Law of God, or the Law of Moses? seeing it was written in the minde of man in the creation, was given by God himselfe in Mount Sinai, was written by Moses, the reliques whereof are yet remaining in the mind of man? *Answer.* It is so called, because it is a new commandement given by Christ himselfe, after a speciall manner. But it is hereupon further demanded, why this commandement of louing our brethren, should be called a new commandement? To which some make answer, that it is so called, only because it shews

a new manner of louing our brethren, after the example of Christ; as he hath loved vs. Now this maner of louing our brethren (as Chrysostome expounds it) is this; that as Christ loved vs freely, not moued by any amiable thing in vs, nor for any profite that should redound vnto himselve therby: so we should freely loue one another, not for any benefit receiued, or expected. But as Cyril of *Alexand.* vpo, *Iohn*, expounds it, it stands in this, that as Christ loved vs more then himselve, so we should loue our brethren more then our selues. But this cannot be the meaning. For S. *Iohn* in his 1. Epist. 2. and 10 Epist. 2. repeating this new commandement, saith onely, *this is a new commandement, that ye loue one another*, and neuer ads, as *Christ loved vs*: the which he should haue done, if these words [*as I haue loved you*] be an essentiall part of the new commandement, which he enioyneth vs to obserue.

15 Besides, our Sauour himselve saith, a little after, *By this shall all men knowe, that ye are my Disciples, if ye loue one another*, not adding, as *I haue loved you*: therefore, the new commandement is laid downe in these words, *Loue one another*, not respecting those that follow, as a modification or limitation, as *I haue loved you*. Besides, this exposition 20 takes it for granted, that the moral law, *Loue thy neighbour as thy selfe*, is a certaine rule, by which we are to square our loue, that is, that we must begin at our selues, and looke how much we loue our selues, so much we ought to loue our neighbour, and no more, and that therefore Christ should giue a new commandement of greater 25 perfection, then that in the law, to wit, that we loue one another as he loved vs, that is, more then our selues. But this is a flat mistaking of the Scripture: for the commandement, *Loue thy neighbour as thy selfe*, is no exact rule whereby we are to try and examine our loue, (as the Popish doctors, and some others teach.) For then 30 *Paul* and diuers of the Saints of God, should haue done workes of supererogation, more then the law requires, in louing their neighbours more then themselves, *Rom* 9. 1. And if it were a rule it were but a leaden and false rule: for we are in some cases bound to loue our neighbour, more then our selues, especially if he be a greater 35 instrument of Gods glorie, in procuring the good of the Church or Common wealth, as to loue our godly king more then our selues, and preferre his safety and life before our owne, as the Israelites did *Dauids*: *Thou art worth tenne thousand of vs*, 2. *Sam.* 18. 3. for *vs*, is a note of similitude, and not of equality, signifying, that 40 as we loue our selues heartily, and earnestly, and inwardly, wishing all good to our selues: with the like sincerity of affection we should loue our brethren. So that Christ hath added nothing to the lawe,

* *de iustitia,*
12. tit. 5.

Theophylact.
Sic Hugo de
S. Victor lib.
quest. in
Epist. ad Rom.
q. 308.

in commanding to loue one another, as he loued vs. Others say, it is called a new commandement, because it ought to be kept with as great care, and diligence, as though it were new, and had bene now first giuen: for new lawes (we know) are commonly precisely kept at the first, but after a while, they begin to be neglected: and men doe (as it were) antiquate them, accounting them as though they were not.

Others, by a new commandement, vnderstand another diuers or different commandement; for Christ in the beginning of the Chapter, had giuen them a commandement to fly pride, to be humble, to liue at peace, and concord one with another: and then he saith, *But I giue you a new commandement*, i. a commandement differing from the former, *that ye loue one another*.

The word *New* is often taken in scripture in this sense, as *Exod. 1. 8. There arose vp a new king which knew not Ioseph*: that is, (as the 70. 15 interpreters, and S. *Luke, Act. 7. 18*, translate it) *another king*. *Msr. 16. 17. they shall speake with new tongues*, that is, *other, diuers, or different languages*, from their vsuall tongue: for the meaning is not, that they inuented a new language, which was neuer spoken before, but that they spake in a language diuers from that which they vsed before: for it is said, *Act. 2. 4. They beganne to speake with other tongues*: Thus our Sauour Christ telleth his Apostles, *that he will not drinke any more of the fruit of the vine, till he drinke it new with them in the kingdome of God*, *Matth. 26. 29*. Where by *new wine*, he meaneth not the liquor or iuyce of the Grape, to preserue animall life: but another different drinke, wherewith he would entertaine all that were inuited, and came vnto his table. But these expositions are not so fitte.

I take it therefore to be called *a new commandement*, either in respect of Christ, or of vs: in respect of Christ two waies: First, 30 Because he renued it, not onely by freeing it from the false glosses and interpretations of the Scribes & Pharises, the Iewish Rabbins: but also in fulfilling it most perfectly, whereas it was obliterated, and almost antiquated, by the great corruption of man: for none did neuer so perfectly obserue and keepe the law, as he did. There- 35 fore in regard of the new manner of fulfilling it, it is called *a new commandement*. Secondly, because he abrogating the ceremoniall Law, and many iudicialls, onely renued this precept of the morall law, in commanding it as his law to the Church *Ioh. 15. This is my commandement, that ye loue one another*, as if he should say, Though I 40 haue abrogated the ceremoniall law, and antiquated the iudiciall, yet this commandement shall neuer be abrogated: and this I com-
mend

mend vnto you againe and againe, as my commandement, which
 aboue all others, I would haue you carefully to obserue, as that
 whereby ye shall be knowne to be my Disciples. In regard of vs it is
 called a *new commandement*, and that in two respects: 1. Because it
 5 being defaced, and almost cleane blotted out of the mind of man
 by originall sinne, is renued againe in the hearts of beleeuers, by
 the powerfull operation of the Spirit of God, both in their mindes,
 and affections: In their mindes, because they are daily inlighte-
 ned with the true knowledge thereof, in being taught whom they
 10 ought to loue: viz. not onely their friends, but euen their enemies:
 with what kind of loue, to wit, with a feruent loue, not in word,
 or tongue onely, but in deed, and truth: and that with free, sin-
 cere, and constant loue: in their wills, and affections: in that they
 are perswaded by the inward working of the Spirit, to loue: and
 15 are inclined thereto, being turned by grace. Secondly, because
 it doth after a peculiar manner belong vnto vs, who are vnder the
 New Testament, in the kingdome of grace, seeing that this com-
 mandement onely is renued by Christ, as his owne proper com-
 mandement, many others being abrogated: as also because it is dai-
 20 ly written by the Spirit of Christ, after a new manner, in the hearts
 of new conuerts: so that they haue not onely a new, that is, a true
 knowledge thereof, but also a new, that is, a true sense and feeling
 of the power of it in their hearts: in that they are become new
 creatures in Christ Iesus. For in him *all olde things passe away, and all*
 25 *things become new, 2. Cor. 5.* For to them the law is no killing letter,
 written in tables of stone; but a quickening spirit, as being written
 in the fleshy tables of their hearts. This seemeth to be the true, full,
 and proper meaning of these places: for thus S. Iohn 1. Epistle 2. 8.
 doeth expound it, when hee saith, that *it is true in him and in you*, in
 30 the sense before specified: both in regard of Christ, and the belee-
 uers in Christ.

III. Quest. Seeing the commandement of louing our bre-
 thren, is called the law of Christ and a new commandement, is
 not the Gospel a new law? *Answer.* In no wise: for albeit the Law
 35 and the Gospel agree in sundrie things, as first in the Authour, God
 being the Authour of them both; of the Gospel, *Rom. 1. 1.* of the
 Law, *Rom. 7. 21.* Secondly, in that both of them were preached,
 knowne, and vnderstood in both Testaments: the law being writ-
 ten in the heart of man in the creation: the Gospel preached to
 40 our first parents in Paradise, immediately after the fall, and repea-
 ted againe and againe to the Patriarkes and Prophets, from time to
 time. Thirdly, in the generall matter, and end of them both, in that
 both

both the Law and the Gospell, require righteousness in him that would come to life eternall. Fourthly, in this, that they confirme and establish one another, in that the law commanding iustice, and iustifying none, shewes that a man is iustified by the free gift and grace of God, and that Christ is the end of the Law to every one that beleeueth. In that the Gospell iustificieth not by workes, but by faith, and yet so, as that we doe not by our faith abrogate the law, or make it of none effect, but rather establish it, and that in two respects. First, because by faith wee apprehend the righteousness of Christ, and so in him (who hath fulfilled the Law for vs) wee fulfill it, and so establish it. Secondly, because hauing our hearts purified by faith, we liue no more according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit, and so by inchoate obedience wee fulfill the law.

Lastly, in the end, in that both the Law and the Gospell tend directly to the manifestation of the glory of God.

Yet they differ in five things. First, in the manner of reuealing: the law before the fall was perfectly knowen by nature, and since the fall in part, *Rom. 2. 15.* The Gospell is not knowen by nature, neither was it euer written in mans heart, before, or after the fall, as *Paul* saith, *1. Cor. 2. 9.* *Those things which the eye hath not seene, nor the eare heard, nor the heart of man conceived, are they which God hath prepared for them that loue him:* therefore the Gospell is called a *mysterie*, *Rom. 16. v. 25, 26.* First, because the doctrine of the Gospell was made knowen to men and Angels by the reuelation of God, *Eph. 3. 5. and 9.* Secondly, because there is required a speciall reuelation, and worke of Gods Spirit, before a man can yeeld assent vnto it. Therefore *Paul* saith, *Wee haue not receiued the spirit of the world, but the Spirit of God, that we might know the things that are giuen to vs of God, 1. Cor. 2. 12.* Secondly, in the subiect or doctrine it selfe, and that in two respects. First, the law preacheth nothing, but absolute iustice to the transgressors therof: the Gospell sheweth how iustice is qualified with mercy: *from all things from which ye could not be absolved by the law of Moses, by him every one that beleueneth is iustified, Actes 13. 39.* Secondly, the Law teacheth what maner of men we ought to be, and what we ought to doe, that we may come to eternal life, but shewes not how we may become so indeed: the Gospell teacheth, that by faith in Christ, we may be such as the law requires. *God hath made him to be sinne for vs, who knew no sinne, that we might be made the righteousness of God in him, 2. Cor. 5. 21.*

Thirdly, in the obiect, *The law is giuen to the vniust and lawlesse, vngodly, and prephane, 1. Tim. 1. 9, 10.* that it may shew them their sinnes,

sinnes, and the punishment thereby deserued, and so may accuse and condemne them: the Gospel is to be published and dispensed onely to the penitent, which are contrite and broken in heart, and mourne for their sinnes, *Matth. 11. Isa. 57. Luke 4.*

5 IIII. The Law promifeth eternall life, vpon condition of workes: *Doe this, and live: If thou wilt enter into life, keepe the Commandements.* The Gospell promifeth eternall life freely without any condition of workes. *Romanes 4. 5. To him that worketh not, but beleeueth in him that iustifieth the vngodly, his faith is counted to him*
 10 *for righteousnesse. Rom. 3. 21, 22. The righteousnesse of God is made manifest without the Law, by the faith of Iesus Christ, vnto all, and vpon all that beleewe.*

V. In the effects. The Law is no instrumentall cause of faith, repentance, or any sauing grace: it is the *minister of death, 2. Cor.*
 15 *3. 7. causing wrath, Rom. 3. 15.* But the Gospell causeth life: it is the *grace of God which bringeth saluation, Titus 2. 11.* For this cause *Paul* calleth the Law, a *dead, or killing letter*: the Gospell, a *quickening spirit, 2. Cor. 3.*

Fourthly, it may be demaunded, whether any man bee able to
 20 fulfill the Law, considering that *Paul* biddeth vs beare one anothers burdens, and so fulfill the Law of Christ? *Answer.* No meere man can perfectly fulfill the Law in this life. This conclusion *S. Paul* prooueth in sundrie of his Epistles, specially by these arguments.

25 First, by the great and generall deprauation of nature, which remaineth in part even in the regenerate, staining their best actions, and making them like a menstruous cloath: confessing withal, that his best workes are not answerable to the law, by reason of the remainders of originall corruption, *Rom. 7.* Now perfect fulfilling of
 30 the law, cannot stand with corruption of nature, and transgression in life. For a corrupt fountaine cannot send forth sweet waters: neither can a corrupt tree beare good fruit. *Saint Iames* saith, *Hee that offendeth in one, is guiltie of all:* and the Scripture pronounceth him accursed, *that abideth not in all things written in the booke of the law to doe them.*
 35 Popish Doctours answer, first, that originall corruption (which they call the fewell of sinne) and the first motions to euill, preventing all consent of will, are indeed in the regenerate; but they are no sinnes properly. But it is false which they teach. For every transgression of the Law, is a sinne, as *Saint Iohn* defines
 40 it, *1. Iohn 3. 4.* but these are transgressions of the tenth Commandment: For it either forbiddeth these first motions, whether they bee *primò prima*, or *secundò prima*, (as Schoole-men speake)

or

Fomes peccati.

or it forbiddeth nothing but the motions, which are with consent of will, which were forbidden in the former commandements, and so in effect there are but nine commandements, the tenth forbidding no speciall sinne.

Rom. 7. 23.

Againe, *Paul* teacheth, that these motions preventing all consent of will, are formally opposed to the law, *I see another law in my members, rebelling against the law of my mind.* Secondly, they answer, that *Paul*, Rom. 7. speaks not of himselfe, but in the person of the vnregenerate, according to the opinion of *S. Augustine.* Answer. *Augustine* indeed was once of that iudgement, but hee after retracted that opinion, (as it is manifest out of his booke of *Retractions*, and the 6. Booke, against *Iulian* the Pelagian,) and that for these reasons. First, because *Paul* saith, *To will is present with mee: and, I doe not the good I would: and, I delight in the law of God concerning the inward man:* all which are proper to the regenerate, and cannot bee affirmed of the wicked. Secondly, because he makes mention of *the inward man*, which is all one with the new man, or the new creature: which agreeth onely to the regenerate. Thirdly, because he saith, *He is led captiue to sinne,* verse 23. whereas the wicked are not drawne to sinne by force, against their willes, but runne riot of their owne accord into all wickednesse, as the horse rusheth into the battell, *Ierem.* 8. 6. Lastly, in that he cries out in a sense and sorrow for his sinnes, *O wretched man that I am, who shall deliuer mee from the bodie of this death?* verse 25. which can not bee the voice of the vnregenerate, for they feele not the burden of their sin, nor desire to be eased of it, but take delight and pleasure in it. His second reason is this: such as our knowledge is, such is our loue of God and man: but our knowledge is onely in part: therefore our loue is but in part, and therefore there is no perfect fulfilling of the law. The aduocates of the Romish Church answer, that our knowledge, loue, and obedience, are perfect for the condition and estate of this life, as we are *viatores*, which is sufficient: though they be not perfect for the condition of the life to come, when we shall be *comprehensores*, which is not required at our hands in this life: for they make a double perfect fulfilling of the law: one, for the tearme of this life, which is to loue God aboue all things, and our neighbor as our selues. The other after this life, and that is to loue God with all the soule, with all the powers and faculties of the soule, and with all the strength and vigor of all these powers.

And this distinction they make to be the ground of their opinion, touching the fulfilling of the law, and iustification by workes, &c. But it is a sandy foundation, and therefore that which is built

vpon

vpon it, cannot stand. For besides that it is a fond and friuolous
 distinction forged by Schoolemen, without warrant of Scripture,
 or consent of Antiquitie; it is manifestly false. For there is one
 onely rule of righteousness, and not two: one onely generall sen-
 5 tence of the Law, more vchangeable then the Lawes of the
 Medes and Persians, euen as vchangeable as God himselfe:
 which is, that, *He which continueth not in all things written in the Law*
so doe them, is accursed. So that he which loueth not God with all
 his soule, minde, and might, with all his *valde suo*, that is, with all
 10 the faculties of his soule, and all the powers of all these faculties,
 and that in this life, is accursed. And it is absurd which they teach,
 that a man is not bound for the tearme of this life, thus to loue
 God, but onely in the life to come. For looke what man could doe
 by creation, in the estate of innocency, the same and so much the
 15 Law requires at his hands in the state of Apostasie. But Adam by
 creation could loue God with all his soule, with all the faculties of
 his soule, and all the powers of all these faculties: therefore the
 same perfect, absolute, and entire obedience is now required at his
 hands. For the sentence of the law, *Cursed is he that continueth not*
 20 *in all things, &c.* is not onely giuen to men glorified, but to those
 that are in the state of grace. And S. Paul doth so apply this sen-
 tence to men euen in this life, that he pronounceth all that are of
 the workes of the Law, to be vnder the curse. Againe, if this were
 so, the Iewes had no cause to feare the severity and strictnesse
 25 of the Law, as they did: when they said, *If we heare the voice of the*
Lord any more, we shall die: considering they were able to keepe and
 fulfill it, according to this Popish opinion. Neither would God haue
 promised them a Messias or Mediatour to redeeme them from the
 curse of the law: but wold rather haue comforted them in that, their
 30 so great feare and astonishment, by giuing them to vnderstand that
 they were not bound to the full and perfect fulfilling of the law for
 the time of this life,

Exod. 20. 19.

Deut. 18. 16.

Deut. 18. 18.

Besides, the patheticall exclamation of Paul, *O miserable man*
that I am, &c. Rom. 7. 24. and that saying of Peter, in calling the law.
 35 *a yoke*, which neither we nor our fathers were able to beare, Act. 15.
 should be childish and ridiculous, if *that which is impossible in the law*
 (as Paul speakes) did not appertaine vnto vs.

Rom. 8. 3.

The third argument. If a man could fulfill the Law, he should
 not stand in need of a Mediatour. For if righteousness be by the Law,
 40 *Christ died in vaine*, Gal. 2. 21. It is answered, that Christ dyed
 in vaine, if men by the strength of nature could fulfill the
 Law: but the fulfilling of the Law is by grace, and so his death

is

is not in vaine: for by vertue of the obedience of Christ, wee are enabled to fulfill the law. But this were to make Christ no Sauiour, but onely an instrument, whereby we fulfill the Law, and are our owne Sauiours; whereas the Scripture saith, that *hee is made vnto vs righteousnesse*, 1. *Corinth.* 1. 30. not that wee are made righteousnesse by him. That *wee are made the righteousnesse of God in him*, 2. *Corinth.* 5. 21. not by him, as an instrument. That *we are complete in him*, *Coloss.* 2. 10. and not complete of our selues, by him.

Lastly, the Scripture shutteth vp all men vnder sinne, euen the most sanctified, *Prou.* 20. 9. 1. *Iohn* 1. 9. *Iob* confesseth he cannot answer one of a thousand, *Iob* 9. 3. and *Dauid* saith, *If thou, Lord, shalt marke what is done amisse, who can abide it?* *Psalme.* 130. 3. and *Paul* saith of himselfe, that *hee found no meanes to performe that which is good*, *Rom.* 7. 18. Hee saith further, that *it is impossible to bee kept*, 15 by reason of originall corruption, *Rom.* 8. 3. It is answered, that all these places and examples must bee vnderstood of veniall sinnes, which make men sinners indeed, yet are not against, but beside the Law; and therefore though a man commit them, yet he may fulfill the lawe for all that. Answer. The common receiued opinion in 10 Schooles, that some sinnes are mortall, others veniall of their owne nature, is a witlesse distinction. For if all sinnes deserue death, as *Paul* teacheth, *Romanes* 6. 23. either veniall sinnes are no sinnes, or they must needs deserue death. *Moses* saith, that *hee that abideth not in all things written in the Law, is accursed*, *Deuter.* 27. 26. 25 where the wordes, *this Law*, may not be restrained, onely to the Catalogue of great and hainous sinnes, which are there reckoned vp, but extended to all sinnes, as *Paul* applies it, *Galat.* 3. 10. pronouncing him accursed, *that continueth not in all things written in the Lawe, not this Lawe*. So that euery sinne, euen the least sinne in 30 thought, makes a man subiect to the curse, and so in rigour of diuine Iustice, deserues eternall death. And it is but a poore shift, to say that some sinnes are against the Lawe, as all mortall sinnes, and others besides the Lawe, as veniall. For the doing of that which God forbiddeth, is a sinne, not beside, but against the Lawe. But 35 idle words, iesting, and gybing, &c. (which the Popish Doctours account veniall sinnes,) are expressely forbidden in the word, *Matthew* 12. verse 36. *Of euery idle word that men shall speake, they shall giue account at the day of iudgement*. And *Paul* forbiddeth all 40 foolish talking, and iesting, as things vncomely, *Ephesians* 5. 4. There fore they are not beside, but flat against the Lawe. Secondly, they answer, that these places and the like are to be vnderstood of seue-
rall

all workes, and actions of the Saints, whereof some were good, as *Dauids* sparing of *Saul*, &c. Some euill, as his adultery, murder, and numbring of the people: and not of the same particular workes. *Answer.* It is false. For *Paul* speaking of the same indiuiduall worke, saith, that it is partly good, and partly euill, *I finde, when I would doe good, that euill is present with mee, Rom. 7. 21. In my minde I serue the lawe of God, in my body the lawe of sinne,* verse 25. And the Prophet saith, that *all our righteousnesse is as a filthy raiment, Isai. 64. 4.* Therefore every good worke is stained with sinne.

Thus much shal suffice to shew, that it is impossible for any man in the time of this life to fulfill the Law. The reasons alleadged to the contrary, are sufficiently answered before, Page 150. &c. To which place I referre the Reader.

It may further be said, if we cannot perfectly fulfill the law, why doth *Paul* command vs to beare one anothers burthens, and so to fulfill the law of Christ?

Answer. The law is said to bee fulfilled three wayes. First, by personall obedience, and thus Christ onely fulfilled it. Secondly, by imputed obedience, thus the regenerate fulfill it in Christ, hee being their righteousness, *1. Cor. 1. 30.* and they complete in him, *Coloss. 2. 10.* Thirdly, by inchoate obedience, thus *Zacharie* and *Elizabeth* are said to walk in all the commandements of the Lord, without reproofe, *Luke 1. 6.* And thus all the faithfull fulfill the Law, in labouring to obey God in all the Commandements; according to the measure of grace receiued: and thus wee are said to fulfill the Law in this place, God accepting the will for the deed. Wee are further to consider, that fulfilling of the Law is sometime opposed to the transgression of the Law, as *James 2. 10.* in which sense no man euer did, or can fulfill it, except Christ, God and man, who for this cause is said to bee the ende of the law for righteousness, to euery one that beleeueth, *Romanes 10. 4.* Sometime it is opposed to hypocrisie, and dissimulation, as *1. Iohn 2. 4, 5.* and thus all the Saints fulfill it, in that they indeauour to mortifie their corruptions, and in all things to approoue their hearts and liues to God, in keeping faith and a good conscience. In which sense, *Paul* heere biddeth vs to fulfill the Law of Christ, in performing duties of loue, and bearing one anothers burthens. It will be said, if the law can no otherwise bee fulfilled, then by inchoate obedience, to what end serueth it? *Answer.* It hath a threefold vse euen since the fall. First, it serueth to restraints the outward man, by keeping men in order, through the feare of punishment, of which vse *Paul* speaketh, when he saith, that the law

is not giuento a righteous man, but to the lawlesse and disobedient, &c. 1. *Tim.* 1. 9. Secondly, to arouse the drouisie conscience: and this it doth many waies. 1. By reuealing sinne; for by the law commeth the knowledge of sinne, *Rom.* 3. 20. 2. By reuealing the wrath and anger of God for sinne; for the law causeth wrath, *Rom.* 4. 15. 3. By convicting the conscience of sinne. When the commandement came, sinne reuiued, *Rom.* 7. 9. 4. By arraighing and condemning vs for sinne, for the law is the minister of death, 2. *Cor.* 3. 7. and so putting vs out of all heart in our selues, it causeth vs to flie to the throne of grace, and so is our schoolemaster to bring vs to Christ, *Gal.* 3. 24. Thirdly, it serues as a rule of good life: *Dauid* saith, that the word of God (specially the law) is a lanterne to his feet, and a light to his paths, *Psa.* 119. 105. So that though a regenerate man be not vnder the law, in regard of iustification, or accusation, or coercion, or condemnation: yet he is vnder it, in regard of direction, and instruction, for it shewes what is good, what is euil, what we ought to do, and what to leaue vndone. Lastly, whereas *Paul* saith, *Beare ye one anothers burthens, and so fulfill the law of Christ.* The word *SO* hath great emphasis, for it implies the manner how the Galatians, and all men are to fulfill the law, not by obseruing circumcision, daies, or times, moneths, or yeares, as the false apollles taught: but by bearing, forbearing, and tolerating the infirmities of their brethren. It may not vnfitly bee applied to the religious orders of *Franciscans, Dominicans, Carthusians, &c.* Let them not thinke that they keepe the law, by abstaining from flesh, by whipping themselues, by single life, counterfeite fasts, voluntary povertie, regular obedience, &c. But let them comfort the afflicted, relieue the distressed, beare with the weake, support one another in loue, and *SO* they shall fulfill the law of Christ.

3 For if any man seeme to himselfe, that hee is somewhat, when he is nothing, he deceiueth himselfe in his imagination.

In this verse the Apostle remooues an impediment, which hindereth most from performing the former dutie of bearing other mens burthens, and that is, a vaine conceit and imagination they haue of their owne excellency, farre aboue their brethren: in thinking themselues too good to doe any dutie or service vnto them, to be their packhorses to beare their burthens. This vaine imagination and swelling conceit (which puffeth vp the most) the Apostle labourereth to purge in this place, when he saith, *Hee that seemeth to himselfe, &c.* where by the way wee may obserue the method of the Apostle, first, to giue rules of direction; after to remove impediments

diments which may hinder our obedience. 2. Wee see here the force of the word, which searcheth the secrets of the heart, *Hebr. 4. 12.* in that it casteth downe the imaginations, and euery high thing that is exalted against the knowledge of God: and bringeth into captiuitie euery thought to the obedience of Christ, *2 Cor. 10. 4.* In the words we may obserue these foure things: 1. That men are nothing of themselves. 2. That though they be nothing, yet they seeme to themselves to be somewhat, and that of themselves. 3. That in so doing, they deceiue themselves. 4. The remedies against the ouerweening of our selues.

For the first: it may be demanded how it can be truly said, that men are of themselves meere nothing? Is he nothing that is created after the image of God, in holinesse and righteousness? Are princes and Potentates nothing that are called Gods in Scripture? Are they nothing that prophesie, and worke miracles? *Answer.* Paul speaketh not of the gifts of God, bestowed vpon men, but of the men themselves: and of them, not as they were in the state of innocency before the fall, but as they are now in the state of corruption and apostasie, or in the state of grace, as they are considered of, in, and by themselves. Thus euen spirituall men are nothing of themselves: (for of them especially the Apostle speaketh, as it may appear out of the first verse.)

For first, all are by nature the children of wrath, and firebrands of hell. 2. The gifts of God bestowed vpon vs, whether of nature or of grace, are not ours, but Gods, the giuer of them. Therefore no man may arrogate more vnto himselfe, then another in regard of them, seeing all of vs are but stewards, and the things we haue, are but talents, left vs to imploy to our masters aduantage. *If thou hast receiued them (saith Paul) why boastest thou thy selfe, as though thou hadst not receiued them?* 3. Be it that a man be in Christ, and sanctified, yet hee hath no greater right to the merits of Christ, nor greater part in them, then he which is lesse sanctified: for though sanctification hath degrees, and a certaine latitude, yet iustification hath none. So that a man is in truth nothing of himselfe. 1. Because he hath his being and beginning of nothing, and tendeth of his own nature to corruption & nothing. 2. In that he is not that which he imagineth himselfe to be. 3. Though he haue some gifts and graces of God, yet is hee nothing, because he is farre short of that which he ought to be, *1. Cor. 8. 2.* Vpon these considerations *Abraham* acknowledgeth himselfe to be but dust and ashes, *Gen. 18. 27.* *Dauid* comparing himselfe with the magnificence of *Saul*, saith, *What am I, or what is my fathers house?* *1. Samuel 18. 18.* Nay

whether we consider man absolutely in himselfe, or relatively in respect of other creatures, as those glorious bodies, the Sun, Moone, Starres, we may say with the Prophet David, *Lord what is man, that thou art mindefull of him, or the sonne of man, that thou regardest him?* Psal. 8. 4.

Paul confesseth himselfe to be nothing, in, of, or by himselfe: but by the grace of God (saith he) *I am that I am*, 1. Cor. 15. 10. And againe, *I was nothing inferior to the very chiefe Apostles, although I am nothing*, 2. Cor. 12. 11. The Apostle affirmeth of every man, which thinketh he knoweth something, that he knoweth nothing as he ought to know, 1. Cor. 8. 2. and of many, that they are puffed vp and know nothing, 1. Tim. 3. 4. For a swelling conceit, and emptines, vsually goe together.

The second general thing to be obserued in the words, is this, That it is naturall for men to thinke too well of themselves, to magnifie themselves aboue others in their conceits, and in a manner to deifie themselves: and to nullifie others in comparison of themselves: and this ouerweening of a mans selfe, is a branch of pride. For a man looking vpon himselfe through the spectacles of selfe-loue, doth thinke euery small gift of God, which he seeth to be in himselfe, to be farre greater then in truth it is: imagining meere shadowes, to be substances; or molehills, to be as bigge as mountaines. For as a man that is in loue, doth thinke the blemishes and deformities in his loue, to be ornaments, which make her more beautifull: So these with *Narcissus* are in loue with themselves, and dote vpon their owne gifts; iudge the vices which they see to be in themselves, to be vertues. *Simon Magus* though a wicked wretch, a limme of the Deuill, a forcerer, &c. yet had this conceit of himselfe, and gaue it out also, that *he was some great man*. Act. 8. 9, to wit, the great power of God, verse 10. The Church of *Lao-dicea*, thought she was rich and increased with goods, and had neede of nothing: whereas she was wretched, and miserable, and poore, and blind, and naked. Apoc. 3. 17. And so the skarlet strumpet thought her selfe a Queene, and that she was out of all daunger of downefall, when she was already fallen. Apoc. 18. 2, 7. Yeathis corruption is so naturall, that euen the regenerate themselves, who are in part sanctified, are tainted therewith: and generally, they that haue received greater gifts of knowledge of sanctification, &c. are most ready to ouerweene their owne gifts, except God giue them grace to resist this temptation: for knowledge puffeth vp. 1. Cor. 8. 1. The Apostles themselves contended which of them should seeme to be the greatest, Luke 22. 24. Yea in all ages there haue beene some in the

the Church ouerweening themselves, as in Christs time the Iustitiary Pharises : after them, the *Catharists*, or *Puritanes*, who both proudly and odiously called themselves by that name, thinking themselves without sinne : the *Donatists*, that they
 5 weare a Church without spot or wrinkle : the *Iovinianists*, that a man cannot sinne after the lauer of regeneration. The *Pelagians*, that the life of a iust man in this world, hath no sinne in it at all : and of later times the *Semi-Pelagian* heretike, who will be something of himselfe, and will haue some stroke in his first con-
 10 uersion, and will concurre with Christ in the worke of Iustificati-
 on. It will be said, Papists ascribe all the praise to God. *Ans.* So did the Pharisee, *Luke 18. 11.* and yet a wicked Iustitiary for all that. Now all this ariseth from sundry causes : the first is, the bitter roote of pride, that was in our first parents, when as they affected a high-
 15 er place, in desiring (through discontentment of their owne estate) to deifie themselves, and become equall to the highest Maiesty, in knowing good and euill.

The second is, the ouermuch considering the good things we haue; as when the Pharisee considered that he gaue tithe of all that
 20 he possessed, that he fasted twise a weeke, that he was not thus and thus, as other men. *Luke 18.*

The third is, the comparing of our selues with the infirmities that we see to be in others : the Pharisee was puffed vp, by comparing himselfe with extortioners, vniust men, adulterers, and with
 25 the Publican.

The fourth is, the false flattering, and applause of men, which sooth vs vp in our humours, in perswading vs to be that which in truth we are not, as the people flattered *Herod*, when they gaue a shout, and said, *The voice of God, and not of man. Act. 12. 22.*

30 The third point is, that they which thus ouerweene their gifts, in thinking themselves somewhat when they are nothing, doe notably deceiue themselves : as those that thinke they haue the substance, when they haue but the shadow ; as those that dreame they are Kings or Princes, being in truth but base persons :
 35 or to vse the Prophets similitude, *Esay 29 8.* Like as an hungry man dreameth and behold hee eateth, and when he awaketh his soule is empty : or like as a thirsty man dreameth, and loe hee is drinking, and when he awaketh behold he is faint, and his soule longeth. Men are deceiued two wayes, either by others, or by themselves : by others, as by
 40 flatterers, they are deceiued occasionally ; by themselves causally, or properly. For he that doth iudge himselfe to be that which indeede he is not, he may haply please himselfe, but he doeth but

φ. 11. 2. 1. 2. 1. 2.

ἐπαπαύειν
αὐτοὺς.παρὰ λόγον
καὶ νόμον.Plutarch. in
Alexandro.

pleate himselfe in an errour : for in truth hee deceiueth himselfe in his imagination : the Apostle *Iames* saith, *If any man seeme* (specially to himselfe) *to be religious, and yet refraineth not his tongue, hee deceiveth his owne heart, his religion is vaine, Iam. 1. 26.* So likewise, they that are onely hearers of the word (and therefore thinke that all is well enough with them, though they be not doers thereof) *deceive their owne selves, Iam. 1. 22.* And verily this corruption is so great, that as men can be content to be deluded by flatterers, and clawbackes, which please them in their itching humours : so they willingly suffer themselves to be deceived, even by themselves, to the end that they may appeare to others to bee that which in truth they are not : that so they may aduance and magnifie themselves in the account of the world. For as *Alexander* the great, being in India, caused his souldiers to make and leaue behind them bittes and horse-shoes, of an extraordinary greatness; huge speares, massie shields, bigge helmets, long swords, and other furniture for horse and man, fitting rather Hippocentaurs or Giants, then men of ordinary stature; and all to the end it might be said in future time, that *Alexander was a mighty Monarch* indeed: So many there be; who (setting the faire side outward) make goodly glorious shewes in the eyes of men; and so would have other to thinke of them accordingly, (farre aboue their desert) that posterity might iudge them to be that which indeed they are not: and so with *Alexander* in deceiuing others, they wittingly deceive themselves. Which spiritual guile of deceiuing our selves in matters touching our saluation, is most dangerous, when men delude themselves, in periwading themselves falsely, that they know sufficiently that God is to be loued aboue all, our neighbour as our selves, (which is as much as all the preachers in the earth can say:) that they beleeeue; when in stead of faith, there is nothing but damnable pride and presumption: that they repent, when it is nothing but deceitful counterfeiting, and hypocrisie. Besides the danger, consider the indignity of it: men can abide nothing lesse, then to be deceived and circumvented by others; and yet, behold, they are deluders & deceiuers of themselves: and that which doth more aggrauate the indignity of it, in such things as ought to be best known and most familiar vnto them, wherein it is a shame they should be deceived, viz. in the knowledge of themselves; and that which is yet more, in a matter of greatest moment, in the saluation of their soules. What maruaile therefore is it, that men should be deceived by the seducer of all seducers, the diuell, who are so easily deceived of themselves, or rather willing to deceive themselves?

Further

Further obserue, that proud conceited persons, such as haue an ouerweening of themselves and their gifts, and of all men thinke fowlescorne to be deceiued, even they are easiliest deceiued, yea and that of themselves: for so the Apostle saith, *He that thinketh that he is somewhat, &c. deceiveth himselfe in his imagination.*

Againe, marke hence, that no men, be their gifts neuer so rare, their callings neuer so high, their places neuer so great, are to good to beare other mens burdens; for they that thinke themselves to be somewhat, some great men, that is, too good to put vnder their shoulders to beare the frailties, and infirmities of their brethren, doe nothing herein but deceiue themselves. Princes and Potentates of the earth are prophesied by *Esaie*, chap. 49. vers. 23. to be nurcing fathers, and nurcing mothers vnto the Church, not onely by nourishing and defending it, (as the nource her child) but also by bearing with the frailties and wants which are therein.

Lastly, consider that this selfe-conceitednesse, and overweening of a mans selfe, is the very bane and poyson of loue; for it maketh proud men thinke themselves too good to become packehorses, or drudges to beare other mens burdens, to become seruiceable vnto them in any duty of loue, or to tolerate their frailties, or to yeeld of their right, or to suffer iniuries at their hands, or to put vp any little indignity, without stomacke and discontent: because they imagine themselves euery way better then their brethren, and therefore ought to be tolerated, but not so bound to tolerate and beare with others; So that where selfe-loue is, there is no true brotherly loue. It was well said of the Poet. *Non bene conueniunt, &c. maiestas & amor.* It may be said, may not he that is priuy to his own vertues, in conscience of his owne worth, iudge himselfe to be somewhat, that is, to be that which indeed he is, or to haue a greater measure of knowledge, grace, & other gifts, then they that haue lesse?

Answer. He may. For humility is not settish: the master in humility cannot thinke his scholler more learned then himselfe, except he shall thinke against his conscience. For that saying, *Let euery man thinke better of another, then of himselfe*, must be restrained onely to equals, and not extended to superiours in regard of their inferiours. Secondly, I answer, that the Apostle in that place, speaketh not of the giftes and graces bestowed vpon men, but of the persons themselves, and of them, not so much as they are in the account of men, as in the account of God, for he saith

Phil. 2. 4.

not, *Let euery man thinke another more learned, wise, discreete, sober then him selfe* (for so he may thinke against his conscience) but *Let euery man thinke another* (that is, any other that is his brother in the Lord) *better then him selfe*, to witte, before God. And this euery man may doe with good conscience; for albeit another shall outwardly seeme more ignorant, negligent, backward, in matters of religion then him selfe, yet for any thing he knoweth, he may be higher in the fauour of God, then he. And therefore though a man erre in thinking of another, better then of him selfe, yet he shall not doe any thing against his conscience. Thus the *Publican* accounted the proud *Pharisee* better then him selfe. For he held him as iust, him selfe not worthie to looke vp to heauen: yet herein he sinned not, nay he is commended for it, though he erred in his iudgement of the *Pharisee*. And so if the *Pharisee* had reputed the *Publican* better then him selfe, that is, higher in Gods fauour then him selfe, he had not sinned, nor done against his conscience. For though he might iudge him selfe more iust then the *Publican*, in regard of his life past, yet for his present estate before God he could not. Though *Dauid* knew in the particular quarrell betwixt *Saul* & him, that *Saul* was vniust, and he innocent, yet if he should haue thought better of *Saul* in generall, then of him selfe, he should but haue done his duty.

The fourth and last point, containeth the remedies of this euill, which are the rather to be considered, because it is a great sinne, one of those seuen which the Lord doth most of all detest, *Prou. 7. 15* 17. a dangerous sinne, hauing a heavy woe attending vpon it, *Woe to them that are prudent in their owne eyes. Isa. 5. 21.* a sinne almost incurable, *Seekest thou a man that is wise in his owne eyes? there is more hope of a foole then of him. Prou. 26. 12.* therefore the remedies are more carefully to be knowne, and applied. The remedies are specially five.

The first is, to looke our selues in the glasse of the Law, which will shew what we are without flattery, or partiality: and by it we shall see nothing in our selues but the vgly shape of Satan, cleane defacing the image of God, and that in vs there dwelleth no good thing, as *Paul* saith of him selfe, *Rom. 7. 18.* that there is nothing but vanity in our mindes, rebellion in our wills, a confused ataxie in all our affections, transgression in our liues. The viewing of our harts and liues in the Law, and the considering of our wretched estate, in that we are vnder the fearefull curse, which is a thunderbolt annexed to euery breach thereof, will driue vs out of all conceit of our selues, from our selfe-loue, and self-liking: nay -

nay, it will make vs goe out of our selues, not onely to deny our selues, as Christ commands, but even to abhorre our selues, repenting in dust and ashes, as Iob did, chap. 42. 6. causing vs to become flat nothing in our selues, that we may be something in Christ, as Paul saith, 1 Cor. 3. 18. *Let no man deceive himselfe : If any among you seeme to be wise in this world, let him be a foole, that he may be wise.*

Secondly, when we feeble our selues to be tickled with the itching humour of selfe-loue, and selfe-liking, arising from our hidden corruption, either in regard of outward gifts, or inward graces : we must make our owne euills, sinnes, blemishes, imperfections, (for there is no man but hath one or other) a soueraigne remedy against it, and so (as it were) driue away one poison with another. As to call to minde some great deformity that is in our bodies, some great infirmity that is in our minde, some crosse or misery in our outward estate, some vile and abominable sinne which we haue committed, and the horrible punishment, to the which we are lyable by reason thereof : and no doubt but the serious consideration of these, or any of these, will be a uailable, to nippe pride in the bud, and kill the serpent in the shell : and in so doing we shall with the Peacocke, now and then cast our eyes downeward, to our feete, the fowlest and vgliest things we haue : and not alway stand in admiration of our gay feathers, and glorioustraine.

Thirdly, we must consider that the things for which we looke so high, and swell so in our owne conceits, are not our owne : but lent vs for a time. *For what is there, that thou hast not receiued ? whether in gifts of body, or graces of minde ? nay whether thou speake of soule, or body it selfe ? and if thou hast receiued it, why boastest thou thy selfe as though thou hadst not receiued it ?* What vanity is it, for a man to be proud of another mans garment ? or for a woman to boast of her borrowed haire ? The wicked persecutors of the Church are reprooued for *sacrificing to their nettes, and burning incense to their yarne.* Hab. 1. 16. Further, we must consider we haue not onely receiued them ; but that we haue so receiued them, as that they are not our owne, with which we may doe what we list, but talents lent vs for a time, and left with vs to employ, ouer which we are but stewards and bayliffes, not Lords or Masters, and that we must be countable for the smallest gift, even the least farthing : how we haue got it, kept it, bestowed it : the time will come when it shall be saide vnto thee, *Give an account of thy stewardship.* Luk. 16. 2. Therefore we ought not so much to be puffed vp with the greatnes

of our talents, as to be humbled with the consideration of the strict reckoning that God will require at our hands, seeing that of him, to whom much is committed, much shall be required.

Phil. 2. 10.

Verse 11.

Phil. 2. 4.

Fourthly, to the end we may auoyd this ouer-weening of our selues, let vs compare our selues with the maiesty of God, in whose sight we are but as silly wormes, crawling vpon the ground; nay, in comparison of whom wee are lesse then nothing, and vanitie it selfe. Consider, that to him euery knee doeth bow, of things in heauen, in earth, and vnder the earth; and thou wilt not be so conceited of thy selfe, that a silly man doth crouch vnto thee; that to him euery tongue doth confesse, and sing his praises, the blessed Angels crying continually, Holy, Holy, Holy, Lord God of Saboth, heauen and earth are full of thy glory: & then a short blast of wind, or popular applaue, shall not so easily puffe thee vp, like an emptie bladder, or carrie thee away, as it did *Herod, Actes 12.* But to omit this odious comparison, betwixt a fraile mortall man, and the glorious eperluiuing God (there being no comparison betwixt finite, and infinite) let vs neuer compare our selues with our inferiours, but with our superiours and betters, who are eminently aboue vs in euery gift and blessing of God, in regard of whose honours and preferments wee are but base and contemptible: in regard of whose knowledge, wee are but children, and know nothing: in regard of whose riches we are but beggars, and haue nothing. For as *Dauid*, when he beheld the wonderfull frame of the heauens, those glorious creatures, the Sunne, the Moone, and the Starres, by and by made this vse of it to himselfe, to consider his owne vilenesse in regard of them, *What is man, that thou art mindfull of him? or the sonne of man, that thou visitest him?* So when we compare our selues with others, that are as farre aboue vs, as the heauens are aboue the earth, whose gifts and graces doe as farre excellours, as the bright sun shine the dim candle light: we cannot chuse, but bee ashamed, and confounded in our selues; acknowledging, that there is no such cause why wee should so magnifie our selues aboue others, and nullifie others in comparison of our selues.

4 But let euery man proue his owne worke, and then shall he haue reioycing in himselfe onely, and not in another.

Here the Apostle laieth down another remedy against self loue, and ouerweening of our selues, and it is the first and the last of which I purpose to intreat, and it stands in proouing and examining of a mans owne worke by it selfe, without comparing it with an other mans

mans worke, and withall in the approving of it vnto God. *Let every man approoue his owne worke.* And hee giues two reasons why every man ought to approoue his owne works vnto God, and to consider them absolutely in themselves, and not relatively in respect of others: the first reason is in this verse, *then shall hee haue reioycing in himselfe onely, and not in another*: the second, in the next verse, *for every man shall beare his owne burden.*

Touching the remedy, *Let every man prooue his owne worke.* The word translated **prooue*, signifieth also to *approoue*, as *Rom. 14. 22.* *Blessed is he that condemneth not in himselfe in the thing that he approveth,* *1. Cor. 16. 3.* *Whosoever ye shall approoue or allow of by letters.* And so the word is vsed in English, when wee say, such a one is to *prooue* a will, that is, to *approoue* it.

The word in this place (I take it) may bee vnderstood in both senses, to *prooue* our works, and to *approoue* them. How we are to *prooue* our works, by taking triall and examination of them, I haue already shewed in the former verse. But we are further to *approoue* them to God, according to Pauls commandement, *study to shew thy selfe approved vnto God,* *2. Timoth. 2. 15.* and his practise, in coueting alway to bee acceptable vnto him, *2. Cor. 5. 9.* This approving of our works, is a soveraigne remedie against overweening of our selves, for hee that alwayes stands vpon his triall, and Gods approbation, cannot be puffed vp with selfe-loue of himselfe, or selfe-liking of his owne workes: but rather humbled with the consideration of Gods absolute iustice, and his owne imperfections, and so stirred vp with great diligence, to worke out his saluation with feare and trembling.

Now we shall approoue our workes vnto God, if we obserue these three things. First, that all our actions specially (in the worship and seruice of God) be grounded vpon the will and word of God; and not vpon wil-worship, or humane inuentions: otherwise it will be said, *Who required these things at your hands?*

Secondly, that we performe all our actions sincerely and vprightly, as in the presence of God, with an honest heart, and a good conscience: as *Abimelech* protesteth of himselfe, *Gen. 20. 5.* and *Hekiah*, *Isay. 38. 3.* and *Paul*, *Act. 23. 1.*

Thirdly, that they alway tend to a good end, as the glory of God, *Whether ye eate or drinke, or whatsoeuer ye doe, doe all to the glory of God,* *1. Cor. 10. 30.* and the good of our brethren, *Let all things bee done to edification,* *1. Cor. 14. 26.*

It may here be demanded, whether wee may not approoue our selues and our actions to men? To which I answer, that wee may and

and ought. For although we may not be men-pleasers, that is, such as frame and temper our actions, and our speeches so, as they may alway bee pleasing to the corrupt humours, and wicked affections of men (for then we were not the seruants of God) *Gal. 1. 10.* Yet wee are to please them in that which is good to edification, *Rom. 15. 2.* *1. Cor. 10. 33.* And Christ commandeth, that our light should so shine before men, that they may see our good workes. And Paul biddeth vs to procure honest things in the sight of all men. And whatsoever things are true, and honest, and iust, and pure; whatsoever appertaine to loue, and are of good report, wee must thinke on them, and practise them, *Phil. 4. 8.* Yet wee must seeke for the approbation of men, with these cautions.

Matth. 5. 16.

Rom. 12. 17.

First, we must so seeke for the approbation of men, as that we do not seeke it, nor rest in it alone, but withall seeke to be approoued of God. For hee that praiseth himselfe (and so consequently, hee that is praised of others) is not approoued, but hee whom the Lord praiseth, *2. Cor. 10. 18.* How can yee beleue (saith our Sauour Christ) which receiue honour one of another, and seeke not the honour that commeth of God alone? *Iohn 5. 4 4.*

Secondly, we must seeke for the approbation of God in the first place; and in the second place, to be approoued of men, as Christ did: for hee grew in fauour, first with God, and after with men, *Luke 2. 52.* and the Elders, who by faith obtained a good report, *Hebr. 11. 2.* Reade *Rom. 14. 18.*

Iohn 5. 41.

Thirdly, we must neuer looke for the approbation of the multitude, or acclamation of the most: for that cannot be done without ambition, and vaine glory, in seeking popular applause: Woe bee to you when all men speake well of you, *Luke 6. 26.* Thus Christ saith, Hee sought not praise of men. For those that are addicted to popular applause, and are ouer curious of their credit, immoderately seeking to get and keepe a good name with all sorts of men, while they seeke for fame, they lose a good name, in seeking fame from the wicked, which is but a shadow, and losing a good name in the opinion of the godly, which is the substance.

Fourthly, we must so farre seeke for the approbation of the wicked, that wee minister, no not the least occasion of offence vnto them, *1. Corinthians 10. 32.* Giue no offence, neither to the Iewe, nor to the Gentile: but to conuict their consciences, and to stoppe their mouthes by our godly and vnblameable conuersation, which may bee a preparatiue for them against the day of their visitation, *1. Peter 2. 12.* Haue your conuersation honest among the Gentiles, that they which speake euill of you, as of euill doers, may by your good workes which

which they shall see, glorifie God in the day of their visitation.

Fifthly, in doing our duties, we must not respect the iudgement of the world, neither fearing the faces, nor the censures of men.

This was Pauls practise, 1. Cor. 4. 3. *I passe very little to bee iudged of you, or of mans iudgement: wee must goe through good report, and euill report, 2. Cor. 6. 8.*

Lastly, we must seeke to be approued of men, not so much in regard of our selues, as that by this meanes Gods glory may be more and more aduanced: for our light must so shine before men, that they
 10 may see our good workes, and glorifie our Father which is in heauen, Matt. 5. 16. If wee obserue these sixe cautions, wee may with good conscience seeke to get a good name, which will be vnto vs as a precious oyntment, refreshing vs with the comfort of a godly life, *Pron. 22. 1 Eccles. 7. 3.*

15 Thus much of the Remedy. The reason followeth, *And then shall hee haue whereof to reioyce in himselfe, and not in another.* The wordes translated to reioyce, signifie, to glory: which is more then to reioyce. *καυχουσι εαυτον.* There is a double ground of glorying: one, out of a mans selte: another in himselfe. Out of himselfe, in God alone, *Let not the wise*
 20 *man glory in his wisdom, nor the strong man in his strength, nor the rich man in his riches. But let him that glorieth, glory in this, that he understandeth and knoweth me, Ierem. 9. 23, 24. 1. Cor. 1. 31.* In himselfe, in the comfortable testimony of a good conscience. *Our glorying is this, the testimony of our conscience, that in simplicitie and godly purenes, we haue*
 25 *had our conuersation in the world, 2. Cor. 1. 12.* The one is glorying before God; the other before men. The one, of iustification, the other of holy conuersation for time past, and constant resolution for time to come. The one in the testimony of our conscience, 2 Cor. 1. 12. the other, in the testimony of Gods Spirit, witnessing to our
 30 spirits, that wee are the sonnes of God, *Rom. 8. 16.* The first is not meant in this place, but onely the second, *For no flesh can glory in his presence, 1. Cor. 1. 29.*

It will be said, This glorying in a mans selfe, is vaine glory, and a branch of pride. *Answer.* It differs from vaine glorie: first, in the
 35 foundation: for vaine glory hath for his ground our owne vertues and gifts, considered as comming from our selues, and not from God: whereas this true glorying is grounded vpon them, as they are fruites of regeneration, proceeding from our iustification by Christ, and reconciliation with God. Secondly, in the end:
 40 Vaine glory tendeth to the aduancing of our selues, in an opinion of our proper iustice, and desert. This true glorying aimeth at the glory of God alone.

Obiect.

Obiect. Paul reprooves those that consider their owne gifts on-ly, neuer comparing themselves with others, 2. Cor. 10. 12. *They vnderstand not that they measure themselves with themselves, and compare themselves with themselves.* Therefore it seemes that a man by comparing himselfe with others, may haue whereof to reioyce. *Answer.* 5 He reproves the false apostles in that place for glorying in the gifts which they had, and the number of Profelytes which they had wonne, neuer comparing themselves with himselfe, or any other Apostle, which was the cause they were so puffed vp with pride. For to compare our selues with those that are eminently aboue vs, is a 10 notable meanes to abate pride: as I haue already shewed. Whereas the measuring of our selues by our selues, with our inferiours, is the onely way to increase it. And this is it which the Apostle reprooves in this place.

Further, wee may reioyce, or glorie in the testimony of a good 15 conscience, if we obserue these rules.

I. In our best desires, endeauours, actions, wee must labour to feele our owne defects: that we doe not the good wee should, nor in that manner we ought.

II. We must labour to haue euen our best workes, (our almes, 20 prayers, &c.) couered with the righteousness of Christ: for it is the sweet odour of his sacrifice, that doth perfume all our actions, that they may be acceptable to God, being offered *with the prayers of the Saints upon the golden altar, Reuel. 8. 3.*

III. Wee must acknowledge all the good things we haue, the 25 will, and the worke, the purpose and the power, to proceed from God alone, *Phil. 2. 13. Iames 1. 17.*

IIII. Wee must reioyce in them, not as causes, but as fruites of justification: so that if the question be, whether we be iustified by them, or not? we must renounce them, tread them vnder our feet, 30 and account them as dung, as Paul did, *Phil. 3. 8.*

Hence we learne fundry things.

I. That if we would haue a light heart, and passe our time mer- 35 rily with comfort and content; wee must looke to approoue our hearts to God in all our actions.

II. It confutes the opinion of the multitude, who iudge those that make conscience of sinne, and leade a more strict life then the common sort, endeauouring with Paul, to haue alwayes a cleare conscience toward God, and toward men, of all others to leade a most melancholike, sad, and vncomfortable life. For the truerh is, 40 this is the onely true ioy, all other ioy is but counterfeite in comparison: it is radical, proceeding from the heart: the other but superficial, 45

5 ficiall, from the the teeth outward: it comforts a man in the midst of afflictions: whereas a man may haue the other, and yet in the midst of mirth his heart will be sorrowfull: this is pernament and during the other transitorie and fading. It is like the ioy in haruest, *Psal 4 7.* and which they haue that diuide a spoyle. *Esa. 9 3* therefore *Salomon* saith, it is a continuall feast. *Prou. 15. 15.* and *Peter* calls it ioy unspeakeable, and glorious, *1. Pet. 1 8.*

10 111. This shewes that there is much false ioy in the world, consisting wholly in honours, profits, pleasures: none of which haue their ground in a mans selfe: and therefore being out of a mans selfe, they are not true and durable, but false and vanishing ioyes. Now those which haue no comfort but out of themselves, are of foure sorts. First, such as reioyce, and glory in the opinion that the world hath of them, and not in the testimony of their owne conscience. Secondly, such as reioyce, not in their reconciliation with 15 God, but in their blamelesse conuersation, in that they haue not bin open offenders, or men of scandalous life. *Luk. 18. 11.* Thirdly, such as reioyce in the vertues of their ancessors, as the Iewes bragged they were the seed of *Abraham. Iob 8 33.* which vaine glorying 20 of other mens vertues, *Iohn Baptist* reproveth, when he saith, *Thinke not to say with yourselves, we haue Abraham for our father, &c. Mat. 3. 9.* Fourthly, such as reioyce and thinke themselves in a good case, because they see others worse then themselves: this is right the Pharisies ioy, *O God, I thank thee, I am not thus, and thus, or like this* 25 *Publican, Luke 18. 11.* This is it which the Apostle directly aimeth at in this place: when men thinke themselves iust, because others are more wretched then themselves: and pure, because others are more defiled. Whereas other mens hainous sinnes shall not iustifie vs and our lesser sinnes, saue onely as *Ierusalem* iustified her sisters, 30 *Sodom*, and *Samaria, Ezech. 16 51.* But so a man may bee iustified, and yet condemned.

5 For euery one shall beare his owne burden.

35 Here *Paul* layes downe a second reason of his assertion, in the former verse, why euery man ought to prooue his owne worke, rather then to be curious in searching into the liues, and skanning the actions of other men, because euery man shall beare his owne burden, which is all one with that, *Gal 5. 10.* to beare a mans owne iudgement: and that *Rom. 14. 12.* to giue an account to God for himselfe. It is a prouerbiall speech, the meaning whereof is expressed by the like, *Ier. 31. 30.* Euery man that eateth the sowre grape, his teeth shall bee set

on edge. And by that which is common amongst vs, *Every vessel shall stand upon his owne bottome*: that is, every man shall beare the punishment of his owne sin. For as the Indian is not therefore white, because the Morian is more blacke, or as the sand-blind is not therefore sharpe sighted, because some other is stone blind. So no man is therefore acquit of his sinnes, because others are greater sinners: or exempt from punishment, because others shall vndergoe a deeper condemnation. Therefore considering that every man must beare the guilt and punishment of his owne sinne, he ought more narrowly to looke to himselfe then to others; and to be a more se-
uere censurer of himselfe, then of another.

For the better vnderstanding of the words, sundry questions are to be discuffed.

Onus ratio-
nis reddēdæ:
onus infirmi-
tatis partici-
pādæ. August.
contra script.
Petil. lib. 3.
Beda & Lum-
bard. in hunc
locum Hugo
de S. Viēt. in
Gal. quæst. 58

First, it may bee demaunded, how every man should beare his owne burden, seeing wee are commanded to beare one anothers
burdens? *Answer.* There are two sorts of burdens. The first is,
of giuing an account to God: thus euery man shall beare his owne
burden, *For euery man must giue an account of himselfe vnto God, Rom.*
14. 12. The second is, of bearing one anothers infirmities, of
which *Paul* speakes, verse 2. In this sense a man is not to beare his
owne burden: but euery man his brothers. For the Apostle (to
crosse the opinion of those which thought a man was polluted
with other mens sinnes,) saith, *Euery man shall beare his owne burden.*
And to meet with the carelesnesse of others, who respect them-
selues alone, neuer minding the good of their brethren: he saith,
Beare ye one anothers burdens.

II. Obiect. By bearing of our owne burdens, is vnderstood
giuing an account for our selues vnto God. Now euery man is not
to giue account for himselfe alone, but for those also that are com-
mitted to his charge, as the father for his childe, the master for his
seruant, the magistrate for the subiect, the shepheard for the sheepe,
Ezech. 34. His blood will I require at thy hand. Hebr. 13. 17. They watch
ouer your soules, as they that must giue account. *Answer.* Gouvernors and
superiours are not to giue account for the sinnes of those that are
committed vnto them: but for the sinnes which themselves com-
mit, in not looking vnto them, not admonishing them, not restrai-
ning them, not taking condigne punishment of them for their of-
fences. This is plainly taught, *Ezech. 33. 8. 9. If thou doe not admo-*
nish the wicked of his way, hee shall die for his iniquitie, but his blood will I
require at thy hand. Neuer thelesse, if thou warne the wicked of his way to
turne from it, if hee doe not turne from his way, hee shall die for his iniquitie,
but thou hast deliuered thy soule.

III. Obiect.

III. *Obiect.* Infants which haue not sinned after the manner of the transgression of *Adam*, doe beare the burden of *Adams* sinne: therefore all doe not beare their owne burden. *Ans.* First, the wordes are properly to be vnderstood of personall, or actuall
 5 sinnes, which are proper to euery man in particular, and not of originall sinne, or the sinne of our nature, which is common to all mankind, being propagated together with nature. Secondly, I answer, that *Adams* sinne was our sinne: and therefore seeing infants partake with him in the sinne, it is iust with God, they should
 10 partake with him in the punishment, and so beare their owne burden. For albeit the transgression of *Adam* was his actuall and personall sinne: yet it is our originall sinne, or the sinne of our nature: seeing it is ours by imputation, and propagation of nature, together with corruption. For as *Leui* was in the loynes
 15 of *Abraham*, when *Melchizedech* met him, and payed tithes in *Abraham*, *Hebr.* 7. 9, 10. So, all mankind was in the loynes of *Adam* when he sinned, as the branches are in the root, or in the seed. And therefore when he sinned, we also sinned, as the Apostle saith, *In whom all sinned, Romanes* 5. 12. For so are the words in the origi-
 20 nall and not as it is commonly translated, for as much as all men haue sinned.

In seminali
 principio.
 ὁ ἀπὸ πάντων
 ἡμῶν.

IV. *Obiection.* In the second commandement, the Lord threat-
 neth to visite the sinnes of the fathers vpon the children, to the
 third and fourth generation. Therefore they beare not their owne
 25 burden, but part of their parents burden: and parents do not beare their owne whole and entire burden, but their children for them.
Answer. The clause in the second Commandement, of visiting the sinnes of the fathers vpon the children, doeth not contradict that of *Ezech.* 18. 19. *The sonne shall not beare the iniquitie of the fa-
 30 ther, neither shall the father beare the iniquitie of the sonne; the same soule that sinneth, that shall die.* For they are reconciled, verse 14. 17. *If hee (that is, a wicked man) beget a sonne that seeth all his fathers sinnes, which he hath done, and feareth, neither doeth the like — he shall not die in the iniquitie of his father, but shall surely liue.* Therefore the threat-
 35 ning in the second commandement, is not to be vnderstood absolutely, as though God would alway plague the children for the fathers sinne, but conditionally, if they persist and continue in their sinnes, walking in their wates, and treading in their steps. And the same answer is given in the second commandement, that God
 40 will not visite the sinne of the fathers vpon the children, saue vpon those that hate him. It may be said, The sinnes of the parents are not vindicated vpon the children, because the punishment inflicted
 vpon

vpon their posteritie, is not felt of the parents. *Ans.* First, children are (as it were) a part of their parents, and therefore they being punished, their parents are punished with them. Secondly, it is a corra-
sive and a torment to parents, to know that their children shall bee
seuerely punished and afflicted. Thirdly, the punishment of poste-
rity hath a relation to the parent, seeing God hath threatned hee
will punish the children which walke in the wicked wayes of their
forefathers, that so hee may testifie how extreemely hee abhorreth
both their sinne, and the sinne of their progenitors. Fourthly, the
parents sinne, is oft a cause of the childrens sinne, seeing that God
in his iust iudgement, curseth a wicked mans posteritie, by leauing
them to themselues, to blindnesse of mind, and hardnesse of heart,
that so they may fulfill the measure of their fathers, as our Saviour
Christ speaketh, *Matthew* 23. 32. And by their owne sinnes may
iustly pull vpon them condigne punishment. Lastly, God doeth
more manifest his wrath against the sinne of the parent, by puni-
shing the child.

V. Obiect. *Numb.* 25. 4. The chiefest of the Israelies were han-
ged vp before the Lord, for the fornication and idolatry of the peo-
ple: therefore they did not beare the burden of their owne sinne.
Answer. They were punished for their owne sinne, for they con-
sented to worship the Idoll, and commit folly with the daughters
of Moab: or rather were principall ringleaders, and first actors in
this Commicke Tragedie, as may appeare by the practise of *Zimri*,
Prince of the family of the *Simeonites*, verse 6. in bringing *Cosbie* a
Midianitish woman into his tent, in the sight of *Moses* & the whole
congregation. Therefore because they did not hinder them from
committing this fact, as they might, being in place of gouernment,
but did partake with them in the sinne, they are first punished, and
that more seuerely: for a thousand of them were hanged vp the
same day, verse 4. the rest of the people, to the number of three and
twenty thousand, were slaine by the sword at the commandement
of God, verse 5. to which *Paul* had an eye, when hee said, that *there*
fell in one day 23. thousand, *1. Cor.* 10. 8. meaning of the common sort,
excluding those that were hanged vp: for in all there were 24000.
Num. 25. 9. Thus the contrarietie which seemes to bee betwixt
these two places, may be better accorded, then to say (as some doe)
that the pen-men, or scribes, failed in copying out the bookes. Or
(as others) that it was ἀνὰ τρία μυριάκιον in *Paul*: or as others, that
Paul is not contrarie to *Moses*, seeing that if there were 24000. (as
Moses saith,) there were 23000. for there is no reason why the A-
postle should vse the lesse number rather then the greater, (except
that

that which I haue said) considering the greater is as round a number as the lesse.

Object. VI. David sinned in numbring the people, and they were punished for his sinne: *Achan* sinned, and the people fell slaine before the men of Ai: therefore euery man doth not beare his own entire burden. The like may be said of the children of the Sodomites, and of the first borne of the Egyptians, who bare the burden of their parents sinne. *Answer.* The people were punished for their owne sinnes: and so was *David*, albeit not in his owne, but in their persons: for God punished him in his kind, in destroying the people with that fearefull plague, in whose great multitude hee had gloried so much. Indeede their punishment was occasioned by his sinne: but caused by their owne: for no man, though neuer so holy, is without sinne, and therefore none but deserue punishment: nay, *It is Gods mercie, that wee are not consumed Lam. 3. verse 22.*

And albeit all the infants perished in the Deluge, and in the overthrow of Sodom and Gomorrha, which could neither imitate, nor approoue the actions of their fathers: yet their death was deserved. For though infants bee truly called *innocents*, in regard of actuall sinne: yet they are not *innocents* in regard of originall: for from the wombe they carrie a woluishe nature, which prepares them to the spoile, though they neuer did hurt: the Scorpion hath his sting within him, though he doe not alway strike: and though a Serpent may be handled whilst the cold hath benūmed him; yet when he is warmed, he will hisse out his venomous poison. Mans practise doth cleare God of vniustice in this behalfe, in killing the young cubbes, as well as the old foxe: the wolues whelps, as well as the damme. Albeit if we speake of their finall estate, and come to particulars, we are to leaue secret iudgements to God. The example of *Achan* is more difficult, seeing that for his sinne, 35. of the people were slaine, *Iosh. 7. 5.* and his whole familie rooted out, verse 25. who were not consenting to his fact: nor guilty of his sinne. Yet something may probably be said in this case. First, that 35 they were guiltie of this his sinne in part, in not punishing theft so severely as they ought to haue done, which was a meanes to embolden *Achan* to steale the execrable thing. Secondly, that priuate good must yeeld to the publike; as the life of euery particular person to the general good of the whole Commonwealth: thus 40 souldiours in the warres, redeeme the publike peace by the losse of their own liues: now the manifestation of the glory of the wisdom, power, and iustice of God, is the publike good of the whole

Church: therefore mens priuate good, euen their liues, must giue
 placeto it: especially considering hee neuer inflicteth temporall pu-
 nishment for the publike good, but hee respects therein the priuate
 good of his Elect, whom hee corrects in iudgement, not in furie.
 Thirdly, howsoeuer *Achan* did beare the burden of his owne sin; 5
 this iudgement might be inflicted vpon them for their good: for
 temporall punishment, yea, death it selfe is sometimes inflicted for
 the good of those that are punished, as we see in the children of the
 Sodomites, many whereof (no doubt) were taken away in mercy,
 lest malice should haue changed and corrupted their minds: and 10
 sometime for the terrour of others, to be a warning peece to make
 them take heed; and sometime for both: as it may be it was in this
 particular. Fourthly, sinne committed by a particular man, that
 is a member of a politike body, doeth after a sort belong to the
 whole body: thus the Lord saith, that *Blood defileth the Land, which* 15
cannot bee cleansed of the blood that was shed therein, but by the blood of
him, that shed it, Numbers 35. 33. And thus *Achans* sinne, though
 not knowne to the people, made the whole armie guiltie before
 God, till he was put to death, *Iosua 7. 11, 12.* Lastly, if the rithing of
 an army for the offence of some few, haue bin thought lawful and 20
 iust: why should the death of thirtie sixe men seeme vniust for the
 sinne of *Achan*, especially considering it was to make the people
 more prouident, to preuent and take heed of the like euill? If these
 reasons satisfie not, yet let vs rest in this, that Gods iudgements are
 often secret, but alway iust. See *August. lib. quest. in Iosb. q. 8.* and 25
Caluini 7. cap. Iosb.

Decimatio
 exercitus.

Obiect. III. If euery man must beare his owne burden, *David*
 shall as well beare the burden of his murdering of *Urias*, by the
 sword of the children of *Ammon*, as *Saul* the murdering of him-
 selfe with his owne sword; *Peter* his denying *Christ*, as *Iudas* his be- 30
 traying him, &c. *Answer.* By the sentence of the Law, euery one is
 to beare his owne burden, and to satisfie for his owne sinne, in his
 owne person: but the Gospell, (the second part of Gods word,)
 makes an exception: which is, that they which haue their sinnes
 set vpon *Christ* reckoning, shall not giue account for them againe: 35
 and those that haue the burden of them laide vpon his shoulders
 (who hath borne our sins in his body vpon the crosse, *1. Pet. 2. 23.*)
 shall not beare the burden of them themselues at the last iudgment.
 Therefore true beleeuers, which haue *Christ* their foretie, satisfying
 the rigour of Gods iustice for them, shall not answer or satisfie for 40
 them themselues: for they are freed by him from a threefold bur-
 den. First, from the burden of ceremonies (and so consequently
 of

of humane lawes and ordinances) which were a yoke (as Peter saith) which neither we, nor our fathers were able to beare, *Act. 15*. Secondly, from the burden of miseries, or crosses, which befall men in this life. He doeth ease vs of this burden, by his word and spirit, either
 5 in remoouing them away, *Psal. 81. 7*. or in giuing strength and patience to beare them, *2. Cor. 12. 9*. or in mitigating and proportionating them to our strength, *1. Cor. 10. 13*. Thirdly, from the burden of sinne, as well originall as actuall, in being made sinne, that is, accounted a sinner, and made a sacrifice for sinne, for vs: as also by
 10 easing them that are heauy laden, in pacifying the perplexed conscience, *Matth. 11. 28*. It will be said, If Christ beare the burden of our sinnes, every man shal not beare his owne burden. *Ans.* Both be true, and may well stand together: for Legally, euery man is to beare his owne burden, the Law requiring personall obedience,
 15 or satisfaction, or both. Euangelically, Christ, our suretie doeth beare the burden of them, and satisfie the iustice of God for them, *1. Pet. 2. 23*.

Vse. Hence we learne, first, that no man can pay a ranfome for his brother, or redeeme his soule from death, or satisfie the iustice
 20 of God for his sinne, seeing that euery man by the tenour of the law, is to beare his owne burden: and by the Gospel, none can bee our suretie, but Christ.

Secondly, here we see the nature of sinne, that it is a burden to the soule: for it is heauier then the grauell of the earth, and the
 25 sand of the sea. It is a burden to the wicked angels, for it weighed them from the highest heauen, and made them fall like thunderbolts into the lowest hel. To man: for as *Dauid* saith, it is like a grievous burden, too heauy for him to beare, *Psal. 38. 4*. To God: for the hypocritical and ceremoniall seruice of the Iewes, was such a burden
 30 unto him, that he was weary to beare it, *Isa. 1. 14*. Behold, I am pressed vnder you, as a cart is pressed that is full of sheaues, *Amos 2. 13*. To the creatures, who groane vnder this burden, being by mans sinne subiect to vanitie and corruption, *Rom. 8. 20, 21*. Hence it followeth then, that those which feelee not the weight and burden of their
 35 sinnes, are dead being aliue, as *Paul* speakes in another case, *1. Timoth. 5. 6*.

Thirdly, we are not to wonder, that sinne being so heauie a burden, should be made so light a matter by carnall men: for it is a spirituall burden, and therefore no maruell, though it be not felt of
 40 them that are all flesh, and no spirit.

Fourthly, this shewes that the more a man doeth feare the burden of his sinnes, the greater measure of grace, and spiritual life he

hath : and the lesse he feeleth it, the more he is to suspect himselfe, that the graces of God doe want, and decay in him. For corruption is not felt by corruption, but by grace: and therefore the more a man doth feele the burthen of his owne corruptions, the more grace he hath.

Fifthly, by this we see, that the greatest part of the world are dead in their sinnes, in that they haue no sense nor feeling of this heauie burden. There is indeede great crying out of the stone in the reynes, because it is felt to bee a great torment to the bodie : but there is little or no complaining, of the stone in the heart, because men want spirituall life, and sense to discern it. All men can take pittie vpon a beatt, if he lie vnder his burden, and will be readie to helpe him vp againe. But all haue not the like sight and sense of the spirituall burden of sinne, nor sympathy of the miserie of their brethren, groaning vnder it.

Sixtly, whereas *Paul* saith, *Every man must beare his own burthen*, he meeteth with the prophanenes and Atheisme of our time, when men make a mocke at the day of iudgement, and the strict account that euery man is to giue for himselfe. The Iewes were woont to ieast at the threatnings of God, denounced by the Prophets, and to call the visions of the Prophets, *onus Ichona*, the burthen of the Lord, in a merriment, vsing it as a by-word. *Ieremie* 23. verse 34, 36, 38. Thereby signifying that the threats of God, were but vaine bugs, or scarre-crowes, which might perhaps terrifie children, but could not hurt them. The like prophanenesse, infidelity, atheisme, hath crept into the mindes of many, who otherwise professe the Gospel, which they testifie by their speeches, in saying, they are sure, sinne is nothing so ougly, hell is not halfe so hotte, nor the deuill halfe so blacke, as preachers say they are: or if they bee, they are sure they shall not goe loaden alone, with the burden of their sinnes, but shall haue company, and shall perhaps abide the brunt as well as their fellows. But alas, they know not that the burden of sin is intollerable, that it will eternally presse the down to the gulfes of hell, & that they shal neuer be able to be rid or eased of it.

Seuenthly, we are here admonished to take heede of euery sinne, for there is no sinne so small but hath his waight, and such a waight, as will presse downe to the bottomlesse pit, *Ro.* 6. 23. And though some be greater then others, and sinke a man deeper into condemnation, yet many small sinnes will as easily condemne, as a few great. Like as sands, though but small in quantity, yet being many in number, will as soone sinke the ship, as if it were laden with the greatest burden.

Eightly,

Eightly, seeing the guilt and punishment of sinne, is so heauie a burden, we are to ease and disburden our selues thereof. And that we may doe this, we must labour to feele the intollerable weight of it, pressing, and oppressing the conscience. Therefore as thole who
 5 in their sleepe are troubled with the *Ephialtes* or *mare*, feeling (as it were) a great mountaine lying vpon them, & pressing them down, would giue all the world, the weight might be remooued: So wee feeling the weight and burden of our sinnes, are to labour to bee disburdened and eased therof: and this we shall doe by our repen-
 10 tance toward God, and faith in Christ, *Matt. 11. 28. Come vnto mee, all ye that are weary, and laden, and I will ease you.*

6 *Let him that is taught in the word, make him that hath taught him, partaker of all his goods.*

15 In these words the Apostle laieth downe an other rule, touching the maintenance of the ministerie, and competencie of allowance for the Ministers of the word: for it seemeth that the Ministerie among the Galatians, was at that time much neglected, at least, not
 20 so respected as it ought.

In handling of the rule, I will first shew the meaning of the words; secondly, the reasons of the rule: thirdly, the obiections against it: lastly, the doctrine, and vles, that are to bee gathered from it.

25 The meaning.

Let him that is taught] The word translated *taught*, signifieth him that is catechized, or taught familiarly by word of mouth, or liuely voyce, as when children are taught the first principles of religion. But heere it hath a larger signification (as *Oecumenius* hath well obserued) for him that is any way taught and instructed, whether it bee in the first principles, and rudiments, or
 30 in points of greater difficultie; whether plainely and familiarly, (as Catechizers vse to doe:) or more profoundly, for the instruction of the learned.

35 *Taught in the word*] What needes this addition (may some say) is there any catechizing without the word? *Ans.* The Apostle addeth *in the word*, to shew that hee meaneth not so much the doctrine of Christian religion, contained in the Scriptures, as the doctrine of the Gospel, which by an *exochē*, or peculiar excellency, is
 40 called *the word*, *Act. 16. 6. They were forbidden of the holy Ghost to preach the word in Asia*: which is expounded, v. 10. to be the preaching of the Gospel. Thus it is vsed, *Act. 14. 25. when they had preached the*

Hebr. 4.2.

word in Perga. Marke 4.14. The sower soweth the word. And so in sundry other places. And it is further called the word of the kingdome, Matthew 13.19. because it teacheth what is the kingdome of grace, and glory: and because it being beleueed, or (as the Apostle speakes) being mingled with faith in our hearts, doth make vs free denizens of the kingdome of grace in this life; and doth aduance vs to the kingdome of grace in this life; and doth aduance vs to the kingdome of glory in the life to come. Secondly, it is called the word of God, because he is the authour of it, and no creature, man, or Angel, 2. Thess. 3.13. Thirdly, the word of saluation. Actes 13.26. because it shewes the way and meanes of attaining saluation. Lastly, the word of life, Actes 5.20. because it doeth not onely shew the narrow way, that leadeth to eternall life; but is in it selfe a lively word, and mightie in operation, Hebr. 4.12. For as the powerfull word of God in the beginning, did giue being to things that were not; so the Gospell (being the power of God to saluation to every one that beleueeth,) doeth make new creatures, by the immortall seed of the word.

Make him that taught him.] q. d. catechised him. Yet as before, it must be taken generally for any kinde of teaching, or instruction; for so the word is vsed else where in Scripture, as Luke 1.4. Act. 18.25. Romanes 2.18. 1. Corin. 14.19. so that this text giueth vs no iust occasion to speake of the originall, maner, vse, and profit of catechizing.

ἡμετέρας, ὑποστασίας,
τιμῆς.
Decumen.

Partaker of his goods] By goods he* vnderstandeth food raiment, lodging, bookes, and other necessities, without the which a Minister of the word cannot follow his calling; for Paul calleth these goods, according to the common opinion, which so iudgeth of them. Luke 12.19. Soule, thou hast much goods laid up for many yeeres. Luke 19.25. Sonne, remember that thou in thy life time receinedst thy good things.

Make them partaker] That is, communicate, affoord, giue vnto them these temporall things, seeing they giue you spirituall.

Of all his goods] Not in giuing all away, but imparting to their teachers what they stand in need of, accounting nothing too deare for them. The Papists vpon this ground, take tithes of all, as the Priestes did in the Leuiticall law: whereas Paul speakes nothing of tithes.

1. Thess. 3.13.
Hebr. 12.17.
1. Thess. 5.13

There are foure principall duties, which the people are to performe to their Pastour, three of them are recorded elsewhere in Scripture The first is to heare them as Embassadors sent of God, with reuerence. The second is, to obey them, & submit themselves

vnto them in the Lord. The third, to loue and honor them for the works sake. The fourth, the Apostle speaks of in this place, to giue them not onely countenance, but also maintenance.

The reasons of this rule are many and weightie.

5 Wee are bound (euen by the bond of nature) to maintaine our parents if they be in want; because they maintained vs, and gaue vnto vs our being: *Paul saith, It is an honest thing and acceptable before God, for children to recompense their parents and progenitors, 1 Tim.*

10 5.4 Now if this bee so, men are bound by the same right to maintaine their spirituall fathers in Christ, that haue begotten them anew by the preaching of the word: as *Paul saith, Hee trauelled in paine of the Galatians, till Christ was formed in them, Gal. 4.* and that hee begate Onesimus in his bonds, *Philem. v. 10.* And, *1. Cor. 4. 15. In Christ Iesus I haue begotten you through the Gospell.* Hence *Paul* commendeth the Galatians, *Gal. 4. 15.* for that if it had been possible, they
15 would haue plucked out their eyes, and haue giuen them him. And surely, wee owe vnto our spirituall parents, and fathers in Christ, not onely this temporall trash, but euen our selues, as *Paul saith to Philem. verse 19. Albeit I doe not say vnto thee that thou owest vnto mee,*
20 *euen thine owne selfe.*

I I. It is a law of nations, and a conclusion grounded vpon common equitie, that those that watch, labour, and spend themselves, as a candle, to giue light to others, and that for the common good of all, should bee maintained of the common flocke by all.
25 And the Lord chargeth all the twelue Tribes, euen all Israel, *Deut. 12. 1. Beware that thou forsakeſt not the Leuite, so long as thou liest on the earth.*

III. Euery trade, calling, and condition of life, is able to maintaine them that liue therein (as experience shewes:) therefore wee
30 may not thinke that the ministry, being the highest calling, should be so base or barren, as that it cannot competently maintaine them that attend thereupon.

IV. The Ministers are the Lords souldiers, his captaines, and
standard-bearers, and therefore are not to goe a warfare at their
53 owne cost: the Lords labourers in his vineyard, and therefore are worthy of their wages, and ought to eate of the fruite of the vineyard: the Lords shepheards, set over the flocke of Christ to feed his sheepe, and therefore ought to eate of the milke of the flocke. And seeing it was forbidden, that no man should muzzle the
40 mouth of the oxe, that treadeth out the corne: shall we thinke that God would haue those that thresh in his floore, and separate the
wheate from the chaffe, the precious from the vile, to be muzzled,
Dent. 25. 4.
2. Cor. 9. 9, 10

or not to live vpon their labours? For they are worthy double honour, that is, all honour, reuerence, helpe, and furtherance, which labour in the word and doctrine, 1. Tim. 5. 17.

V. The Ministers are to giue themselves wholly to reading, exhortation, doctrine, and to continue therein, 1. Tim. 4. 13, 15, 16 they are wholly to deuote themselves to the building of the Church, and to the fighting of the Lords battels: and therefore not to be entangled with the cares of this life, 2. Tim. 2. 4. Therefore they are to haue their pay, and their allowance, that so they may attend vpon their callings, without distraction. 10

VI. It is the ordinance of God (as Paul saith, 1. Corinth. 9. 14.) that they which preach the Gospell, should liue of the Gospell: therefore those that doe not their endeaour, and inlarge not their liberality to vphold and maintaine the Ministry in good estate, they withstand (as much as in them lieth) the ordinance of God: besides, they waste and make haucke of the Church of God: and are guiltie of the blood of all that perish for want of instruction. 15

I adde further, it is the will of God, that the Ministers which labour in the word and doctrine, should be plentifully and liberally provided for: (yet with moderation, that they draw not all mens wealth into their purses, as the Pope and Church of Rome haue done into their coffers, of whom it is truly verified, *Religio peperit diuitias, sed filia deuorauit matrem.*) which I prooue from the Leuitical law: for the whole land of promise, being no bigger in compasse then Wales, or the fourth part of England: yet yeelded vnto the Leuites, at the appointment of God, besides the share which they had out of the sacrifices, besides tenths, first fruits, &c. fortie eight cities with their suburbs. 25

It may here be demaunded, whether the Ministers of the word are now to be maintained by common contribution, and liberality of the people, or not? 30

Answer. We must consider, that if the Ministers be sufficiently provided for, by stipends, as by some foundation, or by the renewes of the Church, men are not bound to contribute vnto them, and make them partakers of all their goods; although in regard of thankfulnesse, they owe vnto them, euen themselves, as Paul telleth Philemon; but onely such as haue not else wherewith to maintaine themselves. And we must consider the reason why Paul commandeth all that are instructed in the word, to make them that instructed them, partakers of their goods, to wit, because in Pauls time, and long after, the Church was not endowed with lands or goods, 35 40

goods, whereby the Ministerie might be vpholden; neither had it publike Christian Magistrates, but was vnder cruell tyrants in persecution: and therefore those that were taught in the word, wereto maintaine their teachers by liberal contribution, otherwise they might starue: but now the Church beeing greatly enriched, they may without contribution be sufficiently maintained of the Church goods.

And that it is much more conuenient for the Ministers to bee maintained by set stipends, arising from goods proper to the Church, then by voluntarie contribution, it may appeare by this, in that it cuts off sundry inconueniences, which in voluntary contributions, either cannot be, or are hardly auoyded. First, flatterie, and suspition of flatterie, in beeing thought to haue some persons in admiration, because of aduantage. Secondly, the poorer sort are no way disgraced by this meanes, as they should bee in contributions, except they did giue ratably as the rest. Thirdly, dissembling and deceite, in making as though they receiued little, whenas they haue much, is cut off in a set stipend. Fourthly, the euill disposed would not so easily cast off their Minister, and seeke a new that would teach for lesse; or would giue nothing at all, if they were touched to the quicke, and galled for their sinnes. Fifthly, ostentation in some, in giuing much, and disdaining those that giue lesse. Sixthly, suspition of couetousnesse and filthy lucre in the Ministers, in seeming to take of those to whom they ought to giue. Seuenthly, disgrace of the Ministry, in gathering themselves, or sending others to gather the peoples liberalitie from doore to doore. Lastly, a set stipend comes nearer the order appointed by God, in maintaining the Priesthood vnder the Leviticall law.

In the next place, I will answer the common obiections that are made to the contrarie, by such as thinke it as ealie a matter, to say Seruice in the Church, as to doe seruice in the house: to stand at the Altar of God, as to followe their masters plough; to preach in the Pulpit, as to talke in the tauerne.

1. Obiect. 2. *Thess.* 3. 10. *They which will not worke, must not eate.* But Ministers neuer plow, nor sowe, nor hedge, nor ditch, nor vse any painefull labour: for of all men they haue the easiest liues: their greatest paines is to reade ouer a few bookes, or to speake a few words, once or twise a week. Therefore they are not to be maintained. *Answer.* There is a twofold labour, one of the bodie, another of the minde: now albeit the Ministers doe not weary themselves

selues in bodily labour, yet they are not therefore idle: for the labours of the minde, doe farre exceed the labours of the body: they are more painefull, they spend the spirits more, they consume naturall moisture, and bring old age sooner. The holy Ghost calleth the ministry, *the worke of the ministerie.* Eph. 4. 12. *Nay, a worthy worke.* 5
1. Tim. 3. 1. therefore Paul saith, that those Elders are worthy double
honour that labour in the word, and doctrine. 1. Tim. 5. 17 and he exhorts
 the Thessalonians that they would know them that labour among
 them; and that they haue them in singular loue for their works
 sake, 1. Thess. 5. 12. 13. Hence it is that the Scripture doth vsually 10
 compare the worke of the ministry, to the most toyle some labour
 that may be, as to the worke of the husbandman, to setting, to
 plowing, to sowing, to reaping, to the labour in the vineyard: and
 the minister to a builder: to a shepheard, that watcheth his flocke;
 to a souldier that fighteth in the warres, &c. Againe, we may not 15
 iudge of the painefulnesse of the calling, by the outward appearance:
 for so a man would thinke a King had the easiest life of all;
 when as the truth is, the toyle which he takes, and the cares where-
 with he is possessed, doe exceede all other cares: if a man knew the
 trauaile that is required to the weilding of a scepter, and the paine 20
 that is taken in wearing of a heauy crowne, he would hardly
 stoop downe, to take the one into his hands, or to set the other
 vpon his head. The Master builder doth not hew the stones, nor
 worke the mortar, nor carry the rubbish, nor any such drudgerie;
 but onely standeth by, and directeth the workemen; and yet his 25
 labour is double to any of theirs. The Master of a ship (a man would
 thinke) were idle; and did nothing: he stands not to the tackling,
 he stirreth not the pompe; he driueth not the oares, he soundeth
 not the deepe, he rideth not the ropes; but onely sitteth still at the
 sterne, and looketh to the pole starre, and guideth the compasse; 30
 yet his labour passeth all the rest: were it not for him, the shippe
 would runne her selfe vnder the water, or strike vpon the rockes,
 or be split vpon the sands, or fall foule with another (as marriners
 speake.) Euen so for all the world fareth it with the Ministers of the
 word: they seeme to sit still to be at ease, to doe nothing; and 35
 yet their labour is double and treble to other mens bodily labour,
 except they bee vnfaythfull, and doe the worke of the Lord
 negligently.

11. Obiect. Paul laboured with his hands in making of Tents,
 1. Thess. 3. 9. *Act. 18. 3. that hee might not be chargeable to any, Act. 20. 34. 40*
 Therefore Preachers are to maintaine themselves, by their handy
 labour, and not be chargeable to the Church. *Ans.* Pauls example
 prooueth

- ueth not, that the minister ought to liue by the labour of his hands: for first, himselfe received a contribution of the Philippians, when he was absent from them, *Philip. 4. 16 When I was in Thessalonica, ye sent once, and after ward againe for my necessitie.* Therefore if Paul re-
- 5 ceived exhibition from other Churches, where he did not labour, it is lawfull for the Ministers to receiue of those whom they doe instruct. Secondly, consider the reasons why *Paul* wou'd not take wages of the Church of Corinth, and some others. I. lest he should be a burden vnto them. *2. Thess. 3. 8. We wrought with labour and tra-*
- 10 *uell, day and night, because we would not be chargeable to any of you. 2. Cor. 11. 9. In all things I kept and will keepe my selfe, that I should not be grieuous vnto you.* II. That hee might giue a president or example to others to tread in his steppes. *2. Thess. 3. 9 Not but that we had authoritie, but that wee might make our selues an example to them to follow vs.*
- 15 III. That he might manifest what his end was in teaching the Gospel, not to seeke himselfe, but the saluation of his hearers. *2. Cor. 11. 14. I seeke not yours, but you. And verse 19. We doe all things for your edification, Philip. 4. 17. Not that I desire a gift, but the fruit which may further your reckoning.* IV. That he might confound the false Apo-
- 20 stles which taught not freely, but received wages for their labour, whereas he received none: or lest they should slander him and his ministry, if he should receiue wages: that he did it for filthy lucre. *2. Cor. 11. 12. But what I doe, that will I doe, that I may cut away occasion from them which desire occasion, that they might be found like vnto vs in*
- 25 *that wherein they reioyce.* Therefore *Pauls* example is altogether impertinent, and prooues nothing. For first, he himselfe tooke wages: secondly, when as he refused it, it was vpon speciall consideration: thirdly, he did not onely permit, but also command that the Ministers should be maintained.
- 30 III. *Obiect. Mathew 10. 8 Freely ye haue received, freely giue:* therefore as it was vnlawfull for the Apostles to take any reward for their labour, so is it for preachers at this day, *Ans.* First, this text is specially to bee vnderstood of the extraordinary gift of working miracles which Christ hauing freely bestowed vpon them, hee
- 35 would haue them to vse freely, not seeking thereby to enrich themselves by exacting or taking any thing, or to winne reputation and glory among men. Secondly, if wee vnderstand it of the whole ministry, as well of preaching, as of working miracles, it is to be taken as a precept forbidding onely filthy lucre, that they should not
- 40 make merchandize of the word of God, setting it to sale, in preaching the word with purpose to benefit themselves, to feede their bellies, or to get a name and reputation in the world, which is, forbidden

bidden in other places, as *1 Tim. 3. 3. Tit. 1. 7.* but for the glory of God, the discharge of their duties, and the saluation of their hearers. Great reason there is of this precept. First, because the graces of God exhibited vnto vs in the preaching of the word, are so pretious, that they cannot be valued at any price, all earthly things a man can desire, are not to be compared to them, as the wise man saith; therefore Peter said to *Simon Magus*, *Thy money perish with thee, because thou thinkest that the gift of God may be obtained by money, Act. 8. 28.* 2. Because it is not in mans power to sel them, seeing he is not Lord ouer them, but steward and dispenser of them, *1. Cor. 4. 1.* 3. Because that which God hath giuen freely, ought not to be sold basely: seeing by that meanes, that is made saleable, which God would haue free, which kind of merchandize is vsed in the Church of Rome at this day, in their Indulgences, wherein they sell pardons for remission of sinnes, and set euen heaven it selfe to sale, for a small summe of money. Thirdly, this text must so be expounded, as that it crosse not other precepts in this commission, and that Christ be not contrary to himselfe, which he should be, if it were vnlawfull for preachers to take any thing for their paines: for in the 10. verse he saith, *The workeman is worthy of his meate*: therefore hee may receiue it: and verse 11. he enioynes them to enquire in euery towne wherethey came, who is worthy, and there abide. Therefore they were not vtterly barred from taking all necessaries, for they might take their lodging, their food, their raiment; with this they were to bee content, and more then this they might not take, though it were offered them, or forced vpon them. Thus *Elzeus* refused the gift offered him by *Naaman*, for curing his leprolie, lest Gods gifts should be made a gaine, or lest that which was giuen to set forth Gods glory immediatly, should be an occasion of satisfying mens greedy desires.

IV. Object. Math. 10. 9. The Apostles are forbidden by Christ, to possesse gold, or siluer, &c. *Answ.* We may not precisely vrge the letter of the text, for so we shall make the Apostles practise contrary to Christs precept: and so he should condemne himselfe, for he had his bagge, which *Indas* bare. He had besides his vpper garment, *John 13. 4.* and coate without seame. *John 19. 23. Luke 22. 36.* Peter had sandalls, *Act. 12.* Paul had a cloake, *2 Tim. 4.* Yea Christ afterwards saith vnto them, *But now hee that hath a bagge let him take it, and likewise a scrippe, &c.* Secondly, it was a temporary precept, giuen them in commission onely for that present; and their going without gold, siluer, a scrip, two coates, shooes, a staffe, signifies, that they should goe in haste, committing themselues wholly to the proui-

dence of God, not caring for prouision or victuals, which is signified by a scrip, by silver and gold: nor of change of raiment, signified by two coates: nor of defending themselves against violence, by the staffe.

- 5 *Use.* Here we see that there are two sorts of men in the Church, some teachers, others to be taught, called in scripture *teachers* and *hearers*. The ground of this distinction, is taken from the good pleasure of God, who hath ordained that man should be taught by man, partly because of mans weakenesse, who could not endure the glory and maiesty of God, speaking vnto him partly, that nothing might be ascribed to the excellency of the instrument, in the conuersion of men, but that God might haue all the glory of it, as the Apollle speakes, 2. Corinthians, 4 7. *We haue this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of that power, might be of*
- 10 *God, and not of man.* There is set downe, Deut. 5 verse 23. &c. a notable ground for the institution of the holy ministry by man, in stead of Gods liuely voice from heauen. And it was one of the ends which God had in giuing his law in so great maiesty, to teach vs, that it is for our good, that he doth not instruct vs with
- 20 his owne liuely voice from heauen, and speake vnto vs in his owne person: and that therefore we should be content, nay desirous rather to be taught by man. For when the people desired that they might not heare the voice of the Lord any more, but that *Moses* might speake vnto them, The Lord answered, *They haue done*
- 25 *well to say so, I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren like vnto thee, and I will put my words in his mouth, and he shall speake vnto them all that I command him.* Deut. 18. verses 17. 18. This crosseth the curiosity of those, who not contenting themselves with the word of God deliuered by the ministry of man, desire that
- 30 God would speake vnto them with his owne mouth from heauen. For the Israelites found it by experience, that it was a fearefull thing, full of horror and astonishment to heare the voice of God, therefore they desire *they may heare it no more, lest they die.* Deut. 18 verse 16. But the Anabaptists obiekt that vnder the N. T.
- 35 *all shall be taught of God.* Ioh. 6 verse 45. and *they shall not teach euery man his neighbour, and euery man his brother, saying, Know the Lord.* Therefore the publike ministry is now needlesse. *Ans.* The words must not be vnderstood simply, but *comparatiuely*, and *ynecdochically*. *Comparatiuely*, that there shall be farre greater knowledge vnder the new Testament, then was vnder the old. *Isa.* 11. 9. The Apollle saith not, that there shall be no teaching at al (for Christ hath giue some to be Prophets, others Pastors & teachers, for the work of
- the

Ier. 31. 34.

Heb. 8. 11.

the ministry, and the edification of the body of Christ. *Eph. 4. 11. 12.*) But that there shall be no neede of this kind of teaching, to catechize them in the first rudiments, as to teach them what God is. *Synecdochically*, not of perfect and absolute knowledge, for we al know but in part, *1. Cor. 13. 12.* But of initiate, or inchoate knowledge, which shall be consummate in the life to come.

In comment.
in 4. ad Ephes.

Further, vpon this distinction followeth, that hearers are not not to intermeddle with the publike duties of the ministry; for euery man is to abide in the calling wherein God hath placed him, and therein to liue contented, *1. Cor. 7.* For no man may take vnto himselfe this honour, but he that is called, as was *Aaron*, *Heb. 5. 4.* For albeit it be true which *Ambrose* writeth, that in the beginning of the preaching of the Gospel, and founding of the Church of the New Testament, all Christians did teach and baptize indifferently: yet afterward, when the Churches were founded, it was not lawfull, neither is it now. And though there be neither male nor female in Christ, but we are all one in him. *Gal. 3. 28.* namely, in receiuing of the Gospell: yet in dispensing of it, there is great difference: it being vnlawfull for a woman to preach, or publicly to teach. *I permit not a woman to teach, 1. Tim. 2. 12. Let women keepe silence in the Churches, for it is not permited vnto them to speake, 1 Cor. 14. 34. Apocalyps 2 20.* This condemneth the fantastickall opinion of the Anabaptists, that all men may speake publicly without any difference, according to the instinct of the Spirit, and measure of his gifts. 25

Againe, when *Paul* saith, *He that is taught in the word, &c. him that taught him in the word, &c.* he shewes what the duty of the Minister is, that lookes to liue by his ministry, namely. not to feede his auditory with Philosophy, or fables, or lying Legends: nor to preach Poeticall fictions, Thalmudiacall dreames, Schoolemens quiddities, Popish decrees, or humane constitutions, or to tickle the itching eares of his auditory with the fine ringing sentences of the Fathers (for what is the chaffe to the wheate?) But he must preach the word of God: for there is no word nor writing in the world besides, that hath a promise to be the power of God to saluation, *Rom. 1. 16.* able to make men wise to saluation. *2. Tim. 3. 15.* to give an inheritance amongst them that are sanctified, *Act. 20.* To be liuely and mighty in operation, sharper then any two edged sword, entring through, euen to the diuiding asunder of the soule and the Spirit, the ioynts and the marrow, and to be a discerners of the thoughts and intents of the hearts, *Hebrewes 4. 12.* and that can make the man of God absolute to euery good work. *2. Timoth. 3. 17.* but onely this word

word giuen by diuine inspiration. It beeing not onely the seede by which we are begotten and borne anew, but the foode by which we are nourished: both milke for the babe, that is, a nouice in religion, and strong meate for him that is of yeares: and therefore
 5 being perfect nourishment, the bread of life for him that is hungry, and the water of life for him that is thirstie, what needes there any more? Besides no word nor writing hath the property of fire saue onely the word of God, to dispell the darkenisse of ignorance by enlightening the minde with the sauing knowledge of the truth,
 10 and to heate, yea to enflame the affection with a zeale of Gods glory, by burning vp the corruption of nature. Againe Diuinity is the Mistris, all liberall arts, tongues, histories, &c. are but handmaids to attend vpon her: now when the mistris is speaking, it is good manners for the maide to hold her peace. To this word alone
 15 the Prophets were tyed by their commission: *What I shall command thee, that shalt thou say.* And the Apostles, *You shall teach what I haue commanded you.* Christ himselfe taught nothing but that which hee had heard and receiued of his Father. *Iob 8. 28.* Paul deliueres nothing but that which he receiued of Christ, *1. Corin. 11. 23.* and
 20 taught nothing but that which *Moses* and the Prophets had written. *Act. 26. 22.* Paul commands *Timothie* to charge the Pastours of Ephesus, *that they teach no diuers doctrine*, either for matter or manner, for substance or circumstance. Yet here we must take heede of
 25 extremities, for in some cases it is lawfull in preaching to vse Philosophy, the testimony of prophane writers, and quotations of the Fathers.

1. Tim. 1. 2.
 μη ετεροδιδασκαλει
 Nec aliud, vt
 Beza, nec aliter, vt vulg.
 editio.

I. When we haue to deale with heathen men (who will not bee so easily moued with the authority of the Scriptures) wee may conuict them by the testimony of their owne writers, as Paul
 30 did the Athenians, Epicures, and Stoikes, by the testimony of *Aratus*, *Actes 17. 28.* and the Grecians by the testimony of *Epimenides*. *Tit. 1. 12.*

II. In preaching to a mixt congregation where some are infected with Poperie, or some other heresie, and will not receiue the
 35 doctrine deliuered, nor yeeld vnto the truth, except it haue the consent of the Fathers of the Church.

III. In handling of some controuerfall point of diuinitie, shewing, that the doctrine we teach is no new doctrine, but that which was taught in the Primitiue Church, especially in speaking to the
 40 weake, who haue not as yet left their old superstition wherein they were nuzzled.

IV. To cut off the calumniationes of the malicious aduersaries, who

the ministry, and the edification of the body of Christ, *Eph. 4. 11. 12.*) But that there shall be no neede of this kind of teaching, to catechize them in the first rudiments, as to teach them what God is. *Synecdochically*, not of perfect and absolute knowledge, for we al know but in part, *1. Cor. 13. 12.* But of initiate, or inchoate knowledge, which shall be consummate in the life to come.

Further, vpon this distinction followeth, that hearers are not not to intermeddle with the publike duties of the ministry, for e- uery man is to abide in the calling wherein God hath placed him, and therein to liue contented, *1. Cor. 7.* For no man may take vnto himselfe this honour, but he that is called, as was *Aaron*, *Heb. 5. 4.* For albeit it be true which *Ambrose* writeth, that in the beginning of the preaching of the Gospel, and founding of the Church of the New Testament, all Christians did teach and baptize indiffe- rently: yet afterward, when the Churches were founded, it was not lawfull, neither is it now. And though there be neither male nor female in Christ, but we are all one in him. *Gal. 3. 28.* namely, in recei- uing of the Gospell: yet in dispensing of it, there is great diffe- rence: it being vnlawfull for a woman to preach, or publicly to teach. *I permit not a woman to teach, 1. Tim. 2. 12. Let women keepe silence in the Churches, for it is not permitted vnto them to speake, 1 Cor. 14. 34. Apocalyps 2. 20.* This condemneth the fantastickall opinion of the Anabaptists, that all men may speake publicly without any difference, according to the instinct of the Spirit, and measure of his gifts.

Againe, when *Paul* saith, *He that is taught in the word, &c. him that taught him in the word, &c.* he shewes what the duty of the Minister is, that lookes to liue by his ministry, namely, not to feede his au- ditory with Philosophy, or fables, or lying Legends: nor to preach Poeticall fictions, Thalmudiacall dreames, Schoolemens quiddi- ties, Popish decrees, or humane constitutions, or to tickle the it- ching eares of his auditory with the fine ringing sentences of the Fathers (for what is the chaffe to the wheate?) But he must preach the word of God: for there is no word nor writing in the world be- sides, that hath a promise to be the power of God to saluation, *Rom. 1. 16.* able to make men wise to saluation. *2. Tim. 3. 15.* to giue an inheri- tance amongst them that are sanctified, *Act. 20.* To be lively and mighty in operation, sharper then any two edged sword, entring through, euen to the diuiding asunder of the soule and the Spirit, the ioynts and the marrow, and to be a discerners of the thoughts and intents of the hearts, *Hebrewes 4. 12.* and that can make the man of God absolute to euery good work. *2. Timoth. 3. 17.* but onely this word

word giuen by diuine inspiration. It beeing not onely the seede by which we are begotten and borne anew, but the foode by which we are nourished: both milke for the babe, that is, a nouice in religion, and strong meate for him that is of yeares: and therefore being perfect nourishment, the bread of life for him that is hungry, and the water of life for him that is thirstily, what needes there any more? Besides no word nor writing hath the property of fire saue onely the word of God, to dispell the darkeneise of ignorance by enlightening the minde with the sauing knowledge of the truth, and to heate, yea to enflame the affection with a zeale of Gods glory, by burning vp the corruption of nature. Againe Diuinity is the Mistris, all liberall arts, tongues, histories, &c. are but hand-maids to attend vpon her: now when the mistris is speaking, it is good manners for the maide to hold her peace. To this word alone the Prophets were tyed by their commission: *What I shall command thee, that shalt thou say.* And the Apostles, *You shall teach what I haue commanded you.* Christ himselfe taught nothing but that which hee had heard and receiued of his Father. *Iob 8. 28.* Paul deliueres nothing but that which he receiued of Christ, *1. Corin. 11. 23.* and taught nothing but that which *Moses* and the Prophets had written. *Act. 16. 22.* Paul commands *Timothie* to charge the Pastours of Ephesus, *that they teach no diuers doctrine*, either for matter or manner, for substance or circumstance. Yet here we must take heede of extremities, for in some cases it is lawfull in preaching to vse Philosophy, the testimony of prophane writers, and quotations of the Fathers.

1. Tim. I. 2.
μη ετεροδιδασκαλει
Nec aliud, vt
Beza, nec aliter, vt vulg.
editio.

I. When we haue to deale with heathen men (who will not bee so easily mooued with the authority of the Scriptures) wee may conuict them by the testimony of their owne writers, as Paul did the Athenians, Epicures, and Stoikes, by the testimony of *Aratus*, *Actes 17. 28.* and the Grecians by the testimony of *Epimenides*. *Tit. 1. 12.*

II. In preaching to a mixt congregation, where some are infected with Poperie, or some other heresie, and will not receiue the doctrine deliuered, nor yeeld vnto the truth, except it haue the consent of the Fathers of the Church.

III. In handling of some controuerfall point of diuinitie, shewing, that the doctrine we teach is no new doctrine, but that which was taught in the Primitiue Church, especially in speaking to the weake, who haue not as yet left their old superstition wherein they were nuzzled.

IV. To cut off the calumniationes of the malicious aduersaries, who

who must needs have their mouthes stopped by some other means then by the Scriptures.

V. In the necessary unfolding of the meaning of certaine places of Scripture, which without Philosophy cannot be conceiued. In such a case we may vse humanity in descending to the reach and capacitie of the auditory, and so teach heauenly things, by earthly things, as our Sauiour Christ taught regeneration by the similitude of the wind, *Iob. 3.* Yet all these must be vsed, first, sparingly, secondly, when there is iust cause, thirdly, without ostentation, fourthly, deliuering nothing to the people, the ground whereof it is not in the word.

This shewes, that the maine scope of the ministry, is, to preach the word purely, and to apply it powerfully to the consciences of men: and it condemnes all deceitfull handling of the word, and all huckster like dealing, in mingling wine and water together, wheat and chaffe, gold and drosse, in peruerting it with aguish and sottish conceits; in wresting it with allegories, tropologies, and anagogies, & in wringing the text til they make it bleede, and so (as an auncient writer saith) presse the two dugges of the Scriptures, the old and new Testament, that in stead of milk they drinke nothing but blood. This teacheth the hearers likewise to rest contented with the bare word, without hungring after new doctrines, as the Athenians after newes, or beeing drawne away from the simplicity that is in Christ, by the subtilty of seducers; or by deuices and quiddities of mans braine. Let those therefore which loth *Manna*, and long for Quails, remember that if God giue them their desire, hee will also giue them their desert. Let them take heede lest he punish them with a famine, not of bread, nor a thirst of water, but of hearing the word. *Amos. 8. 11.* And let those that haue *itching eares*, in heaping vp to theselues a multitude of teachers, take heede also that they haue not *tingling eares*, when they shall heare of the iudgements of God for the contempt of his word.

Further, whereas *Paul* saith; *He that teacheth is to be maintained:* it is a good *Item* for all idle drones that will not labour, and all dumme dogges that cannot barke, they may not expect the maintenance which is due vnto the Ministers: for it is generally true of all men, and much more true of the Minister; that *he which will not labour, must not eate.* And great reason it is that he which looketh for his hire, should doe his worke: he that would liue of the sacrifice, should minister at the altar: he that lookes to be fed with corporal bread, should breake vnto his hearers the bread of life: hee that would reape carnall things, should sow spirituall things, he that would

Volusian e-
pist ad Ni-
chol c.
Scripturarum
mamillas
dum durius
prefferunt,
sanguinem
pro lacte
biberunt.

2. Tim. 4. 3.

2. Sam. 3. 11.

2. Thef. 3. 10.

1. Cor. 5.

would not haue his mouth muzled, should thresh out the corne: he that would drinke of the wine, should plant the grape: hee that lookes for milke, should feede the flocke: that is, hee that will liue of the Gospel, should teach the Gospel. It is a maxime not only
 5 of the *Canon law*, but grounded vnto the law of nature, that *beneficium postulat officium*, a benefite requireth a duty; or more plainely, a *benefice requireth an office*, and diligence in the office. They therefore that care not so much for the feeding of the sheepe, as for the feeding of themselues, and feare not so much the losse of the flocke, as
 10 the losse of the fleece, doe not onely violate the law of God, but euen the law of nations, and the law of nature.

Againe hence I gather, that those that labour in the word and doctrine, may lawfully take wages, albeit they haue sufficient of
 15 their owne to maintainethemselues: it is the very equitie of this text. For if they that are instructed in the word, are to make those that instructed them, partakers of their goods: then it is lawful for them which instruct and teach, to receiue something in recompence of their labour, seeing that *the labourer is worthy of his wages*. Yet this one caueat must be remembred, that if receiuing of wages
 20 be a hinderance to the Gospell (as it would haue beene in *Paul*) it is not lawfull: for we may not so vse our libertie, as that wee thereby hinder the free course of the Gospell.

We may here further perceiue the greate want of deuotion, which is in most men of these daies. For as the cry of the poore in
 25 the streetes, and at our doores, is an argument that there is no mercie, no bowels of pittie and compassion: So, in that there are so many needy poore wandring Leuites, which would gladly serue for a morsell of bread, or a sute of raiment, it is a pregnant prooffe there is very small deuotion in men for the maintenance of religi-
 30 on; especially in those which are so straight laced, and short sleeued in bellowing any thing for the good of the Ministry, and yet in keeping of hounds and hawkes, and worse matters, in maintaining players, iesters, fooles, and such like, are very lauish and profuse, to their great cost. This hath beene the practise of the world, and the
 35 contemptible estate of the Ministerie in former times. Foure hundred false Prophets were richly provided for at *Iezabels* table, 1. *King.* 18. 19. whereas the true Prophets of God in the meane time were faine to hide their heads, hauing scarce bread and water, and that not without danger. Well, her practise shall condemne a
 40 number of professors; nay, our forefathers zeale and forwardnes, (notwithstanding they liued in blindness) shall condemne our coldnesse, in this behalfe: what speake I of our forefathers? euen

the stones in the ruinated Abbeyes, and other religious houses, shall rise vp in iudgement against vs: for those places could maintaine thirtie or fourtie idle bellies, which did nothing but nuzzle men in superstitious idolatrie. whereas now the same place will not competently maintaine one or two to instruct them in the way to eternall life. And no maruel: for we take from the Church, as fast 5 as they gaue it. In old time they were wont to say, *What shal we giue the man of God?* 1. Sam. 9. but now with the sacrilegious churchrobbers, they say, *Come and let vs take the houses of God in possession.* Psal. 83. 32. The Iewes were exceeding forward and liberall in their contribution to the Tabernacle; some brought gold, others siluer, 10 silke, pretious stones; the meaner sort, rams skins, goats haire, &c. so that more then enough was offered by them, in such sort that *Moses* was forced to cause a proclamation to be made to stay the people from offering, *Exodus* 36. 5. 6. This their example in beeing so forward to contribute to the materiall temple, shall 15 condemne our backwardnesse in conferring so little to the Ministers, who are the liuing temples of God, and to the ministerie which is in the place of the altar: for looke by how much God hath diminished the cost of the altar, and the charges of the 20 ceremoniall worship vnder the old Testament, by so much more doth he require the Ministry to be maintained, and spirituall worship furthered in the New.

Lastly, if they that doe not put too their helping hand to vp- hold the Ministerie, are to be condemned; what condemnation 25 trow we then belongs to sacrilegious persons that rob the Church of her reuenues, and deuoure holy things?

7. *Be not deceiued, God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he reape.*

Here the Apostle preuenteth sundry secret obiections against the former precept, verse 6. For the Galatians might pleade for 30 goods: theselues in this maner. Whereas thou enioynest vs to make for, those which instructed vs in the word, partakers of al our alas, we cannot doe it. It is vnreasonable that thou exactest of vs: as for some of vs, we haue a great family and charge to looke vnto, wife and children to prouide for: and for them we must prouide, 35 otherwise wee denie the faith, and are worse then infidels, 1. Tim. 5. 8. others are poore and needy, fitter a great deale to receive then to giue: and those that can giue are not so to giue, that others may be eased, and they themselues pinched, 2. Corin. 8. 13. And as for the 40 Ministers themselves, many of them are couetous and insatiable, and therefore it is euill spent that is bestowed vpon them: some of them

them neede, not, and therefore we neede not to giue: and why doe not those that are needy, follow *Pauls* example, who laboured with his hands and got his liuing by making of tents, because hee would not be chargeable vnto any? or why doe they not leade a single life (as in former times they did) that so they may bee lesse burdensome to the Church, and more beneficial to their brethren? Besides all this, God hath promised, he will be the portion and inheritance of the Leuites; and therefore we neede not be so hastie to share with them in all our goods.

10 To these and all other vaine and friuolous excuses of the same kinde, made by worldlings of corrupted minds, the Apostle answereth in these words, *Be not deceiued, God is not mocked*; as if he should say, I know right well, you are very cunning in seeking out shifts and pretending reasons to excuse your faults, and to exempt your
15 selues from the performance of the former duty, and so to couer the cursed couetousneise of your hearts with colourable excuses: But, be not deceiued brethren, they are but figge leaues, you doe but dance in a nette, you cannot bleare the allseeing eyes of God: howsoeuer these reasons may perswade you, and goe for currant
20 with men, yet they are but counterfeite in Gods estimate (with whom you haue to deale,) who is not mocked, nor can be deceiued, neither will be deluded with such vaine excuses: therefore take heede lest in going about to deceiue them, you deceiue your selues: for looke how you deale with them, God will deale with
25 you: and with what measure you mete vnto them, the same he will measure to you again; for as you sowe, so shall you reape. So that in these wordes the Apostle doth summarily comprise these three things. First, a disswasion from this their vaine reasoning, and wicked practise, laide downe by way of preuention, *Be not deceiued*. Secondly
30 a reason of the dehortation, shewing that these their excuses are but friuolous and vaine, *God is not mocked*. Thirdly, a confirmation or prooue of his former reason, for whatsoeuer a man soweth, that shall hee reape. The disswasion is laide downe in these words, *Be not deceiued*. The like phrase of speech we haue in sundry other places, as in that aduertisement which *Hezekiah* giueth the Leuites, 2. *Chro.* 29. 11. Now my sonnes be not deceiued: And *Paul* the Corinthians. 1. *Cor.* 6. 9. *Be not deceiued; neither fornicators, &c.* 1. *Cor.* 15. 33. *Be not deceiued, euill speeches corrupt good manners.* Now men erre and are deceiued fundry waies, both in diuine and humane things (which ap-
40 pertaine not to this place.) Touching the deceit here mentioned, weare to know that a man may be deceiued, and that by himselfe, two wayes. First, through ignorance, in iudging that to be sinne

Mal. 2. 17.

which is a sinne, as when a man is perswaded that God is to bee worshipped in an image: that when hee persecutes the Saints of God, he doth God good seruice. Secondly, when men are so wickedly wilfull, that they wittingly deceiue themselues, in thinking they can deceiue God himselfe, and so cunningly handle the matter, that he shall not know their words, nor see their workes, nor vnderstand their thoughts: that whether they doe good or euill, giue to the Ministerie, or not; liue according to the flesh, or according to the spirit, it is all one, seeing he considereth it not, and so promise to themselues impunitie, though they sinne willingly, as *Ene* did in putting a peradventure, where Gods threat was peremptorie. Both these sorts of deceit are here vnderstood, specially the latter.

Vse. Hence we may obserue the deceitfulnesse of sinne, which maketh men thinke all is well with them, and that there is no danger, &c. when the case is farre otherwise. This shewes that the heart of man is deceitfull aboue measure (as the Prophet saith) *who can finde it out?* or who can sound the depth of the deceit of his owne heart? or who knowes the infinite windings and turnings which are in this intricate Labyrinth? Now this commeth to passe, partly by reason of originall corruption, which the Apostle saith is deceitfull, *Heb. 3. 13. Take heede lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sinne:* partly, by reason of long custome in sinne, whereby the heart is inured to deceit, *Pal. 32. 2. Blessed is the man—in whose spirit there is no guile.* For from this double ground it cometh to passe, that men are so wittie in defrauding the Ministers of their due, in cutting them short of their allowance, in embezzeling and purloining from them what they can: and so ingenious in inuventing probable reasons, and plausible arguments, to deceiue themselues withall, in accounting all to be gained that is thus gotten. This teacheth vs, first of all, to pray instantly that God would open our eyes that wee may see our hidden corruptions, and that he would annoint them with the eyesalue of his Spirit, that we may clearly see, and rightly discern of things that differ, considering that sinne doth often apparell it selfe with the cloake of vertue. Secondly, wee are to suspect our selues of our secret sinnes, and to aggrauate our knowne sinnes by all circumstances, seeing wee may so easily deceiue our selues, in flattering our selues to be cleare of this or that sinne: or at least not to be so grievous sinners as in truth we are. Thirdly, that it is the dutie of the Minister to warne the people to take heede that they be not deceived, as *Paul* doth *Eph. 5. 6. Let no mā deceiue you with vain words; for, for such things*

things commeth the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience.

Againe hence I gather, that in the prime of the Church, in the Apostles daies, when the Church of the New Testament was but in founding, the Ministry was in contempt: and (as it may appeare
5 out of other places) the Ministers were not onely neglected, or contemned, but reuiled, persecuted, accounted as the filth of the world, and the offskouring of all things, 1. Cor. 4. 13. or where they were better intreated, they were but abused, scorned, reputed brain-sicke fellows: as the Prophet was, 2. King. 9. 11. and Paul, Act. 26.
10 24. This hath beene, and is the account which the world maketh of the Ministers of God, which must bee so farre from discouraging vs, that it should minister rather matter of ioy vnto vs, in that we are conformable by this meanes to Christ our head, who was not onely neglected of all, not hauing where to rest his head,
15 Luk. 9. 58. but laughed to skorne, accounted a pot-companion, a drunkard, and a glutton, a forcerer, one that had a diuell, and was madde, Ioh. 10. 20. For, if we suffer with him, we shall be glorified with him. Rom. 8. 17.

Thus much of the dehortation: the reason followes to bee considered in the second place, in these words, *God is not mocked*, where the Apostle shewes that their excuses as but in vaine, because God is not mocked, nor will be deluded with such pretences.

First here the Apostles dealing is worthy to be obserued, in that, reproouing them which neglected their duty to the Ministers
25 of the word, he bringeth in God himselfe taking the matter into his owne hand, making the Ministers quarrell, his own quarrell: & this he doth, to the end we might see whom we haue to deale withall, & whom we doe abuse, when we abuse the Ministers of the word; to wit, that we abuse not man, but God. For albeit it bee true
30 of all and euery sinne, which *Dauid* confesseth of his owne particular murther and adultery, that it is *against God*, yea *against him alone*, Psal. 51. 4. yet in these and such like cases which tend to the vndermining of his Church, and the decay of his religion & worship, hee taketh himselfe more directly aimed at, & more nearly
35 touched. When the Israelites refused to haue *Samuel* and his sons to rule ouer them, the Lord saith, *They haue not cast thee away, but they haue cast me away, that I should not reigne ouer them*, 1. Sam. 8. 7. When the Leuites were defrauded of their due, the Lord by his Prophet telleth the people, *Ye haue spoiled me in tithes and offerings*.
40 *Mal. 3. 8.* So, in this place, when the Galatians did wrongfully with hold and keepe backe that competent allowance, that was due to their teachers, he telleth the that it was a sin tending against God,

who is not, nor will not, nor cannot be mocked: for what wrong
 fouer is done to the messenger that is sent, the same is done to his
 Lord that sent him: and whatsoeuer disgrace or indiguitie is of-
 fered an Embassadour, the same redounds to the Prince, whose
 Embassadour he is. This ought to be a *Caneat vnto vs*, to take
 heede how wee contemne or neglect the Ministers of God, seeing
 whatsoeuer wrong is done them, Christ takes it as done to him-
 selfe, *Mat. 25. 45. Act 9. 4.* This lets vs see the hainous finnes of
 many that professe the Gospel, specially in this kind, who, now at
 this day (if euer) are ingenious in defrauding, and elcquent in de-
 claiming against the Ministers of the word: in laughing them to
 skorne, as they did our Sauour Christ, *Mark. 5. 40.* and abusing
 them in tearmes and taunts, calling them bald priestis, as young
 children called *Elizeus balde pate*, (no doubt following the
 example of their parents, of whome they learned it) *Ascend thou*
balde pate, ascend thou bald pate, *2. King. 2. 23.* That they are too full of
 the spirit, as they derided the Apostles, in saying, *they were full of*
new wine, *Act. 2. verse 13.* In making them their table talke, ma-
 king songs of them, as the drunkards did of *Dauid*, and *Ieremie*.
 In scourging them with the whippe of the tongue, as the Stoicks
 called *Paul* a babbler, *Act. 17 verse 18.* and *Festus* a madde man,
Act. 26. Now in that they thus scornefully abuse his Ministers,
 and so indignely, and disdainfully intreate his messengers, and
 Embassadours; what doe they els but abuse Christ Iesus him-
 selfe, and through their sides, wound and cracifie him againe?
 When *Sanachereb* King of *Ashur* reuiled *Ierusalem* and *Hezekiah*
 the King: what sayes the Lord? *O virgin daughter of Sion, he hath*
dispised thee, and laughed thee to skorne: O daughter of Ierusalem, hee
hath shaken his head at thee. Whom hast thou railed on, and blasphemed?
and against whom hast thou exalted thy voice, and lifted up thine eyes on
high: euen against the holy one of Israel. *Esay, 37. v. 22, 23.*

The vse. Hence we learne, that God hath an exact knowledge
 of all our actions, and cannot be deluded, *Prou 15. 11.* Hell and de-
 struction are before him, how much more, &c, *Psal. 11. 4.* His eyes
 consider, his eie liddes trie the children of men. *Psal. 139 v. 2.* Hee
 knowes our thoughtes long before they be. *Hebr. 4. 12.* All things are
 naked and bare in his sight. Reason it selfe shewes, that he which
 made the eie, cannot but see, hee that made the heart and minde,
 cannot but vnderstand the frame and motion thereof, *Psal. 94. vers.*
2. 10 &c.

II. This shewes the madnesse of those which say, God heareth
 not, seeth not, vnderstandeth not, or which say in ther hearts,
 how

How should he heare? is there knowledge in the most high? or can he see through the thicke cloud?

III. Hence we are taught in our praiers, to powre forth our hearts before the Lord, without concealing so much as the least sinne, seeing we may easily delude men, and deceiue our selues, but God we cannot deceiue.

IV. It ought to be a bridle to vs to curbe and keepe in our corruptions, considering his eies pierce the darkenisse, the most secret and hidden places, yea euen the secret closets and cabinets of our hearts.

Thus much of the reason: I prooceed to the confirmation or prooffe of his reason, in these words, *For whatsoever a man soweth, that shall hee also reape.* Where the Apostle prooues, that God will not be mocked with vaine excuses; seeing hee will render to euery man, according to his workes, which is signified by this allegoricall speech of *sowing and reaping* so often vsed in Scripture, as 1. Cor. 9. 11. 2. Corin. 9. 6. in which places, labour and cost in doing good, and beeing beneficiall, specially to the Ministers of the word, is compared to *seede*; the workers to *seedsmen*; the Ministers to whome this benefit is conferred, to *the tilled ground*: the gaine that accrewes vnto them thereby, to the harvest, where-with God will reward them, and that according to their workes, in the generall day of retribution. This metaphor of sowing, doth elswhere signifie all the morall actions of a mans life, whether they be good or euill. Of good actions Salomon saith, *he that soweth righteousness, hath a sure recompence*, Prouerbs 11. 18. Of euill actions hee saith, *hee that soweth iniquitie, shall reape affliction*. Prouerbs, 22. 8. But here Paul restraines it, to those good workes of liberalitie, which are performed in the maintenance of the ministerie. And he calleth that which is bestowed vpon the Ministers of the word, *seede*, which beeing sowne, doth recompence the cost, 30. sixty, an hundred fould: that so they might not think their labour lost, nor their cost bestowed in vaine, seeing they were to receiue that which they laid forth, with advantage.

But here it may be said, This prouerbiall sentence is not alwaies true: for sometime men sowe much, and gather but little. Dent. 28. 30. Agg. 1. 6. nay sometime they sowe, and reape not. Mich. 6. 15. Again experience shewes, that, that which is sowne, may degenerate into another kind. Ans. It is not necessary that prouerbiall sentences should be true at all times, and in euery particular: if they be true for the most part, or in that for which they are brought, it is sufficient, as that, *Marth. 23. 57. A Prophet is not accepted in his owne*

countrie, is for the most part true, though not alwaies. So, whatsoeuer a man soweth, the same commonly, and vsually, he doth reape.

But it will be said, how can a man reape that which he soweth? seeing that Christ affirmeth it to be a true saying, that one soweth, and another reapeth? *Iohn 4. 37. Ans.* In that one soweth, and another reapeth, it is not to be imputed to nature, but to the speciall providence of God: the words are to be vnderstood of the prophets, who were the seedes men, in sowing the seedes of the Gospell; and of the Apostles, who were the reapers, whose plaine and powerfull preaching of the Gospell, did as farre exceed that of the prophets as the haruest doth the seede time. Thus the time vnder the law, is resembled to childhood, and infancie, that vnder the Gospell, to mans estate. *Gal. 4. 1. &c.* Againe, it may be said the husbandman soweth not the bodie that shall be, *1. Cor. 15. 27.* therefore he reapeth not that which he sowed. *Ans.* He reapeth not the same indiuidually, but yet the same speciall bodie. It may further be doubted of the truth of that which is signified by this prouerbiall sentence, namely, whether euery man shall receiue according to his workes, for so euery man should be condemned. To which I answer, that it is not vniuersally true, for if the righteous commit iniquity all his righteousness shall be no more remembred: and, if a wicked man turne from his sinne, none of his sinnes that he hath committed shall be mentioned vnto him. *Ezecke. 33. 13. 16.* It must therefore be restrained thus, He that doth wickedly, and perseuereth therein to the end: He that doth well, and continueth in his well doing, shall receiue according to his workes; the seedes of his former sinnes, shall not grow vp to the haruest of condemnation. For it is the priuiledge, yea the hapinesse of a righteous man, so to haue his sinnes couered with the robes of Christ his righteouines, as that they shall neuer be vncovered to his shame. *Psal. 32. Esay, 43. 25* Againe, it may be hence prooued; in that sanctification in death, is perfected, originall corruption beeing vtterly abolished: and therefore though the booke of a regenerate mans conscience be opened at the day of iudgement, yet nothing shall be found in it, but his good workes, which follow him till the resurrection. *Apoc. 14. 13.* Besides this, in the last sentence pronounced by our Saviour Christ, *Matth. 25.* only their good workes are mentioned: *Come ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdome prepared for you, for I was hungrie, and ye fedde me, &c.* their sinnes and imperfections, not so much as once named, but concealed and passed over.

II. Obiect. It may be said, that neither the good nor the badde doe reape that which they haue sowne: the goodly for the seedes of

of good workes reape nothing but affliction: the wicked for the cursed seedes of damnable life, comfort and contentation. To which I answer, that it is not true, if we restraine it to the tearme of this life; for so all men reape not, as they haue sowne: but it is undoubtedly true of the life to come: for the iustice of God requires that all should be rewarded according to their workes. *Romaines 2.* Hence therefore wee may gather, that seeing men must reape as they sowe, and yet doe not reape, nor receiue their reward in this life: that there is another life after this, in which God will giue to euery one as his worke shall be, and therefore there shall be a iudgment. And because the bodie was partaker with the soule either in doing good or euill, it is iust likewise it should be partaker either of misery, or felicity: and therefore there shall be a resurrection.

III. *Obiect.* The whore of *Babylon* must be rewarded double. *15 Apoc. 18.6. In the cuppethat shee hath filled to you, fill her the double. And the Saints pray thus to God, Render to our neighbour: seven fold into their bosome. Psalme 79. 12.* Therefore it seemeth that some men shall not bee iudged according to their workes, because they are punished aboue their deserts. *Answer.* Shee is rewarded double, yet *20 not aboue, but according to her deserts; giue her double according to her workes, v. 6.* The meaning is not, that she should be punished twice as much as shee had deserued, (for it is the law of God that the malefactor should be beaten with a certen number of stripes, not aboue, but according to his trespassse. *Dent. 25. 2.*) but that she should *25 be tormented, twise as much as she had tormented others.* Againe, these phrases and formes of speech of rewarding double, or sevenfold, signifie, that God will pay wicked men home to the full (a definite number beeing put for an indefinite) as *Gen. 4. 15. Doublesse, who soeuer slaieth Cain shall be punished seven fold.* The meaning is not, that the murderer of Cain should bee punished seven fold more then *30 he was punished, for killing his brother Abel,* (for it shold not haue beene so great a sinne for a man to haue killed him, as it was for him to kill his brother) but that hee should bee most severely and grievously punished.

III. *Obiect.* Infants haue no workes wherby they may be iudged, seeing they doe neither good nor euil, as the Scripture speaketh of *Iacob* and *Esaü*, *Rom. 9. 11.* Therefore all shall not be iudged according to workes. *Ans.* These phrases of Scripture, *As a man sowes so shall he reape: euery one shall receiue according to his workes, &c.* *40 are not to be extended to al, but must be restrained to such as haue workes, and knowledge to discern e betwixt good and euill, which infants haue not.* For besides that they are destitute of workes, they

they also want the vse of reason : and therefore they shall not be iudged by the booke of conscience, but by the booke of life. For to lay, as *Hugo de S. viñt.* doth, vpon the *Rom. quest. 59.* that they shall be condemned for the sinnes which their parents committed in their conception and natiuity, as though they themselues had actually committed them, is contrary to that *Ezek. 18. 20. the Son shall not beare the iniquitie of the father.*

V. Obiect. But how shall they be pronounced iust, who beeing come to yeares of discretion, yet haue no good workes, as *Lazarus* and the theefe vpon the crosse, who liuing leudly all his life long, was conuerted at the last gaspe? *Ans.* That *Lazarus* had no good workes, whereby he might be declared iust, it cannot be proued: the contrary rather may be gathered out of Scripture: and that the good theefe had no good works, it is flat against the text, *Luk. 23. 40. 41.* where he maketh a notable confession of Christ, and rebuketh his fellow, labouring to bring him to the faith, which was a memorable fact of Christian charity. Secondly, though it were graunted that they had no good works in action, yet they were full of good workes in affection, and by these they were to be iudged, God accepting in his children the wil for the deed. *Lazarus* by reason of his extreame pouerty, and the theefe by reason of the shortnes of time which he had to liue in the world, could not be plentifull in good workes, thereby to give sufficient testimonie of their vnfaigned faith: yet God accepteth a man according to that which he hath, and not according to that which he hath not, accepting the will for the deede, as he accepted the willingnes of *Abraham* to sacrifice his sonne, as though he had sacrificed him indeede. *Gen. 22.*

VI. Obiect. God doth not proportionate the reward to the work, because he doth reward workes which are finite and temporall, with infinite and eternall punishment. *Ans.* Sinne beeing considered in respect of the act, as it is a transient action, is finite. But in a threefold consideration, it is infinite. First, in respect of the obiect against whom it is committed: for beeing the offence of an infinite Maiesty, it doth deserue infinite punishment: for if he that clippes the Kings coyne, or defaceth the Kings armes, or counterfaiteth the broad seale of England, or the Princes priuy seale, ought to die as a traytour, because this disgrace tendeth to the person of the Prince: much more ought he that violates the law of God, die the first and second death, seeing the breach thereof doth not only tend to the defacing of his owne image in vs, but to the person of God himselfe, who in euery sinne is contemned, and dishonoured. Secondly,

condly, sin is infinite in respect of the subiect. For seeing that the soule is immortall, and that the guilt of sin and the blot together, doe staine the soule, as the crimson or skarlet die the filke or the wooll, and can no more be seuered from the soule, then spots from the Leopard: it remaineth that sinne is infinite in durance, and so deserueth eternall punishment. Thirdly, it is infinite in respect of the mind, desire, & intent of the sinner, whose desire is still to walk on in his sins, and except God should cut off the line of his life, neuer to giue ouer sinning, but to runne on *in infinitum*, committing
 10 of sinne euen with greedines.

Thus hauing the meaning of the words, let vs come to the doctrine and vse, There be two principall reasons which hinder men from being beneficiall and liberall to the Ministry. The first is, because they thinke all his lost that is bestowed that way. The second is, because they are afraid lest themselves should want. To both which the Apostle makes answer in this place, comparing our beneficence in the vpholding, maintaining, countenancing of the Ministry to seed, to teach vs that as the husbandman doth sow his corne in the ground, neuer fearing the losse thereof, but hoping for
 20 a greater increase: not doubting his owne want, but assuring himselfe of greater plenty. So we in sowing the seeds of good workes, must neuer dreame of losse or cost, considering the more we sow, the more we shall reape: we must neuer feare want, seeing we shall receiue an hundred fold. *Mark, 10. 30.* If men could be perswaded
 25 of this, that the time of this life is the seed time; that the last iudgment is the haruest; & that as certainly as the husbandman which sowes his seed lookes for increase, so we for our good workes, a recompence to the full; O how fruitfull should we be, how plentifull, how full of good workes? But the cursed roote of infidelity, which
 30 is in euery man by nature, doth dry vp the sap of all Gods graces in vs. and make vs either bad or barren trees, either to bring forth sowre fruits of sinne, or no fruit at all, but to become vnprofitable both to our selues and others. For the reason why men are so cold in their liberality, so fruitlesse, so vnprofitable, is, because they doe
 35 not beleue the promises of God, that he is true of his word, that whatsoeuer they giue to the poore, or the Ministers of his word, they lend vnto the Lord, and whatsoeuer they lay out, the Lord will restore to them againe. *Provs, 19. 17* For if they were as well perswaded of a recompence at the last day, as the husbandman is of a haruest, they
 40 would be more frequent in duties of charity, and more plentifull in good workes, then commonly they be.

Further let it be obserued, that though these words be but generally

rally expounded in the verse following, where the Apostle saith, *He that soweth to the flesh, shall of the flesh reape corruption: he that soweth to the spirit, shall of the spirit reape life euerlasting*: yet are they more particularly and distinctly set downe elsewhere in Scripture: as 2. Cor. 9. 6. *He that soweth sparingly shall reape sparingly, and he that soweth liberally shall reape liberally*: that is, the harvest shall not onely be answerable to the seed, and the reward to the worke, but greater or lesse according to the quantity, and quality of the worke. For euery man shall receiue his reward according to his proper labour. 1. Cor. 3. 8. For the more the husbandman sowes, the more he doth vsually reape (except God blow vpon it, in curling the land, as he did the Israelites who sowed much and gathered little) and the lesse he sowes the lesse shall his croppe be. Euen so, the more plentifull we are in sowing the seeds of good works, the more we shal reape: and the more sparing we are, the lesse shall our harvest be. Hence I gather: First, 15 that there are seuerall degrees of punishments in Hell, according to the greatnes and smalnes of sinnes: for some sinnes are but as moles, others as beames, *Matth. 7. 4.* some as gnats, others as camels, *Matth. 23. 24.* and therefore some shall be beaten with many stripes, some with few, and it shall be ealier for them of Sodom 20 and Gomorrha at the day of iudgement, then for them of Capernaum. Secondly, that there are sundry degrees of glory & felicity in heauen, proportionall to mens works: for all men doe not sow alike, neither are their workes equall, but haue sundry degrees of goodnes in them, and therefore there are answerable degrees of glory 25 wherewith they are to be crowned This truth is taught elswhere more plainly, as *Dan. 12. 3.* *They that be wise shall shine as the brightnesse of the firmament: and they that turne many to righteousness, shall shine as the starres for euermore.* Therefore as there is a greater brightnes in the star, then in the firmament; so there shall be greater glory 30 in one then in an other. 1. Cor. 3. 8. *Euery man shal receiue his reward, according to his owne labour,* therefore seeing all mens labours are not alike, their reward shall not be alike. This is further confirmed by the parable of the talents, *Luk. 19.* where the master of the seruants doth proportionate his wages to their worke, making him that 35 had gained with his talent, five talents, ruler ouer five cities; him that had gained ten, ruler ouer ten. And wheras it may be said, that all the labourers in the vineyard, receiued an equall reward, namely a penny; as well as those that wrought but an houre, as those that bare the burden and heate of the day. I answer, it is true of essentiall glory, all the elect shall haue equall glory: but it is not true 40 of accidental glory, wherein all shall not be equall. Take sundry vessels

sels of diuerse bignesse, and cast them into the sea, all will be filled with water, though some receiue a greater quantity, others a lesse: So, all shall haue fulnesse of glory; that is, the same *essentiall* glory: though in respect of *accidental* glory, some shall haue more, 5 and some lesse. Secondly, the scope of the parable is not to shewe the equality of glory, in the world to come; but that they which are first called, ought not to insult ouer their brethre, which are not as yet called, seeing they may be preferred before them, or (at the least) made equall with them. It remaineth therefore for a 10 conclusion, that there shall be degrees of glory in heaven, as there are degrees of torment in hell, and that as mens labours differ in goodnes, so their rewards shall be different in greatnes. Now mens labours differ in goodnesse, three waies; in the *kind*, in the *quantity*, and in the *quality*. In the *kind*, in that some are more noble in their 15 kind, some more base; as to cure the maladies of the soule is a more excellent worke in it kinde, then to cure the diseases of the body: & therefore it hath a greater degree of glory promised. *Dan. 12. 3. They that turne many to righteousnes shall shine as the stars for euermore.* In the *quality* or manner, in that some are done with greater loue, 20 some with lesse: some with greater zeale, some with lesse: some with greater care & conscience to discharge our duties, some with lesse. Now, those that are performed with greater loue, zeale, care, and conscience, shall receiue a greater reward: those that are done with 25 lesse, a lesser: for so is the promise, *Every man shall receiue his wages, according to his own labour. 1. Cor. 3. 8.* In the *quantity*, in that some labour but an houre, others beare the burden and heate of the day, and so according to the greatnes or smalnes of their paines, they shal haue a greater or lesser reward. He that had so carefully employed his ta- 30 lent, that he gained with it ten others, was made ruler ouer tenne cities: and he that had taken lesse paines, and gained but fise, was made ruler but ouer fise, that is, had his reward; yet a lesse reward futable to his worke.

35 Further, as God doth reward the good workes of his seruants, according to the *kind*, the *quantity*, and *quality*: so he rewardeth sinnes not onely according to their degree (as we haue heard) but also in the same manner, according to the nature & quality of the sinne. 2. *Theff. 1. 16. It is a iust thing with God to recompence tribulation to them that trouble you.* Thus he threatneth, that to the 40 froward he will shew himselfe froward. *Psal. 18. 26. And, he that sheddeth mans blood, by man shall his blood be shedd. Gen. 9. 6. And, all that take the sword, shall perishe by the sword, Matth. 26. 92. And, he that stoppeth his eares at the cry of the poore, shall cry vnto the Lord,*

and he will not heare him. *Pro* 21. 13. And, iudgment merciesse shall be to him that shewes no mercy. *Iam*. 2. 13. And, Woe be to thee that spoilest, and wast not spoiled, and doest wickedly, and they did not wickedly against thee: for when thou shalt cease to spoile, thou shalt be spoiled: and when thou shalt make an end of doing wickedly, they shall doe wickedly against thee. *Esa*. 32. 5
 1. For with what iudgement men iudge, they shall be iudged, and with what measure they mete, it shall be measured to them againe. *Matth*. 7. 2. Neither doth God barely threaten this, but he doth it in deede; in handling sinners in their kind. *Gen*. 2. 17. Because thou hast eaten of the tree, cursed is the earth for thy sake, in sorrow shalt thou eate of it all the daies of thy life. Thus God punished the filthy Sodomites in their kinde, in that, for their burning lust he rained upon them fire and brimstone from heauen. *Gen*. 19. 24. Nadab and Abihu censing with strange fire, were consumed with fire from heauen. *Leuit*. 10. 1, 2. The like may be said of Adonibezek, for as he caused seuentie Kings hauing the thumbs of their hands, & of their feet cut off, to gather crummes vnder his table, so the Lord rewarded him. *Iud*. 1. 7. As Agassword made women childelesse, so his mother was made childelesse among other women, beeing hewen in peeces before the Lord in *Gilgal*. 1. *Sam*. 15. 33. Thus God punished the adultery and murther of David: for as he defiled another mans wife, so his owne sonne Absolom defiled his wines in the sight of all Israel. 2. *Sam*. 16 verse 22. and his murther in slaying Uriah by the sword of the children of Ammon, in that the sword did neuer depart from his house. 2. *Sam*. 12. 10. Because the Grecians accounted preaching foolishnes: it pleased God (as a fit & iust punishment of this their sin) by the foolishnes of preaching to saue them that beleene. 1. *Cor*. 1. 21. Thus as Chrysost. hath obserued, the rich glutton was mette with in his kind: for whereas he would not giue Lazarus a crumme of bread to slake his hunger, God would not giue him a drop of water to coole his thirist, *Luke* 16. and therefore he saith, *Hiems non seminavit misericordiam, venit aestas & nihil messuit*. Thus he punisheth spiritual fornication, with bodily pollution, because the Israelites went a whoring from God, therefore their daughters became harlots, and their spouses whores: *Hos*. 4. 12. 13. And this is verified in the Church of Rome at this day: for as he gaue vp the heathen to reprobate minds, by reason of their idolatry; so hath he giuen them vp, as we may see in their vncleane cloysters, their Sodomiticall Stewes, their beastly brothelhouses, and the like. So they that delight in looking at the rednesse of the wine, shall haue red eyes, as a punishment of their sinne. *Pro*. 23. 30. Thus God punished the pride of the women of Ierusalem: for instead of a sweet savour, there was a stinke, in
 head

Epist. 3. ad Cy
 riac. Micas
 cadentes de
 mensan non de-
 dit, quid mirū
 si aquæ guttā
 non accepit?

stead of a girdle, a rent, instead of dressing of the haire, baldnes, instead of a stomacher, a girding of sackcloth, and burning, instead of beauty. *Esa. 3. 24.* And thus the Lord shut vp euery wombe of the house of *Abimelech*, because of *Sara* *Abrahams* wife. *Gen. 20. 18.* Thus the wife
 5 man saith, *Because the Israelites worshipped serpents, which had not the use of reason, and vile beasts, the Lord sent a multitude of unreasonable beasts among them for a vengeance, that they might know, that wherewith a man sinneth, by the same also shal he be punished. Wisd. 11. 13.* And this maner of punishing sinners in their kinde, *Iob* acknowledgeth to be most
 10 iust, When he saith. *If mine heart haue beene deceiued by a woman, or If I haue laid waite at the dore of my neighbour : let my wife grind vnto another man, and let other men bow downe vpon her. Iob. 31. 10. 11.*

Vse. First, here we see the iustice of God in awarding the last sen-
 15 tence, nay his bounty and seuerity: his bounty, in recompencing men aboue their deserts; his seuerity, in punishing sinners according to their deserts. For as he will deny any thing in iustice that denied to *Dines* a drop of water to coole his tongue, *Luk. 16. 24. 25.* so he will recompence a cup of cold water. *Matth. 10. 42.* This
 20 integrity in iudgement without partiality, is signified by the white throne, *Reu. 20. 11.* and it serues as a patterne and example for all Iudges and Magistrates to follow, in laying iudgement to the rule, and righteousness to the ballance, *Esa. 28. 17.* that is, in hearing causes indifferently, and determining equally, examining them (as it
 25 were) by line and square, as the mason or carpenter doth his worke, The Grecians placed iustice betwixt *Leo* and *Libra*, thereby signifying that there must not onely be courage in executing, but also indifferency in determining. The Egyptians expresse the same by the hieroglyphical figure of a man without hands, winking with his
 30 eies; wherby is meant our vncorrupt Iudge, who hath no hands to receiue bribes, nor eyes to behold the person of the poore, or respect the person of the rich. And before our tribunalls we commonly haue the picture of a man, holding a ballance in one hand, and a sword in the other, signifying by the ballance iust iudgement, by
 35 the sword, execution of iudgement. For as the balance putteth no difference betweene gold and lead, but giveth an equall or vnequall poise to them both, not giving a greater waight to the gold for the excellency of the mettall, because it is gold, nor a lesse to the lead for the basenes of it, because it is lead. So they were with an
 40 euen hand to way the poore mans cause as well as the rich. But it is most notably set out by the throne of the house of *Dauid*, mentioned *Psal. 122. 5.* which was placed in the gate of the city towards the sun

sun rising: *in the gate*, to signifie that all which came in and out by the gate of the city, might indifferently be heard, the poore as well as the rich, and might haue acceſſe and regreſſe, too and from the iudgement ſeate. *Towards the riſing of the ſunne*, in token that their iudgment ſhould be as cleare from corruption, as the ſun is, cleare 5 in his chiefſt brightnes.

Secondly, this confutes the common opinion of the Schoolmen, who as they truly affirme that God rewardeth his Elect, *ſuprame-ritum*, aboue their deſert, ſo they erroneouſly teach that he puniſheth the reprobate, *citra condignum*, leſſe then they haue deſerued. For 10 God powreth vpon the wicked, after this life, the full violls of his wrath, puniſhing them in the rigour of his iuſtice, without all mercy, not onely according to their works, in regard of nature and quality, but in reſpect of the meaſure and quantity.

Laſtly, this doctrine ſeriouſly conſidered and thought vpon, that 15 we ſhall drinke ſuch as we brew, reape ſuch as we ſow, & that men ſhall haue degrees of felicity, or miſery, anſwerable to their works, anſwerable to the kind of their worke, to the quantity and quality thereof, will make vs more carefull to auoid ſinne, and to be more plentiful in good workes, then if with the Papiſts, we ſhould teach 20 iuſtification by workes.

Againe, in that euery one ſhall reape as he ſoweth, that is, ſhall be rewarded not according to the fruit and ſucceſſe of his labour, but according to his labour, be it more, or leſſe, better or worſe: it ſerues (firſt of all) to comfort the Miniſters of the word, which 25 are ſet ouer a blinde ignorant people, who are alway learning, and neuer come to the knowledge of the truth: they muſt not be diſcouraged, though after long teaching, there be little knowledge or amendment; after much paines taking, little profiting; but rather a coldneſſe, a backwardneſſe, a declining in all ſorts & degrees. 30 They muſt remember, that if their Goſpell beeing deliuered with ſuch ſimplicity, with ſuch aſſiduity, with ſuch euidence & demonſtration of the ſpirit, be hid, *it is hid to them that periſh, in whome the god of this world hath blinded the mindes of the infidels, that the glorious Goſpel of Chriſt ſhould not ſhine vnto them.* 2. Cor. 4. 3, 4. Beſides, let the 35 conſider that though they ſeeme to labour in vaine, & to ſpend their ſtrength in vaine, and that their words take no more effect then if they were ſpoken in the winde: yet that their iudgement is with the Lord, and their worke with their God. Iſa. 49. 4. remembering that God will giue to euery man according to his worke, according to the 40 kind, the quantity, the quality thereof: and not according to the fruit, or ſucceſſe of his worke.

It may serue also as a cordiall to euery man that is painefull and faithful in his calling, though neuer so base and seruile, as to a shepheard which watcheth his flocke, or a poore drudge that attends vpon his masters busines: he is to comfort himselfe with this, that
 5 though he see no great good that comes by his labour and trauell, yet if he be obedient to him that is his master according to the flesh in all things, not with eye-seruice as men pleasers, but in singlenes of heart, seruing God; and whatsoeuer he doth, doing it heartily as to the Lord, and not to men: let him know, and assure
 10 himselfe, that *of the Lord he shall receiue the reward of inheritance.* (Coloss. 3. 22, 23, 24. And the promise is more generall, Eph. 6. 5. Know ye, that whatsoeuer good thing any man doth, the same shall he receiue of the Lord, whether he be bond or free.

It serueth further, as a comfort against inequality, whereas the
 15 wicked flourish in all manner of prosperity, and the godly lie in contempt and misery; for the time shall come, when euery one shall reape euen as he hath sowne. When God will punish the sins of the reprobate with eternall torment, according to their deserts; and crowne the good workes of his seruants, with an eternall weight of
 20 glory, about their desert: for piety shall not alway goe vnrewarded, neither shall impietie alway goe vnpunished, for as the Psalmist saith, *The patient abiding of the righteous shall not perish for ever.* And againe; doubtlesse there is a reward for the righteous, doubtlesse there is a God that iudgeth the earth.

Againe, this condemneth the damnable opinion of Atheists, who thinke al things come to passe by nature, or fortune; & that domes day is but a dreame: and that sicke not to say, *It is in vaine to serue God, and what profit is it, that we haue kept his commandments, and that we haue walked humbly before the Lord of hosts?* as though good works
 30 should neuer be rewarded, nor sinne punished: albeit the Lord hath said, *Behold I come quickly, and my reward is with me, to giue euery one as his worke shall be.* Apoc. 22. 12.

Besides, it meeteth with the practise of those men, which sowe nothing but cockle, and yet expect a crop of wheate: or nothing
 5 but darnell, and yet looke to reape a barly haruest: that is, such as sow nothing but the cursed seeds of a damnable life, and yet looke to reape the haruest of eternall life: for as a man soweth, so shall he reape: such as he brueth, such shall he drinke; *Euery one shall eate the fruites of his owne waies, and be filled with his owne deuices.* Prov. 1. 31.

40 It doth further detect the folly of those which fraught the shippe of their soule, with nothing but faith, resting (in carnall presumption) vpon a vaine opinion of faith, and neuer caring for good
 K k workes

works: against whom S. James writeth, chap. 2. 14. *What availeth it, though a man say he hath faith, when he hath no workes? can the faith saue him? 20. Wilt thou understand, O thou vaine man, that faith which is without workes, is dead?* We must therefore sow the seeds of good works in this life, if after this life we looke to reape the haruelt of eternal life: and giue all diligence by good workes, to make our calling and election sure, that as it is sure in it selfe in Gods vncchangeable decree, 2. Tim. 2. 19. so wee may make it sure to vs, 2. Pet. 1. 10. and so lay vp in store a good foundation against the time to come, that we may obtaine eternall life, 1. Tim. 6. 19.

Lastly, it crosseth the wicked conceit and imagination of those men, that sing a *requiem* to their soules, in promising to themselves an impunitie from sinne, and an immunity from all the iudgments of God, notwithstanding they go on in their bad practises; and all because God doth not presently take vengeance on them for their finnes. For they doe not consider, that their finnes are as seedes, which must haue a time to grow in, before they come to maturitie; but being once ripe and full eared, let them assure themselves God wil cut them downe with the sickle of his iudgments, as we reade Gen. 15. 16. They remember not what the Lord saith by *Ieremie*, 20 that he will not weary himselfe with following after these wild asses, vsed to the wildernes, which snuffe vp the wind by occasion at their pleasure, and none can turne them back, *but wil seeke for them, and finde them in their moneths*, that is, when their iniquity shall beat the full, the Lord will meet with them.

Iere. 2. 24.

8 For, he that soweth to the flesh, (shall of the flesh reape corruption: but hee that soweth to the spirit, (shall of the spirit reape life everlasting.

Heere S. Paul specifieth that in particular, which before he had deliuered in generall, viz. what he meant by *sowing*, & *reaping*. And this hee doeth by a distribution, or enumeration of the kinds of sowing & reaping: shewing, that there are two sorts of seeds which men sow in this life, good and euill. Two kinds of sowers, spirituall men, and carnall men. Two sorts of ground, in which this seed is sown; the flesh and the spirit. Two sorts of haruelt, which men are to reape according to the seed; corruption, and life: as Paul saith, *If yee liue after the flesh, yee shall die: but if ye mortifie the deedes of the body by the spirit, ye shall liue*, Rom. 8. 13. These two sorts of haruelt, being answerable to the seed: corruption and death, being the haruelt of the seed sown to the flesh: life and immortalitie, of that to the spirit.

Tacianus

Tacianus the heretike, and authour of the sect of the *Encratites*, doth gather from this and the like places, that mariage is in it selfe simply euill, because it is a sowing to the flesh. To him we may adioyne the Popes holinesse, *Syricus*, who reasoneth after the same maner, to prooue that Priests ought not to marrie, because (saith he) *they that are in the flesh, cannot please God, Romanes 8.8.* where he condemneth all marriages as vncleane, both in the Cleargie, and the Laitie. *Distinct. 82.* (Vnderstanding, as though *Paul* should speake properly of seed, and of the flesh,) But worthily was *Tacianus* his opinion confuted, and he condemned for an heretike: for the Apostle speaketh not of the works of nature, but of corrupt nature, which ouerturneth the diuine order which God set in nature, in the creation. Besides, the Apostolike writer saith, that *marriage is honourable among all men;* (not the first onely, but also the second, third, &c. and among Cleargy men as well as others:) and therefore the marriage bed being *undefiled*, that is, being vsed in holy manner, is no sowing to the flesh, but to the spirit, as Popish *doctours are enforced to confesse. Lastly, *Paul* saith not, *Hee that soweth to the flesh, shall of the flesh reape corruption:* but, *he that soweth to his flesh, &c.* Now no man (except hee be worse then a bruit beast) doth abuse himselfe by sowing to his owne flesh, (as *Ierome* saith vpon this place.) Others, by sowing to the flesh and spirit, vnderstand the following after the fruites of the flesh and of the spirit, mentioned in the former chapter, ver. 19. 22. But this exposition cannot stand in this place; because the illatiue particle (*for*) in the beginning of the vers, sheweth euidently, that these words depend vpon the former, as an exegesis, or expolition thereof, where *Paul* spake not generally of all, but particularly of those workes which serue directly to vphold the ministry.

By sowing to the flesh therefore the Apostle meaneth nothing els, but to liue in the flesh, to walk in it, to take pleasure in it, to follow the desires of it, and to fulfill the lusts thereof. More plainly; it is wholly to giue & addict a mans selfe to the pleasures, profits, honors, and preferments of this life, & to spend himselfe, his strength, and wit in compassing of them, hauing litle or no respect of the life to come, how he may compasse the rich purchase of the kingdome of heauen: which who so doth, shall reape nothing at the harvest, but corruption: that is, shal haue for his reward, eternall death, vnderstanding by corruption, the corruption of good qualities, not of the substance. On the contrary, to sow to the spirit, is to liue in the spirit, and to walke according to the spirit, and to mortifie the deeds of the flesh by the spirit, and to doe those things, which

Hebr. 13.3.

* Catharinus
in Comment.
in hunc locū.

otherwise we would neuer doe, if we were not mooued and ledde by the spirit; as to bestow a mans goods, his labour and trauell, his strength, his wit, and all, in those things that may further true religion and pierie, with relation to eternall life: which whosoever doth, shall reape life euerlasting, as a iust recompence of his worke, according to the mercifull promise of God.

Chatharinus
in ver. 10. & the
ment in v. 9.
Bellar. de iust.
fuf. cap. 3.

Here sundrie obiections are to be answered, for the clearing of this text. First, the Papists reason thus. Workes are feedes: but feedes are the proper cause of the fruite: therefore good workes are the proper cause of eternall life, and not faith onely. So that as there is a hidden vertue in the seede, to bring forth fruite: so is there a dignitie in good workes, to merit eternall life. *Ans.* First, as in a parable, so in a similitude, whatsoever is beside the scope and drift thereof, (as this their dispute is) prooueth nothing. The scope of the similitude is this, that as he which soweth wheate, shall reape wheate: so he that soweth to the spirit, shall of the spirit reape life euerlasting; and as he that soweth tares, shall reape nothing but tares: so he that soweth to the flesh, the cursed feedes of a wicked life, shall of the flesh reape nothing but corruption: and as he that soweth plentifully either of these, shall reape a plentiful harvest of either of them: so he that soweth the seede of a godly, or wicked life, in plentiful manner, shall reape a plentiful increase, either of miserie, or felicie. When the Papists therefore reason thus: Seedes are the cause of the fruite, and haue in them a hidden vertue, whereby they grow, and bring forth fruite: therefore good workes are the proper cause of life, and haue a dignitie and excellency in them, whereby they are worthie of eternall life: they misse of the drift, and intent of the Apostle, and so conclude nothing. Besides, this their collection and discourse, is contrarie to their owne doctrine. For they teach that good workes are meritorious by merit of condignitie: which may be vnderstood 3 waies, either in regard of the dignitie of the worke alone; or in regard of the promise of God alone and his diuine acceptation: or partly in regard of the dignitie, and excellencie of the worke; partly in regard of the promise of God. Now albeit some of them hold, that good workes doe merit in respect onely of Gods promise, and mercifull acceptation, as *Scotus*, *Ariminensis*, *Durandus*, *Vega*, *Bunderius*, *Caster*, and the like: others, in respect partly of their owne worthinesse, partly of Gods promise, and acceptance, as *Bonaventure*, *Biel*, *Driedo*, *Clingius*, *Iansenius*, *Bellarmino*, &c. it beeing the common receiued opinion among the Schoolemen (as *Bensfeldius* witnesseth) yet none of them (excepting onely *Caietan*) affirme that they are meritorious only in regard of

of the dignitie of the worke: which notwithstanding the Rhemists, and others, labour to prooue out of this similitude, vrging the analogie betweene *seed* and *good workes*, contrary to the current and streame of their own Doctors. Thirdly I answer, that good works
 5 are seeds, yet' faith is the root of these seedes: and in that good workes are made the seedes of eternall life, it is to bee ascribed to Gods mercifull promise, not to the merit of the worke: for in that we, or our workes, are worthy of the least blessing, it is more of Gods mercy, then our merit. Fourthly, the Apostle sheweth
 10 onely who they are that shall inherite eternall life; and the order how life is attained: but not the cause wherefore it is giuen. It will be said, not only the order, but the cause is set downe, as it may appeare by the *antithesis*: for as sowing to the flesh, is the cause of destruction, so sowing to the spirit, is the cause of eternall life. *Ans(w.*
 15 It is true in the one, but not in the other. For first, sinnes or works of the flesh, are perfectly euill, as being absolute breaches of the law, and deserue infinite punishment, because they offend an infinite maiestie: whereas workes of the spirit, are imperfectly good, hauing in them wants, and imperfections, (there being in euery
 20 good worke a sinne of omission,) comming short of that perfection that is required in the law: they being good and perfect, as they proceed from the spirit of God; imperfect and vicious, as they come from vs. Euen as water is pure, as it proceeds from the fountain: but troubled, as it runneth thorow a filthy channel; or as the
 25 writing is imperfect and faultie, as it comes from the yong learner, but perfect, and absolute, as it proceedeth from the Scriuener which guideth his hand. So that if God (setting aside mercie) should trie them by the touchstone of the word, they would bee found to be but counterfeit. And if he should weigh them in the
 30 ballance of his iustice, they would be found too light. Secondly, there is a maine difference betwixt the workes of the flesh, and the works of the spirit, in this very point; in that the works of the flesh are our owne works, and not the workes of God in vs: and so wee deserue eternall death, by reason of them, they being our owne
 35 wicked works: whereas good works proceed not from vs properly, seeing we are not sufficient of our selues to thinke any [good] thing as of our selues, 2. Cor. 3. 5. but from the spirit of God, who worketh in vs both the will and the deed; and are his workes in vs: therefore being not ours, wee can merit nothing by them at the hands of
 40 God. Thirdly, obserue, that it is not said, he that soweth to the spirit, shall of that which he hath sown, reape life euerlasting, but, shall of the spirit reape life euerlasting. Where wee see the Apostle attributes

nothing to our works, but to the grace of Gods spirit. Lastly, *Rom.* 6. 23. the holy Ghost putteth manifest difference betweene the works of the flesh, and of the spirit, in respect of merit, when hee saith, *The wages of sinne is death: but eternal life is the gift of God.* Hee saith not, that eternal life is the reward of good works, but the gift 5 of God. Now in the reward of sinne, there is merit presupposed: in the gift of eternall life, nothing but grace and fauour.

Obiect. II. God giueth eternall life according to the measure and proportion of the worke, *v. 7.* *As a man soweth, so shall hee reape,* 2. *Corint.* 9. 6. *He that soweth sparingly, shall reape sparingly, and hee that* 10 *soweth liberally, shall reape liberally,* 1. *Cor.* 3. 8. *Euery one shall receiue his proper wages according to his owne labour.* Therefore in giuing eternall life, he hath no respect of the promise or compact, but of the dignitie and efficacie of the worke. *Answer.* Fulnesse of glory, called by Schoolemen, *essentiall glory*, is giuen onely for the merits 15 of Christ, in the riches of Gods mercie, without all respect of works. *Accidental glory*, (when one hath a greater measure of glory, another a lesse, as when vessels of vnequall quantitie cast into the sea, are all filled, yet some haue a greater measure of water, some a lesse) is giuen, not without respect of workes: yet so, as that it is 20 not giuen for workes, but according to workes, they being infallible testimonies of their vnfaigned faith in the merits of Christ. If it be said, that eternal life is giuen as a reward, meritoriously deserued by good workes, because it is said, *Come ye blessed: for I was hungry, and* 25 *ye gaue mee meat,* *Math.* 25. I answer, it is one thing to be iust, another thing to be declared and knowne to be iust. We are iust by faith, but we are knowne to be iust by our workes: therefore men shall bee iudged at the last day, not by their faith, but by their workes. For the last iudgement serueth not to make men iust that are vniust, which is done by faith, but to manifest the to the world 30 what they are in deed, which is done by workes. Men are often compared to trees in Scripture. Now a tree is not knowne what it is by his sap, but by his fruite: neither are men knowne to bee iust by their faith, but by their workes. Indeed a tree is therefore good, because his sap is good: but it is knowne to be good by his fruit. 35 So, a man is iust, because of his faith, but he is knowne to bee iust by his good workes: therefore seeing that the last iudgement must proceed according to euidence that is vpon record, (*for the bookes must be opened, and men must be iudged of those things, that are written in the bookes*) all must be iudged by their workes, which are euident 40 and apparent to the view of all men, and not by their faith, which is not exposed to the sight of any. And hence it is that the Scrip-
ture

Psalm. 1. 3.
Jerem. 17. 8.
Math. 3. 10.

1. Pet. 1. 12.

ture faith, we shal be iudged according to our workes; but it is no where said, for our good workes. Gregorie saith, God wil giue to euery one according to his workes: but it is one thing to giue according to workes, an other thing, for workes. For workes are no way the cause of reward; but
 5 onely the common measure, according to which God giueth a greater or lesser reward. Take this resemblance. A King promiseth vnequall rewards to runners (the least of which would equall the riches of a kingdome) vpon condition, that hee which first cometh to the goale, shall haue the greatest reward; the second, the
 10 next, and so in order. They hauing finished their race, the King giueth them the reward according to their running. Who would hence but childishly inferre, that therefore they merited this reward by their running? And whereas they vrge that text, *Mat. 25. Come yee blessed, for I was hungrie, and yee fedde mee*: I answer,
 15 first, that the word [*for*] doeth not alway signifie a cause, but any argument or reason taken from any Topick place: as *Rom. 3. 22, 23 The righteousness of God is made manifest vnto all, and vpon all that beleene. For there is no difference: for all haue sinned, and are deprived of the glory of God.* Where sinne is no cause of the righteousness of faith, but
 20 only an antecedent, or adiunct, common to all men. So when we say, *This is the mother of the child, for she will not haue it diuided.* There [*for*] doeth not imple the cause, as though her refusing to haue it diuided, did make her the true mother of it: but onely the signe, that she was the true mother indeed. Secondly, be it granted that
 25 it implieth the cause, yet not the meritorious cause: for good works are said to be causes of eternall life, not as meriting, procuring, or deseruing any thing at the hands of God, but as they are the kings high way to eternall life, God hauing prepared good workes, that we should walke in them. If a King promise his subiect a treasure
 30 hid in the top of a steep and high mountaine, vpon condition that hee clime and dig it out: his climbing and digging is the efficient cause of enioying the treasure, but no meritorious cause of obtaining it, seeing it was freely giuen. If it be further said, that the word [*for*] doth here signifie the cause, as wel as in the words following,
 35 *Goe yee cursed, — for I was hungry, and ye gaue me no meat*: seeing our Sauiour Christ speaketh after the same maner, of the reward of the godly, and punishment of the wicked. I answer. The paritie of the reason stands in this, that as by good workes we come to eternall life, so by wicked workes, we run headlong to perdition. The dissimilitude is this, that euill workes are not only the way, but also the
 40 cause of death: good workes are the way, but not the cause, as Bernard saith, they are *via regni, non causa regnandi.*

In Psal. 142.
 Reddendum
 cuiq; secundū
 opera, sed ali-
 ud est secundū
 aliud propter
 opera reddere

Obiect. III. Here God promiseth eternall life to good works: therefore good works merit eternall life. *Answer.* There is a double covenant, *Legal*, and *Euangelical*. In the *legall covenant*, the promise of eternall life is made vnto works. *Doe this and liue. If thou wilt enter into life, keepe the commandments.* But thus no man can merit, because 5 none can fulfill the law. In the *Euangelicall covenant*, the promise is not made to the worke, but to the worker; and to the worker, not for the merit of his worke, but for the merit of Christ, as *Apoc. 2. 20. Be faithfull vnto the end, and I wil giue thee a crowne of life:* the promise is not made to fidelitie, but to the faithfull person, whose fidelitie 10 is a signe that he is in Christ, in whom all the promises of God are yea, and Amen, that is, most certaine and infallible. Secondly, if any thing be due to workes, it is not of the merit of the worke, but of Gods mercifull promise. *Augustine* saith, *God made himselfe a debtor, not by owing any thing, but by promising.* Thirdly, no reward is due to 31 workes of regeneration, vpon compact and promise: first, because we are not vnder the covenant of works, in which God doth covenant with vs vpon condition of our obedience: but vnder the covenant of grace, the tenor of which covenant runneth vpon condition of the merits of Christ apprehended by faith. Secondly, 20 though wee were vnder the legall covenant, yet we merit not, because our workes are not answerable to the law. Lastly, whereas the pillars of the Romish Church teach, that the promise made vpon condition of performing the worke, maketh the performer to merit, is very false. This is not sufficient to make a meritorious work: 25 it is further required, that the work be answerable and correspondent in worth & value, to the reward: as if one shal promise a thousand crowns to him that wil fetch a little water out of the next well; it is debt indeed in the promiser, but no merit in the performer; because there is no proportion betweene the worke, and the reward. 30

Obiect. IV. Sowing to the spirit, is a good worke, and reaping eternall life, the reward: but reward presupposeth merit: therefore sowing to the spirit doth merit eternall life. *Answer.* There is a double reward, one of *fauour*, another of *debt*, *Rom. 4. 4. To him that worketh, the wages is not counted by fauour, but by debt.* So saith *Am- 35 brose*, *There is one reward of liberalitie and fauour: another reward, which is the stipend of vertue, and recompense of our labour.* Therefore reward signifieth generally any recompence, or any gift that is bestowed vpon another, whether it be more or lesse, whether answerable to the worke or not, whether vpon compact, or otherwise: for the 40 Scripture maketh mention of reward, where there are no precedent workes, as *Genesis 15. 1. Feare not Abram, I am thine exceeding*

2. Cor. 1. 10.

In Psal. 31.
Non debēdo,
sed promit-
tendo, Deus se
sibi debitorē.

Bellar. de Iust.
lib. 5. c. 3.

recompensatio
meriti
Epist. 1. lib. 1.
Alia est mer-
cedis liberalita-
tis & gratia:
aliud virtutis
stipendium,
laboris remun-
eratio.

gratias

- great reward, that is, thy full content and happinellse. *Psal. 127. 3.*
The fruit of the wombe is a reward, that is, a blessing, and a free gift of God. In this sense (I grant) eternall life is a reward. Yet it is no proper reward, but so called by a *cataphresis*, which yet is not an *intol-
 5* *erable cataphresis* (as *Bellarmino* either ignorantly or maliciously affir- *De iustif. l. 5 c. 3.*
 meth) but easie and familiar; for in the phrase of the Scripture, eter-
 nall life is called a reward, in a generall signification, when it is
 vsed absolutely, and not relatively, to signifie the heele, or end of
 any thing: and so the Hebrew word which signifieth a *heeel*, sig- *Hekeb. Psal.*
 10 *nifieth also a reward*, because it is given when the worke is ended: *19 12.*
 And eternall life hath this resemblance with a reward, in that it is *Acharith. Prou.*
 given at the end of a mans life, after that his travell and warfare is *23 18.*
 ended. Thus the Greeke words, which signifie a reward and an end, *μαδος. τελος.*
 are vsed indifferently one for the other. *1. Peter 1. 9. Receiuing the*
 15 *end of your faith, the saluation of your soules*, that is, (as *Beza* hath fit- *το τελος της*
 ly translated it,) *the reward of your faith*: for to translate it, *αριστος.*
of your faith cannot agree to the word *receiuing*, for we receiue not
 an end but a reward. Thus reward signifieth a free gift, or free remun-
 20 *eration*, as when the master giueth his seruant something for his
 faithfull seruice (though done vpon dutie) when as hee oweth
 him not thanks, much lesse reward. *Luke 17. 9. Doth hee thanke*
that seruant, because hee did that which was commanded vnto him? I trow
 25 *not*. Thus God giueth vs eternall life, not because hee is bound in
 iustice so to doe, (for hee oweth vs neither rewards, nor thanks
 for our labour, because *when wee haue done what wee can, we haue but*
done our dutie, vers. 10.) but because his goodnesse, and mercifull
 promise made thereupon, doth excite him thereunto. And yet e-
 30 *ternall life is called a reward*, because it doth as certainly follow
 good works, as though it were due. And good works are mentio-
 ned in the promise, because they are tokens that the worker is in
 Christ, for whose merit, the promise shalbe accomplished. And it is
 further called the reward or fruit of our faith, (as here the harvest)
 35 because it is the way and meanes of obtaining it.
 I I. Eternall life is called a reward of good workes, not *causal-* *Non αιτιατικος*
ly, as procured by them, but *consequently*, as following them. For *vel casualiter:*
 albeit it be given *properly*, for the merit of Christ apprehended by *sed i επιμειν*
 faith: yet it is given *consequently* as a recompence of our labours: as *sive consequ-*
 40 *an inheritance is given to the heire*, not for any duty or seruice, but *tive.*
because hee is the heire: yet by consequent it is given in recom-
 pense of his obedience. *Hee that forsakes father and mother, — shall*
receiue a hundred fold more in this life, and in the world to come eternall
life, Marke 10. 29, 30.

III. Reward doth not alway presuppose debt, but is often free, for whereas it is said, *Math. 5. 46. If you love them that love you, what reward shall ye haue?* It is thus in *Luke 6. 34. What thanke shall ye haue?* by which we see that reward doth not alway signifie due debt, but thankfull remembrance, and gracious acceptance. 5

ἀνταπόδοσις τῆς
κτινῆς χάρις.

IV. *Colossians 3. 24.* Eternall life is called the reward of inheritance, whereby is signified, that it is not giuen, for our workes, but because we are the sonnes of God by adoption. *Bellarmino* answers, that it may be both a reward, and an inheritance: a reward, because it is giuen to labourers vpon compact: an inheritance, because it is 10 giuen to none, but those that are children. But the word ἀνταπόδοσις translated reward, signifieth a gift freely giuen without respect of desert, it beeing all one with δōσις, as *Basil* teacheth vpon the 7. psalme.

V. The Scripture teacheth that God giueth rewards foure 15 waies. First, he giueth reward of due debt, in respect of merit: thus he giueth eternall life, as a reward due not to our merits, but to the merit of Christ: for none can merit at the hands of God, but hee which is God. Secondly, he giues a reward, in respect of his free and mercifull promise, and thus he rewards onely beleeuers. Thirdly, he 20 giueth rewards to hypocrites, infidels, heathen, &c. beeing neither bound by his owne promise, nor by their merit; when they performe the outward workes of the law, and leade a ciuill life conformable thereto, as when *Ahab* humbled himselfe before the Lord, *1. King. 21.* And this God doth to the end he may preserue humane 25 society, and common honestie, and that he may testifie what hee approoueth, and what he disliketh. Lastly, hee giueth good successe in interprises, and attempts, according to his owne decree, and the order of diuine prouidence: which metaphorically is called a reward, *Ezek. 29. v. 19. 20.* because it hath a similitude there- 30 unto, as when wicked men through ignorance, doe that wickedly, which he hath iustly decreed shall come to passe, suffering them to fill their houses with the spoyle of the poore, which they haue for their worke, as a man hath wages for his honest labour. Thus the spoyle of Iudea, is called the hire or reward giuen to *Tiglath Pe- 35 lesser* for his Syrian warre. *Isa. 7. 20.* and thus the spoyle of Egypt is said to be wages giuen *Nebuchodonosar*, for his seruice against Ty- rus.

Further, let vs here obserue the different maner of speech which the Apostle vseth, in speaking of the flesh and of the spirit. Of 40 the former he saith, *He that soweth to his flesh, &c.* Of the latter, *He that soweth to the spirit, not to his spirit*, by which is signified, that what good

good soeuer a man doeth in being beneficiall to the Ministerie, in following the Gospel, &c. he doeth it not by any goodnesse that is in himselfe, but by the spirit of God, who in euery good motion workes in vs the will, and in euery good action the deed, *Phil. 2. 13.*
 5 therefore no man ought to flatter himselfe in this respect, or to thinke highly of himselfe, as though he had attained an extraordinary measure of sanctification, either for affecting, or effecting any thing that is good: seeing whatsoeuer good thing is in vs, is the gift of God, as *Ierom* saith. On the contrary, what euil soeuer a man
 10 doth, he doth it of himselfe, God being neither the author, the furtherer, nor the abetter thereof.

Et Primasius
in hunc locū.
Dei dona sunt
quæcunque
bona sunt.

Againe, we hence learne, that all vnregenerate persons, are sowers to the flesh, because that before their conuersion they doe nothing but those things which are pleasing to the flesh: so that dying in that estate, they can reape nothing but corruption: therefore
 15 it hence followeth, that Philosophers, heathen, and all meere ciuill, and naturall men, being such as neuer sowed to the spirit, shal reape nothing but corruption, death, and condemnation, contrary to the opinion of some ancient, and moderne writers.

20 Further, obserue heere, that though there bee some that are *Neuters* in religion, luke-warme Gospellers, halting betweene two opinions, such as are neither fish nor flesh: yet in morall duties there are no *Neuters*, nor *mediators*: for all men are ranged into one of these two rankes, either they are sowers to the flesh, or
 35 to the spirit.

Here also wee see who are true worldlings indeed; to wit, *Phil. 3. 19.*
such as mind earthly things, in spending themselves, their strength, and wits, vpon the world, hauing all their care for it, and all their comfort in it: in the meane time, hauing little or no taste of the
 30 ioyes of the world to come, because they make their Paradise here vpon earth, and neuer looke for any heauen after this life. As also who are spirituall men, namely, such as walke in the spirit, who though they liue in the world, in these houses of clay, yet are not of the world, because they set not their affections vpon it,
 35 but haue their conuersation in heauen, where Christ sitteth at Gods right hand.

This serues first of all, to discover vnto vs our owne estate, whether we be indeede carnall, or spirituall: for if we sowe to the flesh, that is, be alway poring, and digging in the earth with the mole,
 40 setting our affections vpon it, not referring the blessings of God, to his glory, and the furtherance of the Gospell, but to serue our owne corrupt desires: we are fleshly minded, (though we pretend this,

this, and that, and protest neuer so much) and continuing in this estate, wee can expect nothing but the harvest of death and condemnation. Whereas on the contrary side, if we saour the things of the Spirit, by setting our affections vpon them, and seeking those things that are aboue, eftsoones lifting vp our hearts by secret groanes and eiaculations, for the enioying of them, we are spirituall men, and shall vndoubtedly in due time reape the harvest of eternall life.

Luk. 17. 17.

Secondly, this bewraies the paucity of spirituall men, euen where the Gospel is professed: and how the world swarmes with multitudes of carnall, and fleshly minded men. For as in former times before the flood, *they eate, they drinke, they bought, they sold, they planted, they built*, that is, wholly addicted and deuoted themselues to these things: So in these latter daies (which our Sauour Christ prophesied should be a counterpaine of the former) the multitude generally in euery place doe wholly imploy and spend themselues, in thinking, in affecting, in taking, in seeking, in following of worldly things, seldome (God knowes) or neuer minding the kingdome of God, or the righteousnes thereof, nor practising the Apostles rule, *so to vse the world as though they used it not.* 1. Cor. 7. 31.

Luk. 12. 20. 21

Again, here we see how the wisdom of God is counted folly, among worldly wise men: and how the wisdom of the world is foolishnesse before God. For if a man sowe to the Spirit, in not following blind reason, nor corrupted affection, nor fashioning himselfe to the guise of the world, nor seeking his owne good so much as the good of others, but denying himselfe, forsaking all (in his affection) for the Gospel of Christ, and contemning this temporall trash, in regard of the heavenly treasure; he is accounted in the world but a foole: whereas God accounts him truly wise: for hee is the wise merchant man, *who hauing found a pearle of a great price, went and sold all that he had, and bought it.* Math. 13. 46. For the lesse he laieth vp for himselfe vpon earth, the more he treasureth vp for himselfe in heauen: and though hee seeme to sowe vpon the waters, yet after many daies he shall finde it againe. Whereas they that minde nothing but the world, in sowing to the flesh, are reputed wise and prouident men: when as God accounts them starke fooles: *Thou foole, this night shall they fetch away thy soule, and then whose shall those things be which thou hast provided?* and then it followeth, *So is he that gathereth riches to himselfe, and is not rich in God.* For the more they treasure vp riches, the more they treasure vp to themselues wrath against the day of wrath. Rom. 2. 5. and sat themselues against the day of slaughter. Iam. 5. 5.

Lastly,

Lastly, we are here warned to take heede of the Diuells sophistry. It is a notable policie, one of the cunningest stratagemes the Diuell hath, in good things commanded, to seuer the meanes from the ende: and in euill things forbidden, to seuer the end from the meanes. He laboureth to seuer the meanes from the end, by perswading a man that he may come to the end though he neuer vse the meanes, that he may reape eternal life, though he neuer sow the seedes of the spirit in this life. But we must know, that as he which runneth not at all, can neuer gaine the garland: he which laboureth not in the vineyard, the labourers wages: he that neuer sowes, can neuer reape. So he that runneth not in the race of Christianity, shall neuer attaine the crowne of happines, and felicity: he that laboureth not in the Lords vineyard, the recompence of reward: he that in this life soweth not of the spirit, shall neuer after this life reape life euerlasting. For we may not dream of a good harvest, without a good seed time, of sowing nothing to reape something, or sowing tares to reape wheate. Againe, he seuereth the end from the meanes, by perswading men that they may vse the meanes and neuer come to the end, that though they sow to the flesh, yet they shall not reape corruption. Thus he perswaded *Ene*, that though she did eate of the forbidden fruite, yet she should not die the death, nay she should not die at all, but her eyes should be opened, and she should be as a God himselfe, knowing good and euill. But we are to be vndoubtedly resolu'd of this, that God hath linked with an yron chaine, the pleasure of sin, and the punishment thereof: that as he that followes a river, must needs at length come to the Sea: so he that followes the course and streame of his sinnes, must needs come at the length to the gulfe of eternall destruction.

30
9. *Let vs not therefore be weary of well doing: for in due season we shall reape, if we faint not.*

In these words, the Apostle expounds the fift generall rule appertaining to all sorts of men: and in it he ascendeth from the *hypothesis* to the *thesis*, that is, from the *particular*, to the *general*, shewing that we ought not to faint in any good course, either in doing good to them that labour amongst vs, and are ouer vs in the Lord, and admonish vs; nor yet in being beneficiall vnto others. And this verse dependeth vpon the former, (as the word *therefore* doth imply) by way of necessary illation, and consequence: for seeing that they which continue in well doing, in sowing to the spirit, shall of the

of the spirit reape life euerlasting. v. 8. therefore no man ought to be wearie of well doing. It consisteth of two parts: of a rule, or precept, in the former part of the verse, *Let vs not therefore be weary of well doing*; and a reason of the rule, or a motiue to incite vs to the performance thereof, in the latter part: *for in due season we shall reape, if we faint not*. In the rule, the Apostle speaks that plainly, which in the former verses he had deliuered more obscurely: for here he expounds himselfe, what he meant by *sowing to the spirit*, namely, *doing of good*, or (as it is in the next verse) *doing of good vnto all*, which may also appeare by that which followeth, *we shall reape, if we faint not*, that is, 10 we shall reape the fruit of that which we haue sowne to the spirit, if we faint not: therefore to sow to the spirit, is nothing els, but to doe good. Now by *well doing*, the Apostle meaneth not onely the outward worke, whereby our neighbour is furthered, helped, relieved; but the doing of it also in a good manner, and to a good end; 15 so, as it may be a good worke indeede, not onely profitable to our neighbours, and comfortable to our selues, but acceptable to God. This is a most necessary precept: for most men are soone weary of a good course, like to these Galatians, *who began in the Spirit*, but being weary of that walke, turned aside, and *made an end in the flesh*. 20 *Gal. 3. 3. Like Ephraim and Judah, whose goodnes was as a morning cloud, and as the morning dewe which vanisheth away. Hos. 6. 4.* This wearisomnesse in well doing hath sealed vpon the most: euen vpon all drowsie professours, (which are the greatest part,) as may appeare by this, in that some, if they be held but a quarter of an houre too 25 long, or aboue their ordinarie time, are extreamely weary of hearing the word. And as for duties of mercie, and liberality, putting vp injuries, and tolerating wrongs, they are ready to make an end as soone as they begin. And as for Praier and thankgiuing, and other parts of the worship of God, most men say in their hearts with 30 the old lewes, *what profit is it that we keepe his commandements, and that we walke humbly before the Lord of hosts?* *Malach. 3. 14.* nay they count it a wearinesse vnto them, and *snuffe thereat*. *Malach. 1. 13.* Hence it is, that the Holy Ghost is so frequent in stirring vs vp to the performance of all good duties, with alacrity and chearefulness, 35 and so often in rousing vs from that drowlines and deadnes, where-with we are ouerwhelmed. *Luke 18. 1.* Our Sauour Christ propounds a parable to this end, to teach vs, *that we ought alwayes to pray, and not to waxe faint*. *Eph. 3. 13. I desire (saith Paul) that ye faint not at my tribulations. 2. Thess. 3. 13. And ye, brethren, be not weary in well doing.* And 40 so in this place, *Let vs not therefore be weary of well doing*.

Now the reasons which make men so weary of well doing, are
in

in generall these three. First, the strength of the flesh, which even in the regenerate is like, the great gyant Goliath, in comparison of poore David. Secondly, the weakenesse of the Spirit, and spirituall graces. Thirdly, the outward occurrences, and impediments of this life. In speciall they be these. First, men by nature are wolves one to another. *Esay 11.v.6.* and so they continue, till this woluish nature be mortified, and renewed by grace, being so farre from helping, furthering, relecuing, tollerating one another, or performing any other duty of loue, that contrarily, they are ready to bite, and deuoure one another. *Gal. 5.15.* Secondly, oftentimes it commeth to passe, that other mens coldnesse doth coole our zeale, their backwardnesse slacketh our forwardnesse. Thirdly, many thinke it a disgrace and disparagement vnto them, to stoop so low, as to become seruiceable vnto their inferiours. Fourthly, there are many things
 15 which discourage vs from well doing. either the party is vnknowne vnto vs, as *David* was to *Nabal* (for which cause he would not relieue him in his necessity :) or else seemeth vnworthy of our helpe, being such as through riot, harlots, lewde company, hath brought
 20 him selfe to miserie and beggerie. Or such as reward vs euill for good, hatred for our good will : or such as are querulous, alwayes complaining, though neuer so well dealt withall : all which make men cold in the duties of loue. Fifthly, some there be which faine dangers and cast perils, which hinder them from doing the good they should : *The slothfull person saith, a lyon is in the way, &c.* Lastly,
 25 the manifold occasions and affaires of this life, doe so distract the minde, as that a man is soone wearied, yea in the best things. Besides, many see no reason why they should spend themselves, in doing good vnto others.

30 Now to all these obstacles, and pul-backs, we are to oppose the Apostles precept, *Let vs not be weary of well doing.* For verily, if the consideration of these small occasions, and rubbes that lie in our way, daunt and dismay vs, and so stoppe our course, wee shall neuer be plentiful in good workes : wee may haply put our hand to the
 35 plowe, but a thousand to one we shall looke backe againe : with *Lots* wife cast a long looke toward *Sodom* ; and with the *Israelites* in our hearts turne againe into *Egypt*. For as he that obserueth the
 40 example of others, the manifold distractions, and occurrences of this life ; and shall cast perils in carnall wisdom, of this, and that trouble, or inconueniencie, that may ensue, shall neuer doe his duty as he ought.

Gen. 19.67.
Luke 9.15.

And

And assuredly, he that fainteth in a good course, and giueth it ouer before he come to the ende, is like vnto the slothful husband-man, who hauing plowed and tilled, and in part sowed his ground, giueth ouer before he haue finished it; and so, either the parching heate doth wither it, or the nipping cold kill it, or the fowles of the aire deuoure it. 5

Now most men are sicke of this disease, which shewes the greatnesse of our corruptions, and that the best Christians haue a huge masse or lump of sinne in them, and but a sparke of grace; in that they are seldome or neuer wearie in scraping together of riches, in following their pleasures, in pursuing honours, and hunting after preferments: and yet are quickly wearie in duties of pietie, iustice, and mercie, albeit they haue an vspeakable reward annexed vnto them. 10

Well, whatsoeuer the corrupt practises of men be, let vs learne our dutie, to goe forward without wearinesse, nay to do good with chearefulnesse, as *Paul* saith of himselfe, *Philippians 3. forgetting that which is behind, and indeauouring himselfe to that which is before.* Let vs consider that it is the propertie of a liberal minde, to deuise of liberall things, and to continue his liberality, *Esay. 32. 8.* Neither is this all, not to be wearie, or to persist and continue, but we must proceede on from strength to strength, and bring forth more fruite in our age, *Psal. 92. 14.* as the Church of *Thyatira*, whose workes were more at the last, then at the first, for which shee is worthily praised by our Saviour Christ, *Reuel. 2. 19.* It was the motto of *Charles the fift*, *Plus ultra*, and it ought to be euery Christians motto, to strue to perfectiones, and as the Apostle exhorts vs, *To be steadfast, immoueable, and not to make stay there, but to be abundant alwaies in the worke of the Lord, 1. Cor. 15. 58.* And that we may doe this indeede, we must set this downe as a certaine conclusion, that we wil not recoile, nor giue backe, come what will come: and withall we must labour to quicken our dull and drowlie spirits, to girde vp the loynes of our mindes, to strengthen our weake hands, and our feeble knees, by publike and private exercises of reading, praier, meditation, conference, &c. 15 20 25 30 35

Thus much of the rule: now followeth the reason of the rule, or the motiue to incourage vs to the performance of this dutie; for in due season we shall reape, if we faint not: as he should say more fully, thus, Let vs be assured of this, that continuing and increasing in well doing, our labour is not lost, nor spent in vaine. *1. Cor. 15. 58.* for though wee imagine that we labour in vaine, and spend our strength in vaine, (as the Prophet speaketh) yet our worke is with the Lord 40

Lord

Lord, and our labor with our God, *Esa. 49. 4.* And albeit we may seeme to our selues & others to cast away our goods, in being beneficial vnto some, and (as the wise man speaketh) to sow vpon the waters; yet after many daies we shall find them again, *Eccles. 11. 1.* In the motiue
 5 there be three things contained. First, the reason it selfe, which is a promise of reward, *We shall reape.* Secondly, the circumstance of time, when this harvest shall be reaped, wee shall reape *in due season.* Thirdly, the condition that is required on our parts, that wee may reape, *if wee faint not.* Of these in order, and first of the reason or
 10 promise it selfe.

Whereas the Apostle to the end we may not be weary of a good course, doth encourage vs to proceed on, by setting before our eies the promised reward, I gather that we may encourage, animate, and excite our selues to the performance of all good duties, by the
 15 consideration of the heauenly harvest, which we are to reape, and the crown of glory we are to receiue after this life; as the husbandman doth sow, in hope that hee shall reape: and though seed time be painfull and chargeable vnto him, yet he giueth not ouer for all that, but comforteth himselfe with the expectation of the harvest,
 20 which will fully quite his cost, and recompence his labour. That this is a truth, it may appeare by sundry arguments: by precept, by promise, by practise, by reason. For precept: It is the commandement of Christ wee should *make vs friends of unrighteous Mammon,* or of the riches of iniquitie, *that when we shall want, they may receiue vs in-*
 25 *to euerlasting Tabernacles, Luke 16. 9.*

For promise, besides this place (which is very pregnant to this purpose) Paul exhorts seruants, *that whatsoeuer they do, they would doe it heartily, as to the Lord, & not to men, knowing that of the Lord they shall receiue the reward of inheritance, Col. 3. 23, 24.* And generally what good
 30 thing soeuer a man doeth, the same shall he receiue of the Lord, whether hee be bond or free, *Eph. 6. 8.* He that forsakes father & mother, &c. for Christs sake, shall receiue a hundred fold more in this life, and in the world to come life euerlasting, *Math. 19. 29.* These and the like promises were to no purpose if it were not lawfull for vs to looke for the reward, and if
 35 we might not by considering of it, incite and stirre vp our selues, to greater alacritie in the course of Christianitie, in making vs more feruent and frequent in the duties of pietie.

Thirdly, it may be prooued by the practise of the Saints of God: *Abraham* was contented to forsake his native countrey at the
 40 command of God, and to dwell in a strange land, yea, and that in tents, because he looked for a citie hauing a foundation, whose builder and maker is God, *Hebr. 11. v. 9, 10.* *Moses* esteemed the rebuke of Christ

greater riches then the treasures of Egypt, *because he had respect vnto the recompense of reward*, verſe 26. Chriſt (whoſe example is without all exception, being *exemplum in deſiciens*, as the Schoolemen ſpeake) did ſweeten the bitterneſſe of the crolle with the conſideration of the glorie which a little after hee was to enioy; for ſo the Apoſtle ſaith, that *for the ſoy that was ſet before him, hee endured the crolle, and deſpiſed the ſhame*, *Ebr. 12. 2.* The Colofſians are commended by the Apoſtle, for that they continued and increaſed in faith to God, and loue to man, *for the hopes ſake that was laid vp for them in heauen*, *Col. 1. 5.* And Paul ſhewes this to haue bin the praſtiſe, and to be the dutie of al the Saints of God, *ſo to run that they may obtaine*, *1. Cor. 9. 24.*

Laſtly, it may be prooued by *reaſon*. For firſt, that which is the end of our actions, ought to bee conſidered of vs, as a meanes to ſtirre vs vp to the attaining of this end: therefore ſeeing the end of our faith and hope, is eternall life, *Rom. 6. 2. 2. Ye haue your fruit in holineſſe, and the end everlaſting life*, *1. Peter 1. 9. Receiuing the reward of your faith, the ſaluation of your ſoules*: Therefore wee may, nay wee ought to caſt our eyes vpon it, and to direct all our actions for the attaining of it. Secondly, if the labourer worke, not in regard of the common good onely, but alſo with reſpect of his wages: hee that runneth a race, to attaine the garland: if the husbandmen ſet and ſow, plant and plow, in hope to reape a harueſt, and to receiue ſome fruite of his labours: It is lawfull for Chriſtians alſo to doe good in regard of eternall reward; for that is the Apoſtles reaſon, *1. Cor. 9. 25. They that trie maſteries abſtaine from all things, that they may obtaine a corruptible crowne; but we for an incorruptible*. It is S. James his reaſon, *James 5. 7, 8.* as the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruite of the earth, and hath long patience for it, vntill hee receiue the former and the latter raine; *So muſt we be patient, and ſettle our hearts, for the coming of the Lord draweth neere*, and hee will recompence euery man according to his workes. Thirdly, if it bee lawfull for a man to abſtaine from ſin, for feare of eternall puniſhment, and torment in hell, (as we know it is,) *Matth. 10. 28.* then it is lawfull to doe good, in hope of eternall reward. It will be ſaid, that it is the propertie of a mercenary hireling to looke for a reward. I anſwer, it is the property of a hireling to looke onely, or principally for his hire, either not minding the glory and honor of God, or leſſe reſpecting it, then his owne private aduantage; ſo that when the hope of his gaine is gone, he leaueth his charge, and flieeth away: like the Popiſh Monkes, who were right hirelings indeed: for they minded nothing but their owne commodity, according

ding to the old saying, *No penie, no Pater noster*. But to looke to the recompense of reward in the second place, after the glory of God, the performance of our dutie, and discharge of a good conscience, is no propertie of a hireling; seeing God hath promised to giue to
 5 *them which by continuance in well doing, seeke honour, and immortall: eternall life, Rom. 2. 7.*

By this that hath bene said, we may see the impudencie of the *Rhemists*, who in their marginall notes vpon *Luke 14. 1. Ebr. 11. 26.* and *Apoc. 3. 5.* doe notably slander vs and our doctrine, in auerring
 10 that we teach, that no man ought to do good in respect of reward: the like may be said of *Cardinall Bellarmine, Binsfeldius*, and others. *De Iustificat.*
 For this is our constant doctrine, that we may, and ought, to stirre
 vp our dulnesse to all chearefulnesse, in the discharge of our dutie,
 by setting before our eyes the reward which is promised. Yet so, as
 15 that wee ought not *onely*, nor *principally*, to respect the reward: for
 the zeale of Gods glory, the care and conscience wee haue to discharge our dutie, ought rather to moue vs to be plentifull in good
 works (in lieu of thankfulness vnto God for the riches of his mercy) then the greatnesse of the reward, seeing we ought to doe our
 20 dutie, though there were no heauen, no hell, no reward, no punishment, no deuill to torment, no conscience to accule; the very *loue of God* ought to constrain vs, *2. Cor. 5. 14.* And heere wee must with
 thankfulness acknowledge the endlesse loue and mercy of God towards vs, seeing that when hee might exact strict obedience with-
 25 out any promise of recompence for our labor: nay, when he might shiner vs in pieces with his yron scepter, yet as *Absalom* did to
 Queene *Esther*, hee holdeth out his golden scepter vnto vs in the preaching of the word, that wee might lay hold of it, and by it apprehend eternall life. Yea it pleaseth him to winne vs by gifts, to
 30 incite vs by rewards, to allure vs by promises, in giuing his word, that if we giue, we may look to receiue (though not for our merits, yet through his mercy:) if wee bestow transitory goods, wee shall receiue a durable substance; if a cup of cold water, Gods kingdom,
Math. 10. 12.

35 The second generall point, is the circumstance of time, when we shall reape, to wit, *in due time*. This due time may be vnderstood in part, of this life: for godlinesse hath the promise of this life, as well as of the life to come, and the workes of mercy haue bin euen in this life recompensed to the full. The widow of *Zarepta* for entertaining the Prophet *Elijah*, was miraculously sustained in the
 40 dearth: *the meale in her barreil did not waste, and the oyle in her cruse did not diminish, 1. Kings 17. 16.* And so the *Shunamite*, for the like

kindnesse shewed to the Prophet *Elizens*, being barren, obtained a sonne: and when he was dead, shee obtained him to life againe, 2. *Kings* 4. as the widow of *Sarepta* did hers at the prayer of *Eliab*, 1. *Kings* 17. 23. For as God doth alwaies give to his children in this life the first fruits of his spirit: so he doth often give them the first 5 fruits of their labours, as a taste of their future felicitie, and an earnest of that happinelle which after they shall fully enjoy. Our Saviour Christ saith, he wil reward them an hundred fold in this life. *Math.* 19. But *this* *due* time is properly meant of the life to come, which hath two degrees, the first is at the day of death, when the 10 soule entred into happinelle: the second, at the day of iudgment, when both soule and body (being reunited) shall be put in full possession of eternall glory and felicitie: for then they shall bee rewarded according to their workes, not so much as a cup of cold water which they have given to relieue the Saints of God, but shall bee 31 recompenced to the full, *Math.* 10. 42.

Ist. Seeing God hath set downe a set and certain time when we are to reape, it is our dutie with patience to expect it, as the husbandmen doth, who hauing sowed his field, doeth not looke for a crop the next day, or weeke, or moneth: but patiently expecteth 20 the haruest, that he may receiue the precious seed of the earth. For he is too vnreasonable, who hauing sowed in *September*, looketh for a crop in *October*: hee must wait for the moneth of *August*, till the haruest, and in the meane time endure storme and tempest, 25 wind and weather, snow and raine, haile and frost. So we must sow our seede, and sow plentifully, still expecting the fruite of our labour with patience, till the great haruest come, the great day of retribution, in which God will separate the wheate from the chaffe; gathering the one into his garners, and burning vp the other with vnquenchable fire, *Mat.* 3. 12. Let vs consider the example of God, 30 who doeth patiently expect, and (as I may say) waits our leasure when we wil turne vnto him, *that hee might haue mercy vpon vs*, *Esay* 30. 8. hee waiteth at the doore of our hearts, & standeth knocking to bee let in, *Apoc.* 3. 20. nay, hee calleth vnto vs standing without, *Open vnto me my sister, my loue, my done, my undefiled: for my head is full of 35 dew, and my locks with the drops of the night*, *Cant.* 5. 2. *Woe vnto thee Ierusalem, wilt thou neuer be made cleane? when will it once be?* *Iere.* 13. 27. More particularly, Gods waiting and expecting is set downe in Scripture by sundry degrees. First, hee waiteth *all the day long*, *Esay* 65. 2. *I haue stretched out my hand all the day long, to a disobedient and 40 ginsaying people.* Secondly, 40. daies together, *Yet 40. daies and Nineue shall be destroyed*, *Ion.* 3. 4. Thirdly, *all the yere long*, as the husbandman doth

doth; I looked for grapes, and loe wilde grapes. *Esa. 54*. Fourthly he expecteth our amendment, many yeares together. *Luk. 13.7*. Behold, these three yeares haue I come and sought fruit on this figge tree, and finde none. Fifthly, the Lord suffered the manners of the Israelites fourtie
5 yeares in the wilderness. *Psal. 95. 10. Act. 13. 18*. Sixtly, the long sufferance of God (as *Peter* saith, *1. Epist. 3. 20*.) did patiently expect the conuersion of the old world, all the while the Arke was in preparing for the space of an hundred and twentie yeares. Seuenthly, he expected the Canaanites, and Amorites, for the space of foure hundred,
10 yeares, yea he suffered all Gentiles to wander in their owne waies, & in the vanity of their minde almost for three thousand yeares together. *Act. 14. 16*. Now if God bee so patient in expecting our amendment from day to day, from yeare to yeare; we ought to be patient in expecting the accomplishment of his promises day after day,
15 and yeare after yeare, as we are commanded. *Habac. 2. 3*. Though the vision tarry, yet waite for it, for it shall surely come, and shall not stay: and though it be long before we reape any fruite of our labours, yet let vs with patience expect it, for in due season we shall reape, if we faint
20 not. For, if God wait vpon vs, not for his owne good, but for ours; what a shame is it, that we will not waite vpon him, in tarrying his good leisure, for our owne good? The dumme and senseles creatures may set vs to schoole in this point: for they expect with a feruent
25 desire to be deliuered from the bondage of corruption, into the glorious liberty of the sonnes of God. *Rom. 8. 19, 20*. and as the word signifieth, they expect with a longing desire, euen with thrusting forth their heads, as the poore prisoner that is condemned doth, who eftsloones putteth forth his head out of the window, in a continuall earnest expectation of the gracious pardon of the Prince. It is our parts therefore to
30 waite as *Dauid* did, who saith of himselfe, *Psal. 69. 3* I am wearie of my crying, my eyes faile me whilst I waite for my God. For if we giue ouer our patient expecting, and faint in our minds, seeking to anticipate this DVE TIME, this period which God hath prefixed in his vnchange
35 able will, (more immutable then the lawes of the Medes and Persians) a thousand to one but we runne for helpe, either to the witch of *Endor*, as *Saul* did, *2. Sam. 28*. or to the wizzard of *Pethor*, as *Balaak* did, *Numb. 22*. or to the forcerer or figure slinger of *Babel*, as *Nebuchadnezzar* did, *Ezek. 21. 21*. or if all these faile, (as commonly they doe) we either breake out into open blasphemie, as the King of
40 *Israel* did, *2. King. 6. 33*. Behold this euill commeth of the Lord, should I attend on the Lord any longer? or in the depth of discontent, we play the desperate part of *Razez*, and lay violent hands vpon our selues. *2. Macchab. 14. 41*.

ἐν τριποσέσι μισοῖς, ἢ οὐκ
ἐν τριποσέσι μισοῖς, ἢ οὐκ
some would
haue it.

ἀπορροχισμῶν.

ut loquar.
 * Oecumen.
 in hunc lo-
 cum, & alij.

The third thing to bee considered, is the condition required on our part; that we may reape in due time; set downe in these words, *if we faint not*. The words in the originall are thus: we shall reape in due time, *not fainting*: which may be (and are of * some) taken in a double sence: either as a *promise*, or as a *condition*. As a *promise*, thus, 5
 If we be not weary of well doing, we shall reape in due season without all fainting and wearinesse, either to the body, or minde, that is, we shall reape with all ioy and comfort, as it is *Psalm* 126. 5, 6. *They that sow in teares, shall reape in ioy: and they that went weeping and carried precious seed, shall come againe with ioy, and bring their sheaves with them.* 10
 As a *condition*, that if we continue constant in well doing to the end without fainting, we shall reape in the time that God hath appointed: and in this sence it is to be taken in this text, to wit, *conditionally*, as it is well translated, *if we faint not*.

Wee are further to consider, that there is a double fainting, one 15
 of the bodie, another of the minde. The bodily fainting which commeth by labour, and toyling, is not here meant, seeing it doth nothing impeach the goodnesse of the worke, (it is an argument rather of the soundnesse and sinceritie thereof:) but the spirituall fainting is that which is to be feared, because it maketh our labour 20
 all in vaine. And this spirituall fainting is twofold: the first is, the slacking and remitting somewhat of our course; and this hath, and doth befall the Saints of God, as we may see in the example of the Church of Ephesus, *which lost her first loue*, *Apoc.* 2. 4. Yea all the Saints of God haue their *turbida interualla*, troubled and distempe- 25
 red fits, sometime in the full, sometime in the wane, sometime zealous and forward in the seruice of God, sometime againe heavy and backward, &c.

The second is such a fainting and languishing, that we cleane give over our course, of which *Paul* speaks, *2. Cor.* 4. 16. *Therefore we* 30
faint not, but though our outward man perissh, yet the inward man is renewed daily. And the author to the Hebrews, *we must consider Christ, who endured such speaking against of sinners, lest we should be wearied, and faint in our soules*, *Hebr.* 12. 3. And againe, *v.* 5. *Despise not the chastening of the Lord, neither faint when thou art rebuked of him.* This fainting is 35
 meant in this place.

His coronat
 opus.
 Of all vertues
 it is only con-
 stancie is
 crowned.

Whereas *S. Paul* saith we shall reape, *if we faint not*: he signifieth, that wee must perseuere and continue to the end, otherwise wee cannot looke to reape the haruest of eternall happinesse. It is nothing but constancie and continuing in well doing, that doeth 40
 crowne all our good workes. *Bee constant* (saith our Saviour Christ to the Church of Smyrna, *Apoc.* 2. 10.) *and I will give thee the crowne*
 of

life. *Ierome* saith, It is the propertie of true vertue, *not to beginne well, but to ende well.* Paul blameth these Galatians, for beginning in the spirit, and ending in the flesh: and Christ shewes what a shame it is to him that beginneth to build and cannot finish it: it is as good
 5 neuer a whit, as neuer the better: nay his condition is better that neuer began, *then that of Iudas*, whose ende was worse then his beginning. *Leuit. 3. 9.* the taile of the sacrifice was commanded to be offered vpon the altar, by which was signified, that in euery good worke, we must not onely begin, but continue in it to the end, and
 10 sacrificethe end of it to God, as well as the beginning: otherwise we lose our labour, and misse our reward, therefore Saint *Iohn* bid-
deth vs looke to our selues, that we lose not the things which we haue done, but that wee may receiue a full reward, 2. Iohn v. 8. The labourers in the vineyard came at sundry times, some in the morning, others at
 15 the third, others at the sixth, and ninth, others at the twelfth houre of the day, yet none receiued the labourers wages, but those that continued in the work to the end, *Mat. 20.* God is *Alpha & Omega*, and therefore requireth a good end, as well as a good beginning, and it is our dutie not only to obey the commandement of Christ,
 20 *Venite ad me, come vnto me, Mat. 11. 28.* but that also, *manete in me, abide in mee, Iohn 15. 4.* for he onely that continueth to the end, shall bee saued, *Math. 24. 13.*

Further, whereasthe Apostle saith, *Wee shall reape, if wee faint not:* It may be demaunded, whether the Saints doe so faint at any
 25 time, that they finally fall away? To which demaund I answer in a word, that they doe not, nay, they cannot *totally* and *finally* fall from grace. For first, if any thing should make them fall away, it is sinne; but they cannot sinne, because the seed of regeneration and grace remaineth in them, *1. Iohn 3. 9.* And though
 30 the Church sleepe, yet her heart waketh, *Canticles 5. 2.* And if any thing make them faint, it is affliction and persecution; but these and all other crosseles *worke together for the best vnto them, that loue God, Romanes, 8. 28.* And therefore these are no hinderances, but furtherances rather to their saluation. Secondly, they are built
 35 and founded vpon the promise of God, *I will put my spirit into their hearts, so that they shall not depart from me, Ierem. 32. 40.* Therefore Christ doeth so preferue them by his power, preuent them by his grace, guard and guide them by his spirit, that they shall neuer fall away, and that none shall pluckethem out of his hand, *Iohn 10.*
 40 I adde further, that they are built vpon the trueth and fidelitie of his promise, *God is faithfull, and will not suffer you to be tempted aboue that you bee able, but will giue the issue with the temptation, that ye may*

Non coepisse,
sed perfecisse
virtutis est.

bee able to beare it, 1. Cor. 10. 13. Thirdly, vpon the prayer of Christ, who prayed, that they might bee kept from euill, Iohn 17. 15. that they might bee one in the Trinitie, as bee in the Father, and the Father in him, verse 21. that they may bee with him, and see his glorie, ver. 24. Now Christ was alway heard in that which hee prayed for, 5 Iohn 11. 42.

Lastly, vpon the life of Christ, which is communicated to all his liuing members, Gala. 2. verse 20. *When Christ which is their life shall appeare, then shall they also appeare with him in glory*, Col. 3. 4. *Quæst.* If they cannot altogether faint and fall away, why doeth the holy 10 Ghost make a doubt of it, as though they might? *Answer.* It is the will of God to moue vs to perseuerance, and to shirre vp our dullnesse by such speeches, that we should not be wanting to our selues in the vse of the meanes.

51

10 *While we haue therefore time, let vs do good vnto all men, but specially to them which are of the household of faith.*

In these words the Apostle doeth iterate the conclusion propounded in the sixt verse, as also in the ninth verse immediatly going before; that wee should doe the good wee can, while we haue time; and withall hee doth illustrate it both by *the obiect* to whom we must doe good, & by *the circumstance of time*, how long we must continue therein. And herein he answereth a secret demand, which might be made vpon the former rule; for whereas it might be thought 25 that the Gentiles which professe not the same religion with vs, were to be neglected, or at least, not so respected (as we reade, *Actes 6. 1.* the Grecians were neglected of the Ebrews in their daily ministry) the Apostle answereth, that we must not reſtraine our bountie and goodnesse only to those that are of the same religion with vs, but 30 enlarge it vnto all, *We must doe good vnto all men, but specially to them of the household of faith.*

In the words we may consider three things. First, the dutie it selfe, *Let vs do good*. Secondly, the obiect or persons to whom wee must do good, which is laid downe comparatiuely, *we must do good 35 to all, specially to those that are of the household of faith*. Thirdly, the circumstance of time, when and how long we are to doe good, *whilest we haue time*; of these in order, and first of the dutie.

This generall dutie of doing good, is recommended vnto vs by sundry arguments. The first may be taken from the maine 40 end and scope of a mans life in this world, which as *Paul* signifieth in this place, is nothing else but *to doe good*: and this doing of good

good standeth in three things: the first concerneth God, in praising, magnifying, and adoring his holy name. *David* had an eye to this end, when he desired to live for no other end, but that he might praise God, *O let my soule live, and it shall praise thee.* The second
 5 concerneth our selues, in seeking the kingdome of God, and the righteousnesse thereof, by making our calling and election sure by good, *2. Peter 1. 10.* His end of a mans life *Salomon* intimateth, when hee saith, *Let vs heare the ende of all; feare God, and keepe his Commandements, for this is the whole dutie of man, Eccles. 12. verse 13.*
 10 The third concerneth our brethren, in doing good vnto them so farre forth as possibly we can in the compasse of our calling: for it is the end of euery mans calling, in seruing of men to serue God; and this is that which *Paul* vrgeth in this place, to bee beneficiall vnto all.

15 The second may be taken from the example of God himselfe, *Wee must doe good to them, that hate vs, that wee may bee the children of our heavenly Father, Matthew 5. ver. 44 45.* For we are more conformable vnto God in doing good vnto others (it being an essentiall propertie in God to doe good to euery man, seeing that euery creature doeth drinke, or at the least talie of the sweet cuppe of
 20 Gods goodnesse, *Psalm 145. v. 9.*) then in receiuing good from them: for he receiueeth nothing from vs, as *David* saith, *My goodnes reacheth not to thee, Psalm 16. 2.* To the example of God we may adde the example of godly kings. The chiefest praise and commendation of *Hezekiah* and *Ioshiah*, is noted by their goodnes. Concerning
 25 the rest of the acts of *Hezekiah*, and his GOODNESSE, they are written — *2. Chro. 32. 32.* Concerning the rest of the acts of *Ioshiah* and his GOODNESSE, doing as it is written in the Law of the Lord, behold, they are written — *2. Chron. 35. 26, 27.* And
 30 this excellent name of goodnesse, or bountifullnesse, was (as it may seeme) by the law of nations, ascribed to Princes and Potentates, in that it best becomed them, as in name, so in the vertue it selfe, to expresse the diuine nature of God by, and therefore they were called, *εὐεργεταί*, that is, bountifull benefactors, or gracious Lords,
 35 *Luke 23 25.*

The third is drawne from testimonie, diuine and humane. Our Sauour Christ saith, *It is a blessed thing to giue, rather then to receiue, Actes 20. 35.* that is, to doe good, rather then to receiue good. * *Nazianzen* saith, that a man doeth resemble God in no propertie so
 40 much, as in doing good. And the heathen Oratour *Demosthenes* could say, that (a) doing of good, and speaking the truth, makes vs most like to God himselfe.

* Orat. 27.
 de pauperum
 amore, ἡδὴ
 ἔτι καὶ τὸ
 ποιεῖν ἀγαθόν
 ἐστι θεοῦ.
 a τὸ ἐπιμαρτυρεῖν
 καὶ ἀληθεύειν.

But

Bonum prophylacticum
vel conseruatiuum:
congregatiuum: communicatiuum.

But to consider this more particularly, *Goodnesse* is threefold, *Preseruing, Vniting, Communicating*: in all which particulars we are to practise this dutie. And first, for the *preseruing goodnesse*: we must do good not onely to our selues, but to others also, in labouring to keepe and preserue them from the contagion of sinne, from falling 5 from grace, or back sliding from their holy profession, by all good meanes, as by good example, and by gracious speeches seasoned with salt, &c. as *Barnabas* did, who comming to *Antioch*, and seeing the grace of God that was giuen them, was glad, and confirmed them therein, exhorting them, that with purpose of heart they would cleaue vnto the Lord. *Act. 11. 12.* and for this cause (as I take it) it is added, *v. 23.* that hee 10 was a good man, and full of the holy Ghost, and faith.

The *Vniting goodnesse*, is likewise to be practised, in setting men at Vnity, in reconciling those that are at variance, in making peace and amity, where there is nothing but enmity and dissention: for, 15 for this cause Christ calleth *peace-makers the children of God. Mat. 5. 10.* because herein they liuely resemble the goodnesse of God their heauenly Father, as any sonne doth resemble any quality or propertie in his naturall father: for he maketh men to be of one mind in an house, *Psal. 67.* 20

The *communicating goodnesse* (being especially vnderstood in this place) hath foure degrees. First, for *temporall things* we must communicate to the necessities of the Saints, *Rom. 12. 13.* And for *spirituall blessings*, we must remember the saying of *Peter*, *Let euery man as he hath receiued a gift, so minister the same vnto others, as good disposers 25 of the manifold fold grace of God, 1. Pet. 4. 10.*

Secondly, we must be plentiful in the works of mercy, not contenting our selues with this, that wee are beneficiall to some in relieuing them in their wants and necessities: but wee must be rich in good workes, *1. Tim. 6. 18.* *Charge them that are rich in this world, 30 that they be not high minded, that they doe good, and be rich in good workes, ready to distribute and communicate.* Wee must bee like *Tabitha* (or *Dorcas*) who cloathed the poore with the garments which shee made at her owne proper cost and charges, *Actes 9. 39.* and for this cause the holy Ghost giueth this testimonie of her, that shee 35 was rich or full of good workes and almes which shee did, verse 36. like to the vertuous woman, *Proverbes 31. 20.* who openeth the palme of her hands to the poore, and stretched out her hands to the needy: like *Iob*, of whom it is said, that the loines of the poore blessed him, *Iob 31. 20.* 40

Thirdly, wee must bee *much in goodnesse* (as the Scripture speaketh of God) that is, abundant in goodnesse, in communicating vnto

vnto others abundantly those blessings which the Lord hath stored vs withall: not onely in louing our brechren, for which the Thessalonians are commended, that their loue one towards another did abound; but in a liberall supplying of their wants, as *Paul* exhorts the Corinthians, that as they did abound in faith and loue, so they would abound in rich liberality. 2. Cor. 8. 7. as good *Obadiab* did, in spending his liuing, and venturing his life, in hiding an hundred of the Lords Prophets, from the furious rage of wicked *Iefabel*. 1. King. 18. 13.

10 Lastly, we must be exceeding or superabundant in goodnes; in exceeding measure (if it may be) in doing good; like the poore widow who had rather want her selfe, then be altogether wanting in contribution to the treasure of the Lords Temple: and therefore though it was but two mites which shee cast into the *Corban*, yet
15 Christ preferred it before all the rich mens offerings being put together, in that they gaue of their superfluitie, but shee of her penurie, cast in all that shee had, euen all her liuing. *Luk.* 21. 4. It is well said by *S. Ambrose*: We must relieue the wants of others according as wee are able, and sometime euen aboue our abilitie, as *Paul* witnesseth of the Co-
20 rinthians to their great commendation, that to their power, and beyond their power they were willing. 2. Cor. 8. 2.

Further, in doing good, we must obserue these rules. I. We must doe good of that onely which is our owne: for we may not cut a large and liberall shiue of another mans loafe (as the common saying is) we may not steale from one, to giue to another: or deale vn-
25 iustly with some, that we may be mercifull to others: or robbe *Peter*, to cloath *Paul*. The Lord abhorreth euen burnt offering, if it be of that which is gotten by rapine and (o) spoile. *Esa.* 61. 8. and hence it is that *Dauid* would not offer burnt offering without cost, of that
30 which was not his owne. 1. *Chron.* 21. 24.

II. We must doe good with chearefulnes and alacritie, for God loveth a chearefull giuer. 2. Cor. 9. *Ambrose* saith fitly and finely to this purpose, Well-doing ought to proceede from well-willing: for such as thine affection is, such is thy action. Therefore if we giue, we must doe it free-
35 ly, otherwise it is no gift: for what more free then gift? therefore wee may not play the hucksters in doing good, for that doth most blemish the excellencie of the gift: for as *Lactantius* saith, *Danda beneficia non sceneranda.*

III. Wee must so doe good, as that we doe not disable our
40 selues for euer doing good; but may continue in well doing, and as the *Psalmist* speaketh, bring forth more fruite in our age. *Salomon* commands that the streames of our wells should flow to others, yet so,

Offic. l. 2. c. 28
Necessitates
aliorum quan-
tum possumus
iutare debe-
mus, & plus
interdum
quam possi-
mus.

o holocaustū
de rapina.

Offic. l. 1. c. 30
Beneficentia
ex beneuolen-
tia manare
debet, affe-
ctus tuus no-
men imponit
operi tuo.

Instit. diuin.
lib. 2. cap. 12.

Psal. 52. 14.

as that the fountaine be still our owne. *Psal. 112.5. A good man is mercifull, and lendeth, and will guide his affaires with iudgement, that is, he will so discretely dispose and order all his actions, as that hee will keepe himselfe within his compasse; so beginning to doe good, as that he may continue: therefore the wise man saith, In the house of the wise there is a precious treasure, and oyntment, but a foolish man deuoureth it. Prou: 21.20.* All the disciples that were at Antioch, sent succour to the brethren which were in Iudea, in the great famine that was in the time of *Claudius Caesar*, yet euerie man according to his abilitie. *Act. 11.29.* for according to *Pauls* rule, we must not so giue, that others bee eased, and we our selues pinched. *2. Cor. 8.13.*

IV. We must doe all the good we can possibly within the compasse of our callings, and hinder all the euill. It will bee said, God (whose examdle wee are to follow) doth not all the good he can, neither doth he hinder all the euill. Therefore we are not bound to doe all the good, or preuent all the euill we can. I answer, in this particular we are not to imitate the example of God, and that for three causes. First, because we are subiect to the law, *Then shalt not doe euill that good may come of it. Rom. 3.8.* whereas God is not bound nor subiect to any Law, no not to his owne law, but is aboue it, and hath power to dispence with it. Secondly, because he is able to draw good out of euill, light out of darkenesse; which we cannot doe. Thirdly, because God is the *Generall* good, *we particular*. Now there is great difference betwixt these two, for it belongs to the nature of the *particular* good, to procure all the good that may be simply to euery one, and to hinder all euill: whereas to the nature of the *generall* or *uniuersall* good, three things appertaine. First, that all things should be good in some measure of goodnesse. Secondly, that some things should be better then others. Thirdly, that those things that are defectiue in goodnesse, that is, *euills*, should be ordained to the common good: as in a well ordered house, all the parts thereof are good in their kind. Secondly, some better then others, as *Paul* saith, *In a great house there are vessells of gold and siluer, of wood and stone, some for honour, and some for dishonour. 2. Tim. 2.20.* Thirdly, those that are destitute of goodnesse, as *sikes, draughts*, and other like places (seruing for base, though necessary vles) are ordained to the common good of the whole house, which it cannot want. And therefore it the master builder (to preuent these particular euills) should leaue them out of his building, hee should preiudice the common good of the whole house, which cannot be without them.

Thus much of the first part, namely the duty: Now I proceede to prosecute the second, which shewes first to whom we must doe good,

good, and secondly the order to be obserued therein. *Wee must doe good vnto all, but specially to: those which are of the household of faith.* Touching the first; It may seeme, that some among the Galatians were of the Pharises minde, who thought they were bound to loue their
 5 friends, but not their enemies; or of this perswasion that they were not bound in conscience to doe good vnto the heathen amongst whom they liued, as being professed enemies of Christ, and open persecuters of his Church. But *Paul* teacheth them and vs another lesson, when he commands vs to doe good vnto all; suitable to
 10 that of our sauour Christ, *loue your enemies, blesse them that curse you, doe good to them that hate you, pray for them that hurt you and persecute you. Math. 6. 44.* Let vs consider the good Samaritans practise: Albeit there was mortall hatred betwixt the Iewes and the Samaritans. *Ioh. 4. 6.* yet he seeing his deadly enemy wounded and halfe
 15 dead, had compassion vpon him; powred wine and oyle into his soares, bound vp his wounds, set him on his owne beast, brought him to an Inne, and made prouision for him; the like ought we to doe, euen to our enemies, as occasion shall serue, *Luk. 10. 30.* For if
 20 we must do good to our enemies beast, his ox or asse going astray, in bringing him home againe; *Exod. 23. 4.* Much more ought wee to doe good to our enemy himselfe. For the more beneficiall and communicatiue we shew our selues to bee, the greater goodnesse
 25 we shew to bee in vs, as the fountaine which powreth forth his streames vnto all, & the candle which standeth vpon a candlestick shineth vnto all, and not to it selfe being couered with a bushell.

The reasons why wee ought to doe good vnto all, (euen to our enemies) are principally *four*. The first may bee taken from the
 30 grounds of loue and beneficence, which are in all men, euen in the wicked themselves; now the grounds of loue are specially *three*: the first is the image of God, which beeing in all men, yea euen in prophane persons in part, ought to be the loadestone of loue to draw our affection vnto it. The second is communion and fellowship in the same nature, and therefore wee ought to bee beneficiall vnto men, because they are men; and though wee will
 35 not doe good *homini*, yet we must doe good *humanitati*, as the Philosopher said. The third is participation in the death of Christ, in that all men haue part in Christ as well as we (for any thing wee know.) Secondly God (whose example wee are to follow, as hath bene
 40 said) is good, and bountifull vnto all, causing his sunne to shine as well vpon the badde as the good, and his raine to fall as well vpon the ground of the vniust, as of the iust, beeing kinde vnto the vnkinde and to the wicked. Thirdly, we must doe to others as wee
 would

Math. 7. 12.

would they should doeto vs. Therefore if wee being in distresse, would be glad to receiue good at the hand of a wicked man, wee ought in the like case to doe good vnto him. Fourthly, our profession and thereward which we looke for, require this at our hands; for if we doe good vnto them onely that doe good vnto vs, or if we be friendly to those onely that doe good vnto vs, what singular thing doe we? for euen the Publicanes doe the like; and so hauing our reward here in this life, wee can expect none other after this life, *Math. 5. 47.*

The second point, (which containeth the order to be obserued in doing good,) is laid downe in these words, *Let vs doe good to all, but specially to those which are of the household of faith.* By *them* of the household of faith, wee are to vnderstand those which by faith are of the same family with vs, namely, of the same Catholike Church vpon earth; the house of God being often put to signifie the Church of God, as *1 Tim. 3. 15.* The house of God is called *the Church of God, the ground and pillar of truth, Hebr. 3. 2.* *Moses was faithfull in all Gods house,* that is, his Church: and thus this phrased is expounded, *Ephes. 2. 19. Yee are no more strangers and forreiners, but citizens with the Saints, and of the household of God.* So that by them of the household of faith, we must vnderstand onely the faithfull. Indeed among men, not onely children, but also manseruants, and maidseruants are counted to be of the family; but God accounts them to be of his house, that are Saints by calling, and sonnes by faith. The rest are bastards, and not sonnes, they are (it may be) in the house, but not of the house: for true sauing faith, doeth characterize those that are of the familie of faith; euen as fanaticall dreames, fantaslicall opinions, allegorizing of the literall sense of the Scripture, denying the resurrection of the flesh, do characterize those that are of the Family of loue.

Hauiing the meaning, consider the dutie, which is, to doe good principally to the faithfull, the Saints and seruants of God, that is; wee must doe good vnto them before others, and more then to others, which are not of the same family; as *Dauid* saith, *My wel doing reacheth not to thee, but to the Saints that are in the earth, and them that excell in vertue, Psal. 116. 2, 3.* For it is all one as if the Apostle should haue said, As it is fit and conuenient, that they that are of the same family should be helpfull and beneficiall one vnto another, rather then to those that are of another family: So it is requisite, that those which are members of the same body, nay sons and daughters, brethren and sisters, hauing the same God for their father, the same Church for their mother, Christ for their elder brother, be-

gotten

gotten of the same immortall seede, nourished with the same milke of the word, and looking for the same blessed inheritance: should rather be beneficiall one to another, then to those that are forrainers and strangers, no way linked vnto them by the bond of faith.

5 Now the reasons why we ought specially to doe good to them of the household of faith, may be these. First, because God loueth all his creatures, specially mankind, most especially the faithfull, vpon whom he doth bestow the riches of his loue, yea himselfe also: for though God be good vnto all, Psal. 145. 9. yet in a speciall sort
10 he is good to Israel, to them that are of a pure heart. Psal. 73. 1. He is a Saviour of all men, specially of those that beleene. 1. Tim. 4. 10. Secondly, because whatsoever is done to one of Gods Saints, is done vnto him, Matth. 25. 44. Thirdly, in respect of the excellencie of their persons, in that they are *sonnes of God, heires of his kingdome, members*
15 *of Christ, Temples of the holy Ghost, &c.*

Further, in that all the faithful are called a household & a family, this teacheth vs, that as we haue one bed and one board, one bread to feede vpon, and one cup whereof all drinke: so we should haue one minde and one heart, we should cleaue together, and hold together: for if they of the *Family of loue* ioyne together, why should
20 not we which are of the *family of faith* hold together? If those of the kingdome of darkenesse combine themselves together, as it is *Pf. 2. 2. The kings of the earth band themselves, and the Princes are assembled together, against the Lord, and against his Christ, Act. 4. 27. Doubt-*
25 *lesse against thine holy Sonne Iesus, whom thou hast annointed, both Herod and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles and people of Israel gathered themselves together. Psal. 83. 5, 6, 7, 8. They haue consulted together in heart, and haue made a league against thee; The tabernacles of Edom, and the Ishmaelites, Moab, and the Agarims, Geball, and Ammon, and Amalech, the Philistims, with the inhabitants of Tyrus: Ashur also is ioyned*
30 *with them: they haue bene an arme to the children of Lot.* How much more therefore ought the children of light to accompanie and comfort together? But the children of this world are wiser in their generation then the children of light. Nay the brute beasts may condemne vs in this point: for cattell heard together, sheepe flocke
35 together, fishes shole together, and (as the prouerbe is) birdes of a feather will flie together. What a shame is it therefore for vs, that are of the same family of faith, to fall out, making a rent in the coate, and a diuision in the body of Christ, by separating our selues
40 one from another, in affection of heart, and practise of life?

Againe, this may minister comfort to all the faithfull beeing vnder the crosse, to consider that they are of Gods family; and therefore

fore neede not doubt of the prouidence of God, but that he will prouide things necessarie for them, for he that prouideth not for his owne, and specially for them of his family, hath denied the faith, and is worse then an infidell.

Lastly, in that the faithfull are called a *family*, it sheweth that they are but few, euen a handfull in comparison of the world; for what is a familie to a countrie or a kingdome? Indeepe I grant, if those of the family of faith, be considered by themselves, they are many. *Matth. 8. 11.* I say vnto you, that *MANY* shall come from the East and from the West, and shall sit downe with Abraham, Isaac, and Iacob in the kingdome of heauen. Nay they are innumerable. *Apoc. 7. 9.* After these things I beheld, and loe, a great multitude, which no man could number of all nations and kindreds and people and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lambe, cleashed with long white robes, and palmes in their hands. But being compared with infidels, which shall bee condemned, they are but few, *Math. 7. 13. 14.* Enter in at the strait gate: for it is the wide gate and broad way that leadeth to destruction, and *MANIE* there bee which goe in thereat: Because the gate is strait, and the way narrow, that leadeth vnto life, and *FEW* there be that finde it. *MANY* are called, but *FEW* chosen. Here they are called a family, and a little flocke. *Luke 12. 32.* and a remnant. *Rom. 9. 27.* Let the Papists therefore brag of their Vniuersalitie and multitude, as much as they list, in the meane time, let vs not feare to ioyne our selues to the little flocke of Christ, and with them to goe on in the strait way to eternall life.

The order which we are to obserue in doing good to others, is elsewhere more distinctly set downe in Scripture: and it stands in these degrees. First, and principally, a man must do good to those of his familie, as to wife, children, seruants, *1. Tim. 5. 8.* If there be any that prouideth not for his owne, and especially for them of his household, hee hath denied the faith, and is worse then an infidell. Secondly, after those of our familie, we must doe good to our parents and progenitors. *1. Tim. 5. 4.* If any widow haue children or nephewes, let them (that is, those children or nephewes) learne first to shew godlinesse toward their owne house, and to recompence their parents. Marke, they must first doe good to their owne house, and then in the second place to their parents, that is, their fathers and mothers, if they be children; their grandfathers and grandmothers, if they be nephewes. Thirdly, after the two former, we must doe good to our kinred. *1. Tim. 5. 8.* If any prouide not for his owne—he hath denied the faith, &c. where by owne, we are chiefly to vnderstand, those poore widowes that are neare of blood, or kinred vnto vs; or generally all those that are

provideth not well translated, Namely.

by owne, not well translated Kinred.

are of our kinred in the flesh, who are therefore called *ours*, because they doe more neerely concerne vs, as being linked vnto vs by the bond of nature. They that are of our kinred, are to be respected, and relieued of vs in the third place, if they bee of the household of
 5 faith; otherwise the Saints of God, which are neither kith nor kinne vnto vs, are to be preferred before them. Fourthly, of strangers and forreiners, we are to doe good to the *faithfull* before others. Fifthly, and lastly, wee must be beneficiall *to all*, whether friends or foes, of our kinred, or strangers, of the house of God, or otherwise, as God
 10 in his prouidence shall offer them vnto vs: for so Paul saith, *Wee must doe good vnto all men*. It will be said, we are to loue all men alike (seeing we must loue our neighbours as our selues) and therefore wee must doe good to all men alike, not respecting the faithfull more then others. I answer, our loue of our brethren, is lesse
 15 or greater, either in respect of the *object*, in wishing a greater or a lesse good vnto them: and thus we must loue all men alike, in wishing to them eternall life: or in respect of the *intention of our loue*, in hauing a greater desire of the good of some, then of other some: and thus we are not bound to loue, or to doe good to all alike. For
 20 as S. Bernard saith, *Meliorum amor affectus, indigentiorum maior effectus tribuendus*.

This doctrine inuested with the former examples, may shame the base, seruile, and beggerly liberalitie of the common sort of men, which professe the Gospel, whose hands are tied to their pur-
 25 ses, and their heart, locked to their chests, who are so extreemely miserable, that they neither doe good to others, nor yet to themselves. Secondly, it condemneth them which are so vnnatural, that they forget all dutie to their kinred and acquaintance in the flesh. Thirdly, those that will doe good to none, but to those that
 30 haue done good to them: this is right the Pharisies righteousness, to loue our friends, and hate our enemies; the goodnes of the Publican, to lend to those, of whom they looke for the like. Lastly, those who are so full of the poison of malice and reuenge, that being once incensed, they can neuer be appeased, till they crie quit-
 35 tance with those that offend them.

The third thing to be considered in the words, is the circumstance of time, *we must doe good to all, while we haue time*.

Here sundry points are to be obserued.

1. If wee must doe good while wee haue time, we must make a
 40 holy and profitable vse of our time, (the rarest iewel and greatest of all earthly treasures) because time will not alway last: and therefore wee must take time while it is time, seeing time and tide will

tarry for no man. Let vs consider what a shame it is, that the children of this world should be wiser in their generation then wee, who professe our selues to be the children of light. The Marriner or sea-faring man who obserues winde and weather, taketh the opportunity of the time: the traouler or way-faring man takes day before him, and trauaileth while it is light. The Smith striketh the yron while it is hot, for when it is cold, it is too late to strike. The Lawyer taketh his time, to wit, the Tearme time, for entertaining of his Clients, and following of his suits: for when the Tearme is ended, his time is gone. Now it is alway Tearme time with Christians, every present day, euen this present time, is their Tearme time: therefore if wee will not shew our selues more carelesse and negligent, nay more absurdly foolish, or desperatly madde then all men, we must take the opportunity that is offered to doe good, and vse the precious time which God in mercy affordeth vs, to his glory, our comfort, and the good of others. Time and opportunity of doing good, is hieroglyphically resembled by the head of a man that hath locks of haire before, which a man may take hold of, but hath none behind; whereby is signified, that when opportunity is past, there is no possibility left to doe good. We must not therefore let slippe any good occasion, but take hold of it at first, when it is offered. Hence it is that the Apostle, *Hebr. 3. 13.* biddeth vs exhort one another, while it is called to day. And the wise man, *Prou. 3. 28.* Say not to thy neighbour, goe and come againe, and to morrow will I giue thee, if thou now haue it. For he may dye, and so cannot come againe, or by thy delaying of him, may be discouraged from comming, or thou maist be hardened against him, or maist with the rich man in the Gospel, bee suddainly taken away from thy riches, or thy riches taken from thee. Our Sauiour biddeth vs walke in the light, while wee haue light. *Ioh. 12. 35.*

II. If we must doe good while we haue time, we must obserue the Apostles golden rule, *Ephes. 5. 16.* Redeeme the time: which is nothing else, but so to employ it, and vse the benefit of it, as that we suffer it not to slippe away from vs without fruite or profit, either for sloth and idlenes, or by reason of vaine and transitory pleasures, or other occasions of this life: but to gaine that time we formerly lost by negligence, with double diligence, yea to redeeme it with the losse of our ease, our pleasures, our profits. And we shall the better practise this dutie, if we consider that time is short, precious, irrevocable: it is short, and therefore to bee guided by diligence: it is precious, and therefore to be redeemed by an high estimate and account of it, in not being too lauish of it: in bellowing it vpon

Fronte capil-
lata est, post
est occasio
caluo.

our friends, not vpon our enemies : in placing it as a iewell in our golden age, and wearing it in our new garments, as the robes of Christ his righteouſneſſe, and not (as a pearle in a ſwines ſnowt) in the rotten ragges of ſinne and wickedneſſe. Laſtly it is
 5 *irreſcuable*, and therefore it is to be redeemed by taking the opportunity thereof.

III. Paul commanding vs to doe good while we haue time, would haue vs know times and ſeaſons ; to obſerue the ſhortneſſe of time, to number our daies that we may apply our hearts to wiſe-
 10 dome. The not knowing and obſeruing of time, is a ſinne much inueighed againſt by our Sauour Chriſt, *Math. 16. 3. O hypocrites, you can diſcerne the face of the ſkie, and can yee not diſcerne the ſignes of*
the times ? Luk. 12. 56. why diſcerne ye not this time ? the Lord doth
 15 preferre the very brute beaſts before his people, becauſe they know their appointed times and ſeaſons, whereas his people knew not the time of mercy and grace, which was offered vnto them. *Euen the Storke in the ayre knoweth her appointed times, the turtle, and the crane, and the ſwallow, obſerue the time of their comming, but my people*
 20 *knoweth not the iudgement of the Lord. Ier. 8. 7.* And Chriſt threatneth Ieruſalem, that one ſtone ſhould not be left vpon another, *becauſe they knew not the time of their viſitation. Luk. 19. 44.* And verily of all follies and ignorances, this is the greateſt, not to know the day of
 25 our viſitation, the acceptable time, the day of ſaluation, when God offereth mercy, by riſing early and calling vs by the miniſtery of his word, and ſtretching out his hands all the day long. *Rom. 10. 21.* For if he ſtand at the doore of our hearts, and knocke by the ſound of his word outwardly, by the motion of his Spirit inwardly, by
 30 his threatnings, by his promiſes, by his iudgements, by his mercies, by his tolerance and long ſuffering, and yet for all that we will not open nor liſten vnto him, we ſhall ſtand with the five fooliſh virgins, and knocke at his mercie gate, and ſay, *Lord, Lord, open vnto vs,* when it will be too late, when heauen ſhall be ſhut againſt
 35 vs. *Math. 25. 11, 12.* For, for this cauſe among others, they are called *fooliſh virgins*, becauſe they conſidered not the time of the bridegrooms comming.

Here it will be ſaid, obſeruing of time is forbidden. *Gal. 4. 10* *Yee obſerue dayes, and times, and moneths, and yeares, I am afraid of you, leaſt I haue ſpent on you labour in vaine.* Anſw. There is a twofold
 40 obſeruing of time good, and euill ; lawfull, and unlawfull. Vnlawfull and ſuperſtitious obſervation of times, is, when religion is placed in the keeping of them, in an opinion that they bind the conſcience to

i Egyptian
dayes.

k Mense ma-
lum Maio nu-
bere vulgus
ait.

Lucius.

plu. rdo. dno.
regior.

the strict obseruing of them, as their Iubilies, feasts of the Pas-
ouer, of weekes, of Tabernacles, Calends, new moones, &c. *Heat-
enish*, when times are obserued in respect of good, or badde successe:
as when men make two (1) vnluckie dayes in euery moneth, in re-
gard of health: when they count leape yeare ominous, as *Valenti-
man* did, who beeing newly created Emperour, would not come
forth and shew himselfe the bissex of Februarie. Not (k) to marry in
the moneth of May. To obserue Planetarie houres, and Clima-
ticall yeares, the Horoscope or time of a mans birth, and the posi-
tion of the heauens at that time. Both these kindes are forbidden. 10
Paul was afraid of the *Galatians*, first, because they obserued *dayes
and moneths and yeares*, that is, lewish ceremonies, and beggerly rudi-
ments. Secondly, because they obserued *times or seasons*, that is, hea-
thenish superstitions mentioned before. And assuredly, besides the
vnlawfulness of this practise, it is also vaine euen in the iudgement 15
of the heathens themselues. *Alexander* the Great, commanded the
Macedonian souldiers (which had not beene accustomed to fight
in Iune, because it had beene ominous vnto them) that they should
call it *Iuly*, and so got the victorie ouer *Darius*. *Lucullus* beeing to
fight with *Tigranes* vpon an vn lucky day, in which *Cepio* was over- 20
come of the *Cimbrians*. *Caesar* (said he) make it fortunate to the Ro-
manes, and got the victorie. And who knoweth not that the selfe
same day hath beene fortunate or luckie to some (as they vse to
speake,) vnfortunate and vnluckie to others? The same day was
Craesus slaine by the Parthians, and *Pachor* king of Parthia taken by 25
Ventidius. The same day was vnto *Pompey*, the day of his birth, and
the day of his death. The same day was to *Fredericke* the second,
his coronation day, and his funerall day.

The lawfull obseruing of time is two fold; *Humane, Diuine*. *Hu-
mane* is three fold, *Naturall, Ciuill, Ecclesiasticall*. *Naturall* is, the ob- 30
seruing of the motion of the sunne, the moone, & the starrs, whose
reuolutions make times and seasons, dayes, moneths, yeares: the
obseruing of the foure quarters or seasons of the yeare, spring, sum-
mer, autumn, winter: The Eclipses of the sunne and moone:
the full moone, the wane, the change: The time of cutting timber, 35
of planting, sowing, &c. in obseruing wherof, a great part of *Astro-
nomic, Philosophie, and husbandry* is employed.

Ciuill is, when times are obserued in regard of pollicie, or of
the good of the Common wealth, as Faire times, market times,
tearme times, &c. the Spring, as fit time for Kings to goe forth 40
to warre, 2. *Sam.* 4. 11. The keeping of Lent, fasting dayes, Em-
ber weekes, all are in a ciuill respect for the breed of cattell, the
main-

maintenance of nauigation, and the plentie of all things.

Ecclesiastical, when set times are obserued in the Church for order sake, without superstition, or opinion of worship: as among the Iewes the feast of Purim, *Eph. 9. 26.* the feast of the Dedication, *Iob. 5. 10. 22.* Amongst Christians, festiuall daies: as the feast of the Natiuitie, of circumcision, of the resurrection, and ascension of Christ: these and such like solemnities, appointed for our thanksgiuing and humiliation, are not vnlawfull, if they bee enioyned by lawfull authoritie, and kept in good manner.

Dining is, when vpon the consideration of the shortnesse and vncertaintie of our liues, wee prepare our selues against God shall call vs, and so number our daies that we apply our hearts to wisdom. *Psal. 90.* Or, obseruing the day of Gods mercifull visitation, we take the opportunitie and vse the meanes that is offered, for our conversion and saluation. Or, obseruing the time of Gods visitation in iudgement and indignation, we hide our selues vnder the couert of his wings. *Prou. 22. 3.*

IV. Hence we learne, that there is no possibility of doing good, or beeing beneficiall vnto others after this life, for *Paul* biddeth vs doe good while we haue time, thereby insinuating, that after death, all possibilitie of doing good is cleane cut off. The time allotted to doe good, beeing included within the limits of this life, *The dead that dye in the Lord rest from their labours. Renel. 14. 13.* Therefore no good workes are performed after this life. *Paul* beeing aged and readie to dye, the tearme of his life beeing almost expired, saith, *I haue finished my course, 2. Tim. 4. 7.* which could not be truely said, if hee were to performe any good workes after his death, *2. Corinth. 5. 10.* We must giue account for all things wee haue done in the body, that is, in this life. Where it is to bee obserued, that the Apostle speaking of all the workes whereof wee are to giue account, doth confine them within the compasse of this life; therefore no workes can bee done after this life be ended. Let vs heare the testimonie of the auncient. *Cyprian to Demetrius. Quando istinc excessum est, nullus locus poenitentiae est, nullus satisfactionis effectus. Ierome. Dum in praesenti saeculo sumus, sine orationibus, sine consiliis invicem posse nos coadiuvare; cum autem ante Christi tribunal venerimus, non Iob, non Daniel, nec Noe rogare posse pro quoquam, sed unumquemque portare onus suum.* And againe, *In hac vita, licet nobis quod volumus seminare: quando transierit, operandi tempus auferetur, &c.* Hence I gather two things. First, that the doctrine of Purgatory is a meere fable, because there is no time after this life be ended, left to doe good, either to our selues or others, and therefore not to worke righteousness,

to repent, or to satisfie the iustice of God, which the popish sort say is done in Purgatory. But what should I stand to batter the paper walles of Purgatory with the canon of the Scripture, which were long agoe burnt to ashes, by the fire of the word?

Secondly, seeing all opportunitie, nay all possibilitie of doing good is confined in the compasse of this life, every man must follow the counsell of the wise man *Salomon*, *All that thy hand shall find to doe, doe it with all thy power; for there is neither worke nor inuention, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in the graine whither thou goest*, Eccles. 9. 10. *Dauid* saith, *in the graine no man wil or can praise God*. And this is the cause wherefore *Paul* doeth so instantly vrge all men to take the present opportunitie, *Behold, now is the acceptable time: behold, now is the day of saluation*, 2. Cor. 6. 2.

V. Hence we are taught to account euery day, euen this present day, as the day of death, or the day of iudgement: for we must doe all the good we can *while we haue time*, now our time is the instant, or present time, for we are vncertaine whether we shall liue till to morrow or no, *I am*. 4. 14. Therefore looke what we would doe at the houre of death, if wee were now at the last gaspe, panting for breath, or if we did see *Christ* comming in the clouds to iudgment; the very same thing we ought to do euery day, with like zeale and seruencie of spirit, to praise and magnifie the mercy and goodnesse of God; with like feare and trembling, to worke out our saluation, and to seeke reconciliation; with like loue and sinceritie of affection, to be beneficiall vnto our brethren, &c.

Who be men
of good wills,
but bad deeds

VI. This doctrine meeteth with all miserable minded men, who hauing great meanes and opportunitie of doing good, yet let slip, or rather cut off all occasions that might induce them thereto, who in a brutish mind like to the swine, neuer doe good, nor profit any, till their dying day. I speake not against the laudable custome of bequeathing goods to godly uses, by a mans last will and testament; but against those that do little or no good all their life long, till the houre of death: Let these men consider, that as the late repentance of malefactors, a little before their death, is commonly but a ceremoniall repentance: so the funerall beneficence of those who giue little or nothing all their life, is vsually no free, but a formall, and extorted gift: formall, in doing as others do: extorted, in that it is giuen to stop the mouth of an accusing conscience; The vitall beneficence is that which God accounteth of, and by so much to bee preferred before the other, but how much it doth evidently declare a more liuely faith in the prouidence of God, and a more vntained loue of our brethren. Again, they giue testimony, that they

they trust not in vncertaine riches, but in the living God. Lastly, they haue the benefit of poore mens praiers, (to whom they are beneficial,) which otherwise they should want.

VII. The circumstance of time hath heere the force of an argument, for it inforceth the exhortation much, that we should doe all the good we can, and take the benefit of the opportunitie, because time will not alway last: the holy Ghost in sundry places of Scripture, from the consideration of the shortnesse of our time, enforceth the duties of faith, repentance, new obedience, as 1. Cor. 7. v. 29, 30, 31. *And this I say brethren, because the time is short, hereafter that both they that haue wines, bee as though they had none: and they that weepe, as though they wept not: and they that reioyce, as though they reioyced not. Hebr. 3. v. 7 8. To day if yee will heare his voice, harden not your hearts: and v. 13. Exhort one another daily, while it is called to day. The*
 15 *godly in all ages haue practised this dutie. Peter knowing that the time was at hand, that hee was to lay downe his tabernacle, stirres vp himselfe to greater diligence in his calling, and saith, I will not be negligent to put you in remembrance of these things, so long as I am in this tabernacle, seeing I know the time is at hand that I must lay*
 20 *it downe, as our Lord Iesus Christ hath shewed mee, 2. Pet. 1. 12, 13, 14. The Church prayeth thus to God, Teach vs to number our dayes, that is, so to consider the shortnesse, vncertainie, and vanitie of our life, that wee may apply our hearts to wisdome, Psal. 90. 12. But wicked mens practise is cleane contrary, for they take occasion vpon the*
 25 *shortnesse of their time, to liue as they list, to take their pleasures, and to follow the lusts of their hearts: therefore they say, Let vs eat and drinke, for to morrow we shall die. Esay 22. 13. Our life is short and tedious, and our time is as a shadow that passeth away — Come therefore and let vs enjoy the pleasures that are present. Wisd. 2. vers. 1, 5, 6. And*
 30 *hence it is, that some spend their time in eating and drinking, and going gorgeously, and faring deliciously euery day; other in gaming, carding, dicing, rioting, reuelling, and (as the tearme is) in swaggering, wherein they follow their father the diuell, who is therefore more full of wrath, knowing that hee hath but a short time,*
 35 *Apocal. 12. 12. To these wee may adde all such idle persons, as follow no vocation, or trade of life, but day after day, and yeare after yeare, are still deuising new pastimes (as they call them) to trifle the time away. These men hasten the iudgements of God, and pull it vpon them before God in flict it. It is a great iudgement of God for a man to bee in that case, that in the morning hee*
 40 *shall say, would God it were euening, and in the euening, would God it were morning, Dent. 28. 67. In this case is euery idle loiterer, who through*

idlenesse is weary of himselfe, and grieued the time passeth away so slowly: and to these *qui nihil agunt*, wee may ioine them *qui male agunt*, and those also *qui aliud agunt*, all which are condemned in this text; and against them *Titus* the heathen Emperour shall rise in iudgement, and shall condemne them, because hee remembering on a time as he sate at Supper, that he had trifled away the day in doing nothing, said, *Amici, hodie diem perdidisti*: Friends, I haue lost this day.

11 Yee see how large a letter I haue written vnto you with mine owne hand. 10

Here beginneth the conclusion, being the third generall part of this Epistle, consisting of two parts: an *Insinuation*, in the 11. verse, and a *Recapitulation* in the verses folowing. He insinuateth himselfe into the minds of the Galatians by a twofold argument. First from 13 the largenesse of his Epistle, *Ye see how large a letter I haue written*: secondly, from the instrumentall cause, in that he writ it *with his owne hand*: where hee gives authoritie to it, and a kinde of eminencie aboue his other letters. And in both he commendeth his diligence, loue, and care which he had of them. 20

The word translated, *ye see*, is ambiguous, and may be taken either as a commandement, *See how large a letter I haue written*: or as an assertion, *Ye see*-. The like ambiguity is in the word *paivēde*, *Phil. 2.5.* and may be read either thus, *amongst whom you doe shine*: or *see that you shine as starres*. It is not materiall in whether exception 25 it be taken, seeing the sense is all one.

The first argument to moue the Galatians to attention, and acceptance of *Pauls* paines, and good affection, is taken from the largenes of his Epistle. The word in the originall translated *large*, is strangely wrested by sundry interpreters, without cause. * *Hilary* 30 referring it to the loftinesse of sentences: *Hyperius* to the profundity and depth of matter: *Ierome* to the greatnes of the character: *Chrysostome* and *Theophylact*, to the badnes of his hand, as not being able to write well; *Haimo* to the Hebrew character, in which hee wrote: whereas the word doth not onely signifie *quality*, but as properly *quantity*, as *Heb. 7.4.* *Consider how great this man was*. And the word that answereth vnto it, signifieth as wel quantitie, as quality. *Coloss. 2.1.* *I would ye knew what great fight I haue* — *1am. 3.5.* *Behold, how great a thing a little fire kindleth?* The plaine & simple meaning: before of *Paul* is this, that he never wrote so long an Epistle with 40 his owne hand vnto any Church, as vnto them. Hee writ indeed the Epistle to *Philemon* with his owne hand, but that was short in.

compa-

comparison of this. And he wrote larger Epistles to other Churches, as to the Romanes, Corinthians, &c. but by his Scribes, not with his own hand. Therefore seeing this is the longest, and largest letter that euer *Paul* writ with his owne hand, it ought to be more
 5 regarded, and better accepted: So that as his paines were greater in writing, our diligence should bee greater in reading and observing the same.

This shewes *Pauls* great care of the Churches, not onely when he was present, but when he was absent. How painefull he was being among them to winne them to the Gospel, how fearefull when
 10 hee was absent from them, lest their minds should bee leavened by false teachers: how faithfull both present and absent.

And it may serue as a president to all Pastours, hauing cure of soules, to vse the like diligence and conscience in their Ministerie;
 15 that being absent in body from their charge vpon necessary occasions (as *Paul* was) yet they would be present in spirit with them: & present by their letters; that so they may testifie to al the world, that they haue a greater care of the flocke, then of the fleece.

It further teacheth vs, that if the Minister being caried with discreet zeale for the good of the Church, goe further either in word,
 20 or writing, then he intended, or is thought fit by some: (as it seemes *Paul* did in this place, for what needs this large letter (may some say,) a shorter would haue done as well) that we are not to censure him, or limit & prescribe him. It had bin a great fault in the Galatians, if they had found fault with *Paul* for his large letter; and in the
 25 disciples and Iewes if they should haue blamed his long Sermon, which continued at one time from morning to night, *Acts* 28.23. at another time, from the closing of the euening til midnight, *Acts* 20.7. And so it is in many hearers, who are too curious and strict in
 30 prescribing and limiting their teachers to the time, longer then which they cannot patiently endure. And in stinting them, in vrging this or that point, in saying hee misse his *Rhetoricke*, his *Epimone* was too long, he was overseene in dwelling so long vpon the point: it had bin better, a word and away, &c.

His second argument is taken from the instrumentall cause, that he wrote it with his owne hand. * *Haimo* saith, it is the opinion of
 35 the Doctors, that *Paul* wrote not this whole Epistle with his owne hand, but onely from hence to the end: which opinion is confuted by the very text, *You see how large a letter I HAVE WRITTEN*
 40 *TE N* with mine owne hand: speaking of the whole Epistle, in the time past: or if of any one part more then of another, of the former part, rather then of the latter. Secondly, his assertion is

not

*In hac Epistola sicut tradunt Doctores, ab hoc loco vsq; ad finem, propria manu scripsit.

b Vbi hologra-
pha manus, fal-
sum dici non
potest.

c In ceteris
subscribebat
quidem, hic
vero totam
epistola scripsit.
d Totam (vt
videtur) hanc
scripsit Episto-
lam.

e Et si sum mi-
nime apprimē
scribendi peri-
tus; compulsus
sum tamen vel
mea manu hanc
ad vos Epist.
scribere.

f Epistolam
istam scripsi
ego propria
manu.

Non Notarii
manu, sed mea.

g His verbis
omnes Epistolas
subscribebat:
excepta Gala-
tarum, quam ex
integro manu
propria per-
scripsit.

h Intelligite
quam non ti-
meam, qui lite-
ras manu mea
nuper scripsi.

not true, for (if we except *Ierome*) none of the Ancients (as I take it) are of that opinion. Not ^b *Ambrose*, who saith, *Where the whole writing is his owne hand, there can be no falsehood.* Not ^c *Chrysostome*, who saith, *To the rest of his Epistles he did subscribe, but this whole Epistle he writ himselfe.* Not *Primasius*, vling the word *perscripsit*, that he writ it through with his owne hand. Not ^d *Theodoret*, affirming that it seemes *Paul* writ the whole Epistle. Not ^e *Theophylact*, who bringeth in *Paul* speaking to them in this manner; *I am enforced to write this Epistle vnto you with mine owne hand.* Not *Oecumenius*, who calls it, *ἡ ἐξ αὐτοῦ ἐπιστολή*, an Epistle written with his owne hand. Not ^f *Anselme*, who paraphrasing the text, saith, it is all one as if he had said; *This Epistle I writ with mine owne hand.* And a little before, *Not with the Scribes hand, but with mine owne hand*: (albeit *Anselme* cannot so preiudice his assertion, who liued long after him.) Not the author of the Commentary vpon the Epistles ascribed to *Ierome*, *Tom. 9.* for he vpon the *2. Thess. 3. 17.* saith plainly, *With these words hee subscribes all his Epistles, excepting that to the Galatians, which hee writ from the beginning to the end with his own hand.* And vpon these very words which we now entreat of, ^h *See how I am not afraid, which of late time haue written with mine owne hand.* (Where by the way, we may obserue, that *Ierome* is not the author of those Commentaries being so contrary to himselfe.) This I confesse is a light matter, and not to be stood vpon, were it not that some are too hastie to swallow whatsoeuer comes in their way, vnder the title of the *Doctors*. It must therefore be as a caueat vnto vs, not to be too credulous in beleeuing euery one that shall auouch this or that to be the opinion of the Fathers, no though it be affirmed by a Father, especially by such a one as draweth neere the dregs, as *Haimo* doth.

It is certen then, that *Paul* writ this whole Epistle with his own hand: the reasons are these. First, that it might appeare vnder his hand, that he was no changeling, but the same man that he was before, in that he did not preach circumcision, or the obseruation of Iewish ceremonies, as the false Apostles slandered him. *Gal. 5. 11.* Secondly, that this his letter was not counterfaiued by another, and sent in his name, as the false Apostles might haue objected, and the Galatians suspected. Thirdly, that he might testifie his sincere loue towards them, and how he did (as it were) trauaile in paine of the, till Christ were formed in them, shunning no labour that might further their saluation.

We may hence further obserue a threefold difference of the bookes of Scripture in the new Testament. Some were neither written by an Apostle, nor subscribed: as the Gospel of *Marke*, and

Luke

Luke. Some subscribed, but not written : as the Epistle to the Romanes, and others. Some both written, and subscribed : as this Epistle, and that to *Philemon*, verse 19. *I have written it with mine owne hand : I will recompense it —*. Now that *Paul* subscribed every
 5 Epistle with his owne hand, hee himselfe witnesseth, *2. Thessalon.*
 3. 17. *The salutation of mee Paul with mine owne hand, which is a signe in euery Epistle* (that it is mine, and not forged in my name by another) *so I write ; The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ bee with you all.* In which place he warneth the Thessalonians againe of false teachers,
 10 and forged letters : for, *2. Thessalon. 2. 2.* hee had besought them *they would not be troubled by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter, as though it came from him —*. And here he sheweth how they may know whether the Epistle be his or not : if it haue this signe, it is mine, els it is counterfeit: for this note or marke is to bee found in all and euery one of
 15 my Epistles. Now these words [*which is a signe in euery Epistle*] cannot bee meant (as some are of opinion) of the former words onely, viz. *The salutation of me Paul with mine owne hand.* First, because hee saith, it is a signe in euery Epistle, whereas it is onely to be found. *1. Cor. 16. 21. Galat. 6. 11. Col. 4. 18. 2. Thess. 3. 17. Philem. v. 19.* and not in
 20 any other of his Epistles. Secondly, the words, *so I write*, should bee false, if they be referred onely to the former words, because that manner of salutation, is not to be found in euery Epistle, (as I haue already shewed.) And except they be referred to the words following, *The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, &c.* they haue either none, or a
 25 very hard construction. Thirdly, it *Pauls* salutation (which he affirmeth to bee a certaine note of his Epistle) bee vnderstood of these words, *The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, &c.* it agreeth vnto all (as *Anselme* confesseth) whereas being meant of the former words onely, it doth not agree to all, but to a few : and yet *Paul* makes it, a
 30 generall, infallible note, and signe of euery Epistle. Besides, *Ambrose* and *Primasius*, in their Commentaries vpon the place, as also the Author of the Commentaries which goeth vnder *Ieroms* name, affirme, the signe whereby we may know *Pauls* Epistles from counterfeitte, and forged Epistles, to consist in these words : *the grace of our*
 35 *Lord, &c.* *Chrysost.* and *Theodoret* likewise say, that *Paul* calleth the salutation, a benediction, or blessing, which is in the end of the Epistle : and a little after, *Hence we learne that he was accustomed to write these words, The grace, &c. in stead of adieu or farewell vnto them.* And *Haimo* (long after) expounds these words, *so I write, how?* (saith he) *even thus as it*
 40 *followeth, The grace of our Lord, &c.* I graunt it is probable that *Paul* writ his owne name in the end of euery Epistle (whether in the Greeke tongue, and in the Hebrew characters (as *Haimo* affirmeth))

I leaue

Salutationem appellauit benedictionem quæ in fine fita est.

Hinc ergo discimus, quod hoc, Gratia Domini, &c. pro eo quæ est vale scribere consueverat.

I leaue it as vncertaine) and that by the salutation or signe of his Epistle, his name written with his owne hand, is in part to bee vnderstood: yet it is not onely nor principally meant. The certaine signe therefore of his Epistles, is beside the subscription of his owne name, the farewell that he giues them in these words, *The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you all*, or the like to the same effect; I say to the same effect, because these very formall words, are not to bee found in euery of *Pauls* Epistles. Therefore *Caietan* is farre wide, who taketh the entire and formall salutation, as it is litterally set downe. 2. *Theff.* 3. 17. to bee a note that the Epistle is his, so that if it want any one word, either the Epistle is not *Pauls*, or there is some defect in the text: for hereupon hee concludes that the Epistle to the Colossians onely, hath something wanting in the farewell or salutation, because it is said, *Grace be with you*: and not *the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you*, as it is in all his other Epistles. But first, it is an vntruth, for they are not onely wanting in the Epistle to the Colossians, but also in the first to *Timothy*, and in that to *Titus*, where it is onely said, *Grace be with thee*, *Grace be with you all*. Secondly, it is a flat mistaking of the text, for *Pauls* meaning was not in euery Epistle to tie himselfe precisely to so many words and syllables: but to commend them to the grace of Christ: sometime making expresse mention of Christ, sometime concealing his name: yet so as that it is alway vnderstood, though not expresse.

Coloss 4. 18.

1. Tim. 6. 21.
Tit. 3. 25.

12 *As many as make a faire shew in the flesh, compell you to be circumcised, onely because they would not suffer persecution for the crosse of Christ.*

From hence to the end, is laid downe the second part of the conclusion, which I call a *Recapitulation*, wherein the Apostle doth very artificially (as orators are accustomed) repeat those things which he would haue specially to be remembred, the maine points handled in the Epistle. First, that neither circumcision is necessary to iustification, nor the ceremoniall law to saluation. Secondly, that the false Apostles vrging the obseruation of the law as a thing necessary to saluation, sought not herein Gods glorie, or the edification of their hearers, but their owne ease, and freedome from the crosse, and persecution. Thirdly, that Christ crucified is the onely thing that iustifies a sinner without the workes of the Law. Fourthly, that the true religion standeth not in outward things, but in the renouation of the inward man.

In

In this verse and the next following, *Paul* describes the false apostles by five properties: three whereof are laid downe in this verse. The first is, that *they make a faire shew*. The second, that *they*
 5 *compell them to the observing of their devised religion*. The third, the end and scope they aime at, that they may alway bee in the Sunshine, living at ease, and having the world at will; *onely because they would not suffer persecutions for the crosse of Christ*.

First, the Apostle saith, that *they make a faire shew in the flesh*: which is taken diuersly, for it signifieth sundry things. First, to
 10 make an outward glorious shew according to the flesh, as that they were true Israelites of the seed of *Abraham*, &c. Of which boasting *Paul* speakes, *2. Cor. 11. 18. Seeing that many glory after the flesh, I will glorie also. They are Israelites, so am I: they are the seed of Abraham, so am I*. Secondly, to please the Israelites, which are after the flesh,
 15 and to approue themselves vnto them, which held the keeping of the ceremoniall law. Thirdly, to vaunt themselves to the Iewes, and them of the circumcision, of the Galatians, whom they had circumcised in the flesh, as beeing made proselytes, and wonne to their profession by their meanes. Lastly, to pretend great zeale
 20 and religion in outward obseruing of the law, standing in carnall rites and bodily exercises, as circumcision, meats, purification, and the like: which carnall rites the Apostle opposeth to spiritual worship, *Rom. 12. 1.* and to the new creature, *v. 16.* of this chapter: and bodily exercise (which profiteth little) to true piety, and the sincere
 25 practise thereof, which is profitable for all things, *1 Tim. 4. 8.* The words may be taken in all these acceptions, though principally in the last.

Here wee haue a notable propertie of false teachers, which is, to set a faire face vpon the matter, to carrie all before them with
 30 a smooth countenance, and in outward appearance to excell. For as Satan, though a blacke deuill, an angel of darkenesse, doeth change himselfe into a white deuill, as though he were an Angell of light, so that a man can hardly distinguish his wicked suggestions, from the good motions of the spirit of God, and therefore may
 35 say, as *Ioshua* said to the Angel, *Art thou on our side, or on our aduersaries? Iosh. 5. 13.* So his instruments transforme themselves, as though they were the Apostles of Christ, and Ministers of righteousness, *2. Cor. 11. 13, 15.*

In the olde Testament, false prophets were accustomed
 40 outwardly to conformance themselves to the habite and attire of the holy men of God, in wearing a rough garment, as *Elias*, and the rest of the Prophets did, *Zachar. 13. 4.* Vnder the new Testament,

stament; in the time of Christ, the Pharisees in hypocrisie, vnder a shew of long prayer, deuoured widdowes houses, *Matthew* 23.

14. In the Apostles time, false teachers with their will-worship, as *Touch not, taste not, handle not*, (which had a shew of wisdom in voluntary religion, and humbleness of minde, and not sparing the body) did vndermine the Religion of God, *Colossians* 2.21, 22, 23.

And after that, in the primitive Church, the heretikes called *Catharists*, vnder a shew of holiness, fasting, prayer, &c. did sowe most damnable heresies in the Church.

And as in former times, the Iewes vnder the glorious titles of *the children of Abraham*, *the scholars of Moses*, *the Temple of the Lord*, *the Temple of the Lord*, made many Profelytes by deceiuing the soules of the simple: So, at this day, vnder the glorious titles of the Church, of Councells, Fathers, Antiquitie, Consent, Vniuersalitie; the pretended Romane Catholikes haue ensnared many a simple soule: and no marvaile, considering that these are the times of which Christ foretold; that false prophets should deceiue (if it were possible) the very Elect, *Mat. 24. 24.* and of which Saint *Paul* prophesied, that Antichrist should come, *through the* efficacy of Satan, with all power, and signes, and lying wonders, and in all deceiueableness of unrighteousnesse, among them that perish, *2. Thess. 2. 9. 10.* And all this is done by outward signes and semblances, which our Sauiour Christ tearmeth *sheepes cloathing*, and it stands in these foure particulars. First, in great swelling titles, as the onely true Catholike Church, the Vicar of Christ, the Oecumennicall Bishop: most Profound, Illuminate, Angelicall, Seraphicall Doctours: Iesuites, the only true followers of the doctrine, and example of Iesus, &c. Secondly, in pretended zeale, and deuotion, whereby they would perswade, that their religion is the onely true religion: all others, which swarue from it, are nothing but false and fabulous: and this they doe three wayes. First, *δοξολογία*; by hauing God alwaies in their mouthes, crying in hypocrisie with the false prophets, *Lord, Lord*, *Math. 7. 22.* or as the Iesuiticall faction doe, *Iesu, Maria*. Secondly, *παραλογισμός*, with enticing words, consisting in probable reasons, and perswasive arguments, *Coloss. 2. 4.* Thirdly, *χρηστολογία*, with faire and flattering words, to deceue the hearts of the simple, *Romans 16. 18.* By which three meanes the Iesuits haue preuailed much in Princes courts, in these latter dayes, *Apoc. 16. 14.* Thirdly, in the glorious outside of holiness of life and conuersation, in not sparing the body, by whipping of themselves, as *Basil* Priests launced themselves till the

Math. 7. 15.

the blood gushed out, 1. Kings 18.28. in strict fastes, canonicall houres, hard fare, badde lodging, course apparell, and such like. Lastly, in rare and excellent gifts of prophecy, tongues, eloquence, miracles, &c. And thus they make *Pauls* shew of godlinesse, 2. Tim.

5 3.5. to bee *Peters* cloake of wickednesse, 1. Peter 2. 6. so that as the diuell with faire words put *Eue* into a fooles paradise, till at length he had driven her out of the terrestriall Paradise, and made her also hazard the celestiall. So his ministers false teachers, by faire and flattering speeches, deceive the minds of the simple, and cause
10 them to fall from their owne stabilitie.

By this wee may see how hypocrites and false teachers, stand especially vpon outward things, as externall rites and ceremonies, which are but denices and doctrines of men, Matthew 15.9. The Pharisees made much adoe about washing of the outside of the cup,
15 and of the platter, when as the inside was full of rapine and all uncleannesse, Matthew 23.25. very curious about washing of their hands before meat, Mark 7.3. and yet careless to wash their hearts from wickednesse, Ierem. 4.14. precise in small matters, as in tything of mint, annise, and cummine; but profane in the practise of
20 the waightier things of the law, as iudgment, mercie and fidelity, Math. 23.23. whited tombes, faire without, and filthy within, verse 27. Thus the Popish worship consisteth especially in outward things, which may please the senses of carnall men, as in vocall, and instrumentall Musicke, to please the eare: censings
25 and perfumes to delight the smell: gilding and painting, with other sights and spectacles, to affect the eye. And at this day, in the Masse (which they account the very marrow of their Mattins) there is nothing but dumme shewes, histrionickall gestures, and trickes fitter to mocke apes withall, then to edifie the people. For
30 whereas in former time they were wont to say, *Let vs goe heare a Masse*: now the common saying in Italie is this, *Let vs goe see a Masse*. Let vs therefore trie the spirits before we trust them, and especially in matters of religion, follow Christs precept, not to iudge by the outward appearance, Iohn 7.24. But to iudge of Prophets
35 by the fruite of their doctrine, Math. 7.16. and of their doctrine by the touchstone of the word, Isa. 8.20. so that though the diuell transforme himselfe into an Angell of light, nay, though an Angell from heauen preach any other thing, beside that we haue receiued from Christ, we must hold him accursed: and in so doing we shall
40 follow Christ his practise, who was prudent in the feare of the Lord, and did not iudge by the sight of his eyes, nor reprocue by the hearing of his eares, Isa. 11.3.

The second note and marke of these false teachers, is, that they *compell men to be circumcised*. The word *compell*, hath great emphasis, for it signifieth, that they did not conuince the iudgement, or perswade the will, and affection of the Galatians, but enforced them against their wills; for though circumcision bee nothing of it selfe (as *Paul* saith) yet to be compelled to receiue circumcision, and to place iustification in the vse of it, and sinne in the neglect of it, is the ready way to ouerturne *Christ*, the foundation of our saluation. *Gal. 5. 4.*

Here sundry questions are to be answered. First, it may bee demanded, whether it be lawfull to compell men to embrace religion, as the false Apostles compelled the Galatians to circumcision? *Ans.* The Magistrate may and ought to compell obstinate Recusants to professe true religion: for he is *custos vtriusq; tabula*, and therefore is to haue care that true religion be professed, and the contemners thereof punished. An example hereof we haue in good King *Iesiah* who caused all that were found in *Ierusalem* and *Beniamin*, (that is, all his subiects) to stand to the covenant which he made with the Lord, nay which is more, he compelled all that were found in *Ierusalem* to serue the Lord their God. *2. Chron. 34. 32, 33.* among which multitude many there were (no doubt) which did like better of Idolatrie, then of Gods worship, as the word *compelled*, doth import. The King that made the great supper, commanded his seruants to compell the guests to come in vnto him. *Luke 14 23.* whence *Augustine* gathereth, that it is the Magistrates dutie to compell Recusants, schismatikes, heretikes, and such like, to the hearing and professing of the word. But here three things are commonly objected against this doctrine.

Obiect. 1. To compell men to embrace true religion, is to make them goe against their conscience, which the Magistrate ought not to doe: as some Papiſts haue affirmed, that they would not for ten thousand worlds compell a Iew to sweare that there were a blessed Trinitie, because hee should be damned for swearing against his conscience, although the thing were neuer so true. *Ans. 1.* If it were so hainous a sinne to compell any to embrace true religion, because it is against their conscience; why doe Popish Prelats, and Magistrates, compell Protestants (and that by exquisite torments) to reconcile themselves to the Church of Rome, to sweare obedience to the Pope, to acknowledge Transubstantiation, and to heare Masse, which they know are directly against their conscience? *II.* If they will not compell men to doe any thing, (though neuer so good or godly,) because it is against their conscience: why should they not

be as scrupulous in restraining them from doing that which is vn-
lawfull, because they are perswaded in conscience they ought to
doe it? For if they compell men to omit that which they beleue
to be good, because they know it to be euill, (as their owne pra-
ctise prooueth, in that they will not suffer Protestants to pray pub-
likely in a knowne tongue, nor receiue the Sacrament in both
kinds, &c.) why doe they not compell them also, to doe that which
they know to be good, though they thinke it to be euill? III. The
Magistrate is to compell men to embrace true religion, or to pu-
nish the for their obstinacy in not harkening to the word, because
he is to vse the meanes to reclaime them, & to win them to a loue
and liking of the truth. Now so long as they are vrged to heare the
word, there is hope they may be wonne againe: and experience
shewes (as *Augustine* testifieth of the *Donatists*) that they which did
professe religion at the first meerly by compulsion, may afterwards
(by the mercy of God) professe it onely for deuotion. And what
though some come not to learne, but to carpe and cauil? yet
God may cast the net of his mercy so farre ouer them, that con-
trary to their purpose they may bee caught. IIII. If the Magi-
strate who may compell them, and so reclaime them, do suffer them
to continue in their errors or heresies, without controlment, he is
guilty of their sinne: but by compelling them, he hath discharged
his duty: for albeit they beeing compelled, doe dissemble and play
the hypocrites, doe lie, and forswear themselves; that is not the
Magistrates sin, who intendeth nothing but their conuersion and
saluation, it is their owne proper and personall sinne.

Objection. II. Men ought to be perswaded to embrace religi-
on, and induced to beleue, but not compelled, for the wil can not
be compelled. *Ans.* True it is, the will cannot be compelled; and
as true is it likewise, that the Magistrate cannot compell any to be-
leue: for when a man doth beleue, and from his heart embrace
true religion, he doth it willingly: notwithstanding meanes are to
be vsed, to make them willing that are vnwilling, and the meanes
is, to compell them to come to our assemblies, to heare the word,
and to learne the grounds of true religion: for it is Gods comman-
dement men should *prooue the spirits*, 1. *Ioh. 4. 1.* that so they may
know the truth, and cleave vnto it. *Augustine* saith fitly, and finely
to this purpose, *Quod autem vobis videtur, inuitos ad veritatem non
esse cogendos, erratis nescientes Scripturas, neque virtutem Dei, qui
eos volentes facit, dum coguntur inuiti.* Secondly, when Papists receiue
the Sacrament, swear allegiance to their Prince, present themselves
in our congregations, who knowest that they doe these things a-

Persuaderi
vult fides, non
cogi.

Contra Gen-
dent Epist. 2.
lib. 2. c. 17.

gainst their conscience? May rather we ought in charitie to thinke that they are perswaded in conscience they may do them, when by oath and protestation they confesse so much. But be it, they did all in hypocrisie, shall the execution of godly lawes therefore cease, because hypocrites will not obey, but in dissimulation? 5

Obiect. III. The Magistrate, by compelling Recusants to the outward profession of religion, maketh them to play the hypocrites, to counteriteit, and dissemble. *Answer.* The Magistrate in executing the lawes, hath no such intent, but only that they might heare the word, beleeue it, and be saued. Againe, Protestant Recusants in other countreys, are not allowed by Papists, to alleadge their conscience for their refusall, but are compelled either to conforme themselves, or to vndergoe cruell torments: no more may such pretence of conscience excuse the Papists, or other heretikes, but that they should receiue the same measure which they mete to others. 10 15

II. Quest. How can it be truly said, that the false apostles compelled men to receiue circumcision, seeing *Titus was not compelled to be circumcised? Gal. 2. 3.* *Answer.* That place maketh nothing against the text in hand: the meaning is, that *Paul* for his part was ready to haue circumcised *Titus* (as he did *Timothie*, *Act. 16. 3.*) rather then offend the weake brethren. But when it came to this point, that they would vrge circumcision, as a thing necessary to saluation, *Paul* refused to doe it, for all the false brethren that crept it, v. 4. that is, notwithstanding they laboured by all meanes to bring it in vse againe. Neither did the Apostles vrge it, or require it, as a thing necessary to saluation. 20 25

III. It may be demanded, whether that circumcision being so vehemently vrged by the false apostles, might not haue bene vsed? *Answer.* It might not. For albeit it be in it selfe a thing indifferent, and so it skilleth not, whether a man bee circumcised, or not, (as *Paul* saith) *Circumcision is nothing, and vncircumcision is nothing*: yet beeing vrged as a matter of absolute necessitie, as without which men could not be saued, *Actes 15. 1.* it ought not to be vsed. The like may bee said of all indifferent things, if they be made essentiall parts of Gods worship, or necessarie to saluation; as the vse of meates and drinckes, obseruing of times and seasons, wearing this or that habit, or attire: forbidding of marriage to some orders of men. For when things indifferent are made necessarie, the nature of them is changed. Vpon this ground *Ezekiah* brake in pieces the brazen Serpent, when the Israelites began to worship it, *2. Kings 18. 4.* 30 35 40

First,

First, let vs obserue out of these words, *they compell you to be circum-*
cised, that Paul doeth not onely vse Christian pollicie, but dealeth
 very rhetorically, excusing the Galatians, as though they were
 constrained against their wils to doe as they did: and laying all the
 5 blame vpon the false apostles: and so doeth closely alienate their
 affection from these seducers, who would haue them circumcised,
 either by voluntary submission, or by violent compulsion the like
 godly pollicie we ought to vse in dealing against heretikes, & false
 teachers, that the peoples minds may bee estranged from them, and
 10 take no loue of their doctrine, nor liking of their persons.

Here we haue a second note of false teachers, which is, not onely
 to retaine ceremonies themselves, but to vrge them vpon others,
 and constraine men to the obseruing of them: for they were more
 earnest and forward in vrging circumcision (their owne deuise)
 15 then the keeping of the morall law: and so are all seducers. The
 Pharisees did vrge their owne ceremonies, as washing before meat,
 washing of potts, cups, and beds, &c. more then the commande-
 ment of God. And the Papists vrge the Lent fast more strictly then
 fasting from sinne, which is the only true fast, *Iſa. 58. 6.* And their
 20 owne stories doe shew, that men haue bin more seuerely punished,
 for eating flesh vpon good Friday, then for committing of simple
 fornication, or following of strange flesh. They stand more in vr-
 ging the outward worshipping of an image, or a piece of bread,
 then the inward spirituall worship. And as they haue made the
 25 Saints daies equall with the Sabbath daies, so haue they made the
 prophanation of them an equall sinne, and haue punished it with
 equall punishment.

It is further to bee obserued, how they abuse circumcision; for
 whereas by Gods ordinance it was but a *seale of the righteousness of*
 30 *faith*, *Rom 4. 11.* they peruerting the end of it, make it a meritori-
 ous cause of saluation; and therefore *compell men to bee circumcised*:
 it is Gods worke, they make it their owne worke, yea such a work
 as by which they hope to bee saued. And this their dealing may
 fitly bee paralleled by the Popish practise at this day, in making
 35 baptism, which is but a signe and seale of grace, to bee the proper,
 immediate, and physicall cause of conferring grace by the worke
 wrought. Almes, prayer, and fasting (which are but signes and tes-
 timonies of iustification) to be causes thereof. Nay their owne de-
 uises, of confession, satisfaction, supererogation, to be meritorious
 40 causes of iustification and saluation.

Lastly, see heere how the perverseness of the corrupt heart
 of man, doeth thwart the ordinance of God. As long as circum-

Apella Iudæ-
us.

cision was commaunded by God, most abhorred it; for the he- then testified so much, that the Iewes were odious for it. But now being abolished, they take it vp againe; receiue it, and vrge it as a thing necessary to be obserued vpon paine of damnation. Where- as if God should enioyne it again, they would (no doubt) account it 5 as an heauy yoke, which neither they nor their fathers were able to beare. This improving of that which God commands, and approving that which he forbids, argues the great corruptiō of the heart, and that the wisdom of the flesh is not onely an enemy, but e- uen flat enmity against God, *Rom. 8. 7.* It must therefore therfore teach 10 vs to captivate our reason, and to subiect our wills to the wil of God in all things.

The third property of the false Apostles is, the teaching of cir- cumcision, that is, of false doctrine; because they would not suffer per- secution for the crosse of Christ, that is, for preaching the true doctrine 15 of the Gospel, concerning Christ crucified. It may be demanded whether it was necessarie that those which taught not circumcisi- on, but spake against it, should be persecuted? To which I answer, that it was necessary; according as *Paul* affirmeth. *Gal. 5. 11.* If I 20 teach circumcision, why doe I yet suffer persecution? The reason was this. The Romane Emperour had given liberty to the Iewes to liue according to their owne lawes, and that without molestation or disturbance, in all places of the Romane Empire, so that if a 25 Iewe became a Christian, he had the priuiledge of a Iewe, so long as he kept the ceremoniall law, and taught no departing from *Moses*: whereas they which taught, that ceremonies were abrogated, and that men were iustified onely by faith in Christ, wanted this priuiledge, and so were persecuted of no men more then of the 30 Iewes; either by themselves, or by incensing others against them. 1. *Theff. 2. 15. 16.* The false Apostles therefore to auoide persecu- tion, coyned a new Gospel; in matter of saluation, ioyning Christ and *Moses*, iustification by faith, and by workes. So that here 35 we haue another character and marke of false teachers, which is, to labour by all meanes to enioy the world, and to eschewe the crosse, and rather then they will suffer persecution, to make a hotch-potch of religion, as we may see, not onely by this particu- lar, but by the course of the history of the Church, and in latter times, by the *Interim* vnder *Charles* the first, and the sixe articles vnder *Henric* the eighth: by our mediators and reconciliators, who ei- 40 ther (as it is said of old *Conciliator*) labour to accord fire & water: or else like hucksters mixe wine and water for their owne advantage: & by all neuters and muogrils in religion, who houer in the wind, because

11. Non in
Comment. in
hunc locum.

because they would stand sure for all assaies, or winne the fauour of great men, that they might not stand in the way of their preferment. This is the sinne of the multitude among vs, who desire to haue Christ, but they will none of his crosse: they would bee with
 5 him vpon mount *Tabor*, but not vpon mount *Caluarie*, crowned with glory, but not crowned with thornes.

Further, we may hence gather an essentiall difference of the true and false teachers: the one seekes the good of the Church, the other seeks themselues: the one the glory of God, the other their
 10 owne glory. It is obserued by Popish priests and others, that though the Iesuits pretend they doe all things *in ordine ad Deum*, yet they intend themselues, dooing all things *in ordine ad seipso*: it beeing the marke they shoote at in all their Machiauelian plottes and pollicies, that they may haue *cum dignitate ocium*, a Lordly com-
 15 mand, and a laisie life.

Againe, here we see that the loue of the truth, and of the world, the feare of the face of man, and the feare of God can neuer stand together. As also how dangerous a thing it is to be addicted
 20 to the loue of the world: for it hath beene alwaies the cause of reuolt, in that men neuer imbraced religion so, as that they could be contented to suffer persecution for the profession of it, nor lay downe their liues in the maintenance thereof, *Math. 13. 21. As soone as tribulation or persecution commeth, by and by they are offended. Where-*
 25 *as we ought to haue the same minde that Paul had, who knowing that bonds and imprisonment aboad him, yet passed not for them, neither was his life deare vnto him, Act. 20. 23. and was not onely ready to be bound, but to dye also, for the name of the Lord Iesus.*
 30 *Act. 21. 13. The reasons which should make vs willing to take vp our crosse and follow Christ, are these. First, it is a great mercy and fauour of God, that we are accounted worthy to suffer any thing for his sake. Act. 5. 41. The Apostles departed from the councill reioycing that they were accounted worthy to suffer rebuke for his name. Secondly,*
 35 *it is a meanes (by the mercifull promise of God,) to procure and obtaine the blessings of this life. Mark. 10. 30. Thirdly it hath blessednesse annexed to it, with a promise of assistance and helpe of Gods Spirit, 1. Pet. 4. 11. If ye be rayled on for the name of Christ, blessed are yee, for the Spirit of glory and of God resteth vpon you, which on their part is euill spoken of, but on your part is glorified. Lastly, the end of the*
 40 *crosse, is glory vnspeakable, if we suffer with him, we shall also be glorified with him. Rom. 8. 17.*

Further, whereas Saint Paul linketh together persecution, and the preaching of the crosse, we may see that the profession of the

Gospel, and persecution, doe either goe hand in hand, or do follow one another inseparably; for as many as will liue godly in Christ Iesus, must suffer persecution. 2. Tim. 3. 12. Moses is said to haue chosen rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, then to enioy the pleasures of sinne for a season. Heb. 11. 25. Where wee see that affliction is the lot and portion of the godly. The reason hereof is two-fold. The malice of the Diuell who is alway nibbling at the heele, Gen. 3. 15. And the hatred of the malignant Church (the diuels seede) ever maligning the Church and people of God. The diuell maketh warre with the remnant of the womans seede, which keepe the 10 commandements of God, and haue the testimonie of Iesus, Apoc. 12. 17. The malignant Church persecuteth the Church of God, as we may see in their types, namely, in Cain hating and persecuting Abel; Ismael, Isaac; Esau, Iacob. Which they did onely because they saw their owne workes to be euill, and theirs to be good. 1. Iohn. 3. 12. And if it be demanded, why those that preach the word plainly and powerfully to the consciences of men, in euidence of the spirit, are so extremely hated and maligne? Ans. It is for no other thing, but *even for the workes sake*, for which they ought to be reuerenced, 1. Thess. 5. 13. and because they propheticke not good vnto them, but euill, 20 1. King. 22. 8. that is, preach not pleasing things, by sowing pillowes vnder their elbowes, and lulling them asleepe in the bed of securitie, but denounce the iudgements of God against them, and so disquiet and trouble their guiltie consciences. And what (I beseech you) is the reason why those that make conscience of sinne, are so 25 maligne of the wicked world, and branded with the blacke names of Puritans, and Precisians, but this, which our Saviour Christ giueth, Ioh. 15. 19. *Because they are not of the world, therefore the world hateth them?* Now all this commeth to passe, by reason of that enmitie which God hath put betwixt the woman, and the serpent, his 30 seede, and her seede. Gen. 3. 15.

This teacheth vs, first, that we should suspect our selues, that our hearts are not sound, nor our practise sincere, when all men speake well of vs: for true profession is alwaies accompanied with persecution. *Woe bee to you, when all men speake well of you.* Luke 6. 53 verse 26.

Secondly, that we must not bee discouraged in our profession, though there be neuer so many that make opposition, or so mighty that raise persecution against vs. Though they tell vs as they did Paul, Act. 28. 22. *Concerning this sect, we know that euery where it is spoken against:* or take vs vp with Nicodemus, Iohn 7. 52. *Art thou also of Galilee?* search and looke, for out of Galilee ariseth no Prophet. In these

these blasts and stormes of temptations, wee ought to make that saying of Christ our anker hold, *Blessed is hee that is not offended in mee, Math. 11. 6.*

Lastly, that we thinke it not strange when we find affliction, or meet with persecution, *1. Pet. 4. 12, 13.*

13 For they which are circumcised, keepe not the Law, but desire to haue you circumcised, that they might glorie in your flesh.

10 Heere the Apostle preuenteth an obiection, which might bee made against the former conclusion, verse 12. For it might be said, *Paul* did them wrong in slaundering them, to vrge circumcision onely because they would auoid persecution, when as they did it, as zealous obseruers of the law. To this he answereth negatively, that whatsoeuer they did pretend, they intended no such thing. And he proueth his former assertion, by two arguments, and withall describeth the false apostles by two other properties. His first reason may be framed thus: If they did vrge circumcision as being zealous of the law, and hauing conscience of the obseruing therof, they would keepe it themselves, as well as compell others to the keeping of it. But they keepe it not themselves. Therefore they vrge it not in conscience to haue it obeyed, but for some sinister end. The second reason is this. They that propound no other end to themselves, in vrging of circumcision, but vinting and boasting in the flesh: they seeke not the obseruation of the law: But these seducers, vrge circumcision, and other ceremonies, that they might glory in the flesh: Therefore they seeke not the obseruation of the law. So that heere we haue two other properties of false teachers. The first is, to compell men to the obseruing of that, which they will not obserue themselves. For thus these seducers vrged the ceremoniall law. Resembling herein the Scribes and Pharisees, who bound heauie burdens, and grievous to be borne, and laid them on mens shoulders, whereas they themselves wold not mooue them with one of their fingers, *Mat. 23. 4.* The Popes and Prelates of the Romish Church, are notorious in this kind, in vrging men to make conscience of that, which they themselves will not keepe, to practise that which they will not performe, and to beleue that, which they count false, and fabulous. For first, they strictly require regular obedience to be performed of their nouices, and others, to their Generals or gouernours, specially to the Vicar of Christ, and See of Rome; whereas they will not bee subiect to the higher powers as they

ought, *Rom. 13. 1.* nor obedient to gouernors, as it is required, *1. Pet. 2. 13, 14.* Nay, their practise is notorious in these foure particulars. First, in freeing children from obedience to their parents. Secondly, in exempting their shauelings from subiection to the ciuill Magistrate. Thirdly, in freeing subiects from their oath of alleageance 5 to their Soueraignes. And lastly, by aduancing that man of sinne aboue all that is called God, or worshipped, and giuing him power to depose Princes, to dispose of crownes and kingdomes, and to impose lawes which shall properly binde the conscience; yea to tread Kings and Emperors vnder his feet, and cause them like vassals to hold his stirrop. Againe, they compel others to fast, especially in Lent, when as they in the meane time feast; their fast being to eat fast, and drinke fast, in mortifying the flesh with their Indian capons, and peacocks, and that vpon Good Friday; whereas to eat white-meates vpon that day, should bee in others a mortall sinne. 15 Further, they beare the poore people in hand, that Indulgences are meanes to remit sinnes; and that those that are excommunicated by the Pope, are in a damnable estate: whereas many of them, account Popes Bulles to be but *bulle*, meere trifles, and such as buy them, starke fooles; witnesse the speech of the Duke of Valence, baird 20 to Pope *Alexander* the sixth, who hauing lost certaine thousand crownes at a throw at the dice; Tush (said he) these are but the sinnes of the Germans. And that of *Charles* the first (though a fauourer and maintainer of the Romane religion) who being menaced by Pope *Paulus* the third, with excommunication, if hee 25 would not yeeld vp Playfance into his hands, let him vnderstand by his Embassador, that he would thunder at *S. Angelo* with his canons and artillery, if he would needs be thundring out his excommunications. Lastly, they vse confession of Purgatory, almost as an article of faith, wheras some of them are so farre from beleeuing it, 30 as that they thinke there is neither heauen, nor hell; witnesse the speech of Pope *Leo* the tenth to Cardinall *Bembus*: *O Bembus, what riches haue wee gotten by this fine fable of Iesus Christ?* By this wee are contrarily admonished to practise that we protesse: the Ministers of the word especially, ought *verba vertere in opera*, (as *Ierome* speaketh) that is, to turne words into workes, that their liues may bee reall Sermons to the people: for otherwise they pull downe with one hand, as fast as they build with another. Let vs consider how *Peters* had example, is said to haue compelled the Gentiles to liue as the Iewes, *Gal. 2. 14.* For actions abide, and are of force, when 40 words passe as the wind.

O Bembus,
quantum nobis
proluit fabula ista de
Christo?

Moreover, vpon this dependeth another propertie of seducers,
which

which is, to set a faire gloſſe vpon the matter, and to make the world beleue, they doe theſe and theſe things, for ſuch and ſuch ends (as theſe false teachers did, pretending religion & conſcience, but intending freedome from the croſſe, and their owne vaine glory) whereas they meane nothing leſſe: like *Herod*, who made ſhew of worſhipping Chriſt, when his purpoſe was to haue deſtroyed him, *Matth. 2.* This propertie and praſtiſe is, and hath bene vſuall, ſpecially in the Church of Rome. For generally, they would haue the world beleue, that the Popes triple crowne and Hierarchie of that See, is for the maintenance and defence of the Goſpel: whereas all the world knowes, it is onely to keepe their kitchens hote, to vphold their Perſian pompe, and ambitious tyrannie. Particularly, there be two politike praſtiſes of theirs, which proue the point in hand. Firſt, it is well knowne, that Popes haue neuer ceaſed
 10 from time to time, to ſolicite the Princes of *Europe*, to maintaine the holy warre, (as they call it) pretending the recouerie of the holy land out of the hands of the Turkes and Saracins: (when as (at leaſt in the beginning) they intended nothing leſſe, but that by this meanes they might ſet the Eaſt and Weſt together by the
 20 eares, whileſt they played their parts at home in Italy. The ſecond is, their Shrift, or auricular Confeſſion, which they praſtiſe for this ende (as they ſay) that they may pacifie diſtreſſed conſciences, by abſolving them of their ſinnes: when as the truth is, they firſt brought it into the Church, and doe ſtill continue it in a politicke
 25 reſpect, as being the onely way in the world, to know all the ſecret purpoſes, plots, pollicies, and praſtiſes, that are either in Church, or Commonwealth.

We are therefore here admoniſhed to take heed of diſſembling, in making Chriſtianitie a cloake of impietie, or to pretend one
 30 thing, and intend another, like the heart pointing vward, and poiling downward; for that will be a farre ſowler ſolæciſme then that which the heathen committed with his hand, in pointing to heaven, when hee ſpake of the earth. But let vs alway labour for ſinceritie, to be at leaſt that which we pretend to be, or rather like
 35 *Salomons Temple*, whole windowes were larger within then without, and not like the glow worme, making a faire glittering ſhew of that which we haue not.

14 But God forbid that I ſhould glory, ſaue in the croſſe of
 40 our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, whereby the world is crucified to me, and I vnto the world.

In these words *Paul* comes to the *Reddition* of the dissimilitude betwixt him and the false Apostles, his glorying and their. In them we may consider two generall points. First, wherein hee would not glory *in nothing, save in; &c.* Secondly, the thing wherein he would glory, *In the crosse of Christ*, whereof he renders a reason 5 in the words following, taken from the effects which the crosse wrought in him, *For, by it, the world was crucified to him, and hee unto the world.*

For the first: *To glorie*, implies three things. First, to reioyce, exult, and triumph in a mans selfe, in regard of some good thing, or 10 some supposed good. Secondly, to bewray this great exultation, by speech, or action, or both. Thirdly, by boasting of it, to looke for praise and applause of men; which glorying (according to the nature of the object, and the end) is either good or euill. For if it haue a right object, namely, *the crosse of Christ*: and a right end, *the glorie* 15 *of God*, it is good; otherwise it is euill: such as was this glorying of the false Apostles, and all other carnall glorying, which is not in the Lord: for it is nothing else but *vaine glory*. *Vaine* I say, first, in regard of the things wherein men glorie, which are either such as are not, as when a man boasteth of that which hee hath not, but would 20 seeme to haue: or such as hee hath not of himselfe. *1. Cor. 4. 7.* or such as haue no continuance, but are transitorie and fading, as all earthly things are, seeing man himselfe is but *as grasse, and all the glorie of man, but as the floure of the field.* I say, *40. 6.* Secondly, it is *vaine* in regard of man, from whom we looke for glorie, and admiration, 25 seeing his iudgement is erroneous. Thirdly, in regard of the end, in not referring it to the maine and proper end, the glory of God, and the good of his Church. The Prophet reduceth all those things, *Ier. 9. 23.* wherein we ought not to glorie, to three heads: *wisedome, strength, and riches*: all which we haue receiued, and therefore ought not to 30 boast of them, as though we had not receiued them. In particular, wisedome is not to be gloried in, seeing it is very defective, whether we speake of speculatiue wisedome, standing in contemplation, or practicall, consiſting in action: For in arts and sciences, as also in the secrets of nature, our ignorance is greater then our 35 knowledge. He that knowes not that he knowes nothing in these things, let him reade the booke of *Iob*, chap. 28. and 37, and 38. And as for wisedome in diuine things, *Wee know nothing as wee ought to know. 1. Cor. 8. 2.* for *wee know but in part, and see but as in a glasse, darkely. 1. Cor. 13. 12.* And as for practicall wisedome, standing in 40 pollicie, it is not demonstratiue, but meerely coniecturall, and therefore we cannot build vpon it, considering in it there is the concurrence

rence of so many causes that are casuall, and of so many mindes which are mutable. *Salomon* the great polititian had experience hereof; for he thought that by ioyning affinitie with his neighbor Princes round about him; and taking their daughters to bee his
 5 wives, hee should establish his owne house, strengthen his kingdom, and draw the heathenish Idolaters to the worship of the true God. But all things fell out contrary to this his plot and proiect: for it was so farre from winning others to imbrace true religion, as that it drew him to idolatrie: and so farre from stablishing his
 10 house, or strengthening his kingdom, as that it was the cause of the rending of the one, and the ruinating of the other. *Constantine* the Great was perswaded, that by building the citie of Constantinople in the confines of Europe and Asia, and there placing one of his sonnes, as his Lieutenant to keepe his court, hee should
 15 fortifie his Empire as with a wall of brasse. But he was deceived; for the building of new Rome, was the decay of the old, and the diuiding of the Empire, was the destruction thereof: So that it is truly said, Policie is often the ouerthrow of politie.

Now if wisdom may not be gloried in, much lesse may strength,
 20 seeing that *wisdom* is better then strength, *Ecclesi. 9. 16.* seeing that the greatest strength of man, is not comparable to that of *Behemoth*, *Iob 40.* and other brute beastes: seeing it is but the strength of flesh: seeing no power nor might, can deliuer from wrath in the day of wrath. Of all the puissant princes, and plotting polititians, the *Psalmist* saith, They are so vaine, that if they
 25 bee laid vpon the ballance, even vanitie it selfe will weigh them downe; *Psal. 62. 9.*

And as for riches, besides that they make vs neuer a whit the better, (nay oftentimes much worse) they are also vncertaine. *Salomon* saith, *They make themselves wings like an Eagle, and flie away, Pro. 23. 5.* They may not vnfitly be compared to *Jonas* his gourd, which flourished in the morning, yeelding him content and delight, but shortly after (to his great grieve,) it was stricken by a
 30 worme, and withered away. The like may be said of honours, and pleasures. For what more vaine then to glorie in honour, which is not in a mans power, seeing as the Philosopher teacheth, *Honour is not in him that is honoured, but in him that honoureth:* and therefore Courtiers are compared to counters, which stand sometime for pounds, sometime for pence, beeing now aduanced, now de-
 35 bascd, according to the pleasure of the Prince. *Haman* to day highly honoured in the court at Shushan, the next day hanged vpon a tree. To omit the examples of *Iob*, and *Nabuchodonosor*, (in whom
 40 we

Ethic. l. i. c. 5.

Esther 7.

Procopius.

we may see the mutability of worldly dignitie.) Consider it in the glasse of these examples. First of *Gelinus* a puissant Prince of the Vandals, who was brought so low, that he was enforced to request his friend to send him a loafe of bread, a sponge, and a harpe : a loafe, to slake his hunger : a sponge, to drye vp his teares : a harpe, 5 to solace him in his misery. Of *Bellisarius*, (for prowes and honour, the onely man then living,) who came to that miserable estate, that hauing his eyes put out, hee was led in a string to beg by the high way side, crying *Dona oculum Bellisario*. And of the victorious Emperour *Heneric* the fourth, who had fought 52. pitched fields ; and yet was driuen to that exigēt, as that he became a suter for a poore Prebend in the Church of *Spira*, to maintaine himselfe in his old age. And as for worldly pleasures, least cause is there that any man should glory in them, seeing they are more vanishing then the former : seeing they are common to vs with brute beasts : seeing 51 they are mingled with much grieve and vexation, for in the midst of laughter the heart is sorrowfull. *Prou. 14. 13*. And lastly, seeing they leaue a sting behinde them, for the end of pleasure is nothing but

Prou. 14. 13.

paine, as *Salomon* saith, *The end of reioycing is mourning*. For feasting and banquetting are often turned into surfeiting and vomiting : drinkings into palties : lusts into goutes, &c. And if pleasures were but onely painefull, the matter were the lesse ; but they are also sinnefull, *Hebrew. 11. 25*. and therefore in no wise to bee gloried in.

By this we see that *Paul* had iust cause in this earnest manner, to 25 say, *God forbidde that I should glorie but in the crosse of Christ*, considering that this boasting in outward things, is not onely a fault of vanitie, but also of impietie, as may appeare by these reasons. I. God hath expressely forbidden it. *Ier. 9. 23. Gal. 5. 26*. II. Hee hath alway severely punished it, as in *David*, for numbring the people in a vaine-glorious minde. *2. Sam. 24*. In *Ezekias*, for shewing his treasures in a brauery to the Embassadors of the King of Babel, *Isay 39*. In *Herod*, for ascribing to himselfe the glory proper to God alone, *Act. 12*. III. The Saints of God haue alwaies abhorred it, as *Paul* doth in this place, and *2. Cor. 11. 30*. *If I must needs glorie,* 35 *will glory in mine infirmities*, as if he should say, I will be farre from carnall boasting IV. The heathen by the light of nature haue condemned it : the Grecian Orator calls it *an odious, and burdensome thing*. And the Romane Orator prooues it to be most true by his owne practise, making his words which flowed from his mouth, as 40 sweete as hony, to taste as bitter as wormewood, by interlacing his owne praises.

Demost. de
Coron.

Object. I.

Obiect. I. Paul gloried in something besides the crosse of Christ, when he said, *it were better for him to die, then that any should make his glorying vaine.* 1. Cor. 9. 15. *Ans.* Paul in glorying doeth distinguish his calling, from his person; *Of such a one I will boast, of my selfe I will*
 5 *not boast, and, I was nothing inferior to the very chiefe Apostles, although I am nothing.* 2. Cor. 12. 5. 11. Of his person or personall gifts hee boasteth not: but onely of his Apostolicall calling, and his faithfull discharge thereof: to the end he may stop the mouthes of the false Apollies. Thus to confesse the good things wee haue, to the
 10 glorie of God, being vrged thereunto, is lawfull boasting; nay it is sometime necessarie, making much for the maintenance of the Gospell, as *Pauls* boasting made much for the good of the Church of Corinth. Againe, there is a twofold lawfull boasting, one before God, another before men. *Romanes* 4. 2. Of the former the A-
 15 postlespeakes in this verse: of the latter in the 2. Cor. 12. He gloried not in the testimony of a good conscience, before God, but onely before men. Before God he gloried in nothing, but in the saving knowledge of Christ, and him crucified. And whereas it may be said, that this his boasting in regard of the false Apostles, as also
 20 his glorying in the testimonie of his conscience. 2. Cor. 1. 12. and in his infirmities. 2. *Corinthians* 11. 30. were not in the crosse of Christ: I answer, they were: for his glorying ouer the false Apostles, in teaching freely, was in the good and prosperous successe of the Gospel, which is the doctrine of the crosse, and his glorying in the
 25 testimonie of his conscience; in that it was washed by the blood of the crosse, as *Paul* speakes, *Col.* 1. 20. In his afflictions, in that they were the afflictions of Christ, and he by them made conformable to him.

But it will be said, that he gloried in his reuelation, in his paines
 30 and trauell, in preaching the Gospell, and in the multitude of Churches which he had planted. *Ans.* First, he did it being vrged thereunto; secondly, he did it to defend his calling, and the credit of the Gospell: and therefore this boasting was not vnlawfull; nay it was
 35 necessarie, and in the Lord. For when wee are compelled, we may confesse the good things wee haue, if we doe it sparingly, and for the edification of others, that they may be bettered by our example: and that they seeing our good workes, may glorifie God our heavenly father. *Matth.* 5. 16.

Here we see what glorying is vnlawfull; namely, when men as-
 40 cribe vnto themselves either that which they haue not, or more then they haue, or as proceeding from themselves, their wisdom, strength, industrie, in sacrificing to their owne nets, and burning incense

incense to their owne yearne, *Habac. 1. 16.* or in boasting of them without necessary cause, either for their owne vaine glory, as *Nebuchodonosor* did, *Dan. 4.* or not for Gods glory, as *Herod* did, *Act. 12.* And if this glorying be so great a sinne, surely boasting in wickednesse (as *Daeg* did, *Psal. 52. 1.*) must needes be most damnable: as when the greatest swearers and swaggerers, count themselues the best companions: The greatest Idolaters, and superstitious persons, most religious: the greatest oppressours, surfeiters, drunkards, fighters, most valiant and couragious, &c. Now this may be done three waies, either ignorantly, as when *Paul* gloried in his cruell persecuting of the Saints before his conuersion, *Act. 26. 11.* or presumptuously, when men glory in wickednesse, notwithstanding they be perswaded in conscience, that it is euill: and then it is the sinne of Sodome, *Isa. 3. 9.* or maliciously, to despise God, and then it is the sinne against the holy Ghost.

The second point to be considered in the words, is, the thing wherein he will glorie, called here *the Crosse of Christ*: Same in the *Crosse of our Lord Iesus Christ*. The words in the originall translated same, are exceptiue: as if he should say, I will glory in nothing except in the crosse of Christ: and exclusiue, onely in the crosse of Christ, and in nothing els. Albeit they are sometime aduersatiue, as *Gal. 1. 2. 16.* and *Apoc. 21. 27.* *There shall enter into it no vncleane thing: ò μὴ, but they that are written, &c.* where the words are not exclusiue: for then it would follow that some which worke abomination, should enter into heaven: but aduersatiue, as *Math. 12. 4.* and *Luke 4. 20.* which may serue (by the way) to cleare the text, *Iob. 17. 12.* *Those thou gauest me haue I kept, and none of them is lost, but the child of perdition: that is, but the child of perdition is lost.* For the words, *ὃ μὴ* (as I take it) are not so well translated by the exceptiue coniunction *nisi*, as by the aduersatiue *sed*: seeing heere is no exception made of *Indas*, as though he had beene given to Christ, and afterward had fallen away: which exposition must needes be made, if the words be read, *nisi filius perditionis*.

Further, by the Crosse of Christ, the Apostle vnderstandeth synecdochically, the all-sufficient, expiatorie, and satisfactorie sacrifice of Christ vpon the crosse, with the whole worke of our redemption: in the sauing knowledge whereof he professeth he will glorie, and boast. For *Christ is made vnto vs wisdom*, right conuersione—that as it is written, *He that glorieth, should glorie in the Lord*: euen to make boast of him all the day long, as the Psalmist speaketh. And the reason why *Paul* professeth that he will glorie onely in the Crosse of Christ, is, because Christ crucified is the treasure, and

ὃ μὴ.

ὃ μὴ ὡς τὸ
ἐκείναι.

2. Cor. 1. 31.
31.

storehouse of the Church : seeing that in him are hid, not only the treasures of wisdom and knowledge, *Coloss. 2. 3.* but of bountie and grace, *John 1. 16.* and of all spirituall blessings, *Ephes. 1. 3.* For first, by Christ crucified, we haue reconciliation with God, remission of sinnes, and acceptation to eternall life. Secondly, we haue the peace of God which passeth all vnderstanding, peace with God, with Angels, with men, with our selues, with the creatures. Thirdly, we recouer the right and title which we had in the creation to all the creatures and blessings of God, *1. Cor. 3. 22.* Fourthly, all afflictions and iudgements, cease to bee curses and punishments, and become either trialls, or corrections. Lastly, death it selfe is no death, but a sleepe : for all that die in the Lord, are said to sleepe, and to rest vpon their beds, *Isai. 57. 2.* Indeed, if wee looke vpon death through the glasse of the Law, it is the very downefall to eternall destruction : but if we consider it as it is changed by the death of Christ, it is but a passage from this transitorie life to eternall life. Christ by his death hath taken away sinne, the sting of death : so that though it seaze vpon vs, yet (hauing lost his sting) it cannot hurt vs. So that in a word, in *Christ crucified*, are all things that a man can glory of. If wee would glory in knowledge and wisdom; he is the wisdom of the Father, seeing that all treasures of wisdom and knowledge are hid in him : and therefore *Paul* desired to know nothing among the Corinthians, but *Christ and him crucified*, *1. Corint. 2. 2.* for this knowledge is eternall life, *John 17. 3.* If in the loue and fauour of great men: by him we are highly aduanced into the loue and fauour of God, *Ephes. 1. 6.* If in honors and riches; by him we are made Kings and Priests, *Apoc. 1. 6.* If in libertie; by him we are deliuered from the hands of our enemies, Sinne, Satan, &c. *Luke 1. 74.* If in pleasures, comfort, and content; he is our felicitie, in him we are complete, *Coloss. 2.* By him wee haue sight to those things which eye hath not seene, eare hath not heard, neither can the heart of man conceiue. It may be said, why doth *Paul* glory in the ignominious death of Christ, rather then in his glorious resurrection, triumphant ascension, and imperiall iurisdiction now sitting at the right hand of the Father? *Answer.* These are not excluded, but included in the Crosse: yet he nameth the crosse rather then them. First of all, to shew that vpon the crosse, Christ did fully finish the worke of our redemption : for being now ready to giue vp the ghost, he said, *It is finished*, *John 19. 30.* this made *Paul* to desire to know nothing but Christ, and him crucified, *1. Cor. 2.* For in his humiliation stands our exaltation; in his weakenesse stands our strength; in his ignominie, our glory; in his death,

August. de
verb. Apost.
Serm. 20.

death, our life. Secondly, to shew that he was not ashamed of the crosse of Christ, though neuer so ignominious in the eyes of the world. It had beene no great thing for *Paul* to haue gloried in the resurrection, ascension, wisdom, power, and maiestie of Christ, wherein the world can and doth glory. But to glorie in the shame-
full, contemptible, accursed death of the crosse, was a matter of great difficultie, and the worke of faith, iudging that which the world counts ignominious, to bee most glorious: that which the learned Philosophers counted foolishnes, to be the wisdom of God. *1. Cor. 1. 24.*

The Popish sort abuse this text two waies. First, in applying it to the *transient crosse*. Secondly, to the *permanent or materiall crosse*. To the *transient crosse*, in that they glorie in it: First, as hauing a vertue in it, (when it is made in the ayre,) to driue away Diuells. Secondly, beeing made in the forehead to be as an amulet against charmes, 15
blastings, and other such like casualties. To the *materiall crosse*, when they adorne it with golde and iewels, and so cause it to bee carried in great pompe before them. Whē the *Crucigeri* weare it in their hats in a white, redde, or greene colour. When they put their confidence in it, and pray vnto it, *Holy Crosse, saue vs*. This is Popish 20
and carnall glorying in the crosse; and not spirituall, in the death of Christ vpon the crosse, of which onely the Apostle speaks in this place.

The reason why he would glory in nothing but in the crosse of Christ, followeth to be considered, in these words, *By which the* 25
world is crucified to me, and I vnto the world. It is taken from a double effect, which Christ, or the crosse of Christ, wrought in him: (for the words, *by which*, may be referred to either indifferently.) The first, *to be crucified to the world*: the second, *the world to be cruci-* 30
fied to him. By the world, we are not to vnderstand the frame of heaven and earth, nor the creatures, nor mankind: but honour, riches, pleasures, fauour, wisdom, glorie, and whatsoeuer is opposed to the kingdome of Christ, and the new creature. *To be crucified to the* 35
world, is to be dead vnto it, to despise and contemne it, to count all the glorie of it to be no better then dung, in respect of Christ and his righteousness, as *Paul* did, *Phil. 3. 8*. The world is said *to be cruci-* 40
fied to vs, when it hates and persecutes vs, and accounts vs the filth and the off-scouring of all things. *1. Cor. 4. 13*. Yet here obserue that we are crucified to the world, and the world to vs, by the vertue of the death of Christ, after a different manner. We are crucified to the 40
world, properly by the spirit of Christ, weaning our affections from the loue of this world. The world is crucified to vs, by the death
of

of Christ, improperly, and by accident, in that we are made such as the world cannot but hate and persecute: for seeing we are made new creatures, and chosen out of the world, therefore the world hateth vs, *Iohn 15 15.*

- 5 Heere we see who those are that can truly glorie in the crosse of Christ, namely those that are dead to the world, and the world to them: such as feele the power of the spirit of Christ crucifying the flesh in them, with the affections and lusts. Others can no more glory of the crosse of Christ, then he that glories of the victorie
10 which his Prince hath gotten over his enemies, himselfe in the meane time beeing a vassall, and slave vnto them.

Secondly, that it is not sufficient for a Christian, that the world is crucified to him, except he also be crucified to the world, neither louing the world nor the things in the world.

- 15 Thirdly, that to be crucified to the world is not to professe monasticall life, and to be shut vp in a Monastery: but to renounce the world, and the corruptions that are therein, both in affection of hart, and practise of life.

- 20 Fourthly, we are taught to carry our selues to the world, as crucified and dead men, not to loue nor like it, to seeke or affect it, out to renounce & forsake it, with al the vanities, delights, & pleasures thereof: and to be as dead men to our owne wicked willes, and to
25 our carnall reason, letting them lie dead in vs, & suffering our selues to be ruled, ordered, and guided by the Spirit of God: making his will our will, his word our wisdom.

- Fifthly, by this we may examine our hearts, for if we haue our affections glued to the world, and let vpon the honors, pleasures, profits, and preferments thereof, we are worldlings indeed: for they
30 that are Christs are crucified with Christ. *Gal 2. 20.* and haue crucified the flesh, with the affections and lusts. *Gal 5. 24.* and therefore must needs be crucified to the world. A man that is hanged vpon a gybbet, ceaseth from his thefts and murders: So all that are indeed crucified with Christ to the world, cease from their old offences.
35 For as the Apostle reasoneth, if we be risen with Christ, wee ought to seeke the things that are aboue, and not the things that are vpon the earth. *Col. 3. 1, 2.* So if we be dead with Christ from the vanities of the world, we ought as dead men to abstaine from all worldly lusts, which fight against the soule. *1. Pet. 2. 11.*

- 40 v. 15. *For in Christ Iesus neither circumcision auaieth anything, nor vncircumcision, but a new creature.*

Here the Apostle prooves his former assertion, v. 14. that he neither did, nor ought to glory in any thing, saue in the crosse of Christ, because nothing is of any account in the kingdome of God, but a new creature. And this he prooves by the remouall of all those things, that are either opposite to, or diuers from a new creature, signified by *circumcision* and *uncircumcision*. And with-
all he laies downe two conclusions. The first is, that in Christ Iesus, that is, in the kingdome of grace, neither *circumcision*, nor *uncircumcision* are any thing, that is, are neither acceptable to God, nor
auaileable to saluatio: Vnder these two synecdochically cōprehē-
ding all outward priuiledges, and prerogatives, dignities, and re-
galities, or whatsoever can be named: vnder *circumcision* compris-
ing the prebeminence of the Iewe, and the profit of *circumcision*,
which was much euery way; *Rom. 3. 1.* seeing that *to them appertained the adoption, and the glory, and the covenants, and the giuing of the*
Lawe, and the seruice of God, and the promises. Rom. 9. 4 Vnder *uncir-*
cumcision containing the Gentiles, with all their wealth, wisdom, strength, Lawes, pulley, and whatsoever is of high account, and
glorious in the eyes of the world. All which he excludes and ac-
counts as *nothing* in respect of regeneration. *For that which is high-*
ly accounted of among men, is abomination in the sight of God. Luk. 16.
15. Therefore wisdom, wealth, nobility, strength, are nothing.
1. Cor. 1. 26. Outward callings, as to be King or Kasar, Prophet
or Apostle. Outward actions of fasting, almes, prayer. Nay, kindred
and alliance, as to be mother or brother of Christ, is nothing: for
if the blessed virgin had not borne Christ in her heart, as shee
did in her wombe, she should neuer haue bene saued. *Luk. 11. 27,*
28. and if his kinsmen had not bene his brethren by spirituall a-
doption, as well as by naturall propagation, they should haue had
no inheritance in the kingdome of God, *Mark. 3. 33. 34.* Nay,
the outward element of baptisme, without the inward grace, is of
no force; for it is *not the washing away of the filth of the flesh* (that is
acceptable to God) *but the stipulation of a good conscience, which maketh*
request vnto God. 1. Pet. 3. 21. And if the communicant at the
Lordstable, doe not eate *panem Domini* as well as *panem Domini*
(as Augustine speaketh) that is, if he doe not receiue Christ spiritu-
ally by the hand of his faith, as he doth corporally receiue the e-
lement by his bodily hand, he receiueith *vanity*, and so eateth and
drinketh his owne iudgement. *1. Cor. 11. 29.* Now the reason why these
outward things are nothing auaileable, is, because the things that
are accounted of with God, are spirituall and eternall, not tempo-
rall and carnall, as these are: which as they shall utterly cease in the
kingdome

- kingdome of glory, *Matth. 22. 30. (for then Christ will put downe all rule, authority, and power. 1. Cor. 15. 24.)* so are they not of any moment or account in the kingdome of grace, as *Paul* teacheth. 2. *Cor. 5. 16. Gal. 3. 28. Coloss. 3. 11.* It may be said, these priuiledges
 5 and outward things, as Prince, and people; Master, and seruant: bond and free, &c. haue place in the kingdome of grace, seeing Christianity doth not abolish nature, nor ciuill pollicy. To which I answer, that man must be considered two waies, in respect of the outward, or inward man. Consider him as he is a member, in ciuill
 10 society, as of the family, Church, or Common-wealth: there are sundry differences of persons, as bond, free; magistrate, subiect; poore, rich &c. in which sense the Apost. exhortation taketh place, *Wines, submitte your selues to your husbands. Colossians 3. 18. Children, obey your parents, verse. 20. seruants, be obedient to your masters, verse 22.*
 15 But if a man be considered in respect of his spirituall estate, as he is a member of the inuisible, or Chatholique Church, vnder spiritual gouernment, consisting in righteousness, peace of conscience and ioy in the holy Ghost. *Rom. 14. 17.* there is no distinction of calling, condition, or sexe; for we are all one in Christ. *Gal. 3. verse 28.* or Christ is all
 20 and in all things. *Coloss. 3. 11.* in that though we be many, yet are we but one body in Christ. *Rom. 12. verse 5.* seeing we are quickned with one spirit. *Eph. 4. verse 4.* The Popish opinion therefore which teacheth that there be some outward callings and actions which commend vs to God, as to leade a single life, to fast, to vow volun-
 25 tary pouerty, to performe regular obedience, to professe monkery, to be buried in a friers cowle, or to abstaine from these and these meates, is here condemned, when *Paul* saith, that outward priuiledges will not serue the turne, and that meate commendeth vs not to God. *1. Cor. 8. 8.*
 30 Againe, neither this nor the like places *Gal. 3. ver. 28. Gel. 3. 11.* do any thing fauour the Anabaptistlicall fancy, of bringing in an anarchie, that is, an ataxy into Christian society; by taking away christian magistrates, and distinction betwixt master and seruant: for by the same reason we may confound the sexe of man and wo-
 35 man; for *Paul* saith, *there is neither male nor female, but we are all one in Christ:* the meaning thereof is this: that although in respect of our inward or spirituall estate before God, there be no such difference: yet that hindreth not but there may be in respect of our outward estate.
 40 Further, we learne from hence, that no man is to thinke highly of himselfe in regard of outward priuiledges, as birth, honour, wealth, fauour, nor to glory in them. *Ier. 9. 23.* rich men must not

be high minded. *1. Tim. 6. 17.* Nay, the King may not lift vp his mind about his brethren. *Deut. 17. 20.* Pauls example is notable, who accounted all the priuiledges which he had before his conversion, whilest he was a Jew, (as that he was a citizen of *Rome*, a Pharise, a great Rabbin, instructed by *Gamaliel*, of the tribe of *Beniamin*, circumcised the 8. day &c.) and after his conversion being a christian (as that he was an Apostle, take vp into the 3. heaven &c.) to be as nothing, or worse then nothing, even as *losse* or *dunge* in respect of being a new creature in Christ, that is, in respect of iustification, and sanctification. And therefore we may not set our minds 10 too much vpon outward things, as riches, honors, pleasures: seeing they are not away leable to saluation.

Besides, this teacheth al those that are but in mean & base estate, to be content: for outward priuiledges auaille nothing: outward wants and miseries, hinder nothing. If a man be rich, he is nothing 15 the nearer, & if he be poore, he is not a whit the further off: it is the poverly of the spirit, which makes a man rich in grace: for though the poore man be the rich mans slaue, yet he is the sonne of God, and fellow heyre with Christ: and though the rich man be the poore mans master, yet he is the seruant of Christ, as *Paul* saith, *he* 20 *that is called being a seruant, is Gods free man. and he that is called, being free, is Christs seruant. 1. Cor. 7. 22.*

Lastly, this crosseth the opinion of the multitude, who thinke that if a man be increased in riches, graced with fauour, aduanced with honour, that he is a godly, wise, religious man; and that religion which he professeth, is the truth. This is nothing else but 25 to haue the faith of our Lord Iesus Christ in respect of persons. *Iames 2. verse 1.*

The second conclusion is that the new creature is the onely thing that is acceptable to God. *Circumcision, &c. auailleth nothing,* 30 *but a new creature.* By the new creature, the Apostle vnderstandeth the image of God, or renouation of the whole man, both in the spirits of our minds, and in the affections of our hearts, which is also called the new man. We shall the better conceiue it by the contrary, namely, by the old man; which is, want of knowledge in the 35 minde, and delight in ignorance: want of subiection and conformitie in the will, and rebellion withall: want of holines in the affections, and pronenes to euill. The new man then, is the restoring of al these defects. For the vnderstanding hereof, consider, that there are three things in the soule. The substance of the soule: the faculties, or powers of the soule: and the qualities of these faculties. Now 40 neither the substance nor faculties are lost by the fall, but onely the

the qualities of the faculties: as when an instrument is out of tune, the fault is not in the substance of the instrument, nor in the sound, but in the disproportion, or iarre in the sound: therefore the qualities onely are renewed by grace. These qualities or habits, are either in the Vnderstanding: or will and affections. The qualitie in
 5 the vnderstanding, is *knowledge*; Coloss. 3. 10. *Yee haue put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge, after the image of him that created him.* In the will and affections, they are principally two, *righteousnesse*, and *holinesse*, both which are in truth and sincerity, without
 10 all hypocrisie. Eph. 4. 22. *Put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness, and true holines*: where *holines* and *righteousnes*, are opposed to concupiscences, and lusts of the old man: *Truth* (which hath relation to both) to spirituall guile, and dissimulation: so that each of these qualities, haue two parts, a want of the contrarie euill,
 51 and a positive qualitie or habit of goodnesse. *Holinesse* respecteth God, and containeth all duties of pietie, contein'd in the first table: *Righteousnes*, respects man, and the creatures, and compriseth all the duties enioyned in the second table. *Truth* respecteth the manner how both the former are to be practised, viz. with an vpright and
 20 sincere heart, free from all hypocrisie and deceit. These three making a perfect harmonie in all the faculties of the soule: *Holinesse* performing all the duties of pietie: *righteousnes* the duties of humanity: *truth* seasoning both the former with sinceritie.

But (some may say) how is the new creature opposed to all
 25 ternall things, or laid to be of any force in the kingdome of Christ, seeing it is not auailable to iustifie a man before God, being stained with manifold imperfections? For answer whereof, we are to know, that outward things are sometime opposed to Christ, and his righteousness, as Col. 3. 11. *There is neither Iew, nor Grecian, circumcision nor uncircumcision, &c. but Christ is all, and in all things.* sometime to faith, as Gal 5. 6. *Neither circumcision auaileth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but faith which worketh by loue.* sometime to the new creature or sanctification, as in this place, and 1. Cor. 7. 29. *Circumcision is nothing, &c. but the keeping of the commandments of God.* But
 30 the sense is all one, for they are opposed to Christ, as to the matter of our iustification: to faith as to the instrument apprehending it: to the new creature, as to the signe of them both.

Further, whereas both here, and 2. Cor. 5. 17. the image of God
 40 is called a *new creature*, (or as it is in the original [*καινὴ κτίσις*]: *new creation*) the meaning is not, that either the substance, or faculties of the soule are created anew; but that the worke of regeneration is wholly to be ascribed to God alone, (not as though we were

stocks or stones without life or motion) but because God doth create these new qualities in vs, quickning vs when wee were dead in sinne, and working in vs both the will, and the deede. *Philip. 2. 13.*

If regeneration then bee a *new creation*, it must needs follow, 5
that before our conuersion we were not onely dead, but euen flat
nothing, in godlinesse, and grace. By which we see what to iudge
of the *Semi-pelagian* heresie, which teacheth, that a man by an *inter-*
num principium, may dispose himselfe to will that which is truly
good: and that man is not *stirke* dead in sinne, but onely *sicke* or 10
wounded, and *halfe dead*, as the man which fell among theeues, *Luk.*
10. or as a prisoner that is shackled and manackled, who can walke
of himselfe, if his fetters be taken from him: so we (if Christ loose
the chaines of our sinnes) haue power of our selues to mooue our
selues. Which doctrine we know is most iniurious to the mercy of 15
God, and most derogatorie to the merits of Christ, seeing it makes
him in the worke of our saluation, to bee but *causa remouens pro-*
hibens, which (as Logicians teach) is but *causa sine qua non*, which in
truth is no cause at all. So that they make themselves their owne
Saviours, and Christ to be but an instrument whereby they saue 20
themselves: for if hee doe but remooue the impediment, they
without any more adoe, are able to mooue and act themselves.
When as the conuersion of a sinner is as great a worke as the
creation of heauen and earth: for *Paul* calleth it here a *new creati-*
on. Nay, here is a greater power required (if I may so speake) then 25
that whereby the world was created. For though an infinite pow-
er be required as well to the creating of the great world, as the re-
creating or regenerating of the lesse world, as our Saviour Christ
signifies, *Mark 2. 9.* *Whether is it easier to say to the sicke of the palsey,*
Thy sinnes are forgiven thee, or to say, Arise, take up thy bed and walke? 30
yet the holy Ghost seemeth, of the two, to make it more difficult,
to create a new heart, then a new world, in that speaking of the
creation of the world, he saith it was made by the word of God, *By*
the word of the Lord were the heauens made. Psal. 33. 6. or by his fin-
gers, *when I consider the heauens, the workes of thy fingers. Psal. 8. 3.* 35
or by his hands, *Psal. 102. 25.* *The heauens are the workes of thy*
hands. But the redemption of man, and the conuersion of a sinner,
is said to be wrought by the *arme* of God. Marie in her *Magnificat*,
saith, *He hath shewed strength with his arme. Luk. 2. 51.* nay, hee was
faine to set his side to it, and it made him shed many a teare, and 40
sweat as it were *drops of bloud trickling downe to the ground. Luk. 22.*
44. Before our conuersion, we are like the drye bones, *Ezek. 37.* for
as

as when the winde of God came vpon them, bone came to bone, and were ioyned with sinewes, and couered with flesh, and had their senses restored: so when the Spirit of God, like the fauonian winde, bloweth vpon vs, it reuiueth vs againe, giuing vs a new life,
 5 new senses, a new heart, new wills, and affections: for *all old things passe away, and all things become new.* 2. Cor. 5. 17. For it openeth the eyes of our vnderstanding, making vs discern of things that differ. *Eph. 1. 18. Philip. 1. 10.* it boareth a new eare of obedience in vs, *Psal. 40. 6.* and giueth vs a new tast, not to fauour the things of the
 10 flesh, but of the Spirit. *Rom. 8. 5.*

Further, this serues to detect the natuall Poperie of the multitude, and of our owne hearts, when we perswade our selues (though falsely) that though we goe on in our sinnes, yet that we can repent when we list. When as the Prophet saith, *O Lord I know that the*
 15 *way of man is not in himselfe:* and Paul saith, that it is as great a worke to create a new heart, as to create a new world: for regeneration is
a new creation. 2. Corinth. 5. 17. *Augustine* saith well, *He that will grant pardon to him that repents, will not alway giue repentance to him that*
sinnes.

20 Again, in the sense that Paul calleth the image of God, a new creature, or the new man, and corruption the old man: we grant, that our religion is new, and Popish religion is old. For as the new man is the restored image of God, in which *Adam* was first created, though afterwards defaced by *his owne inuentions*, *Eccles. 7. 31.* So
 25 our religion is the restored or reformed doctrine first taught by the Apostles, which afterward was corrupted by mens deuices. Albeit, in *Tertullians* sense, ours is the old religion, and theirs the new: as
 the image of God is the old man, and corruption the new.

Vse. If we be not changed in our liues, but remaine old *Adams*
 30 still, euen the same men we were before, in minding, willing, affecting earthly things, and fashioning our selues to the guise of the world; we are no new creatures, though wee promise and protest neuer so much: we are but hypocrites, deceiuing others, and our selues also. For where this new creature is, there is a change in all
 35 the faculties and powers of soule and body: the minde is not set vpon the world, but mindeth heauenly things: the will, affections, and conuersation of the whole man, is in heauen. *Philip. 3. 20.* For the Spirit of regeneration is like the leauen which a woman tooke and hid in three pecks of meale till all was leavened: for after the
 40 same manner, by a secret operation it altereth the mind, will, affections. If any be in *Christ*, (saith the Apostle) he is a new creature, old things are passed away, behold, all things are become new. If therefore we

Jerem. 10. 23.
 Qui dabit
 poenitenti ve-
 niam, non da-
 bit peccanti
 poenitentiam.

*Quod anti-
 quissimum, id
 verissimum.*

be new creatures, why leade we not a new life? if we be changed in affection, why are we not changed in conuersation?

But by this wee may perceiue that all which are Christians in profession, are not Christians in conuersation: all that are washed with the outward element of water, are not washed with the inward 5
baptisme, the lauer of regeneration: as first, those that are as good fellowes (that is, as badde) as euer they were before, and make no conscience of sinne. Secondly, such as are no more but ciuill honest men, likethose honest women which rayfed persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coasts. *Act. 13. 10*
30. Thirdly, worldly wise men which sauer of nothing but the world. Lastly, such as haue some loue and liking of the word, and are in some sort outwardly conformable thereunto, hauing some legall sorrow for sinne arising from legall terrours: but haue no thorow change nor renouation. 15

Lastly, we may not maruell if the world hate and maligne those that are new creatures: seeing they neither mind nor affect the same things. For there can be no true loue, where there is contrarietie of iudgements, wills, affections, which hath bene, is, and will bee betwixt those that are borne of the flesh, and those that are 20
borne of God, *Gene. 3. 15*.

16 *And as many as walke according to this rule, peace shall be vpon them, and mercy, and vpon the Israel of God.*

Heere Paul commends this glorying in the crosse of Christ, and studie of pietie, in becomming a new creature, as the onely rule of faith and manners, which all teachers and hearers wereto ob-
terue, and follow: Enforcing the keeping and obseruing of this double dutie, by the fruit and benefit that comes thereby, specified 30
heere by *peace* and *mercy*. In the words two things are generally to be considered: First, the dutie of walking, in these words, *As many as walke according to this rule*: Secondly, the reason or motiue to the practise thereof, in these, *Peace shall bee vpon them, and mercy*: which is amplified by the generalitie thereof, that is, shall light 35
vpon *as many as walke according thereto, and vpon the Israel of God*. The dutie is, that wee walke according to this canon, or rule: the word translated *walke*, signifieth not simply to walke, but to walke warily and circumspectly (as it is expounded, *Ephes. 5. 15.*) or to walke by rule in order, and measure, without treading aside 40
but making straight sleppes to our feete, *Hebrewes 12. 13.* Pauls rule which we must walke by, is faith in Christ, called here glory-
ing

ing in the crosse of Christ: and repentance towards God: called regeneration, or the new creature: which is rightly called a rule of faith and manners, of things to bee beleaved, and practized, because by it all doctrines and actions are to bee examined: nay, the Scripture is therefore called *Canonick*, because it sets downe an exposition of this rule: there being nothing from the first chapter in *Genesis*, to the last words in the *Apocal.* which aimeth not at one of these two, either repentance towards God, or faith in Christ.

10 Heere all Ministers are taught what rule to follow in preaching the word, or building the Church of God, namely faith and repentance, the doctrine of the crosse, and conuersion, or the new creature. And all hearers according to what rule to order their liues and actions. For this metaphor of walking, and that by a rule or
15 line, shewes that wee are travellers or pilgrims, that this world is a strange countrey, that we are to go to another, that the world is an endlesse labyrinth, in which we shall for ever lose our selues, except we be guided by this rule.

And heere wee see that there is a certaine rule for regulating
20 of all things appertaining to faith and manners, though wee cannot apply it nor vse it as wee should: The fault is in vs, not in the rule.

Whereas *Paul* saith, as many as walke according to *this rule*, hee shewes, that Christians haue but one onely rule which they are to
25 follow, and according to which they must frame their liues; for the Apostle exhorts vs that *wee all proceed by one rule*, *Phil. 3. 16*. Therefore the Papists doe notoriously offend not onely in wrelling, peruerting, and breaking this rule, but in making other new Lesbian rules, which they prescribe as necessarie to bee followed: as the
30 rule of *S. Francis*, of *S. Dominicke*, *S. Austen*, *S. Ierome*, &c. holding one mans baptisme better then another, one mans profession holier then another, one mans rule perfecter then another: following any rule rather then Christs, and so diuide his seamelesse coat. And that these sundry rules of Monks are vaine and wicked, it may ap-
35 peare. First, because they agree not with this rule of *Paul*, they being many, it but one: it directing & leading to Christ, they leading to by-paths, obscuring the merit of Christ, and prescribing many things, partly friuolous, partly impious, contrary to faith & good life. Secondly, in that they agree not among themselues; every
40 sect hauing his owne proper orders, and contending their owne to be better, holier, perfecter the the rest. Thirdly, in that they diuide into diuers sects, those that ought to be all one in Christ, for which
cause

cause *Paul* calles the Corinthians carnall, in holding some of *Paul*, others of *Apollos*, 1. *Corinth.* 3. 4. For how can they bee spirituall, who in speech, action, habite, and attire, profession and conuersation, professe nothing but Schisme and dissention? *Ierome* against the Luciferians, saith, *Sicubi audieris eos qui dicuntur Christi, non à Domino Iesu Christo, sed à quoquam alio nuncupari. puta Marcionitas, Valentinianos, Montenses, Campates, scito non Ecclesiam Christi, sed Antichristi esse Synagoga.* that is, *Wherefoener thou shalt heare those that are called Christians, not to haue their name from our Lord Iesus Christ, but from some other, as Marcionites, Valentinians, Montenses, Campates, know thus much, that they are not the Church of Christ, but the Synagogue of Antichrist.* Nay further, solitary life, in leauing the societie of men, and sequestering themselues from all companie, which is the ground, and generall practise of Monkish Eremites, (for Cœnobites to speake properly, are no Monkes, as the word teacheth) is against the very light of nature it selfe. First, because it is naturall for men to liue together; nay it is the ground of the family, the Church and Common wealth. There was neuer nation so barbarous or sauage, but endeaoured to liue together by associating themselues, in cities, townes, villages, caues, woods, tents, or some other way, according to the custome of the countrey: which generall practise of all, argues the impression of nature in all. Secondly, speech is giuen men for this end, that they might conuerse together: for it were little or nothing auailable if men should liue alone, and conuerse with none. Thirdly, sundry vertues bestowed vpon men, as iustice, fortitude, loue, and friendship, should be giuen in vaine, if men should liue solitarie, sequestred from all company. Fourthly, mans imbecilitie argues thus much; for whereas all other creatures are armed by nature, as the Bull with hornes, the Boare with tuskes: other with teeth, feathers, swiftnesse, &c. man is borne feeble, and naked, not able to prouide or defend himselfe, but onely by helpe of others, which is an argument that hee is borne to liue in ciuill societie, and to be holpen by others. Lastly, man is borne to doe good to himselfe and others, in some estate and calling, 1. *Corinthians* 7. But hee that liueth alone, can doe no good to others, nor receiue good from them: For whereas they plead for themselues, that they leaue their particular callings, and betake themselues to Hermitages, that so they may renounce the world. I answer, that to renounce the world, is not to leaue their places and callings, whereunto God hath called them, but to renounce the corruption that is in the world through lust, 2. *Pet.* 1. 4. These and the like reasons made the

the Philosopher to say, That hee which left the societie of Aristot. Polit. men, and betooke himselfe to a solitarie life, was either a God, lib. 1. cap. 2. or a beast.

- By this wee may see what Lesbian rules they follow: and how
 5 that which they account the highest degree of perfection, is in truth the depth of abomination: that it hath beene the cause of much wickednesse, as of idlenesse, hypocrisie, whoredome, sodomitry, besides the cruell murthering of many poore innocents. Therefore let neither their hypocrisie, nor the Churches pretended
 10 authoritie, nor the long received custome, any thing moove vs, but that leauing them, we follow the rule of Paul in this place: for they that walk according to it, *peace shall be vpon them and mercy.* By peace, wee are to vnderstand outward peace, as prosperitie, and good successe in all things wee goe about. For *whatsoener they doe,*
 15 *shall prosper, Psal. 1. 3.* And peace with the creatures; as first with the good Angels, *Coloss. 1. 20.* who are *ministring spirits, sent forth to minister, for their sakes that shall be heires of saluation, Hebr. 1. 14.* pitching their tents about them, *Psal. 34. 7.* and bearing them in their hands as the nurse her child, *Psal. 91. 12.* Secondly, with the godly. The Pro-
 20 phet saith, that in the kingdome of Christ, *the wolfe shall dwell with the lambe, the leopard shall lie with the kidde, &c.* that is, men of fierce, Essay 11. 5. sauage, and woluish natures, shall bee so changed by grace, as that they shall liue peaceably and louingly together. Thirdly, with the wicked their enemies, partly because they seeke to liue in peace, as
 25 David saith of himselfe, *I labour for peace, Psalm. 120. 7.* partly, because God so inclines their hearts, as that they are peaceable. Lastly, with the beast of the field, and all the creatures. The Lord promisseth to make a couenant with the wild beasts, and foules of the heaven, in behalfe of his people, that they may sleepe safely, *Hosea*
 30 *2. 18.* But the peace which is principally meant in this place, is *peace of conscience,* which passeth all vnderstanding, *Phil. 4. 7.* which is peace with God, being reconciled and at one with him, *Rom. 5. 1.* *Being iustified by faith, wee haue peace with God.* And peace with our selues, which is threefold, as it is opposed to a threefold dissention
 35 in man. The first is, when the will and affections renewed by grace, are obedient to the minde enlightened by the spirit, and at peace therewith: opposed to the dissention that is betwixt rebellious affections, and naturall reason. The second is, when grace (though strongly assailed) giueth corruption the foile, whereupon
 40 followeth the calming and quieting of the minde, opposed to the combate betweene the flesh and the spirit. The third is, when the conscience perswaded of remission of sinnes, and reconciliation with

with God, ceaseth to accuse and terrifie, and begins to excuse, and comfort vs: opposed to the conflicts that a distressed conscience hath with legall terrours, and the anger of God. By *mercies* (which is the cause of this peace) are vnderstood, all spirituall blessings, which flow vnto vs from the loue and fauour of God in Christ, as remission of sinnes, iustification, sanctification, and eternall life it selfe. The words *in auctors, vpon them*, haue great emphasis, signifying, that these blessings come downe from heauen, and light vpon them that follow this rule, and that they cannot bee hindered by the malice of men.

Let the Pope then anathematize, curse, and excommunicate vs, both Prince and people, because wee tread not in the steps of his faith, but in the faith of our father *Abraham*, and walke not according to his rule, but according to this rule of the Apostle: for wee need not feare his thunderbolts nor curses, seeing *the causelesse curse shall neuer come*, *Prov. 26. 2.* for what though hee curse, if God doe blesse? It was the thing that comforted *Dauid* being cursed of his enemies, in that *though they did curse, yet God would blesse*, *Psal. 109. 28* and let vs comfort our selues in this, that *he will curse them that curse his people*, *Gen. 12. 3.*

Againe, it peace and mercie shall bee vpon them that walke according to this rule, then wrath and indignation shall light vpon those that follow any other rule, or deuise any other way, or set downe any other meanes of saluation besides, or contrary to this. False therefore is the opinion of *Puckinus*, that if a man leade an outward ciuill life, he may bee saued in any religion, the Iew in his Iudaisme, the Turke in his Mahometisme, the Heathen in his Paganisme. For they that walke not in this way, according to this rule, doe but weary themselves in endlesse Labyrinths: and so walking without line or rule in *their crooked maners*, shall bee led with workers of iniquitie, when as peace shall be vpon Israel, *Psal. 125. 5.* Other vses are made of mercy and peace, *Pag. 10. and 11.* to which places I referre the Reader.

The Apostle addeth, that peace and mercie shall bee vpon all them that walke according to this rule, *and vpon the Israel of God.* There is a double Israel mentioned by *Paul*, *Israel according to the flesh*, *1. Cor. 10. 18.* and *the Israel of God*: as there is a two fold Iew, one outward, in the flesh: another inward, in the spirit, *Rom. 2. 28, 29.* By *the Israel of God*, the Apostle meaneth all such as are like to *Nathaniel*, who was a true Israelite, in whome there was no guile, *Iohn 1. 47.* whether they bee the faithfull Gentiles, or beleeuing Iewes. And hee makes mention of the Israel of God, partly by reason of the

the aduersaries, who bragged so much of their father *Abraham*, and that they were the onely true Israelites, and yet were no Israelites, because they trod not in the steps of the faith of *Abraham*: partly, for the weake conuerts, who thought it a hard thing to bee
 5 seuered from the society of those to whom the promises were made: partly for vs Gentiles, that wee might know that *all are not Israel, which are of Israel*, *Rom. 9. 6.* but that all they which are of faith are blessed with faithfull *Abraham*, *Gal. 3. 9.* seeing that God is no acceptor of persons, *Act. 10. 34.*

10

17 *From hencefoorth let no man put mee to businesse: for I beare in my body the markes of the Lord Iesus.*

Heere the Apostle laies downe his last admonition, preuenting
 15 an obiection that might be made by the false apostles, or the Galatians. For whereas it might be said, that *Paul* fought himselte, and the world, shunned persecution, and therefore ioyned circumcision to Christ, to please the Jewes, and followed not his owne rule, ver.
 16. he takes away this obiection with great authoritie, when hee
 20 saith, *From hencefoorth let no man put mee to businesse.* And withall he addes a reason of it, *for I beare in my bodie the markes of the Lord Iesus:* as if hee should say, The bonds, the imprisonments, the stripes, wounds, and scarres in my bodie, doe sufficiently testifie my fidelitie in my ministry, for if I had preached circumcision, I should
 25 not haue suffered persecution. The words may be, and are taken in a double sense. First thus, The false apostles, and you Galatians (by their instigation) haue bin troublesome vnto me, by false accusations, and slanderous imputations, as that I taught circumcision and the obseruation of the ceremoniall law, as a thing necessary to sal-
 30 uation, and so you haue made a reuolt from my doctrine, and by that meanes haue doubled and tripled my labour & paines among you: But from hencefoorth cease to be troublesome vnto me, you may take experiment and prooffe from me; the marks that I beare in my body, doe sufficiently witnes and seale the truth of my do-
 35 ctrine, and my fidelitie in mine Apostleship, as also whose disciple I am, *Moses*, or Christ, and what rule I follow, Iudaisme, or Christianisme. Secondly, they carie this sense, I haue said, that they which walke according to this rule, in glorying onely in the crosse of Christ, *peace shal be vpon them, and mercy, and vpon the Israel of God.* And
 40 I say againe and againe, that we ought to strue and contend for it, to obserue & keep it as a thing most necessary to saluation: *τὸ δεῖπν*, as for other things not necessarie to saluation, as circumcision, &c.

Let

Let no man trouble mee in the execution of mine Apostolicall function, or hinder the course of the Gospell, by vrging any other doctrine or ceremony contrary or diuerse from this, as necessarie to saluation: This one thing is necessary, other things are need-
 lesse and fruitlesse in comparison, therefore neither I, nor the
 Church of God ought to be troubled with them. This latter sense
 I take to bee more agreeable to the text. Some make the sense to
 be this, I haue had many troubles and conflicts; and haue many
 markes and scarres in my body inflicted by persecutours: there-
 fore be no more troublesome vnto mee: for it were too much to
 adde wormewood to my gall, affliction to affliction. Heere wee
 see the condition of the Apostle, and the estate of all faithfull
 Ministers, that it is full of trouble and molestations. For as they are
 accounted men of turbulent spirits, disquieters of the state, as *Elias*
 was, 1. *Kings* 21. and *Jeremie*, chapter 15. 18. and *Paul*, *Actes* 16. 15
 20. and 21. 28. So they are most troubled with factious oppo-
 sers, and false teachers, who labour to bring into the Church,
 things partly needlesse and superfluous, partly hurtfull and pernicious.
 Thus the false apostles troubled the Pastours and Church
 of Galatia, *Galat.* 5. 10. and the Churches of Antiochia, Syria, Cili- 20
 cia, *Actes* 15. 24.

Secondly, consider how that the most and greatest troubles of
 the Church, haue beene for matters, not of substance, but of cir-
 cumstance, partly not necessary, partly contrary to the rule: which
 notwithstanding haue beene vrged with fire and fagot, as things 25
 most necessary.

Luke 10. 41.

Lastly, hee that stands foorth for the defence of Gods truth (as
Paul did, and all Ministers ought to doe) must let goe all circum-
 stances, and looke to the substance. Not with *Martha*, to trouble
 himselfe about many needlesse things, when as one thing onely is 30
 necessarie.

The reason followeth in these words: *For I beare in my body the
 markes of the Lord Iesus.*

signa.
 Vide Lipsium
 de militia Ro-
 mana, lib. 1.
 dialogo 9.

The word in the originall translated *markes*, doeth properly
 signifie prints with a hote yron. But it is here vsed generally to
 signifie any blemish, scarre, or marke whatsoever, whether such as 35
 was wont to bee set vpon seruants bought with money (which a-
 mong the Iewes was a hole in the eare pearced with a naile, *Exod.*
 21. 6. *Deut.* 15. 17.) or vpon slaues taken in the warres, as the Sami-
 ans set vpon an Athenian captiue the signe of an owle: and the 40
 Athenians vpon a Samian, the signe of a ship: or vpon malefactors,
 as a hole in the eare, an F. in the forehead, a brand in the hand. Or
 such

such a marke, as some thinke was set vpon *Cain*, *Gen. 4. 15.* or the marke of God, *Ezek. 9. 4.* or of the beast, *Apoc. 16. 2.*

- The markes of Christ are of two sorts, either *inward* and *inuisible*: or *outward* and *visible*. The *inuisible* markes are two. The first is,
- 5 Gods eternall Election, which is called Gods *seale* or *marke*; *2. Tim. 2. 19.* The foundation of God remaineth sure, and hath this seale, The Lord knoweth who are his. All the Elect are marked with this marke, *Apoc. 7.* and by it Christ knoweth and acknowledgeth them for his sheepe, *John 10.* The second is, regeneration, or the imprinting
- 10 of the defaced image of God in the soule. By this marke, (which is the true *indeleble* character, neuer to be blotted out) are all beleeuers sealed; *2. Cor. 1. 22.* *Ephes. 1. 13.* These inuisible markes of Election and Regeneration are in the soule, and therefore not here meant: for hee speakes of bodily markes, *I beare in my bodie the*
- 15 *markes* —. The outward visible markes are two fold: *Typicall*, or *Reall*. *Typicall*, as circumcision, which was a marke set in the foreskinne or the flesh, *Rom. 4. 11.* The blood of the Paschall lambe, wherewith the houses of the Israelites were marked, when the first borne of the Egyptians were slaine by the destroying Angel. And
- 20 Baptisme is of the same kind: for by Baptisme Christians are distinguished from Iewes, Turkes, Infidels whatlocuer. *Reall* markes of Christ, are either in his *naturall*, or in his *mysticall* bodie. In his *naturall* bodie, the wounds which were given him in his hands, feet, and sides, which he shewed to his Disciples after his resurrection,
- 25 *John 20. 27.* which whether they be now to be seene in his glorified body (as some affirme) or abolished (as others,) I leaue to the Reader, as a thing vncertaine, and meerly coniectural, seeing there is nothing in Scripture either for it, or against it, that doeth necessarily conclude it. But of these markes, the Apostle speaketh not
- 30 in this place. The marks in his *mysticall* bodie, are those, which are in his members, as wounds, scarres, whippings, maimednesse, &c. of which we reade, *2. Cor. 4. 10.* *Euery where wee beare in our bodie the dying of our Lord Iesus*: and, *2. Cor. 11. 24. 25.* *Five times receiued I fouentie stripes, saue one: I was thrice beaten with rods, once stoned, &c.*
- 53 And these the Apostle heere calleth *the markes of Christ*, because they are inflicted for the profession of Christ, and the Gospel: as the wounds and scarres of a souldier, may bee called his Princes wounds and scarres, because they are had in his cause and querrell. Now those in his *naturall* body differ from these in his *mysticall*:
- 40 First, in that they are meritorious, for by his stripes wee are healed, *1. Pet. 2. 24.* These in his *mysticall* bodie, are glorious in the sight of God (as the death of his Saints is,) yet not meritorious. Secondly,
- those

those in his naturall body, were prophesied of before in particular, *Psalm. 22. 16. They pierced my hands and my feet.* These in his mysticall bodie onely in generall, that wee should be conformable vnto him.

In this place *Paul* speaketh of the latter onely, which were in his owne person; and this he doeth not to put any merit in them, (as *S. Francis* did) but to rectifie himselfe to bee a faithfull seruant of *Christ*. And he further meeteth with the false apostles, who would needes haue had the *Galatians* circumcised, that so they might glorie in the flesh, as hauing set the marke of circumcision in the foreskin of their flesh. As if he should say, I set not markes in other mens flesh, to glorie of them, as the false apostles doe, but I beare about in my bodie the markes of the Lord *Iesus*, these are the signes of mine Apostleship, and arguments of fidelitie in my Ministerie, which I set not in other mens flesh, but haue in mine owne.

Here we see what we are to thinke, and what vse we are to make of the wounds, scarres, and blemishes that are in any of the Saints for the profession of the Gospell, and maintenance of the trueth. First, that they are the sufferings, wounds, and markes of *Christ* himselfe (as *Paul* tearmeth them here, and *Coloss. 1. 24.*) seeing they are the wounds of the members of that bodie, whereof he is the head. Secondly, they haue this vse, to conuince the consciences of persecutors, and wicked men, that they are the seruants of *Christ*, which suffer thus for righteousness sake, for which cause they are here mentioned by *Paul*. Thus he prooues himselfe to be a member of *Christ*, by the afflictions which hee suffered for his sake, *2. Cor. 12.* Thirdly, if men be constant in their profession, namely in faith and obedience, they are banners of victory. Therefore no man ought to be ashamed of them, no more then souldiers of their wounds and scarres: but rather in a holy manner to glory of them as *Paul* did. For as it is a glorie to a souldier to haue receiued many wounds, and to haue many scarres, in a good cause, in his Princes quarrell, and for the defence of his countrey: So it is a glorie for a Christian souldier, to haue the markes of the Lord *Iesus* in his bodie, as of wounds, scourges, bonds, imprisonment, for the profession of the truth. Therefore *Constantine* the great, (as the Ecclesiasticall historie records) kissed the holes of the eyes of certaine Bishops, (which had them put out by the *Arrians*, for the constant profession of the faith of *Christ*) reuerencing the vertue of the holy Ghost which shined in them.

This makes nothing for the *fratres flagellantes*, who glory in the markes

markes which they make in their flesh, by whipping of themselves. For first, it is not the punishmēt (as *Cyprian* saith) but the cause that makes a Martyr. Secondly, the markes which men set vpon themselves contrary to the Law, *Leuit.* 19. 28. are not the *markes of the Lord Iesus*: but those onely which are set vpon them by others, for the profession of the truth. Thirdly, this whipping and afflicting of themselves, being but will-worship in not sparing of the body, *Col.* 2. 23, is no better accepted of God, then the superstitious practise of *Babyls* priests, launcing themselves with kniues, till the blood gushed out. *1. Kings* 18. 28.

Againe, if this be the glorie of a seruant of Christ, and a note of constant profession, what shall we say of them who haue not onely their consciences seared with a hot yron, but by drinking, whoring, rioting, &c. get the markes of *Bacchus* and *Venus* in their bodies? For if these be the markes of Christ, those must needs bee the markes of *Satan*.

Lastly, hence we are taught a speciall dutie, and that is, to suffer bodily affliction in the profession of the truth. and though bonds and imprisonment abide vs in all places, not to passe for them, so that we may fulfill our course with ioy, according to *Pauls* example, both here, and *Act.* 20. 24 as also in his commandement to *Timothie*, Suffer affliction as a good souldier of *Iesus Christ*. *2. Tim.* 2. 3. The reasons are these. First, by suffering bodily affliction, wee are made conformable vnto Christ, and fulfill the rest of the afflictions of Christ in our flesh. *Col.* 1. 24. Secondly, they teach vs to haue a sympathie & fellow feeling of the miseries of our brethren, to remember those that are in bonds, as though we were bound with them, & those that are in affliction, as though we also were afflicted in the body. *Heb.* 13. 3. Thirdly, our patient enduring of affliction, doth not onely serue as a preident & example to others to suffer patiētly, but also is a notable means to confirme them in the truth. *2. Cor.* 1. 6. *Philip.* 1. 14. Lastly, they serue to scoure vs that are earthly vessels, from the rust & filth of sin, that cleaues so fast vnto our nature.

18. Brethren, the grace of our Lord *Iesus Christ*, be with your spirit, Amen.

Here, the Apostle concludes his Epistle with his vsuall farewell, commending the Galatians to the grace of God, and wishing vnto the all things appertaining to spirituall life & godlines. *1. Pet.* 1. 3. which he signifieth here by *grace*. There is a two-fold grace mentioned in Scripture, Grace which makes a man gracious or acceptable to God, *gratia gratum faciens*: and grace which is freely giuen, *gratia gratis*

gratis data. *Gratia gratum faciens*, is the fauour and loue of God, whereby he is well pleased with his elect in Christ, and this grace is in God himselſe, and no qualitie infused or inherent in vs: and it is truly called *the first grace*, as beeing the cause of all other subsequent graces. *Gratia gratis data*, is the free gift of God bestowed vpon men, whether naturall, or supernaturall: naturall either in the state of innocencie, before the fall, as originall iustice, &c. or in the state of apostasie, ſince the fall, as the gift of illumination. *Ioh. 1. 9.* and ſuch like: Supernaturall, either common gifts, as the gift of miracles, prophecying, tongues &c. or ſauing graces, as the grace of election, effectuall vocation, iuſtification, adoption, glorification &c. all which are called *the ſecond grace*, becauſe they flow from the firſt, as the ſtreame from the fountaine. Thus *Paul* diſtinguiſheth them, *Rom. 5. 15.* calling the former *the grace of God*, the latter *the gift by grace*. Now grace in this place is not to be reſtrained onely to the benefit of our redemption, as it is, *2. Cor. 13. 13.* where the grace of Chriſt is diſtinguiſhed from the loue of God, and communion of the H. Ghoſt: but to be vnderſtood of the fauour and loue of God, which is the *firſt grace*: and of the ſauing grace of regeneration, which is the *ſecond grace*, or *the gift by grace*. And it is called *the grace of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt*, firſt, becauſe he is the fountaine of it. *Iohn 11. 16.* *Of his fulnes all we haue receined and grace for grace.* Secondly, becauſe he is the conduit or pipe, by which it is conuaied vnto vs. *Ioh. 1. 17.* *Grace and truth came by Ieſus Chriſt:* for he is our propitiator by whom alone we receiue grace, that is, the fauour of God, and reconciliation: for grace, that is, for the fauour and loue which God the father bare vnto his ſonne; we beeing accepted of God, and beloved in his beloved. *Eph. 1. 6.* Chriſt is further called [*our Lord*] in ſiue reſpects. Firſt, by right of creation. *Iohn 1. 3.* *All things were made by him.* Secondly, by right of inheritance. *Hebr. 1. 2.* *He is made heire of all things.* *Pſal. 2. 8.* *I wil giue thee the Hea- then for thine inheritance, and the endes of the earth for thy poſſeſſion.* Thirdly, by right of redemption. *1. Cor. 6. 20.* *Ye are bought with a price,* which is neither ſiluer, nor gold, but the pretious blood of Chriſt. *1. Pet. 1. 18, 19.* and this hee performed by a double right, namely, by right of proprietie: as a King redeemes his ſubiects, the maſter his ſeruants: or by right of affinitie, as the father may redeeme the ſonne, one brother another, and one kinsman another. Fourthly, by right of conqueſt. *Luk. 11. 21.* *When a ſtrong man armed keepeth his pal- ace, &c. but when a ſtronger then he cometh vpon him, and ouercometh him, he taketh from him all his armour wher in he truſted & diuideth the ſpoile.* Laſtly, by right of contract and marriage. *Elof. 2. 16.* *Thou ſhals*

shalt call me Ishi, and shalt not call me Baali, and v. 29. I will marrie thee unto me for ever in righteousness, judgement, mercy, and compassion, I will marrie thee unto me in faithfulness, and thou shalt know the Lord.

- The Apostle proceeds and saith, the grace of our Lord Iesus
 5 Christ be with your spirits. For the better vnderstanding of which phrase, we are to know, that Man consisteth of two essential parts, of soule, and bodie. Eccles. 12. 7. Dust (that is, the body) returns to the earth, whence it was taken: and the spirit returns to God that gave it. Albeit the Apostle elswhere devideth man into three parts, spirit,
 10 soule, and bodie, when he prayeth for the Thessalonians, that their whole spirit, and soule, and body, may be kept blamelesse, unto the coming of Christ. Where he subdivideth the soule into two parts, reason, or vnderstanding, which he calleth the spirit: will, or affection, which he termeth (by the common name agreeing to both) the soule:
 15 God hauing giuen reason to see, and will to seeke, after that which is good: that reason hauing eyes might guide the will that is blinde, and goe before, that it might follow. So that the spirit and soule are not two seuerall substances, but one and the same (euen as the body & the flesh are one bodie) and yet are they distinguished
 20 for doctrine sake. Heb. 4. 12. the word of God is said to enter through, euen to the diuiding asunder of the soule and the spirit. and Eph. 4. 17. 18. the Apostle distinguisheth the soule into three Faculties, the
 mind, cogitation, heart: when he saith the Gentiles walked in the v-
 25 of the hardnesse of their hearts: by *minde*, meaning the hegemonicall part or vnderstanding: by *cogitation*, the inward senses, as memorie, phantasie, &c. and by *heart*, the affection.

- Now by *spirit* in this place, is not ment the vnderstanding alone, or the soule alone, but by a *synecdoche* the whole man is vnder-
 30 stood, albeit the soule principally be ment, because it is the proper subiect of grace: for grace beeing a spirituall thing is placed immediately and properly in the spirit, or mind of man; and in the bodie
 35 accidentally, where it doth bewray it selfe by outward actions. Secondly, for that, as the seate of grace is in the mind; so the sense and apprehension of it is therelike, and not in the body. Thirdly,
 as Theophrast saith, *Non ait vobiscum, quid ita? abigens eos à rebus hisce, arguensq; non à lege hos spiritum, sed à gratia accepisse*. So that, it is all one, as it he should haue said, The grace of our Iesus Christ be with you all: as it is Philip. 4. 23. and 2. Thess. 3. 18. as it may appeare by the
 40 like: for that farewell which Paul gives Timothie in his latter Epistle, The Lord Iesus Christ be with thy spirit, 2. Tim. 4. 22. is all one with that in his former, Grace be with thee. 1. Tim. 6. 21. And that

salutation *Philem. 15.* The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ bee with your spirit, is all one with that *Coloss. 4. 18.* Grace be with you.

Hence that phraſe and forme of ſpeech in our Engliſh Liturgy, or Common praier booke, (though miſliked by ſome, and cauiled at by others) hath his warrant and ground, when the Miniſter ſaith, *The Lord be with you*; and the people answer, *And with thy ſpirit*, withing the ſame to him, that he to them, that God would bee with his ſpirit, that is, with him.

Againe, marke how the Apoſtle as he did beginne with grace, chap 1. 3. ſo he doth end with grace, to teach vs firſt of all, that our ſaluation is placed in it alone, for the beginning, the progreſſe, and the accompliſhment thereof: for election is of grace, *Rom. 11. 5.* and vocation is of grace, *2. Tim. 1. 9.* and iuſtification, *Rom. 3. 24.* and glorification. *Rom. 6. 23.* Secondly, that Chriſt is to haue all the glorie of this grace, whereby wee are ſo highly aduanced into the fauour of God, both for the beginning, continuance, and ending, without aſcribing any part thereof to our ſelues, or any other creature. Thirdly, that all our ſalutations and greetings, our adieues, and fare-wells, ought to bee grounded in the grace of Chriſt, otherwiſe they are but carnall: and therefore the Apoſtle biddeth the Chriſtians to ſalute one another in a holy kiſſe, or (as *Peter ſpeakes*) with the kiſſe of loue. *1. Pet. 5. 14.*

Rom. 16. 16.

This confutes the Popiſh Doctours, who doe not onely aſcribe the beginning of their ſaluation to themſelues, in co-working with God in their firſt conuerſion: but alſo the ende and accompliſhment of it, by workes of condignitie, which (as they ſay) are meritorious of eternall life.

Heb. 3. 5, 6.

Further, obſerue, with what *Emphaſis* the Apoſtle concludes his Epiſtle: Firſt oppoſing Chriſt the Lord of the houſe to *Moses* who was but a ſeruant in the houſe. Secondly, the grace of Chriſt to inherent iuſtice, and merits of workes. Thirdly, the ſpirit, in which he would haue grace to be ſeated, to the fleſh, in which the Apoſtles gloried ſo much. Laſtly, brotherly vnitie one with another, implied in the word *brethren*, to the proud and lordly carriage of the falſe apoſtles ouer them.

The Conclusion.

35

In the ende of all, it is added, in the *Greeke*, and *Siriacke* copies, that this Epiſtle was written to the *Galatians* from *Rome*. Which poſtſcript ſeemes to be erroneous and falſe: for firſt, there is not a tittle in the whole Epiſtle, that giueth the leaſt inkling that it ſhould haue bene written from *Rome*: whereas in all the reſt, which are written from thence, *Paul* makes mention of his bonds & imprisonment

ment. Secondly, the variety of copies argues the vncertentie of it, seeing in some copies it is said to haue bin sent from *Ephesus*, as *Caietan* and *Hyperius* affirme, in their Commentaries vpon this place. Thirdly, *Baronius* (if his authoritie be of any waight in this case) affirmeth that it is not likely or credible that it was written from thence. But, be it granted that this post-script were true indeede; yet it is no part of Canonickall Scripture, as not being written by the Apostle, but added afterwards by the Scribes which copied out the Epistles. Neither is this onely true of post-scripts, but also of Incriptions or Titles prefixed before Epistles, they are no part of holy writ. This may easily be prooued in particular: for 1. touching Post-scripts, the Greeke copies agree in this, that the first Epistle to the Corinthians, was written from *Philippi*, and sent by *Stephanas*, *Fortunatus*, *Achaicus*, and *Timotheus*: when as it is certain, it was written from *Ephesus*. For first, chap. 16. 5. he saith, *He will come to them when he shall goethrough Macedonia*. Therefore *Paul* was not then at *Philippi*, a chiefe citie in *Macedonia*. Secondly, in the 19. of the same chapter he saith, *All the Churches of Asia salute you*, which shewes plainly, that when *Paul* writ this Epistle, he was at *Ephesus* in *Asia*, not at *Philippi* in *Europe*. Thirdly, v. 8. he saith, *hee will abide at Ephesus till Pentecost*, therefore he was not then at *Philippi*. Fourthly, that it was written before the tumult in *Ephesus* raised by *Demetrius* and his complices, and so consequently before his comming to *Philippi*: as also that it was sent by *Timotheus* and *Erastus*, it is manifest, v. 10. of that chapter, being compared with *Act. 19* v. 21, 22. Lastly, the *Syriacke* translatour agreeth with me, in affirming that it was written from *Ephesus*; and so doth *Baronius Annal. tom. 1. pag. 494 l. 39*. Again, the post-script of the 2. to the Corinthians hath, it was written from *Philippi* of *Macedonia*, and sent by *Titus* and *Luke*: whereas the *Rhemists* (if wee may give any credit to their testimony, who elsewhere make titles part of the Canonickall Scripture) say, it was written at *Troas*, as it is thought. And *Baron. annal. tom. 1. pag. 590. l. 51. Antwerp*. thinkes it was written at *Nicopoli*, vpon this occasion, that in his former Epistle from *Ephesus*, promising to come vnto them as he passed through *Macedonia*, & comming not, 1. Cor. 16. he doth in this excuse himselfe, 2. Cor. 1. 15, 16, 17. compared with 2. Cor. 7. 5. Neither is it a good reason to prooue that *Titus* carried this Epistle (as it is in the post script) because *Paul* saith, *hee sent Titus to them, and another with him*. 2. Cor. 8. 18, 22 and 12. 18. for *Paul* speaks of *Titus* his comming vnto them before that time: neither may it be thought that *Titus* was sent the second time vnto them, considering that departing from *Macedonia*, & taking *Titus* with him, he left

Annal. Tom.
1. p. 657 l. 25.
Antwerp.

him in *Creete*. See *Cesar Baron. annal. tom. 1. Antuerp. p. 591. l. 40.* Besides, the *Rhemists* controll the subscription of the first Epistle to the *Theſſalonians*, which hath it thus, *The first Epistle to the Theſſalonians, written from Athens.* For in their preface, they are bold to affirme, that it seemeth rather to haue bin written at *Corinth*, then at *Athens*: and they giue this reason of it, because after the sending of *Timothy* to *Theſſalonica*, *Paul* and he meete not at *Athens* againe, but at *Corinth*. And *Baronius* affirmeth, that it seemes to haue beene written presently after that *Sylus* and *Timotheus* came to him to *Corinth*, out of *Macedonia*, by comparing *Act. 18. 5.* with *1. Theſſ. 3. 6. Annal. tom. 1. pag. 457. l. 1.* And *Emmanuel Sa doth* censure the *Syracke* postscript, which saith it was sent from *Athens* by *Timothy*, seeing that *Timothy* was then absent. The like they affirme in the argument of the second Epistle. for albeit the Greeke postscript hath it, that it was written from *Athens*, yet they rather thinke it was written from *Corinth*, where *Paul* aboad a yeare and sixe moneths, *Act. 18. 11.* because the title is like vnto the first Epistle, *Paul and Syluanus, and Timotheus. &c.* And *Baronius* saith, that it should be written from *Athens*, *impossibile est affirmare*; because it was written soone after the former, as may appeare by the inscription, *Paul and Syluanus and Timotheus*, (they continuing together:) but the former was written from *Corinth*, (as hath bin prooued,) and therefore the latter: specially considering that *Paul* went from *Athens*, and aboad at *Corinth* a yeare and a halfe, and returned not backe againe to *Athens*, but went to *Ephesus*. *Annal. tom. 1. pag. 457. l. 28.*

Adde hereunto, that whereas the postscript of the first to *Timothy* saith, it was written from *Laodicea* the chiefe citie of *Phrygia Pacaciana*, the *Rhemists* notwithstanding in the argument, affirme that it is vncertaine where it was written: and though it be commonly said to haue beene written at *Laodicea*, yet it seemeth to bee otherwise, because it is like hee was neuer there, as may be gathered by the Epistle to the *Colossians* which was written at *Rome* in his last trouble, a little before his death: for *Coloss. 2. 1.* *Paul* seemes to insinuate that he was neuer at that *Laodicea* of *Phrygia*, neare to *Colossos* and *Hierapolis*, and that they neuer saw his person. Besides, neither *Plinio* (who writeth after *Paul*) nor any other ancient clasique author, doth make mention of *Phrygia Pacaciana*, so that it seemeth to haue bin so called long after *Pauls* decease: the first mention that is made of it (as some haue obserued) being in the acts of the fifth Synode of *Constantinop.* *Baronius* is of opinion that it was written from *Macedonia*. *tom. 1. pag. 564.* grounding his coniecture vpon *1. Tim. 1. 3.* as I besought thee to abide at *Ephesus*, when I went into *Macedonia*.

oedonia; so doe.—The same doth *Athanasius* affirme, in his Synopsiſs, and *Theodoret* in his preface vpon that Epistle.

Againe, the ſubſcription of the 2. to *Timothy*, that it was written from *Rome* vnto *Timothy* the firſt Biſhop elected of the church of *Ephesus*: cannot well ſtand, as ſome thinke, with that of *S Paul*, 2. *Timothy* 4. 5. Doe the worke of an Euangelist, ſeeing that Euangelists were not tyed to perſonall reſidencie, to abide in one place (as Biſhops and paſtors are) but were to goe from place to place, to confirme the Churches planted by the Apoſtles. But the diſcuſſing of this argument, whether *Timothy* were an Euangelist properly ſo called, and whether the ſame man could not be an Euangelist, and a Biſhop, requireth a longer diſcourſe, then can bee afforded to this ſhort treatiſe. Laſtly, the poſtſcript of the Epistle to *Titus*, ſaith it was written from *Nicopolis* of *Macedonia*: the deuifers of which aſſertion ground their opinion vpon *Titus* 3. 12. where *Paul* ſaith, *be diligent to come to me to Nicopolis, for I haue determined there to winter*: miſtaking the text, for he ſaith not, *be diligent to come to me to Nicopolis, for I haue determined here to winter*, (as beeing there already) but *I haue determined there to winter*. By which it is plaine that when *Paul* wrote to *Titus*, he was not at *Nicopolis*, (as the poſtſcript affirmeth,) and ſo we ſee the text which they alleadge for them, maketh moſt againſt them. And this is the iudgement and reaſon of *Baronius*, *Annal. tom. 1. pag. 575. l. 33. Antwerp.* howſoeuer *Claudius Eſpenceus* ſhifts his fingers of it, and paſſes it over in ſilence.

Thus much concerning *Subſcriptions*: a word or two touching *Inſcriptions* or titles prefixed before Epistles. That theſe bee no part of Scripture written by the Apoſtles, but added to the Epistles by ſome others, it may appeare by theſe reaſons. Firſt generally, if titles were *canonicall* as well as the epistles themſelues, the Fathers would neuer haue doubted (as they did) whether *Paul* were the author of the Epistle to the *Ebrewes* or not, ſeeing in all copies ſue one (as *Beza* hath obſerued) it beareth his name: but ſome of them aſcribe it to *Barnabas*, as *Tertullian*: others to *Luke*, as *Ierome* witneſſeth, others to *Clement*: *Oecumenius* intituleth it only thus, *The Epistle to the Ebrewes*, without adding the name of *Paul* or any other as the penner of it: and ſo *Hentenius* a papist doth translate it out of *Oecumenius*. Secondly, ſome Epistles (as thoſe ſeauen written by *Iames*, *Peter*, *Iohn*, *Iude*) haue vnfit titles prefixed before them, in that they are called ſometime *Canonicall*, (ſpecially of the Latine Church) and ſometime *Catholicke* (chiefly of the Greeke Church:) neither of which were euer given them, by any Apoſtle, or Apoſtolique writer. For firſt, touching the title *Canonicall*, it may ſeeme ſtrange that

this inscription should ever haue bin appropriated vnto the, which is common with them to the whole word of God: as though in them were contained a more perfect and absolute rule of doctrine and manners of things to be beleued and practised, then in the other bookes of holy writ; considering that sundry Diuines (albeit erroneously I confesse) haue bin so far from giuing vnto them this preheminence aboue the rest of the bookes of Scripture, that they haue altogether reiected them, as no part of Canonickall Scripture: by name, the Epistle of *Iames*, the 2. of *Peter*, the 2. and 3. of *Iohn*, and that of *Iude*, of all which it was doubted in ancient time, as we see in *Eusebius*; and the Syrian Church receiveth them not to this day, as being not in the Syriack translation; and *Caietan* a Popish writer, & the *Lutherans* at this present, reiect them, as may appeare by their writings. Secōdly, that this inscription was added to these Epistles without sufficient ground, and warrant of reason, may appeare, in that no reason can be giuen why these seuen should be called *Canonickall*, rather then the Epistles of *S. Paul*, or that to the *Ebreues* (whosoever was the penner thereof.) For whereas the ordinary Glosses saith, they are called *Canonickall*, because they were received into the Canon with the other Epistles; by that reason they should be no more *Canonickall* then the rest, nay, not of that authenticall, at least of that vndoubted authority the rest are of, seeing they hardly obtained to be registred in the Canon with the rest as *Canonickall*. Lastly, this title was neuer giuen to these Epistles by the Greeke Church (which was more ancient) but onely by the Latin Church, as might be prooued by manifold testimonies, if it were a thing necessary to be stood vpon. Neuertheless, howsoeuer this inscription cannot be defended, yet it may be excused, & tolerated, as a title of distinction, to distinguish them from the other epistles. As we see the Iewes diuiding the old Testament into foure parts: the first they called the law, or 5. bookes of *Moses*: the 2. the former Prophets, viz. *Ioshua*, *Iudges*, 2. bookes of *Samuel*, two bookes of the *Kings*: the 3. the later Prophets, as *Esay*, *Ieremie*, *Ezechiel*, and the small Prophets: the 4. they called *Kethubim*, which in English is as much as the *Scriptures*, not as though those 11. bookes were more properly Scripture, then the *Pentateuch* of *Moses*, or the bookes of the former and later Prophets: but onely for distinction sake they were so called. And they are termed of the Seuentie, and of the Greeke Church *alishgapa*, that is, *holy writs*, not because they had a peculiar holines proper to them. aboue other parts of Gods word (seeing all Scripture is equally giuen by diuine inspiration) nor as though the amanuenses of these bookes were more holy then the other.

other pen-men of the holy Ghost (nay, contrarily it is doubted by some, of *Salomon*, who penned three of these bookes, whether he were elected or reiected; whereas it is not doubted of the rest:) but only (as I haue already said) to put a note of distinction betwixt
5 them and other books, in naming of them, as **Hago de S. Viſt.* hath well obserued.

* Tom. 1. perat. Elucid. c. 12 quia nullam habent specialem proprietatem quā distinguantur à cæteris, commune nomen quasi proprium obtinent.

In this sense this title *Canonicall*, may be giuen to these *Epistles* without danger: but if wee shall vnderstand it in any other sense, we shall be so farre from being able to defend it, that we shall not be
10 able to excuse it.

The second title which is giuen them, is, that they be called *Catholike*, which inscription is as vnfit as the former: for they are so called (as some would haue it,) because they were written, and directed to the whole *Catholike Church*, consisting both of *Iewes*,
15 and *Gentiles*. But that is not true, seeing *Iames*, chap. 1. 1. directeth his *Epistle* only to the 12. tribes that were dispersed, and not to the *Gentiles*. And *Peter*, who was an *Apostle* of circumcision, 1. *Epist.* 1. 1. writeth onely to the strangers the *Iewes*, that dwelt here and there throughout *Pontus*, *Galatia*, *Cappadocia*, *Asia*, & *Bythinia*.
20 Others thinke they are tearmed *Catholike*, for that they were not sent to one man, or family, or citie, or countrey: but generally to the whole bodie, company, or societie of the *Iewes*, wherefoeuer dispersed ouer the whole earth. But neither in this sense can they fitly, or truly be tearmed *Catholike*: forasmuch as two of these *seuen*, viz. the second and third of *Iohn*, were written to particular persons, the one to the elect *Lady*, the other to *Gaius*. And by this reason the *Epistle* to *Timothe*, that to *Titus*, and *Philemon*, may be called *Catholike*, as well as these.

Again, be it granted, that they were all directed to all the *Iewes*,
30 yet I see not why the *Epistle* to the *Ebrenes* may not as well challenge this title to be called *Catholike*, as any of these *seuen*, considering it was written to all the *Iewes*, and only to the *Iewes*.

Thirdly, others affirme them to be called *Catholike*, because they containe *Catholike doctrine*, such as appertaineth to all men generally, of what estate, place, condition, or calling soeuer they bee.
35 But in this sense all *Pauls Epistles*, may be called *Catholike Epistles*. For whatsoeuer is written, is written for our learning, that we through patience and consolation of the *Scriptures*, might haue hope, *Rom.* 15. 4.

Secondly, the word *Catholike* is not so ancient: for *Pacianus* an ancient Father saith, it was not vsed in the *Apostles daies*. His words are these. *Sed sub apostolis (inquies) nemo Catholicus vocabatur: esto, sic fuerit, vel illud indulget, cū post apostolos hæreses exiuiſſet, diuersisq. nominibus*
40 *Columban*

Biblioth. sacræ tom. 3. ad Sympronian Nouatian de Cathol. nomine Epist. 1.

Columbam Dei atque reginam lacerare per partes, & scindere niterentur; nonne cognomen suum plebs Apostolica postulabat, quo incorrupti populi distingueret unitatem, ne intemeratam Dei virginem, error aliquorum ver membra laceraret? that is, But thou wilt say, under the Apostles no man was called *Catholike*: well, bee it so, yet admit this withall, when after the 3
Apostles there were heresies, and men began to rend in pieces, and divide Gods *Dome*, and *Queene*, by sundry different names, did not the Apostolike people require their surnames, whereby they might distinguish the unitie of the uncorrupt people, lest the error of some, should rend in sunder Gods undefiled virgin? where we see *Pacianus* doeth freely grant, that this sur- 10
name *Catholike*, was not in vse in the time of the Apostles. Which testimony *Baronius* doeth notably dissemble, in shewing the original of this name out of *Pacianus*, affirming, but not proouing it to be as ancient as the Apostles. Now this error hath not only befallen the Latine, & Greeke copies, but the Syriacke likewise, as may 15
appeare in the title prefixed before the most ancient Syrian translation, where we shall find these words, *The three Epistles of the three Apostles, before whose eyes our Lord was transfigured, Iames, Peter, Iohn.* In which inscription be couched 2. foule errors. First, in that this translator maketh but 3. Epistles of *Iames, Peter, and Iohn*: whereas 20
there are sixe, he omitting the 2. of *Peter*, the 2. & 3. of *Iohn*, (as also that of *Iude*) as no part of holy Scripture, and therefore the Syriack Church (as I haue already said) doth not receiue these Epistles into their canon vnto this day. The second is, in that he affirmeth *Iames* before whom our Sauour Christ was transfigured in mount *Tabor*, 25
to be the author of this Epistle. For that *Iames*, before whom Christ was transfigured in the mount, was *Iames* the son of *Zebedeus*, and brother of *Iohn*, *Mat. 17. 1.* After sixe daies, *Iesus* tooke *Peter*, & *Iames*, and *Iohn* his brother, and brought them up into an high mountaine, and was transfigured before thē. Which *Iames* could not possibly be the pen- 30
ner of this Epistle, for he was slaine by King *Herod* long before the destruction of *Ierusalem*, & the dispersion of the 12. tribes, *Act. 12. 2.* About that time *Herod* the King stretched forth his hand to vex certaine of the Church: & he slew *Iames* the brother of *Iohn* with the sword. Therefore *Iames* the authour of this Epistle, was *Iames* the son of *Alpheus*. 35
For to faigne an other *Iames* the brother of our Lord, as some haue done, is childish, seeing it is plaine by sundry places of the new Testament, that there were but two of that name mentioned in scripture, *Iames* the son of *Zebedeus* called *Iames* the greater; and *Iames* the sonne of *Alpheus*, brother to *Iude*, called the lesser, and brother 40
of our Lord.

Annalium
tom. 1. p. 349.
Antuerp.

GRATIAS TIBI DOMINE IESV.

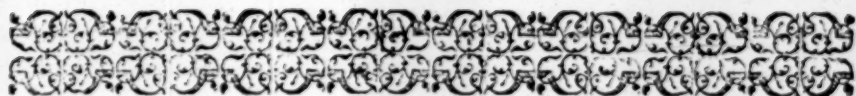
COMMON PLACES HANDLED IN THIS *Commentarie.*

The first figure shewes the page, the second the line.

- 1 **H**ow a man may bee assured that the Scripture is the word of
God. 27. 35
 - 2 How wee may bee assured, that the calling of our Pastours is from
God. 29. 33
 - 3 Of Pharisisme. 36. 12
 - 4 Of prenenting and cooperating grace in mans conuersion. 44. 35
 - 5 Of a Lie, and whether it be alwayes a sinne. 54. 35
 - 6 Of the forme and vse of an Oath. 57. 13
 - 7 Whether faith may be lost. 60. 41
 - 8 Of Satisfaction, or Restitution. 86. 41, &c.
 - 9 Of the distinction of Iewes and Gentiles. 99. 15
 - 10 Of Iustification at large. 101. 11
 - 11 Of Christs Obedience. 104. 2.
 - 12 Of iustifying Faith, and apprehension. 108. 40
 - 13 How to liue wisely, godly, iustly: sundry rules. 121. 13
 - 14 How Christ liueth in vs, and how it may be knowne. 127. 6
 - 15 How wee liue by Faith. 130. 39
 - 16 Of Iudging. 136. 26
 - 17 Of Wuchcraft, and what a Witch is. 137. 24. & 379. 1
 - 18 Of Imputation, and imputed righteousnessse. 153. 28
 - 19 Of the curse of the Law. 161. 8
 - 20 That no man can perfectly fulfill the Law in this life.
and 441. 21. 163. 29
 - 21 The difference betweene the Law and the Gospel. 170. 34
 - 22 How Christ became a curse for vs. 174. 1
 - 23 Whether all Couenants are to bee kept, and howe farre forth.
182. 4. &c.
 - 24 Of the Iudiciall Law. 201. 25
 - 25 Of Baptisme at large. 213. 9
 - 26 Of the Parents authoritie in appointing his childe marriage and
calling. 141. 12
- 27 Of

27	<i>Of the myſterie of the Fathers ſending the Sonne.</i>	445. 12
28	<i>How Chriſt was ſubieſt to the Law.</i>	251. 27
29	<i>Of the obſervation of daies.</i>	276. 25
30	<i>Of good Iealouſie.</i>	292. 3
31	<i>Of Polygamie.</i>	301. 21
32	<i>Where our Mother the Church is to bee found: ſenue motives answered.</i>	310. 24
33	<i>Of ſpirituell bondage.</i>	321. 19
34	<i>Of Chriſtian Libertie.</i>	322. 28
35	<i>Of Imprecation or curſing.</i>	349. 39
36	<i>Of the right uſe and abuſe of Chriſtian Libertie.</i>	353. 7
37	<i>Of brotherly Love.</i>	355. 37
38	<i>Of Chriſtian Peace and Concord.</i>	360. 20
39	<i>Of the Spirit, and walking therein.</i>	363. 13
40	<i>Of the combate of the Fleſh and the Spirit.</i>	367. 12
41	<i>Of Idolatrie.</i>	377. 14
42	<i>Of Hereſie.</i>	381. 35
43	<i>Of Enmitie.</i>	384. 8
44	<i>Of Murther.</i>	387. 3
45	<i>Of Drunkenneſſe and Gluttonie.</i>	388. 5
46	<i>Of Long ſuffering.</i>	393. 14
47	<i>Of Goodneſſe.</i>	394. 6
48	<i>Of Temperance.</i>	396. 6
49	<i>Of Vaine-glorie.</i>	402. 12
50	<i>Of Chriſtian reproofe at large.</i>	414. 30
51	<i>Wherein the Law and Goſpel agree and differ.</i>	440. 34
52	<i>Of the kinds of goodneſſe, and rules to be obſerved therein.</i>	518. 39
53	<i>Of obſerving of times.</i>	530. 28
34	<i>Whether it bee lawfull to compell men to embrace true Religion.</i>	
	542. 11.	
55	<i>Of Inſcriptions of Epistles, and Poſt-ſcripts, at large.</i>	579. 40

A Table



A Table of all those places of Scrip-
ture which are briefly expounded
in this Commentarie.

<i>Genesis.</i>				Chap.	vers.	Pag.	line.
Chap.	vers.	Pag.	line.	<i>Matthew.</i>			
15	13	186	39	5	22	137	6
17	1	165	17	5	22	319	13
17	14	225	6	7	6	416	39
43	22	389	18	6	10	165	4
<i>Exodus.</i>				10	8	474	29
4	28	226	3	25	35	501	14
12	40	187	4	28	19	215	2
29	10	257	33	<i>Marke.</i>			
<i>Deuteronomic.</i>				9	24	110	39
30	6	164	42	<i>Luke.</i>			
32	4	166	41	1	6	165	30
<i>I. Kings.</i>				14	26	384	15
15	5	165	29	<i>Iohn.</i>			
<i>II. Kings.</i>				3	5	225	13
2	23	319	30	4	37	486	5
23	25	165	2	6	45	475	33
<i>II. Chron.</i>				13	34, 35	436	38
21	2	237	8			438	28
<i>Psalmes.</i>				17	12	556	26
40	6	115	3	<i>Romanes.</i>			
69	28	334	1	7	18	166	10
106	31	154	21	8	4	<i>ibid.</i>	17
139	21	384	10	8	5	180	23
<i>Prouerbes.</i>				11	32	196	39
24	16	91	40	13	5	325	26
<i>Ifai.</i>				13	14	334	8
54	1	313	36	16	18	22	9
<i>Ezechiel.</i>				16	17	419	31
33	13	486	22	<i>I. Cor.</i>			

Chap.	vers.	Pag.	lin.	Chap.	vers.	Pag.	lin.
	<i>I. Cor.</i>			5	20	429	10
5	4	420	4		<i>Titus.</i>		
7	12	5	34	3	10	430	16
10	8	462	33		<i>Hebrewes.</i>		
	<i>II. Cor.</i>			6	4,5,6	408	9
5	17	334	41	6	6	219	24
5	19	196	36	10	19	106	18
13	12	420	9	10	26	408	10
	<i>Philip.</i>			13	17	460	32
2	3	531	36		<i>James.</i>		
3	15	165	18	2	10	332	42
	<i>Coloss.</i>			2	24	339	21
2	8	383	27	2	26	338	22
3	17	416	29		<i>I. Iohn.</i>		
	<i>I. Timothie.</i>			3	9	166	26
1	5	355	26	5	3	<i>ib.</i>	32
2	4	237	1		<i>Apocal.</i>		
1	9	325	15	18	6	487	15
5	12	374	23	21	27	556	23





An exact Table of all particulars contained in this Commentarie.

The first figure shewes the page, the second the line.

A

T He blessing of Abraham came from the cursed death of Christ.	178.13
Children of Abraham are of two sorts.	155.32
All beleeuers are children of Abraham three waies.	ibid.34
We must doe three things to walke in the steps of Abrahams faith.	156.28
Of Gods not Accepting the person of man.	79.16
Who are to be Accursed?	22.35
How the Church should accurse any man, and in what order.	22.39
Admission into the kingdome of grace is either outward or inward.	352.18
Of Adoption.	256.27
In the grace of Adoption there be two acts of God.	206.41
The foundation of our Adoption.	232.11
Adulterie to be punished with death.	204.16
What Adultery is, and how great a sinne?	374.12
Of flying adulterie and fornication.	376.6
Two speciall occasions of Adulterie and fornication.	ib.42
In that Adulterie, fornication, &c. are workes of the flesh we are taught three things	326.27
Inordinate affections what?	398.23
Bodily Affliction to be suffered ioyfully for the profession of the truth.	575.23
Azar figures Ierusalem two waies.	304.18
All put for many.	159.14
Anathema what it is?	22.30
Anger whether any lawfull, and when a sinne: and the remedie of it?	385.24
Remedies against Anger. Obiections answered.	393.19
Apostasie hath five degrees.	308.3
What it is to be an Apostile?	1.37
Like authoritie ceased with the Apostles.	

The Apostles doctrine Gods immediate word.

⁴³² What is the office of an Apostle?	59.9
Application of Christ and his benefits is to bee made by certaine degrees.	327.25
Apprehension of Christ stands in two things.	109.6
Three grounds of Apprehension.	109.25
Two degrees of Apprehension.	110.20
Arabia where situate?	50.21
Authoritie of Scripture: see Scripture.	

B

Three markes of inward Baptisme.	211.25
Baptisme in the church of Rome no signe of the true church.	212.23
Baptisme taken sixe waies.	213.14
In the couenant of Baptisme Gods actions are two, mans one.	217.3
The endes of Baptisme are foure.	218.8
The efficacy of Baptisme.	218.17
Arguments of Papists Answered.	219.7
Baptisme doth not abolish originall sinne.	220.7
How Baptisme conferres grace?	221.37
Of the necessity of Baptisme.	224.29
Foure questions of the person that must administer Baptisme.	225.31
The grounds of infants Baptisme.	228.5
Obiections against Baptisme of Infants, Answered.	ib.30
Children of Turkes and Iewes are not to bee baptised.	229.16
Children of professed Papists may be Baptised, two cautions obserued.	229.20, &c.
Children of wicked Christians and of parents Excommunicate may be Baptised.	229.41
Baptisme is to be administered but once.	230.18
Of the place of Baptisme.	230.26
The vse of Baptisme.	230.34
Papists abuse Baptisme.	332.24
We	

A T A B L E.

We must be bearers and how?	432.21	It differs from the calling of other Apostles.	
Beare one with another.	434.9.&c.		2.32
Beleeuers must be Bearers and sufferers.	147.35.	A good calling necessarie for a minister.	ibid. 34
& 148.2		The Anabaptists arguments that a man may	
Four kinds of Beleeuers in the visible church.		preach without a calling, answered.	ibid. 38
381.10		Every lawfull calling is of God.	3.14
Why beleeuers are called children of promise:		Four reasons why ministers callings must bee	
see promise.		manifest to their consciences, and to their au-	
Funerall beneficence.	532.35	ditors.	3.25
Vitall beneficence.	ib.39	Three notes to know whether a man be called	
Blessing came by the cause.	178.13	to the ministerie.	3.39
There is a good and lawfull kinde of boasting.		Three kinds of calling in the Church.	4.13
78.15		Two sortes of calling.	29.37
Boasting is either lawfull or vnlawfull.	402.24	Three kinds of extraordinarie callings.	ibid.
Whether Bondage may stand with Christian re-			40
ligion?	325.11	Three rules to bee obserued for the triall of an	
A treatise of spirituall Bondage.	321.18	extraordinarie calling.	30.16
Our spirituall Bondage stands in three things.		God in his eternall counsell assignes to euery	
ibid. 21.		man a calling.	41.39
Of the nature, signe, and vse of it.	322.4	The child of God in his conuersion hath not	
What is ment by Brethren.	5.15. 54.1	power to resist the inward calling of God.	
The name Brethren of force to perswade vs to			318.2
vse gentlenesse.	411.40	Who calles? who are called? what is the cal-	
Brethren taken foure waies in Scripture.	414.36	ling of God?	351.35.&c.
Burdens of two sorts, and what they be?	460.16	Men answer the calling of God three waies.	ibid.
To beare one anothers burden what?	432.14		42
Bearing of our owne burden what it is?	460.27	Gods calling is either operative or significatiue.	
Vses vpon this, that euery man must beare his			352.7
owne burden.	465.19	Euery man ought to haue two callings.	557.7
Sinne, a burden to wicked Angels, man, and the		Carnall, vide naturall.	
creatures.	ib.26.& 28	Romane Catholikes like vnto the old false pro-	
What kinde of burden sinne is?	465.39	phets for outward shewes.	540.14
The Iewes sporting at the threatnings of the		Their outward shewes stand in foure particulars,	
Lord, called them <i>the burdens of the Lord</i> .	466.	ibid. 15	
20		Ceremonies are of two sorts.	202.5
Mens Burdens are of two sorts.	432.5	Ceremonies considered three waies.	271.42
Four sorts of those burdens that may be borne		Charming a kinde of witchcraft.	379.20
of others, as well as of our selues.	ibid. 12	How we may discetne of charmes?	379.3
The two first sorts borne three waies.	ibid. 23	Two degrees of Gods children.	296.7
The two latter how to be borne?	ibi. 35	Why beleeuers are called children of promise?	
Sundrie obiections against Bearing only our		vide promise.	
owne Burdens, propounded and answered.		Who are the children of Abraham? vide A-	
460.27.&c.		brahim.	
Infants beare the burden of Adams sinne, and		A Childe of God is two waies.	295.10
why?	461.9	A Childe by grace is three waies.	ibid 34
True beleeuers freed by Christ from a threefold		The excellency of this benefit to be the Childe	
burden?	464.41	of God.	207.3.
How Christ and we are said to beare the Burden		The duties of Gods children.	209.5. & 23
of our sinnes?	465.12	A Treatise of the authority that parents haue in	
		disposing their children.	241.12
		Children must be subiect to their tutors and go-	
		uernours.	143.7
			Wha.

C

Pauls Calling was not by the church of Anti-
och.

2.10

A T A B L E.

What a man must doe to be assured he is Gods
childe? 243.40
What the vnion with Christ is? *vid.* Vnion.
In what respect they are said to bee one with
Christ? 232.18
How all beleeuers are made one with Christ?
ibid.
Of the donation of Christ. 233.5
Of our receiuing of Christ. 233.26
What communion with Christ is? 233.33
How the Lord Iesus is put on. 234.11
Of the apprehension of Christ. *vid.* Apprehen-
sion.
Why Christ called Sonne? *vid.* Sonne.
Whether the Sonne of God? *vid.* Sonne.
Christ tooke not to himselfe the office of a Me-
diatour. 247.15
A treatise of Christs incarnation, why, how farre
forth, and how he was made flesh? 247.41
Of the vnitng of the flesh to the godhead of
the Sonne. 249.40
Of Christs subiection to the law. 251.17
Of Christs obedience in fulfilling the law. 251.
40
Of the application of Christ. *vide* Application.
Christ crucified, the storehouse and treasure of
the Church, which is shewed in five points
556.42
Why Paul gloried rather in the crosse of Christ
then in his resurrection? 557.36
The Papists wicked glorying in the crosse.
558.11
Christ is called our Lord in five respects. 576.
27
Christ was made a curse for vs. *vide* Curse.
How Christ suffered the wrath of God? 175.7
Christ must bee really learned before hee bee
taught. 46.23
When Christs obedience began and ended?
104.3
How Christ could obey being God, and satisfie
for vs being man? 104.31
In what order Christ giues himselfe vnto vs?
127.38
Christ is God. 5.7
Christ which giues grace and peace, why called
our Lord? 11.30
How Christ is said to giue himselfe? 12.6
Two ends why Christ gaue himselfe. 13.10
Christs death and sacrifice was voluntarie. 12.23
Euery man must apply the gift and sacrifice of
Christ vnto himselfe, and how it may be done?

13.37
How they of the old testament were partakers of
the body and blood of Christ? 19.14
Christ is the great Prophet and doctour of the
church. 32.22
Christs office stands in three things. 32.25
Christ teacheth those that are to be teachers, two
waies. 33.15
What a Christian is. 397.18
A Christian is Christs, five waies. *ibid.* 19
Tee vses of one being Christs. *ibid.* 28
The office of a Christian man. 398.38
The Church of Rome no church of God. 8.31
How the Church can bee wasted, and why the
Lord suffers it to be so? 389.8 & 14
Authoritie of the church no principle. 332.7
Vnitie is not an infallible and inseparable marke
of the church. 359.27
Three certen markes of the Catholike church.
313.7
Why the Christian church is called barren and
desolate. 314.25 & 38
The estate of the church is either inward or out-
ward. 315.1
The vse that ought to be made that the church
hath Christ for her husband. *ibid.* 29
The Catholike church on earth is said to bee in
heaven for two causes. 309.18
Of the churches reioycing. 316.15
It is one in number, and no more. 310.6
How the church is troubled? *vide* Trouble.
The catholike church why called our mother.
310.25
Where our mother is to be found. 316.33
The order to be vsed in the censure giuen vpon
a church. 8.20
Ierusalem the mother church rather then Rome.
53.32
The church was before the writing of the word,
but not before the word. 67.36
It is inuisible. 310.9
Of Circumcision. 70.1
Circumcision considered according to the cir-
cumstance of time, three waies. 328.41
Circumcision in it selfe a thing indifferent, yet
not to be vsed if it be vrged as a matter of ab-
solute necessitie. 542.6
Ciuill vertues, and a ciuill life, are no better then
sinnes. 15.30
What is the combate that naturall men haue.
368.35
The cause of the spirituall combate, and the
person

A T A B L E.

- persons in whom it is. 368.13
 The vse of the combate. 370.1
 The commandements of God are not grieuous
 three waies. 166.31
 Concealements of the truth sometimes lawfull.
 551.23
 How it must bee vnderstood, that in the com-
 mandement, the sinnes of the fathers are visited
 vpon the children. 461.27
 Papists make three degrees of concupiscence.
vide Lust.
 Conference of Pastor and people, necessarie. 398.
 7
 How conscience is free, and how subiect to the
 power of the Magistrate. 362.1
 Three obiections remooued that the lawes and
 traditions of the church, binde Conscience as
 truly as the word of God. 325.25
 The consent of Pastors and people excellent.
 6.3
 What is the force of consent. *ibid.* 6
 Consent no certen marke of the church, *ibid.* 15
 The catholike consent of beleeuers in points of
 religion, is not the true and liuely Scripture. 6.23
 Consent stands in three things. *ib.* 33
 Consent not to be found amongst the Papists.
ibid. 40
 Consent is to be found amongst vs in the foun-
 dation of religion. 7.8
 Consider our selues and others. 412.22. & c.
 Constancie. *vid.* standing.
 Consultation not to be vsed in matters of religi-
 on, nor in obedience. 49.11
 The vse of the contemplation of Christ, by faith.
 142.25
 The effect of contention. 359.15
 Contentions some lawfull, some sinfull. 385.37
 Contract in some cases may be dissolued. 302.9
 Sinnes after conuersion are pardonable. 407.32
 Three causes of Pauls conuersion. 40.33
 The order and dependance of causes in a sinners
 conuersion. 41.13
 Five Questions of Pauls conuersion. *vide Paul.*
 Conuersion wrought by certaine degrees. 296.
 24
 Corruption not felt by corruption but by grace.
 466.3
 Couenants being lawfull are to be kept with he-
 retikes and enemies. 182.20
 What couenants with losse are to be kept and
 what not? *ibid.* 25
 Couenants of two sorts, legall and euangelicall,
 502.3
 The couenants of workes hath two properties.
 307.11
 Conferences and counells are laudable. 66.21
 Three caueats in gathering a counsell. 66.33
 For the ending of differences in religion there
 must be conferences in a free or christian coun-
 cell. 360.43
 Why the protestants ioyned not with the pa-
 pists in the counsell of Trent. 361.8
 Five rules for our libertie in vsing the creatures.
vid. Libertie.
 Why we ought to take vp our crosse and follow
 Christ, certaine reasons. 620.5
 What is ment by the crosse of Christ. 630.16
 Crucifying is either the action of Christ, or our
 action; of Christ threefold. 398.41
 Three meanes to crucifie the flesh. 399.17
 Reasons why a man hanging on a tree is cursed.
 177.7
 What the curse is that Christ was made for vs?
 173.34.
 How Christ was a curse? 174.1
 Whether Paul did well in cursing his enemies?
 349.40
 Whether we may curse ours? 350.18
 How we should vse the imprecations of *Dauids*
Psalmes? *ibid.* 23

D

 A fourefold kind of obseruation of daies. 276.25
 Against the Popish obseruation of holy daies.
 278.23
 How Protestants obserue them? *ibid.* 41
 Against obseruing daies of good and bad suc-
 cesse. 279.14
 Two rules to be obserued for the right manner
 and measure of eating and drinking. *Vide Ea-*
ting.
 Christs temporall death did counteruaile eter-
 nall death. *vide Death.*
 We must carrie our selues as dead men in three
 respects. 126.24
 There are two degrees both in the first and se-
 cond death. 174.33. & 37
 What debate is? 383.5
 There is a deceit called *dolus bonus*. 56.5
 Of men deceiuing themselves. 449.32
 A man may be deceiued both in diuine and hu-
 mane things sundry waies. 481.39
 A man deceiues himselfe two waies. *ibid.* 42
 The heart of man deceitfull. 482.17
 From whence that springeth? *ibid.* 20.23
 Good

A T A B L E.

Good desires distinguished from carnall desires
by three properties. 262.14
Of the desires of our hearts and that they are
cryes, and how? 362.26
Of the league or compact with the diuell. 379.3
What is the chiefe principle in diuinitie? 382.34
What drunkennes is? 388.5
Two things in this sinne. *ibid.* 8
To be giuen to drinking, is a sinne. *ibid.* 15
Inducements to detest drunkennes. *ibid.* 23
Arg. for drunkennes, answered. 389.10

E

Two rules to bee obserued for the right manner
and measure of eating and drinking. 387.41
Election ariseth not of the will of man but of the
grace of God. 35.25
How we may attaine to the assurance of our ele-
ction? 41.32
Gods election is the roote of all the gifts of
God in vs. 271.23
The meere grace of God is the cause of our e-
lection. 317.25
In religion there ought to be a holy emulation.
39.18
There is a good emulation, and a carnall emula-
tion. 384.10
Whether *Paul* did well in cursing his enemies?
349.40.
Whether we may curse our enemies? *vide* Curse.
Enmitie. *vide* Hatred.
Enuie what it is? 386.35
Error in the foundation, or beside the foundati-
on of religion. 8.1
Error of humane frailtie or of obstinacie. 8.4
No man can set downe the precise time when
errors had there beginning. 73.39
Error is either in iudgement or manners; both
are of two sorts. 397.18
In the examination of our selues foure rules
must be obserued. 190.39
The contagion of euill examples must be cut off
in the societie of men. 95.35
Excommunication when to be vsed? 344.31
Offenders are not to be excommunicated at the
first, but orderly to be proceeded against. 346.
35. and 430.12

F

Faith is of great vse in the kingdome of God,
337.29.
When faith first begins to breede in the heart,
210.20

How faith in Christ is conceiued in the heart.
Ibid. 32
Whether faith may be lost. 60.41
What iustifying faith is, as the Papists define.
107.42.
The obiekt of Abrahams faith was double;
108.6
What true iustifying faith is. *Ibid.* 40.
Faith and confidence are two distinct gifts of
God. 109.14
Two causes why a beleeuers is said to liue by
faith. 130.31.
How men liue by faith. *Ibid.* 39
Faith considered two wayes. 154.1
That wee may liue by faith, wee must doe two
things. 170.3
A particular or speciall faith hath three acts or
effects. 209.17
Arguments of the Papists against speciall faith,
answered. *Ibid.* 24
Euery grieuous fall doeth not abolish the fauour
of God. 107.18
Of the faith of infants. 228.40
What faith toward God is. 394.39
Reasons to prooue that the faith of the most is
false and fained. 395.1
Faith works by loue, being the cause of loue, and
loue the fruit of Faith. 337.39
In Faith two things. 338.8
Faith towards men stands in two particulars.
395.18
Reasons to moue vs to maintaine Faith and
truth among men. *Ibid.* 32
By Faith we doe not abrogate, but establish the
law. *Ibid.* Law.
The dutie of gouernors of Families. 362.22
God is called a Father in two respects. 196.7,8
Of the Fathers sending his Sonne. *Ibid.* God.
No man exempted from falling. 407.26
Fainting twofold. 516.17.
Spiritual Fainting twofold. *Ibid.* 22
Faints of Churches be of two sorts. 7.29
Of naturall Feare, how it is good, and how e-
uill. 94.18.
Three kinds of Feare. *Ibid.* 31.
Figures and Allegories vsed in Scripture. 305.3
Of the spirituall combate betwixt the flesh and
the spirit. *Ibid.* Combate.
How the flesh and spirit fight together. 367.15
The lust of the flesh hath two actions. *Ibid.* 31
A treatise of the works of the flesh, where is han-
dled the condition, the kinds, and the punish-
ment.

A T A B L E.

ments thereof.	473.33	ing, one before God, another before man.	
Flesh signifies more then sensualitie.	382.26	555.14	
What the flesh is.	398.13	Obiections for Boasting answered.	<i>ibid.</i> 1
In the flesh are two things : affections, and lusts.		Unlawfull glorying when it is ?	<i>ib.</i> 39
<i>Ibid.</i> 22.		Glorying in wickednesse three waies.	556.5
Meanes to crucifie the flesh.	399.16	Reasons, why Paul did Glorie rather in Christs	
For, signifies not alwayes a cause, but any Argu-		death, then in his resurrection.	557.33
ment.	501.16	The Papists wicked Glorying in the crosse. <i>vide</i>	
The Foreknowledge of God. <i>Vide</i> God.		crosse.	
Fornication what it is.	374.39	Gluttony what it is ?	388.10
Against tolleration of Fornication.	375.15	False gods are set vp two waies.	267.40
To flie adultery and Fornication.	376.6	How God is to be acknowledged and worship-	
Two speciall occasions of them.	<i>Ibid.</i> 41	ped.	11.8
Freedom in good things foure-fold.	324.11	Gods foreknowledge is not seuered from his	
G		will.	157.37
The Galatians reuolt.	7.26	In what order the foreknowledge of God stands	
What the Churches of Galatia were.	8.36	to his will.	158.8
How the Galatians receiued the Gospel.	25.12	God is called a father in two respects.	206.21
To Gentilize, what it is.	97.38	How God is said to repent.	392.39
Gentlenesse, what.	393.39	A childe of God two waies.	206.36
The gifts of God are inordinately vsed three		A treatise of God sending his Son.	245. 12. &c.
wayes. <i>Vide</i> Inordinate.		God knoweth exactly all our actions.	484.32
The more excellent gifts any hath receiued, the		How the godly mans sinnes doe not condemne	
more he is bound to be seruiceable to others.		him in the latter Iudgement, three reasons.	
409.21		486.26	
The glory of heauen two-fold, Essentiall, and		The godly reape not here that they sow, there-	
Accidentall.	490.39	fore there is another life.	487.8
To glory, implies three things.	552.9	Seven rules to liue godly.	121.30
Two grounds of glorying, one in God, another		What a man must doe to be assured that he is	
in himselfe.	457.18	Gods childe.	261.36
How they differ, and how wee may doe both.		Why affliction is the portion of the godly two	
<i>Ibid.</i> 19.		reasons.	548.7
Obiections against glorying, and reioycing in		Vses of this that the godly are persecuted and af-	
our selues.	457.34	flicted.	<i>ibid.</i> 33
How glorying in a mans selfe doeth differ from		Good things are commonly done in euill man-	
vaine glory, which is a branch of pride.	<i>Ibid.</i>	ner.	290.33. &c.
Foure rules to be obserued, that we may glory in		How they may be well done, three rules.	291.7
the testimony of a good conscience.	458.17	The godly faile in the manner of doing good.	
Lessons to bee learned from this, that wee are to		302.6	
glorie in the testimonie of a good conscience.		The dutie of doing good declared by sundry	
<i>Ibid.</i> 34.		arguments.	518.39
Glorying, when it is good, and when euill.	552.	Doing of good standeth in three things.	519.1
15.		Rules to be obserued in doing good.	521.23
Glorying good or euill.	<i>Ibid.</i>	We are not alwayes to imitate God in good and	
Euill glorying, is vaine glorying in three re-		euill, for three causes.	522.18
spects.	<i>Ibid.</i> 19	God is the generall good, we the particular.	<i>ib.</i> 25
Wherein we ought not to glory.	<i>Ibid.</i> 30	To the nature of the generall good three things	
Neither in wisdom, strength, riches, honor, nor		appertaine.	522.29
pleasures.	<i>Ibid.</i>	Reasons, why wee are to doe good to all men.	
Glorying in outward things, not only vaine, but		523.25	
impious. Foure reasons.	558.28	How we are to doe good especially to the house-	
There is a two-fold lawfull boasting or glory-		hold of faith ?	524.33
			Rea-

A T A-B L E.

Reasons to doe good especially to the faithfull.
 525.6
 The order to bee obserued in doing of good to
 others. 526.28
 There is no possibilitie of doing good after this
 life. 531.18
 Goodnesse what it is. 394.6
 Goodnesse respects either the bodie or the
 minde, and stands in foure actions. 394.17
 Goodnesse threefold, preserving, vniting, and
 communicatiue. 520.1
 Communicatiue Goodnesse hath foure degrees.
 520.22
 What is vnderstood by *Good*. 468.24
 A felicitie to receiue the doctrine of the Gospel,
 and what benefits come thereby. 28.31
 The law and Gospel not one in substance of do-
 ctrine. 333.17
 The Gospel must bee preached rather then the
 law, for two causes. 47.12
 It must bee preached to the Gentiles for two
 causes. 48.4
 There is but one Gospel, and one way of saluati-
 on. 19.10
 Popish religion subuersts the Gospel of Christ.
 20.29
 The doctrine of the Gospel called the truth for
 two causes. 139.29
 The antiquities of the Gospel. 158.38
 How it differs from the law. *Vide* Law.
 The Gospel was not reueiled to the world till
 after the comming of Christ. 199.11
 Persecution and the preaching of the gospel goe
 hand in hand. 547.42
 The Gospel is no new law. 429.34
 In what the law and Gospel agree. *ibid.* 35
 They differ in fise things. 440.17
 Why the Gospel is called a mysterie. *ibid.* 24
 The doctrine of the Gospel called by an ex-
 cellencie the word, also the word of the king-
 dome of God, of saluation, of life. 467.
 40.&c.
 Our saluation placed alone in grace. 578.11
 A childe by grace three waies. 206.35. *Vide*
 Childe.
 The knowledge of the true God stands in fixe
 points. 217.21
 What is ment by grace. 9.6
 The causes of grace bee the Father and Christ,
 & how they are distinct in regard of the man-
 ner of working. 9.38
 Grace in God, is the first cause of all good things

[in vs. 10.5
 grace and peace are the chiefe good things to be
 sought for. *ibid.* 28
 Gods order in the communication of grace and
 peace. 11.13
 Grace and workes cannot stand together in iusti-
 fication. 18.4
 Wherein stands the efficacie of preuenting
 grace. 45.26
 Whether it can be resisted. 46.5
 How efficacie of grace and libertie of will stand
 together. *ibid.* 12
 Grace in Scripture signifieth two things. 134.7
 Preuenting grace is two-fold. 271.30
 The workes of grace in God imprint their li-
 mage in the hearts of them that belong to
 God. *ibid.* 39
 Falling from grace though but in part, is danger-
 ous. 299.14
 The hatred of Gods grace in man is the begin-
 ning of all persecution. 319.22.
 What is our guide now in the new Testament,
 the law being abrogated. 204.42.&c.
 One little grace of God brings many other with
 it. 345.4
 Beside the antecedent and first grace there is ne-
 cessarie a subsequent, or second grace. 372.
 22
 Grace mentioned in the Scripture twofold. 575.
 40
Gratia gratum faciens, and *gratia gratis data*. *ib.*
 42
Gratia gratum faciens, naturall, or supernaturall.
ibid. 576.7
 Why the fauour and loue of God is called the
 grace of Christ. *ibid.* 22
 The soule the proper subiect of Grace, 577.33
 H
 Hatred whether a sinne or not. 384.9
 VWhat it is. *ibid.* 31
 VWhat a right heart is. 97.12
 VWhat an humble and honest heart is. *ibid.* 13
 Mans heart peruerse to Gods ordinance. 545.41
 VWhat Heresie is. 381.35
 Difference betweene heresie and schisme. 382.
 7
 Difference betweene heresie and a simple error.
ibid. 21
 Three things in heresie. *ibid.* 22
 Three rules to preferue our selues from heresies.
ibid. 31.
 There are two degrees of honour. 402.35
 Q 3
 Idola-

A T A B L E.

I		
Idolatrie committed two waies.	167.41	Paul made five Iourneyes to Ierusalem. 64.34
That Idolatrie may be rooted out of the minde,		We are to haue some warrant for our Iournies,
what is to be done.	269.16	where three sortes of men are to bee blamed.
What Idolatrie is.	377.19	66.3.&c.
An Idol and Idolatry taken two waies.	ib.16.&c.	Israel two fould.
The Romish religion teacheth Idolatrie foure		Israel of God, what.
waies.	377.41	Israel of God why mentioned.
Their Arguments answered.	378.15	Judaisme what it is.
Jealousie twofold.	290.7	What it is to Iudaife.
Good Jealousie stands in three things.	292.7	Iudge the best of others: three obiections moou-
What is the name of (Iew) signifieth opposed to		med: and answered.
Gentiles.	237.5	345.38, &c.
Of the distinction of Iewes and gentiles, the		In giuing iudgement of Churches three rules to
cause of it.	99.16	marked.
Wherein it stands.	ibid.28	Three things are subiect to iudgement.
How long it endured.	ibid.42	Iudgement is twofold.
The nation of the Iewes shall be called, and con-		The dutie of ministers often to forewarne the
uerted before the end of the world, but when		people, and the dutie of the people often to
or how God knowes.	159.18	be meditate of Gods iudgements.
Ierusalem a type of the Catholike church in fixe		390.2.
respects.	308.35	Iugling a kind of witchcraft.
Whether Ignorance be a sin in those that want		What the word <i>iustifie</i> signifies.
the word of God.	267.11	The subiect of iustification.
The Image of God stands in two things.	295.19	False causes of iustification.
Whether Images be necessarie in the congrega-		What is that thing in Christ, by and for which
tion of the people of God.	141.10	we are iustified.
Immoderate vse of Gods gifts is three waies.		Wee are not iustified onely by the passion of
554.16.&c.		Christ.
Imposition of hands by the church of Antioch		The meanes of iustification.
vpon Paul, no calling but a confirmation of		Faith alone Iustifieth.
his calling.	2.9	Iustice twofold, of the person and of the act.
Imputation what?	153.28	23
Imputation twofold.	ibid.34	The danger of the doctrine of Iustification by
Things indifferent not to be vsed as oft as wee		workes.
liste and how we will.	70.30	Iustification is twofold: of the person, of the
Two things restrainethe vse of them indifferent.		faith of the person
ibid.37		Arguments against iustification by workes.
A thing indifferent when it is made necessarie to		Faith and loue no ioynnt causes in iustification.
saluation is not to be vsed.	ibid.22	338.33.
Infantes how they are to bee tearmed inno-		Whoso.uer obstinately mainetaineth the do-
cents, and how not	463.19	ctrine of iustification by workes, cannot be sa-
Infants haue no good workes.	487.42	ued.
Infants to be iudged not by the booke of Con-		Obiections remooued.
science, but by the booke of life.	488.2	The kindes of iustification.
Inscriptions no part of Scriptures.	580.23	The practise of them that are iustified.
What the Intercession of Christ is.	262.26	But one Iustification.
Certain Interpretation of Scripture where to be		Papists in the day of death renounce Iustificati-
found.	311.32	on by workes.
Ioy is twofold.	392.32	There is a Iustification before God, and a Iusti-
Ioy of grace in this life standes in three things,		fication before men.
and hath a double fruite.	ibid.33. and 38	We are Iustified not onely by the death but also
		by the obedience of Christ.
		No Iustification by workes.
		371.2
		The

A T A B L E.

The twofold popish Iustification confuted. 306
37.

K

Kingdome of God what. 37.24
Gods kingdome what it signifieth. 390.10
Knowledge of the true God stands in twopoints.
217.21.
Knowledge of God is twofold. 266 33
Knowledge whereby men know God is either
litterall or spirituall. 269.24
The properties of spirituall are three *ibid.* 34.
The Knowledge whereby God Knowes men
standes in two things. 271.19
and it hath two properties. 372.28

L

The distinction of Latia and Dulia friuolous.
275.33
We are free from the Law in foure respects. 119
1.
The maine difference betweene the Law and
the Gospell. 170.31 & 187.29
Why the law is vrged though we cannot keepe
it? 172.5
The difference of the promises of the Law and
the Gospell. 184.4
Impossible for any man in the time of this life
to fulfill the Law. 163.27
Obiections remooued &c. *ibid.* 3
There are two kinds of fulfilling the Law. 165.
31
The Law is not greuous three waies: *vide* com-
mandements.
The difference of the promises of the Law and
the Gospell. 184.4
How the Law reuealed sinne before Christ and
after. 189.9
The vse of Gods Lawes. 198.34
The Law is a Schoolemaster to Christ in two
respects. 200.12
When the Law of Moses was abrogated. 201.19
How farre forth the Law is abrogated. *ibid.* 35
What is the Morall, Ceremoniall and Iudiciall
law. *ibid.* 36.37.
And how farre forth they are all abrogated. *ibid.*
Two notes whereby a Iudicial Law may be dis-
cerned to be Morall. 203.17
What is our guide the Law beeing abrogated.
vide. guide.
The Law considered 2.waies. 253 36.
The Law is a yoke 3.waies. *ibid.* 41
A treatise of beeing vnder the Law, and redemp-
tion from it. 253.31

Our liberty by Christ frees vs from the Law
three waies. 327.42

The fulfilling of the law in this life is imperfect.
332.16.

The true difference betweene the Law and the
Gospel in seauen things. 306.12

The false difference confuted. *ibid.* 29

How the whole law is fulfilled in the loue of our
neighbour. 357.33

Transgression of the Law twofold. 370.19

Wherein the Law and the Gospel agree? *vide*
Gospel.

By our faith we doe not abrogate the law but e-
stablish it in two respects. 440.7

Wherein the Law and Gospel differ. *vide* Gospel.
No man in this life can fulfill the Law, prooued
by foure Arguments. 442.21

The Law is said to bee fulfilled three waies.
445.18.

Fulfilling of the Law taken two waies. 445.27

League with the Diuell twofold. 379.4

The Law hath a three fold vse though it cannot
be fulfilled. 445.40

Why men are so cold in liberalitie? 489.33

Rules for the vse of liberty. 354.31

Christian libertie abused, three waies. 353.11

What is the abuse of liberty, and where it is to be
found, and what is the right vse of it? *ibid.* 8.

Fiue degrees in the way and order, vsed in pro-
curing our libertie by Christ. 245.6

A treatise of libertie by grace. 322.26

VWho is the author of it, the persons to whom
it belongeth, and our dutie touching this li-
bertie? *ibid.* 28

Of the parts of christian libertie. *ibid.* 29

Magistracy and Christian liberty may stand to-
gether. 325.9

Christ procures liberty by two meanes. 326.27

Popish religion is flat against Christian liberty,
and that two waies. 327.41

Our liberty frees vs from the Law three waies.
327.42.

Our life ought to be a pilgrimage. 309.29

There is a naturall and spirituall life. 121.1

There are three degrees of life. 122.39

The spirituall life stands especially in 3. things.
130.41.

Life is created or vacreated: created is naturall
or spirituall. 400.18

Two degrees of spirituall life. *ibid.* 24

In what sense life eternall is a reward? 503.3

VWhat resemblance it hath with a reward?

A T A B L E

<i>ibid.</i> 11	Of our limitations of Opinion and affection.	311.29.	together. <i>vide</i> libertie.	
	Long-suffering what, and the maner to vse it?	393.14	How the law of the Magistrate makes an in-	different thing to be necessarie. 325.41
	Selfe-loue. <i>vide</i> Overweening.		Marriage what it is.	301.13
	Of louing our Neighbour, <i>vide</i> Neighbour.		Marriage no sowing to the Flesh, as Tacianus the	Heretique and Syritius the Pope would haue
	Of mutuall loue betweene Pastor and people.	282.27.	it, but to the spirit.	406.20
	How faith workes by loue?	337.39	By Markes what is signified.	572.43
	The vse of loue, though it doe not iustifie.	339	Markes of Christ of two sortes.	<i>ibid.</i> 36.
	33.		Visible or inuisible:	
	What the loue of our Neighbour is?	355.38	Outward or inward:	
	VVhat is the vse of Loue.	356.12	typicall or, reall.	<i>ibid.</i>
	Sixe sortes of men liue in the breach of the rules	<i>ibid.</i> 24	Reall markes double either in his naturall body	or mysticall. 573.21
	of Loue.		How the markes in his naturall body doe differ	from those in his mysticall body. <i>ibid.</i> 39
	How loue is a fruite of the spirit,	392.3	What vse to be made of Pauls markes.	574.20
	Loue followes faith and regeneration: therefore		The markes of the Fratres flagellantes to be de-	rided. <i>ibid.</i> 42
	the first act of loue is not by nature as the Pa-	<i>ibid.</i> 5	Legacies giuen to the maintenance of the Masse,	may bee applied to the maintenance of the
	pists teach.		true worship of God.	182.6
	The loue of God what.	392.16	The difference of Meekenes and long suffering	
	Three especiall signes whereby it is discerned.	<i>ibid.</i> 17	396.3	
	The Loue of our Neighbour what	<i>ibid.</i> 29	What meekenes is.	410.6. & 36
	VVhy the Loue of our brother is called the		The effects of it.	411.1
	law of Christ rather then the law of nature,		Motives to Meekenes.	410.26
	of God, or of Moses?	436.33	How there is but one Mediator.	190.25
	The grounds of Loue three.	523.28	How Moses was a Mediatour.	192.5
	The Loue of our Brethren greater or lessor, two		How we are to put affiance in men.	346.19
	waies.	527.16	We serue God in seruing of men.	358.19
	How we must loue all men alike and how wee	<i>ibid.</i> 17	How men are nothing of themselues.	447.12
	may not.		& 35	
	How farre doth the child of God proceede in		Men naturally thinke too well of themselues.	448.15.
	the lustes of the flesh.	366.13	How we are to please men and how not.	450.1
	Five degrees of lusts.	366.16	Herein fixe cautions to be vsed.	456.12.
	The lust of the flesh hath two actions	<i>vide.</i>	Gods mercie great to sinners.	43.17
	flesh.		It hath a double effect in vs.	<i>ibid.</i> 22
	The lusts of the spirit hath two. <i>vide</i> spirit.		It is much abused and how.	<i>ibid.</i> 29
	Lust after Baptisme in the regenerate is a sinne.		By mercy what is vnderstood.	570.3
	370.2.		All Merits and satisfactions for sinnes are to be	reduced to the person of Christ, and that there
	Lusts what.	398.29	be no humane satisfactions, nor meritorious	workes. 12.38
	VVhat a lye is, and whether a sinne or no?	53.33	Merit of condignitie may bee vnderstood three	waies. 598.30
	& 56.13		What Papists do hold merit of good workes in	regard onely of Gods promise and diuine ac-
	Difference betweene a lye and a Parable.	55.22	ceptation, and what in respect partly of their	owne worthinesse, partly of Gods acceptance,
	And betweene a lye and the concealement of a	<i>ibid.</i> 21	and what onely in regard of the dignitie of	the
	thing.			
	Betweene Lying and faining.	55.31		
	Reasons against lying.	395.32.		
	M			
	VVwhether Magistrates be necessarie in the soci-			
	eties of Christians-	235.22		
	Magistracie and Christian libertie may stand			

A T A B L E.

the workes.	598.36	The Modestie of Paul.	17.23
Ministers must deliuer nothing of their owne.	531.	The practise of the godly to mourne for other mens sinnes.	297.25
Ministers which are to be teachers must first be taught.	33.20.	Obiections in defence of Murther remooued.	387.3
They must be taught by men where reuelation is wanting.	33.38	N	
Ministers are pillars and how, with the vse of it.	84.37	The kinds of Nakednes.	233.38
Ministers of the word must of necessitie ioyne with good doctrine the example of good life.	95.14.	Nature doth counterfeite grace, and how.	291.14
What kind of men Ministers ought to bee.	95.24	A naturall man can doe the workes of the morall law, yet in him they are sinnes.	196.17
Ministers duty specially to reprocue.	422.5	Nature and Person distinguished.	245.38
The ministerie is painfull like the trauaile of a woman.	294.1	What Nature is.	ibid.
The dignitie of the Ministerie.	294.34	Naturall and carnall men are of two sorts.	468.36.
Ministers must temper their giftes to their hearers.	298.30	How we must loue our Neighbours.	289.5
Ministers subject to slander.	348.11	What the loue of our neighbour is?	vide Loue.
Whether a Minister may not conceale the truth sometime.	349.4	How the whole law is fulfilled in the loue of our Neighbour.	357.32
Ministers liues should be reall Sermons.	550.36	Who is our Neighbour.	358.1
The condition of faithfull Ministers is to be full of troubles.	572.12	In some cases wee must loue our Neighbour more then our selues.	ibid.7
In what case a Minister in his preaching, may vse Philosophie, testimonie of Prophane writers, and quotations of Fathers.	477.29	Of the loue of our Neighbour.	vide Loue.
Ministers that labour in the word may lawfully take wages though they haue sufficient of their owne.	479.12	The new Creature, or new man, and old man, what it is.	562.30
Abuse of the Ministers proued to be the abuse of God.	483.25	The vses of this, that we are new creatures in Christ.	564.5.6
Of Professours deriding and defrauding Ministers of the word.	484.8	Greater power required in the regeneration of man then in the creation of the world.	ibid.26
Why Ministers are not to sell the preaching of the word.	473.40	How men are Nothing of themselves.	vide Men.
What they are to aime at in their preachings, & what not.	474.1	O	
Whether Ministers are to bee maintained by common contribution and liberalitie of the people, or not.	470.31	Four things in an Oath.	57.14
That it is more convenient for Ministers to bee maintained by set stipends, arising from goods proper to the Church, then by voluntarie contribution, sundry reasons.	471.9	The forme of an oth is to be plaine and direct, in the name of God, and not of creatures	ibid 34
Obiection, That the Ministers place is an easie office, answered.	471.32	An Oath is to be vsed onely in the case of extremitie.	58.8
what a miracle is.	150.8	Obseruation of daies and times.	275.25
The Deuil cannot worke a true Miracle.	ibid.21	The Gospell must be preached though all men be offended.	342.26
How Mocking is persecution.	319.10	Men haue an ouerweening of themselves naturally.	448.15
		The cause of it.	447.13
		Such notably deceiue themselves.	ibid.32
		It is the poison of loue.	451.19
		Whether a man may not iudge himselfe to haue a greater measure of gifts then they that haue lesse?	ibid.32
		The remedies of this euill.	452.24
		Outward priuiledges or dignities are of no moment in the kingdome of Christ.	325.31.
		P	
		How a pacification is to bee made in religion?	R r 298.22

A T A B L E.

298.22.		What was Gods preuenting grace in Pauls con- uerſion. <i>ibid.</i> 44.31
Papiſts teach and mainetaine the worſhippe of faſe Gods. 268.22 &c.		Whether Paul was an argent or Patient in his conuerſion. 45.5
Papiſts and wee differ not about circumſtances. 331.30.		Whether violence was offered to his wil in con- uerſion. <i>ibid.</i> 21
No pacification with the Papiſts for religion, but ciuill ſocietie. 360.30		The dignitie of Paul about the other Apoſtles. 5.10
Papiſts teach Idolatry foure waies. <i>vide</i> Idolatry.		Two cauſes why Paul writes his epiſtles in the name, and with the conſent of the brethren. 5.22.
Papiſts vrge their owne ceremonies more ſtrict- ly then Gods truth. 545.20. &c.		The true ſigne of euerſy of Pauls epiſtles diſco- couered, and the faſe remooued. 537.15. & 538.3.4
Papiſts like to the faſe teachers in Pauls time, in making things which bee ſignes of ſaluation meritorious cauſes of it. 545.34		Why Paul would not take wages of the church of Corinth and ſome others, foure reaſons. 473.12.
The Popes and Prelates of Rome like to faſe teachers in compelling men to obſerue that which they themſelues will not obſerue 549. 35.15.		Peace outward or inward. 569.12 & 31
The Popiſh Church like to faſe teachers in pretending religion, and conſcience, for their eafe, and cloaking of their impietic. 551.9		Peace with the creatures which bee of foure ſorts. 569.14.
It is ſhewed in two particulars eſpecially. <i>ibid.</i> 15. &c.		Peace of conſcience double, with God, with our ſelues. <i>ibid.</i> 31. & 33.
In pardon there be foure degrees. 61.40		Peace with our ſelues, threefold. <i>ibid.</i> 34
Parents ſuſtaine a double perſon. 100.11		Of peace of conſcience. <i>ibid.</i> 42
Of Parents authoritie ouer their children. <i>vide</i> children.		What peace is & what be the parts of it. 9.18. &c
Parents truly puniſhed in their childrens pu- niſhment, notwithstanding it is not felt by them, whereof be foure reaſons. 462.2		Peace without grace is no peace. 10.41
Foure Principall duties to be performed by the people to the paſtors, & what they be. 468.38		How we muſt haue peace with all men. 360.22
Paſtors are to haue not onely countenance but maintenance of the people. 469.2		Peace is threefold. <i>ibid.</i> 40
Whether paſtors are to be maintained by con- tribution or not. 470.32		Three rules for the maintaining of Churches peace. <i>ibid.</i> 41.
Reaſons to prooue that it is more conuenient for miniſters to liue vpon ſet ſtipends, then vo- luntarie contribution. 471.9		For the inforcing of the duties of peace there be ſeuẽ ſpeciall reaſons. 362.34
Obiections that the paſtors office is an ealie of- fice. <i>vide.</i> Miniſters.		What peace is, for the maintenance whereof ob- ſerue two rules. 393.6
Ve muſt patiently tary for the reaping of our heauenly reward, vrged from Gods patience towards vs. 514.18		The people puniſhed for Achans ſinne, how it may ſtand. 463.3
Gods patience, waiting for the amendment of our liues ſet downe by ſundry degrees. <i>ibid.</i> 37		There is a double perfection. 165.19
Miſcheiſes, into which we run vnto vnleſſe we patiently expect God for our reward. 515.34		Hatred of Gods grace in men is the beginning of al perſecution. 319.12
Reaſons why Paul did write the epiſtle to the Galatians with his owne hand. 536.29		Perſecution what. 37.19
Paul ſubſcribed all his epiſtles with his owne hand. 537.4		Of the wicked perſecuting the good. 318.37
Pauls conuerſion how wrought. 43.32		Perſeuerance crowneth all our good workes. 516.42.
		Perſon and nature diſtinguiſhed. 245.37
		What a perſon is. <i>ibid.</i> 39
		Of Peters ſupremacie. 82.19
		Phariſaiſme what it is, and the principall doſtrine thereof. 36.12
		Philoſophie not condemned. 283.28
		The errors of Philoſophie. <i>ibid.</i> 33
		There is a lawfull pilgrimage. 52.17
		Popiſh pilgrimage condemned for 2. cauſes. <i>ibi.</i> 24 Poly-

A T A B L E.

Polygamie not approoued but tolerated for two reasons. 301.27
Reasons for polygamie answered. 301.3
What poore to be releued? 86.4
Pastors care of the poore wherein it consists. 16.10
Postscripts no part of canonical Scripture. 579.9
Reasons why we must prouide for the poore. 88.10.

The Gospell must be preached though all men be offended. 349.26
Preaching containes foure ministeriall actions. 47.27.
Effectuall and powerfull preaching of the word stands in two things, 140.41
Preaching must be plaine. 140.15
Necessary for all men. 144.38
The word must be dispensed in the infirmities of mans flesh for diuers causes. 284.25
The benefits of preaching. 187.31
Prayer to Saints & angels is carnal prayer. 264.1
Pray onely to God. 264.25
The right manner of seeking the praise of men. 402.15.

Primacie is 2. of order, of power. 52.32
Authoritie of the Church no principle 383.8
Externall and bodily priuiledges are of no moment in the kingdome of Christ. 336.31
Gods promises lie as voide till the particular time of their accomplishment. 179.8
The promise made to Abraham is a couenant, or Testament and how? 185.11
Christ is the foundation of all the promises of God, partly by merit, partly by efficacie. 186.20.

Why beleeuers are called children of promise? 317.18.
Prouerbiall sentences, are not at all times true and in euery particular. 485.36.
Gods providence vseth euill things well. 307.6
Subiection to punishment hath 3. parts. 321.32
There are seuerall degrees of punishments in hell. 490.17, &c.

R

The workes of redemption exceed the workes of creation. 12.32
Of the redemption of man from vnder the law. 253.33.
Christ the onely redeemer. 274.4
Three markes of regeneration. 311.25. The gift of regeneration is neuer vterly extinguished. 203.14
What true regeneration is? 333.3

The workes of the regenerate are mixed with sinne, and in the rigour of iustice deserue damnation, objections remooued. 470.9 & 15
Of the reioicing of the Church. vide Church.
Two grounds of reioicing. vide glorying.
Reioyce signifying to glory. 457.17
Obiection against reioicing in ones selfe. vide glorying.

VVhat rules are to be obserued in the reioicing in the testimony of a good conscience. vide glorying.

False reioicing wherein it consisteth. 459.9
Reioycers are of foure sorts. ibid. 13
To reioyce in a mans selfe what? 457.23
The chiefe principle in religion what. 382.33
VVhether it be lawfull to compell men to embrace religion.. 542.11
The Magistrate may compell obstinate recusants to professe true religion. ibid. 13
Obiections to the contrary answered. ibid.
Pauls manner in reproofing. 16.5
Liberty in reproofing with three caueats. 90.16
VVhy we vse not in preaching personall reproofes as Iohn Baptist did. 347.3
The manner of reproofe. vide Restore.

He that is iniured is fitter to reprove him that offered the iniurie then any other. 419.18
Reproofes must not be deferred. 406.17
No wonder that sinners he loth to be reproofed ibid. 32

A treatise of Christian reproofe. 414.32
Who are to be reproofed. ibid. 36
Reproofe belongs not to those that are out of the visible Church. 415.29
The greatest Princes are subiect to reproofe. 416.6
Only opens corners, and persecuters of the word are not to be reproofed. ibid. 40
Men are to be reproofed for any sinne knowne. ibid. 41

And for wrongs offered vs. 418.4.
Obiection against reproofes answered. 419.31
Who are to be reproofed. 421.18

In five cases wee are not bound to reprove others offending. 422.20
In what manner are men to bee reproofed, set downe in ten rules. 423.40

The bitterneffe of reproofe is to be allaied foure waies. 427.3.
A man may reprove another 4. waies. 427.33.
In fitting our reproofe to the offence committed we must put a difference betwixt sinne and sinne. 428.10

A T A B L E.

In three cases we are not priuately to reprove,
but publicly to detect offenders. 430.28
The Pastour ought to be resident with his flocke
for two causes. 297.9
Restitution. *vide* Satisfaction.
As often as our brother falles wee must restore
him. 406.37
Who are to be restored. 407.6
Spiritual men are more bound to restore those
that are fallen then any other. 408.27
The manner how we must restore. 410.4
Reuelation is of two sorts. 31.37
Extraordinarie reuelation is foure waies. *ibid.* 41
The reuelation which Paul had is extraordi-
narie. 32.6
Reuolt what, and the kindes thereof. 16.25
Remedies against reuenge. 393.20
Reward is double, of honour and of debt. 502.33
Reward presupposeth not alwaies debt. 504.1
God giueth rewards foure waies. *ibid.* 15
The phrales of speech of rewarding double, or
seuen fold, what they signifie in the Scripture.
487.28
Pauls rule what it is. 566.42
The Papists rules, Lesbian rules. 568.27
Monkish rules vaine and wicked. *ibid.* 29
We must be runners in the race of God. 340.32
We must runne well, and to the end. 341.18.
& 33

S

Of the institution of the Sabbath. 277.39
Sacraments conferre not grace by the worke
wrought. 221.38
Whether there bee now in the church of God a-
ny sacrifice or oblation of Christ. 141.29
Whether the Saints may fall away totally and fi-
nally. 517.24
There is but one way of saluation. 19.21
Prenision of faith and good workes no cause of
saluation. 41.20
The saluation of beleeuers is most sure. *ibid.* 27
The manner and way of our saluation. 200.24
The sanctification of the name of God hath two
parts. 63.15
There is a double sanctification. 169.24
Satisfaction must be made for wrongs done. 86.
23
Who must satisfie. 87.1
To whom. 87.8
What. 86.24
When. 87.35
In what order and manner. 87.32

Schisme and heresie differ. *vide* Heresie.
The Papists schismatikes and not we. 486.20
For the auoiding of schisme and sedition two
rules. *ibid.* 26
Slanders vse to be raised vpon euery light and
vniust occasion. 348.32
Scripture is both the glosse and the text. 311.2.
& 383.12
Scripture hath sundrie senses according to the
Papists. 304.25
When the Scriptures speakes figuratiuely and
when properly. 305.22
The Scriptures by themselves are sufficient to
saluation. 21.24
The Scriptures are as certen as if they had bene
written by God. 23.37
The authoritie of the Scripture depends not vp-
on the testimony of the Church. 24.11
It is necessarie that men should bee assured that
the Scriptures are of God. 27.34
The testimonies whereby this assurance may be
obtained. *ibid.* 39
In Scriptures there is diuine and infallible au-
thoritie. 311.20
The meanes to decide controuersies. 314.14
Bookes of Scripture in the new Testament haue
a threefold difference. 536.40.
Bookes of Scripture why called *apocrypha*, as also
Kethubim by the Iewes. 582.34.39
The Scriptures why called Canonickall. 567.6
Seditions what. 386.13
The separation of Paul from the wombe what
it is. 40.38
To make a faire shew in the flesh signifieth foure
things. 539.8
Simulation what, and the sorts. 92.18
Sinne where it takes place giues a man no rest
till it hath brought him to a height of wicked-
nesse. 38.25
What a sinne of infirmitie is. 55.1
Sinnes be of two sort. 196.18
Originall sinne hath two parts. 321.24
A common fashion to extenuate sinne. 343.37
We must resist euery particular sinne. 344.23
It is the nature of sinne to set all things out of
order. 405.41
God rewardeth sinnes in the same manner accor-
ding to the nature of sinne. 491.34
Sinne driues men beside themselves. 406.2
Sinners must not delay their repentance. *ibid.* 16
Sinnes committed after a mans conuersion are
pardonable. 407.32
In

A T A B L E.

In euery knowne sinne we are wronged.	418.17	In this guidance there are foure actions of the Spirit.	<i>ibid.</i> 5
Sinne a burden to whom.	<i>vide</i> Burden.	Subiection to the worke of Gods Spirit hath two parts.	372.28
Sinne a spirituall burden.	459.37	The proprietie of the workes of the Spirit : a treatise.	391.13
How we may bee eased of the burden of sinne.	465.8	The efficacie of the Spirit.	<i>ibid.</i> 26
How sinne is finite and how infinite.	488.33	What it is to liue and walke in the Spirit ?	400.17.&c.
Solitarie and Monasticke life against the light of nature.	568.17	A signe whereby to know whether a man hath in his heart the Spirit of God or no.	401.23
Why the second person is called Sonne.	246.4	Spirituall men opposed to carnall are of two sorts.	409.4
VWhether the Sonne be God.	<i>ibid.</i> 18	Spirituall men are more fit to restore those that are fallen then any other.	<i>ibid.</i> 12
Two kinds of sorrow.	120.26.&c.	Diuers good and euill things are rearmbed by the name of the Spirit.	411.16
A point of great skill to bring a soule in order and frame againe.	406.23	Two kinds of spyings.	74.30
Three things to be considered in the soule, the substance, the faculties, and the qualities.	562.40	Of standing fast in libertie, the manner and time of it.	328.8
VWhat is meant by <i>whatsoeuer a man sowes that shall he reape.</i>	485.12	Two kinds of subiection.	236.12
Sowing what it signifies in the Scripture.	<i>ibid.</i> 24	Subiection to the spirit hath two parts. <i>vide</i> Spirit.	
Obiections against this prouerbiall speech; <i>whatsoeuer a man sowes that shall he reape.</i>	<i>ibid.</i> 35.&c.	Succession is of three sorts.	31.33
The distinction of sowing to the flesh, and to our flesh.	490.4. & 497.19	The successours of the first preachers had an ordinarie calling.	31.6
By sowing to the flesh what is ment.	497.32	Five vses of our sufferings.	149.6
To sow to the spirit what it is.	<i>ibid.</i> 40		T
The spirit hath five properties.	363.29	A proprietie of false teachers is, to vrge earnestly their owne ceremonies vpon others.	545.13
What is the Spirit ? a treatise.	363.26	A proprietie of false teachers to teach false doctrine for auoiding of persecution.	546.14
All exercises of Christian religion are to bee in the Spirit.	336.21	The essentiall difference betweene true and false teachers.	547.7
The operation of the Spirit is threefold.	128.4	Another proprietie of false teachers to compell others to obserue that which they themselves will not obserue.	549.29
What the Spirit signifies ?	143.18	Another note of false teachers to pretend religion to cloake their wickednes.	550.42
What is meant by the giuing or sending of the Spirit.	143.18	The proprietie of false teachers is, to set a faire shew vpon the matter.	539.28
In what order the Spirit is giuen ?	179.29	Temperance what? foure rules for the practising of it.	396.6
We receiue the Spirit for fixe endes.	180.4	By what law Tenth is due:	202.34.&c.
Why the holy Ghost is called the Spirit of the Sonne.	258.36	Of what value the testimonie of the Church is.	20.3
The manner how the holy Ghost is sent.	259.29	There must be a christian toleration one of another, for the maintenance of Church peace.	361.17
Foure workes in the Spirit in causing beleuers to cri: Aba, Father.	260.21	Yn what it stands?	<i>ibid.</i> 19
The Spirit of grace in Christians is more excellent then that of creation in two respects.	364.15.	To what it serues.	<i>ibid.</i> 33
Of the operation of the Spirit.	<i>ibid.</i> 26	Whether there may not be a tolleracion for Popery?	<i>ibid.</i> 38
The whole worke of the Spirit may bee reduced to three actions.	<i>ibid.</i> 34		R r 3
The Spirit makes vs change and renew our actions, in three respects.	365.6		Vnwrit
The lust of the Spirit hath two actions.	368.1		
The office of the Spirit is first to regenerate, secondly to guide the regenerate.	372.2		

A T A B L E.

Vnwritten Traditions tendered as a part of gods word are abominations. 21.32
 The Church is troubled three waies. 345.22
 Reasons to mooue men to speake and deale truly. 395.32
 The time of all euents determined by God. 41.35.
Due time how it may be vnderstood. 513.35
 VVe must make a holy, and profitable vse of time. 527.41
 VVe must redeeme the time lost, in three respects 528.32
 Obseruations of times which be forbidden. 529.36.
 The kindes of vnlawfull obseruation of time, either Iewish or Heathenish, and wherein they consist? *ibid* 40
 Lawfull obseruation of time twofold, diuine or humane. 530.28.
 Humane obseruation of time threefold. *ib.*
 The plaine dealing of Turkes in priuate bargaines, shameth the false dealing of many Christians. 395.29

V

What the desire of vaine glory is? 402.7
 Excuses hereof taken away. *ibid.* 14.&c.
 They that haue receiued good gifts of God are many times most vaine glorious. 403.8
 Remedies of pride and vaine glory. *ib.* 23
 What vncleannes is? 375.22
 Of our vnion with Christ. 125.20
 Substantiall and spirituall. 232.11
 In what respect men are said to be one with Christ? *ibid.* 17
 Vnitie is not an infallible and inseparable marke of the Church. 539.27
 Though men were not commanded to vow, yet the matter and forme of vowes was commanded. 52.30

W

What wantonnes is? 375.31
 Reasons both in general and speciall that make men weary of well doings. 509.1
 How farre forth the will worketh in the receiving of grace? 10.14
 The absolute wil of God cannot be resisted. 318.3.
 The determination of mans will by the will of God doth not abolish all freedome of will. *ibid.* 11.
 Man hath no freedome of will in good duties before his conuersion. 368.21

What witchcraft is? a treatise of the ground and kindes of it. 379.1
 What is a witch. 318.16
 Signes that serue to discouer a witch. 381.5
 False and vncertaine signes. *ibid.* 17
 Wiues among the Iewes of two sorts. 302.33
 The word is the cause and object of our faith. 6.11
 The word of God is the matter of the ministry, and how it is to be taught and heard. 26.5.&c.
 It depends not vpon the authoritie of the church. 49.13
 But vpon it selfe. 68.1
 The word must be dispensed in the infirmitie of mans flesh for diuerse causes. *vide* preach.
 Labourers in the word may lawfully take wages, though they haue sufficient of their owne to maintaine themselves. 479.12
 There be no meritorious workes to prepare men to their iustification. 10.21
 How our workes are said to please God. 167.32
 The workes of the regenerate are mixed and sinfull, and in the rigour of iustice deserue damnation: *ergo* no iustification by workes. 455.25
 The benefit of approouing of our workes. *ib.* 21
 How we may approoue our workes three rules. *ibid.* 29
 Whether wee may not approoue our workes or actions to men, and if we may, how farre forth. *ibid.* 42
 Infants haue no good workes. 487.42
 Gods reward shall be according to the quantitie and qualitie of the workes, and what may bee gathered from thence. 490.8
 How Lazarus and the thiefe on the crosse had good workes. 488.10.& 13
 Workes and labours of men may differ three waies, and what they be. 491.10
 Vses that God rewardeth men according to their workes. 493.494.495
 Workes though they be feedes, yet are they no causes of eternall life. 498.9.&c.
 That workes are feedes of eternall life it is Gods mercie, and not the merit of the workes. 498.13
 Works of the flesh perfectly euill & why. 409.17
 Good workes perfect as they are of God, imperfect as they are of men. 499.23
 Reasons why the workes of the spirit are not the cause of eternall life as well as bad workes are the cause of eternall destruction. *ibid.* *nota* pag. Obiectu.

A T A B L E.

Obiections of the Papists to prooue workes the
causes of eternall life answered. Beginning at
page 498. line 7. vsque ad page 504.

Workes no cause of our reward but the measure.
501.5

good workes make a man knowne to be iust, but
faith maketh him iust. 500.25

good workes are causes of eternall life not as
meriting, but as the kings high way. 501.26

How life eternall is promised to good workes,
how not. 502.4

The promise of reward vpon condition of per-
forming the worke, maketh not a meritorious
worke. 502.25

Reward not due to workes of regeneration vpon
compact and promise, the reasons why. *ib.* 16

good workes merit not eternall life though it be
a reward of them. page 502. 36. and page 503.
504

How life eternall is called a reward of good
workes. 503.38.34.

That we may incite our selues to the doing of
good workes, from the consideration of our
heauenly reward sundrie reasons. 511.22

In doing good workes we may respect the re-
ward, but not onely nor principally. 513.15

What should most of all mooue vs to doe good
workes. *ibid.* 16.17

The loue of the world and of the truth cannot
stand together. 547.16

VVhat is meant by the world, and what it is to
be taken out of the world. 12.19

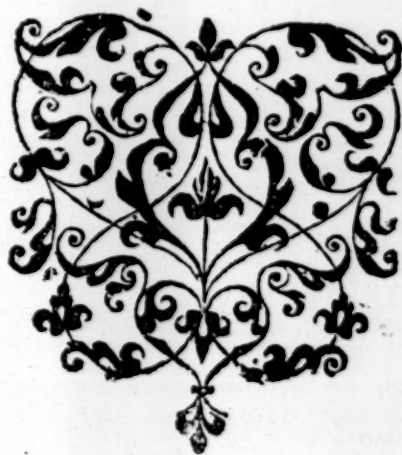
Y

Two kinds of yeelding. 76.29

Z

Zeale what it is. 39.30

F I N I S.



16
Aug
1960